

LIBRARY
OF THE
Theological Seminary.
PRINCETON, N. J.

Case

Division

SCC

Shelf

Section

7652

Book

No.

V.3

A DONATION

FROM

Rev. R. H. Rodgers DD


Received

Nov. 1874.





R. H. Rogers - m



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2011 with funding from
Princeton Theological Seminary Library

THE
HISTORY
OF THE
PURITANS
OR

Protestant Non-Conformists,

FROM THE

Beginning of the CIVIL WAR in the
Year 1642. to the Death of King
CHARLES I. 1648.

WITH

An Account of their Principles; their Attempts
for a further Reformation in the Church;
their Sufferings; and the Lives and Characters
of their Principal Divines.

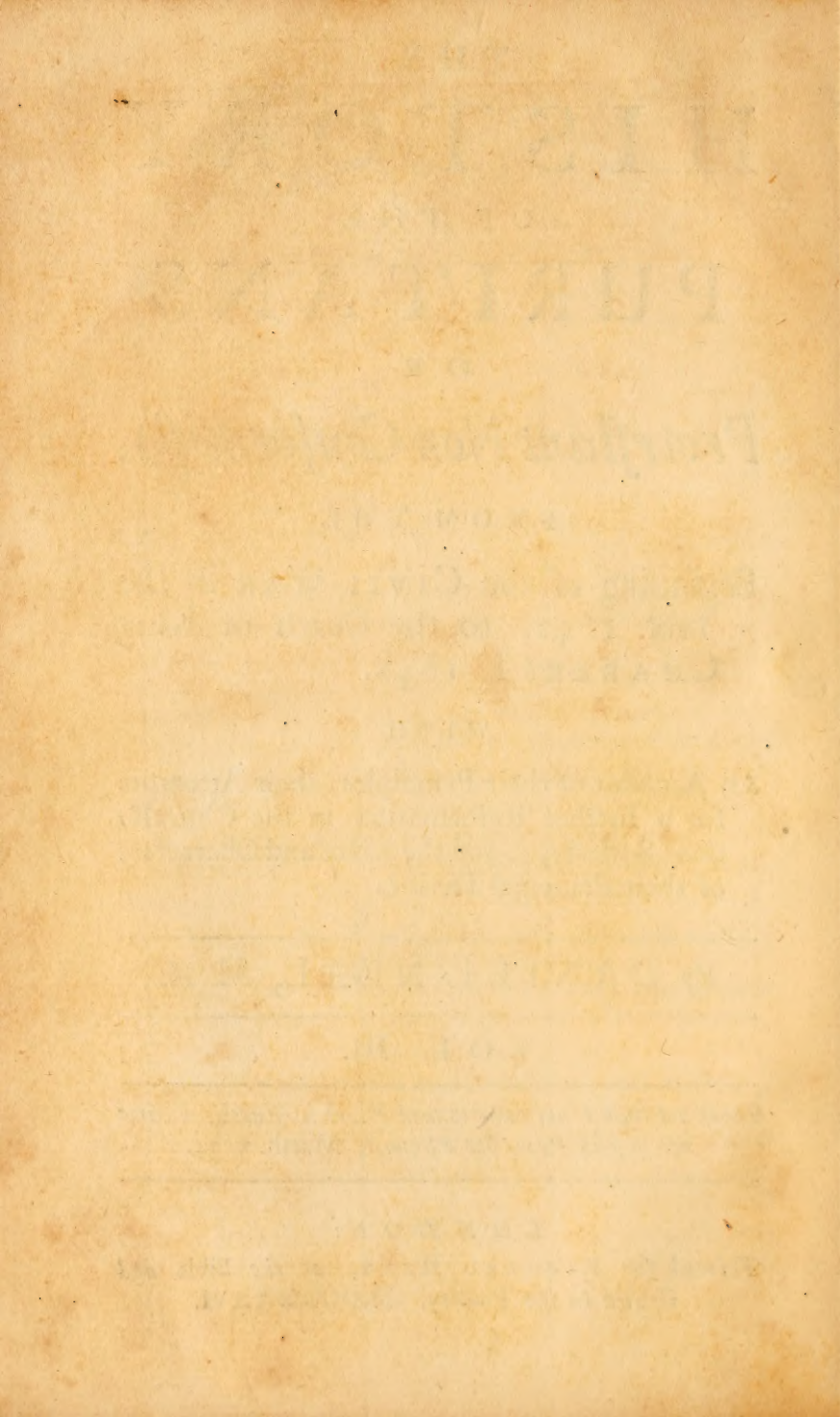
By DANIEL NEAL, M. A.

V O L. III.

*Think not that I am come to send Peace on Earth, I came
not to send Peace but a Sword, Matth. x. 34.*

L O N D O N:

Printed for RICHARD HETT, at the Bible and
Crown in the Poultry. M.DCC.XXXVI.





THE PREFACE.

NO Period of Civil History has undergone a more critical Examination than the last seven Years of King CHARLES I. which was a Scene of such Confusion and inconsistent Management between the King and Parliament, that 'tis very difficult to discover the Motives of Action on either Side; the King seems to have been directed by secret Springs from the Queen, and her Council of Papists, who were for advancing the Prerogative above the Laws, and vesting his Majesty with such an absolute Sovereignty, as might rival his Brother of France, and enable him to establish the Roman Catholick Religion in England, or some how or other blend it with the Protestant. This gave Rise to the unparallel'd Severities of the Star-Chamber and High Commission, which after twelve Years Triumph over the Laws and Liberties of the Subject, brought on a fierce and bloody War, and after the Loss of above a hundred Thousand Lives ended in the Sacrifice of the King himself, and the Subversion of the whole Constitution.

Though all Men had a Veneration for the Person of the King, his MINISTERS had render'd themselves justly obnoxious, not only by setting up a new Form of Government at home, but by extending their Jurisdiction to a neighbouring Kingdom, under the Government of distinct Laws, and enclined to a Form of Church Discipline very different

The PREFACE.

from the English: This raised such a Storm in the North, as distressed his Majesty's Administration; exhausted his Treasure; drained all his arbitrary Springs of Supply; and after an Intermission of twelve Years, reduced him to the Necessity of returning to the Constitution, and calling a Parliament; but when the publick Grievances came to be opened, there appeared such a Collection of ill Humours, and so general a Distrust between the King and his two Houses, as threaten'd all the Mischief and Desolation that followed. Each Party laid the Blame on the other, and agreed in nothing, but in throwing off the Odium of the Civil War from themselves.

The Affairs of the Church had a very considerable Influence on the Welfare of the State: The Episcopal Character was grown into Contempt, not from any Defect of Learning in the Bishops, but from their close Attachment to the Prerogative, and their own insatiable Thirst of Power, which they strained to the utmost in their Spiritual Courts, by reviving old and obsolete Customs, levying large Fines on the People for Contempt of their Canons, and prosecuting good Men and zealous Protestants for Rites and Ceremonies tending to Superstition, and not warranted by the Laws of the Land. The King supported them to the utmost; but was obliged after some Time to give way first to an Act for abolishing the High Commission, by a Clause in which the Power of the Bishops Spiritual Courts was in a manner destroyed; and at last to an Act depriving them of their Seats in Parliament. If at this Time any Methods could have been thought of to restore a mutual Confidence between the King and his two Houses, the remaining Differences in the Church might easily have been compromised; but the Spirits of Men were heated, and as the Flames of the Civil War grew fiercer, and spread wider, the Wounds of the Church were enlarged, till the Distress of the Parliament's Affairs obliging them to call in the Scots with their Solemn League and Covenant, they became incurable.

When the King had lost his Cause in the Field, he put himself at the Head of his Divines, and drew his learned

Pen,

Pen in Defence of his Prerogative and the Church of England; but his Arguments were no more successful than his Sword. I have brought the Debates between the King and Mr. Henderson and between the Divines of both Sides at the Treaties of Uxbridge and Newport upon the Head of Episcopacy, into as narrow a Compass as possible; my chief Design being to trace the Proceedings of the Parliament and their Assembly at Westminster, which (whether justifiable or not) ought to be placed in open View, though none of the Historians of those Times have ventured to do it.

The Westminster Assembly was the Parliament's grand Council in Matters of Religion, and made a very considerable Figure both at home and abroad through the Course of the Civil War, 'till they disputed the Power of the Keys with their Superiors, and split upon the Rocks of Divine Right and Covenant Uniformity. The Records of this venerable Assembly were lost in the Fire of London; but I have given a large and just Account of their Proceedings, from a Manuscript of one of their Members, and some other Papers that have fallen into my Hands, and have enter'd as far into their Debates with the Erastians, Independants, and others, as was consistent with the Life and Spirit of the History.

Whatever Views the Scots might have from the beginning of the War, the Parliament would certainly have agreed with the King upon the Foot of a limited Episcopacy, till the Calling the Assembly of Divines, after which the Solemn League and Covenant became the Standard of all their Treaties, and was designed to introduce the Presbyterian Government in its full extent, as the established Religion of both Kingdoms. This tied up the Parliament's Hands from yielding in Time to the King's most reasonable Concessions at Newport, and render'd an Accommodation impracticable; I have therefore transcribed the Covenant at large, with the Reasons for and against it; whether such Obligations upon the Consciences of Men are justifiable from the Necessity of Affairs, or binding in all Events and Revolutions of Government, I shall not determine; but

the imposing them upon others was certainly a very great Hardship.

The remarkable Trial of Archbishop Laud, in which the Antiquity and Use of the several Innovations complained of by the Puritans are stated and argued, has never been published entire to the World. The Archbishop left in his Diary a Summary of his Answer to the Charge of the Commons, and Mr. Prynne in his Canterbury's Doom has published the first part of his Grace's Trial, relating principally to Points of Religion; but all is imperfect and immethodical. I have therefore compared both Accounts together, and supplied the Defects of one with the other; the Whole is brought into a narrow Compass, and thrown into such a Method as will give the Reader a clear and distinct View of the Equity of the Charge, and how far the Archbishop deserved the Usage he met with.

I have drawn out Abstracts of the several Ordinances relating to the Rise and Progress of Presbytery, and traced the Proceedings of the Committee for plunder'd and scandalous Ministers, as far as was necessary to my general Design, without descending too far into Particulars, or attempting to justify the whole of their Conduct; and though I am of Opinion that the Number of Clergy who suffered purely on the Account of Religion was not very considerable, 'tis certain that many able and learned Divines, who were content to live quietly, and mind the Duty of their Places, had very hard Measure from the Violence of Parties, and deserve the compassionate Regards of Posterity; some being discharged their Livings for refusing the Covenant, and others plunder'd of every Thing the unruly Soldiers could lay their Hands upon, for not complying with the Change of the Times.

In the latter End of the Reign of Queen Anne, Doctor Walker of Exeter published an Attempt to recover the Numbers and Sufferings of the Clergy of the Church of England; but with notorious Partiality, and in Language not fit for the Lips of a Clergyman, a Scholar, or a Christian; every Page or Paragraph almost, labours with the Cry of Rebellion, Treason, Parricide, Faction,

stupid Ignorance, Hypocrisy, Cant, and downright Knavery and Wickedness on one Side; and Loyalty, Learning, Primitive Sanctity, and the glorious Spirit of Martyrdom on the other. One must conclude from the Doctor, that there was hardly a wise or honest Patriot with the Parliament, nor a weak or dishonest Gentleman with the King. His Preface is one of the most furious *Invectives* against the Seven most Glorious Years of Queen ANNE that was ever published; it blackens the Memory of the late King WILLIAM III. to whom he applies that Passage of Scripture, I gave them a King in my Anger and took him away in my Wrath; It arraigns the great Duke of MARLBOROUGH, the GLORY of the English Nation, and both Houses of Parliament, as in a Confederacy to destroy the Church of England, and dethrone the Queen. “Rebellion, says the Doctor, was p. 8, 9, 10.
 “esteemed the most necessary Requisite to qualify any one
 “for being intrusted with the Government, and Disobedience the principal Recommendation for her Majesty’s
 “Service. ——— Those were thought the most proper
 “Persons to guard the Throne, who on the first Dislike
 “were every whit as ready to guard the Scaffold; yea,
 “her Majesty was in effect told all this to her Face in the
 “greatest Assembly of the Nation; and to say all that can
 “be said of this Matter, all the Principles of 1641, and
 “even those of 1648, have been plainly and openly reviewed.” p. 11.

Thus has this obscure Clergyman dared to affront the Great AUTHOR, under God, of all our present Blessings; and to stigmatize the MARLBOROUGHs, the GODOLPHINS, the STANHOPES, the SUNDERLANDS, the COWPERS and others, the most renowned HEROES and STATESMEN of the Age!

It must be confessed, that the Tumults and riotous Assemblies of the lower Sort of People are insufferable in a well regulated Government; and without all question, some of the leading Members of the Long Parliament made an ill Use of the Populace, as Tools to support their secret Designs; but how easy were it to turn all this Part of the Doctor’s

Artillery against himself and his Friends ; for Prynne, Burton, and Bastwick, in their Return from their several Prisons, were not attended with such a numerous Cavalcade as waited upon the late Dr. Sacheverel in his triumphant Progress through the western Counties of England and Wales ; nor did they give themselves up to the same Excess of Licentiousness and Rage. If the Mob of 1641 insulted the Bishops, and awed the Parliament, so did the Doctor's Retinue in 1710 ; nay, their Zeal outwent their Predecessors, when they pulled down the Meeting-Houses of Protestant Dissenters, and burnt the Materials in the open Streets, in maintenance of the Doctrines of Passive-Obedience and Non-Resistance, which their pious Confessor had been preaching up ; “ a bold insolent
“ Man (says Bishop Burnet) with a very small Measure
“ of Religion, Virtue, Learning, or good Sense :” but to such Extreams do Men's Passions carry them when they write only to serve a Cause ! I have had occasion to make some Use of Dr. Walker's confused heap of Materials, but have endeavoured carefully to avoid his Spirit and Language.

No Man has declaimed so bitterly against the Proceedings of Parliament upon all Occasions as this Clergyman ; nor complained more loudly of the unspeakable Damage the liberal Arts and Sciences sustained by their purging the two Universities ; the new Heads and Fellows of Oxford are called “ a Colony of Presbyterian and Independant Novices
“ from Cambridge ; a Tribe of ignorant Enthusiasts and
“ Schismaticks ; an illiterate Rabble swept from the
“ Plough-Tail, from Shops and Grammar Schools, &c.” The University of Cambridge is reported by the same Author “ to be reduced to a meer Munster by the Knipper-
“ dolings of the Age, who broke the Heart-strings of
“ Learning and learned Men, who thrust out one of the
“ Eyes of the Kingdom, and made Eloquence dumb, Philosophy sottish, widowed the Arts, drove the Muses
“ from their ancient Habitation, and plucked the Reverend and Orthodox Professors out of their Chairs.
“ ——— They turned Religion into Rebellion, and changed
“ the

Hist.
p. 537.

Walker's
Introduct.
p. 139,
140.

Walker's
Introduct.
p. 115.
Querela
Cant.

“ *the Apostolical Chair into a Desk for Blasphemy. —*
 “ *They took the Garland from off the Head of Learning*
 “ *and placed it on the dull Brows of Ignorance. — And*
 “ *having unbivved a numerous Swarm of labouring Bees,*
 “ *they placed in their room Swarms of senseless Drones—”*

Such is the Language of our Historian, transcribed from Dr. Barwick ! I have carefully look'd into this Affair, and collected the Characters of the old and new Professors from the most approved Writers, that the disinterested Reader may judge how far Religion and Learning suffered by the Exchange.

*The Close of this Volume, which relates the Disputes between the Parliament and Army ; the ill Success of his Majesty's Arms and Treaties ; the Seizure of his Royal Person a second Time by the Army ; his Trial before a pretended High Court of Justice, and his unparalell'd Execution before the Gates of his Royal Palace by the Military Power, is a most melancholy and affecting Scene ; in which, next to the All-disposing Providence of God, One cannot but remark the King's inflexible Temper, together with the Indiscretion of his Friends, especially his Divines, at a Time when his Crown was lost by the Fortune of War, and his very Life at the Mercy of his Enemies ; nor is the unwarrantable Stiffness of the Parliament less unaccountable, when they saw the victorious Army drawing towards London flushed with the Defeat of the Scots and English Loyalists, and determined to set aside that very Uniformity they were contending for. If his Majesty had yielded at first what he did at last, with an Appearance of Sincerity ; or if the two Houses had complied with his Concessions while Cromwel was in Scotland ; or if the Army had been made easy by a general Indulgence and Toleration, with the Distribution of some Honours and Bounty Money among the Officers, the Crown and Constitution might have been saved ; “ but so many miraculous Vol. V.
 “ *Circumstances contributed to his Majesty's Ruin (says P. 258.*
 “ *Lord Clarendon) that Men might well think that*
 “ *Heaven and Earth conspired it.”**

The Objections to the first Volume of the History of the Puritans, by the Author of the Vindication of the Government, Doctrine and Worship of the Church of England, obliged me to review the principal Facts in a small Pamphlet, wherein I have endeavoured to discharge my self as an Historian, without undertaking the Defence of their several Principles, or making my self an Advocate for the Whole of their Conduct. I took the Liberty to point out the Mistakes of our first Reformers as I pass along, but with no design to blacken their Memories; for with all their Foibles they were glorious Instruments in the Hand of Providence to deliver this Nation from Anti-christian Bondage; but they were free to confess, the Work was left imperfect; that they had gone as far as the Times would admit, and hoped their Successors would bring the Reformation to a greater Perfection.

But the State of the Controversy was entirely changed in the Time of the Civil Wars; for after the Coming in of the Scots the Puritans did not fight for a Reformation of the Hierarchy, nor for the generous Principles of Religious Liberty to all peaceable Subjects; but for the same spiritual Power the Bishops had exercised; for when they had got rid of the Oppression of the Spiritual Courts under which they had groaned almost Fourscore Years, they were for setting up a Number of Presbyterial Consistories in all the Parishes of England, equally burdensome and oppressive. Unhappy Extream! That wise and good Men should not discover the beautiful Consistency of Truth and Liberty! Dr. Barrow and others have observed, that in the first and purest Ages of Christianity, the Church had no coercive Power, and apprehend that it may still subsist very well without it.

The Body of Protestant Dissenters of the present Age have a just Abhorrence of the persecuting Spirit of their Predecessors, and are content that their Actions be set in a fair Light as a Warning to Posterity. They have no less a Dread of returning into the Hands of Spiritual Courts founded on the bottomless Deep of the Canon Law, and see no reason why they should not be equally exposed, till they are put upon a better foot; though it is an unpardonable

double Crime in the Opinion of some Churchmen to take Notice, even in the most respectful manner, of the least Blemish in our present Establishment, which how valuable soever in it self, is allowed by all to be capable of Amendments. Some little Essays of this kind have fired the Zeal of the Bishop of Litchfield and Coventry, who, in a late Charge to the Clergy of his Diocese, is pleased to declaim against the Times in the following mournful Language: “At Charge, P. 41, 42, 44.
 “ so critical a Juncture (says his Lordship) when common
 “ Christianity is treated with an avowed Contempt and
 “ open Profaneness; when an undisguised Immorality
 “ prevails so very generally; when there is scarce Honesty
 “ enough to save the Nation from Ruin; when with Re-
 “ gard to the established Church in particular, the Royal
 “ Supremacy is professedly exposed, as inconsistent with
 “ the Rights of Conscience, even THAT SUPREMACY
 “ which was the Ground-work of the Reformation among
 “ us from Popery, which was acknowledged and sworn
 “ to by the Old Puritans, though now inconsistently
 “ enough disowned and condemned in the new History and
 “ Vindication of them and their Principles. — When
 “ so destructive an Attempt has been made on the legal
 “ Maintenance of the Clergy, by the late Tithe Bill, and
 “ consequently, on the Fate of the Christian Religion
 “ among us. — When an Attempt has been lately made
 “ on the important Out-works of our Ecclesiastical Estab-
 “ lishment, the Corporation and Test Acts, with the
 “ greatest Insolences towards the Church, and most un-
 “ dutiful Menaces to the Civil Government. — When
 “ the Episcopal Authority has been well nigh under-
 “ mined, under a Pretence of reforming the Ecclesiastical
 “ Courts; and if that Order had been render’d useless, as
 “ it must have been when it had lost its Authority, then
 “ the Revenues would have been soon thought useless;
 “ and in the Result of Things the Order it self might have
 “ been considered as superfluous, and perhaps in due Time
 “ thought fit to be abolished. — When Churches have
 “ been put into such a Method of Repair as would end in
 “ their Ruin in a little Time; and when the Correction
 “ of

“ of the Abuses of the Matrimonial Licenses has been la-
 “ bour’d in so absurd a Manner as to permit the Mar-
 “ riage of Minors without consent of their Parents or
 “ Guardians: When these melancholy Circumstances have
 “ so lately concurr’d, it is natural to infer, our Zeal for the
 “ Church should be in proportion to its Danger; and if
 “ these are not proper Occasions for Zeal for our Ecclesi-
 “ astical Constitution, it is not easy to assign Circumstances
 “ that may justly demand it —” How fine and subtle
 are these Speculations! I have not observed any Insolences
 towards the Church, or undutiful Menaces to the Civil
 Government in the late Writings of the Dissenters; but if
 one Pin of the Hierarchy be removed by the Wisdom of the
 Legislature, the whole Building is supposed to fall, and all
 Religion along with it. His Lordship therefore advises his
 Clergy to study the Bishop of London’s Codex in order to
 defend it; and it can do them no real Prejudice to examine at
 the same Time, the Principles of Law and Equity on which it is
 founded. As to the Dissenters his Lordship adds, “However,
 “ it will become us of the Clergy in point of Prudence, not
 “ to give any just Suspicions of our Disgust to the legal
 “ Toleration of them, while they keep within due Bounds;
 “ that is, while they do not break in upon the Privileges,
 “ and Rights of the Establish’d Church, by declaring
 “ against all legal Establishments, or the legal Establishment
 “ of the Church of England in particular, or by not be-
 “ ing quiet with the present Limits of their Toleration, or
 “ by affecting Posts of Authority, and thereby breaking
 “ down the Fences of the Church, and placing themselves
 “ on a Level with it.” But whether this would remain
 a Point of Prudence with his Lordship, if the Bounda-
 ries of his Episcopal Power were enlarged, is not very
 difficult to determine.

Vid. a late
 excellent
 Examina-
 tion of the
 Codex Ju-
 ris Eccl.
 Angl.
 Charge,
 p. 46.

The Dissenters have no Envy nor Ill-will to the Church’s
 of England or Scotland established by Law (attended with
 a Toleration of all peaceable Dissenters) any further than
 they encroach on the natural or social Rights of Mankind;
 nor are they so stupid as not to distinguish between high
 Dignities, great Authority, and large Revenues secured

by Law, and a poor Maintenance arising from the voluntary Contributions of the People, that is between an Establishment and a Toleration.

But I am to attend to the Charge of Inconsistency brought against my self: I had observed upon the Reign of the bloody Q. Mary, that an absolute Supremacy over the Consciences of Men lodged with a single Person might as well be prejudicial as serviceable to true Religion: And in the Beginning of the Reign of Q. Elizabeth, that the Powers then claimed by the Kings and Queens of England were in a manner the same with those claimed by the Popes in the Times preceding the Reformation, except the Administration of the Spiritual Offices of the Church. This was THAT SUPREMACY which was the Ground-work of the Reformation; of which I say, Let the Reader judge how far these HIGH POWERS are agreeable or consistent with the natural Rights of Mankind. His Lordship calls this a professed exposing the Royal Supremacy, and the rather, because "THAT SUPREMACY was acknowledged and sworn to by the Old Puritans themselves, though now inconsistently enough disowned and condemned by their Historian." But surely his Lordship should have informed his Clergy at the same Time, in what Sense the Puritans took the Oath, when it was before his Eyes, in the same Page; my Words are these: "The whole Body of the Papists refused the Oath of Supremacy, as inconsistent with their Allegiance to the Pope, but the Puritans took it under all these Disadvantages, with the Queen's Explication in her Instructions, that is, that no more was intended than that her Majesty under God had the Sovereignty and Rule over all Persons born in her Realm, either Ecclesiastical or Temporal, so as no foreign Power had, or ought to have any Superiority over them." Where is the Inconsistency of this Conduct of the old Puritans or their new Historian? Or, where is the Dissenter in England who is not ready to swear to it with this Explication?

But his Lordship is pleased to reason upon this Head, and in order to support that absolute Supremacy, which was

Hist. Pur.
Vol. I.
p. 83.

ib. p. 129;
'30.

Hist. Pur.
p. 133.

Vide
Strype's
Ann.
Vol. I.
p. 159.

Charge,
p. 20.

was the Ground-work of the Reformation, affirms, that
 “ all Christian Kings and Emperors have the same
 “ Power of reforming Religion, and are under the
 “ same Obligations, as the Jewish Kings were in
 “ Cases of the like Nature,” *without producing the*
least Evidence or Proof; whereas his Lordship knows, that
the Government of the Jews was a Theocracy; that God
himself was their King, and the Laws of that Nation strictly
and properly the Laws of God, who is Lord of Conscience,
and may annex what Sanctions he pleases; their Judges
and Kings were chosen and appointed by God, not to make
a new Codex or Book of Laws either for Church or State,
but to keep the People to the strict Observation of those Laws
and Statutes that he himself had given them by the Hand of
Moses.

p. 21.

His Lordship is pleased to ask, “ If any high Preten-
der to spiritual Liberty, and the Rights of Con-
science, should enquire what Authority the respec-
tive Jewish and Christian Powers had to interpose
“ in Matters that regarded the Rights of Conscience?
“ Since in fact their assumed Supremacy was an
“ Usurpation of those natural Rights —” I answer,
that with regard to the Jews, it was no Usurpation, for
the Reasons beforementioned; and when his Lordship shall
prove a Transfer of the same Power to all Christian Prin-
ces, the Controversy will be brought to a short Issue.

p. 22.

“ — But will it not be replied (says the Bishop) that
 “ those Kings and Emperors were intrusted by God
 “ with the Care of the Ecclesiastical as well as Civil
 “ Constitution —” *If by the Care of the Constitu-*
tion be meant no more than the preserving their Subjects
in the Enjoyment of their unalienable Rights, nobody de-
nies it; but if under this Pretence they assume a Sovereign
and Arbitrary Power of modelling the Ecclesiastical Consti-
tution according to their Pleasure, and of enforcing their
Subjects Obedience by Canons and Penal Laws, I should
doubt whether they are obliged to comply, even in Things
not absolutely sinful in themselves, because it may dero-
gate from the Kingly Office of Christ, who is sole King
and

and Lawgiver in his own Kingdom, and has not delegated this Branch of his Authority to any Vicar General upon Earth. But I readily agree with his Lordship, that if any High Pretender to the Rights of Conscience should have asked the FIRST CHRISTIAN EMPERORS by what Authority they took on themselves the Alteration or Change of Religion? THEY would have thought the Question unreasonable, and worthy of Censure; they would have affirmed their own Sovereignty, and have taught the bold Enquirers as Gideon did the Men of Succoth, with Briars and Thorns of the Wilderness.

The Bishop goes on; "Let us now transfer this Charge, " Power of Jewish Kings and Christian Emperors to P. 22. " our own Kings, and the Case will admit of an easy " Decision—" If indeed an absolute Supremacy in Matters of Religion is the natural and unalienable Right of every Christian King and Emperor, the Dispute is at an end; but if it depends upon a Transfer, we must beg pardon, if we desire his Lordship to produce his Commission for transferring the same Powers that Almighty God gave the Jewish Kings of his own Appointment, to the first Christian Emperors, who were neither chosen by God, nor the People, nor the Senate of Rome, but usurped the supreme Authority, by the Assistance of the Military Arm, and were some of them the greatest Tyrants and Scourges of Mankind.

His Lordship adds, "Have not the English Kings Ibid, " since the Reformation actually been invested with the " SAME SUPREMACY, as the Jewish Kings and Christian " Emperors were?" I answer, such a Supremacy is in my Judgment inconsistent with our present Constitution and the Laws in being. The Supremacy claimed by King Henry VIII. and his Successors at the Reformation was found by Experience too excessive, and therefore abridged in the Reigns of King Charles I. and King William III. No one doubts, but the Kings of England are obliged to protect Religion, and defend the Establishment as long as the Legislature think fit to continue it; but as they may not suspend or change it by their sovereign Pleasure, so neither may they publish Edicts of their own to enforce it, as was the Case of the first Christian Emperors. The Reader will excuse this Digression,

gression, as necessary to support a principal Fact of my History.

I am sufficiently aware of the Delicacy of the Affairs treated of in this Volume, and of the Tenderness of the Ground I go over ; and though I have been very careful of my Temper and Language, and have endeavoured to look into the mysterious Conduct of the several Parties with all the Indifference of a Spectator, I find it very difficult to form an exact Judgment of the most important Events, or to speak freely without Offence ; therefore if any passionate or angry Writer should appear against this, or any of the former Volumes, I humbly request the Reader to pay no regard to personal Reflections, or to Insinuations of any ill Designs against the established Religion, or the publick Peace ; which are entirely groundless. I am as far from vindicating the Spirit and Conduct of the warmer Puritans, as of the governing Prelates of those Times ; there was hard Measure on both Sides, though if we separate Politicks from Principles of pure Religion the Balance will be very much in favour of the Puritans. In Historical Debates nothing is to be received upon Trust, but Facts are to be examined, and a Judgment formed upon the Authority by which those Facts are supported ; by this Method we shall arrive at Truth ; and if it shall appear that in the Course of this long History there are any considerable Mistakes, the World may be assured I will take the first Opportunity to retract or amend them, having no Private or Party Views, no Prospect of Preferment or other Reward for my Labours, than the Satisfaction of doing some Service to Truth, and to the Religious and Civil Liberties of Mankind ; and yet after all, I must bespeak the Indulgence and Candor of my Readers, which those who are sensible of the Labour and Toil of collecting so many Materials, and ranging them in their proper Order, will readily allow to one who sincerely wishes the Prosperity and Welfare of all good Men, and that the Violence and Outrage of these unhappy Times, which brought such Confusion and Misery both on King and People, may never be imitated by the present or any future Age.

LONDON,
Nov. 4. 1735.

DAN. NEAL.



THE HISTORY OF THE PURITANS.

VOL. III.

CHAP. I.

*From the Battle of Edge-Hill to the Calling the
Assembly of Divines at Westminster.*



THE King having recruited his Army at Oxford, after the Battle of Edge-Hill, by the Assistance of the University, who now gave his Majesty all their Money, as they had before done their Plate, resolved to pursue his

King
Charles I.
1642.

The King
pursues his
March to
London,

March to London, in order to break up the Parliament, and surprize the City; while the Earl of Essex imagining the Campaign was ended, lay quiet about Warwick, till being informed of the King's Designs, he posted to London, and ordered his Forces to follow with all Expedition. The Earl arrived November 7,

B

and

King and was honourably received by both Houses of Par-
Charles I. liament, who presented him with a Gratuity of five
 1642. Thousand Pounds, and to strengthen his Army pas-
 sed an Ordinance, that such Apprentices as would
 lift in their Service should be entitled to a Freedom of
 the City at the Expiration of their Apprenticeship,
 equally with those who continued with their Masters.
Rushw. In the Beginning of *November* the King took Posses-
Vol. V. sion of *Reading* without the least Resistance, the Par-
p. 58. liament Garrison having abandon'd it, which alarm'd
 both Houses, and made them send an Express to de-
 sire a safe Conduct for a Committee of Lords and
 Commons to attend his Majesty with a Petition for
 Peace; the Committee waited on his Majesty at
Colnbrook, fifteen Miles from *London*, and having re-
 ceived a favourable Answer, reported it to the two
 Houses, who immediately gave Orders to forbear all
 Acts of Hostility, and sent a Messenger to the King,
 to desire the like Forbearance on his part; but the
 Committee had no sooner left *Colnbrook*, than his Ma-
 jesty, taking the Advantage of a thick Mist, advan-
 ced to *Brentford* within seven Miles of *London*, which
Whitlock, he attacked with his whole Army, *Nov. 13.* and after
p. 62. a fierce and bloody Rencounter with the Parliament
 Garrison, wherein considerable Numbers were driven
 into the *Thames* and slain, he got Possession of the
 Town, and took a great many Prisoners. The Con-
 sternation of the Citizens on this Occasion was in-
 expressible, imagining the King would be next Morn-
 ing at their Gates; upon which the Lord Mayor was
 ordered to send the Train'd Bands immediately to
 join the Earl of *Essex's* Forces which were just arrived
 at *Turnham Green*, under the Command of Major Ge-
 neral *Skippon*; and there being no further Thoughts
 of Peace, Every one spirited up his Neighbour, and
 All resolved as one Man to live and die together. Ma-
 jor *Skippon* went from Regiment to Regiment, and
 encouraged his Troops with such short Soldier-like
 Speeches as these; Come, my Boys! my brave Boys! I
 will

will run the same Hazards with you ; remember the Cause is for God and the Defence of your selves, your Wives and Children. Come, my honest brave Boys ! let us pray heartily, and fight heartily, and God will bless us. When they were drawn up they made a Body of about twenty four Thousand Men eager for Battle, but their Orders were only to be on the Defensive, and prevent the King's breaking through to the City. The two Armies having faced each other all Day, his Majesty retreated in the Night to *Kingston*, and from thence to *Reading*, where having left a Garrison, he returned to *Oxford* about the Beginning of *December* with his *Brenford* Prisoners, the chief of whom were condemned to die, and had been executed for High Treason, if the two Houses had not threaten'd to make Reprisals. The Parliament, to prevent a like Surprize of the City for the future, impowered the Lord Mayor to cause Lines of Circumvallation to be drawn around it, and all the Avenues fortified.

King
Charles I.
1642.

Rushw.
Vol. V.
p. 93.

It was not without Reason that the two Houses complained of the King's extraordinary Conduct on this Occasion, which was owing to the violent Counsels of Prince *Rupert* and Lord *Digby*, animated by some of his Majesty's Friends in the City, who imagined, that if the royal Army appeared in the Neighbourhood of *London*, the Parliament would accept of his Majesty's Pardon and break up ; or else the Confusions would be so great, that he might enter and carry all before him ; but the Project having failed, his Majesty endeavoured to excuse it in the best Manner he could : He alledg'd, that there being no Cessation of Arms agreed upon, he might justly take all Advantages against his Enemies. He insisted further upon his Fears of being hemm'd in by the Parliament's Forces about *Colnbrook*, to prevent which, it seems, he marched seven Miles nearer the City. Lord *Clarendon* says, Prince *Rupert* having advanced to *Hounslow* without Order, his Majesty at the Desire of the Prince marched forward, to disengage him from

Motives of
it.

King the Danger of the Forces quartered in that Neigh-
Charles I. bourhood; which is so very improbable, that in
 1642. the Opinion of Mr. *Rapin*, it is needless to refute
Rapin, it. Upon the whole, it is extreamly probable, the
Vol. XII. King came from *Oxford* with no other Design but to
 p. 38. surprize the City of *London* before the Earl of *Effex's*
 Army could arrive; but having missed his Aim, he
 framed his best Pretences to perswade the People that
 his Marching to *Brentford* was only in his own Defence.

Remarks. Though his Majesty took all Occasions to make
 Offers of Peace to his Parliament, in hopes the Na-
 tion would compel them to an Agreement, by lea-
 ving him in Possession of all his Prerogatives, it is
 sufficiently evident he had no Intentions to yield any
 Thing to obtain it, for in his Letter to Duke *Hamil-*

ton, dated *December 2, 1642.* he says, "He had set
Hamil. M. up his Rest upon the *Justice of his Cause*, being re-
Book IV. p. 203. "solved that no Extremity or Misfortune should
 "make him yield, for (says his Majesty) I will be
 "either a glorious King or a patient Martyr; and
 "as yet not being the first, nor at this present ap-
 "prehending the other, I think it no unfit Time
 "to express this my Resolution to you." The Ju-
 stice of the Cause, upon which his Majesty had set
 up his Rest, was *his Declaration and Promise to go-*
vern for the future according to the Laws of the Land;
 but the Point was to know whether this might be re-
 lied upon. The two Houses admitted the Laws of

Rapin, the Land to be the Rule of Government, and that the
 p. 44, 45. executive Power, in Times of Peace, was with the
 King; but his Majesty had so often set aside the Laws
 by the Advice of a corrupt Ministry, after repeated
 Assurances to the contrary, that they durst not con-
 fide in his royal Word, and therefore insisted upon
 some additional Security for themselves, and for the
 Constitution. But his Majesty aver'd the Consti-
 tution was in no danger from him, but from them-
 selves, who were acting every Day in defiance of it.
 To which it was answer'd, That it was impossible the

Laws

Laws should have their due Course in Time of War as in the Height of Peace, because this must effectually tie up their Hands. Neither Party by *Law* could raise Money upon the Subject, without each others Consent; the King could not do it without Consent of Parliament, nor the Parliament without the royal Assent, and yet both had practised it since the Opening of the War. To have Recourse therefore to the Laws of a well settled Government in a Time of such Confusion, was weak and impracticable. Besides, his Majesty refused to give up any of his late Ministers to the Justice of Parliament; for in his Letter to Duke *Hamilton* he says, That his *abandoning the Earl of Strafford had gone so near him, that he was resolved no Consideration should make him do the like again.* Upon these Resolutions he declined the Mediation of the *Scots* Commissioners, which gave the several Parties engaged against him a fair Opportunity of uniting their Interests with that Nation.

This was a nice and curious Affair; for the Friends of the Parliament, who were agreed in the Cause of civil Liberty, were far from being of one Mind in Points of Church Discipline; the major Part were for Episcopacy, and desired no more than to secure the Constitution, and reform a few Exorbitances of the Bishops; some were *Erastians*, and would be content with any Form of Government the Magistrate should appoint; the *real Presbyterians*, who were for an entire Change of the Hierarchy upon the Foot of *divine Right*, were as yet but few, and could carry nothing in the House; it was necessary therefore, in treating with the *Scots*, who contended earnestly for their Kirk Government, to deliver themselves in such general Expressions, that each Party might interpret them as they were inclined, or as should be expedient. This contented the *Scots* for the present, and left the Parliament at full liberty, till they saw what Terms they could make with the King. Nor could the *Church-Men* be dissatisfied, because they knew,

King Charles I. if they could put a Period to the War without the *Scots*, the two Houses would not call in their Assistance, much less submit to a Kirk Discipline they had no manner of Acquaintance with; and therefore Lord *Clarendon* was of Opinion, that even at the Treaty of *Uxbridge*, if the Parliament could have obtained an Act of Oblivion for what was past, and good Security for the King's governing by Law, the *Affair of Religion* might easily have been compromised; but it required all the Prudence and Sagacity the two Houses were Masters of, to keep so many different Interests in Points of Religion, united in one common Cause of Liberty and the Constitution, at a Time when great Numbers of the King's Friends in the very City of *London*, were forming Conspiracies to restore him without any Terms at all.

Encouraging Prospect of the King's Affairs. The King's Affairs had a promising Aspect this Winter; his Forces in the North under the Earl of *Newcastle*, were superior to those of Sir *Thomas Fairfax*. In the Western and Mid-land Counties there were several Sieges and Rencounters with various Success, but nothing decisive. Divers Counties enter'd into Associations for their mutual Defence on both sides. The four northern Counties, of *Northumberland*, *Cumberland*, *Westmorland*, and *Durham*, associated for the King; after which the two Houses encouraged the like in those that owned their Authority, and appointed Generals to command their Troops; the Chief of which was the Eastern Association of *Essex*, *Cambridgeshire*, the Isle of *Ely*, *Hertford*, *Norfolk*, *Suffolk*, and the City of *Norwich*, whose Militia were trained, and ready to march where Necessity should require within their several Limits. In some Parts of *England* the Inhabitants resolved to stand Neuter, and not be concerned on either Side; but the Parliament condemned and disannull'd all such Agreements.

As the two Houses depended upon the Assistance of the *Scots*, his Majesty had Expectations of foreign Aids

Encouraging Prospect of the King's Affairs.

Rushw. Vol. V. p. 66.

Id. p. 94.

Aids from the Queen, who had endeavoured, by the Influence of her Son-in-law, the Prince of *Orange*, to engage the States of *Holland* in the King's Interest, but they wisely declared for a Neutrality; however, they connived at her private Negotiations, and gave her a general Passport, by virtue whereof she transported a very large Quantity of Arms and Ammunition to *Burlington Bay*, and conveyed them to the King at *York*. His Majesty also, in order to bring over the *Irish* Forces under the Command of the Duke of *Ormond*, consented to a Truce with the *Irish* Rebels, [sign'd *Sept. 15. 1643.*] in which he allow'd the *Catholicks* to remain in Possession of what they had conquered since the Rebellion, to the great Grief of the Protestants, who by this means were legally dispossessed of their Estates: A most unpopular Action in favour of a People who by their late Massacre were become the very Reproach and Infamy of human Nature! Thus the whole Kingdom was marshalled into Parties, with their drawn Swords eager to plunge them into each other Breasts.

King
Charles I.
1642.

Rushw.
Vol. V.
P. 537,
538, 539.

The Parliament Cause having a dark and threatening Aspect, the Lords and Commons were not forgetful to implore the divine Blessing upon their Counsels and Arms; for which Purpose they published an Ordinance, *Feb. 15. 1643.* exhorting to the Duty of Repentance, as the only Remedy to prevent publick Calamities. It was drawn up by some of the Puritan Divines; and because Bishop *Kennet* has branded it with the reproachful Characters of *Cant*, *broad Hypocrisy*, and a *Libel against the Church*, I will transcribe the Substance of it in their own Words.

Ordinance
of the Par-
liament
exhorting
to Repen-
tance.

“ That flourishing Kingdoms have been ruined,
“ by impenitent going on in a Course of Sin, the sa-
“ cred Story plainly tells us; and how near to Ruin
“ our sinful Nation now is, the present lamentable Face
“ of it does too plainly shew. And though we should
“ feel the heavy Strokes of God's Judgments yet

Rushw.
Vol. V.
P. 141.

King
Charles I.
1643.

“ seven Times more, it is our Duty to accept the
 “ Punishment of our Iniquities, and to say, *Righte-*
 “ *ous art thou, O Lord, and just are thy Judgments.*
 “ Yet, because the Lord, who is just, is also mer-
 “ ciful, and in his infinite Mercy has left the excel-
 “ lent and successful Remedy of *Repentance*, to Na-
 “ tions brought near to the Gates of Destruction and
 “ Despair, O ! let not *England* be negligent in the
 “ Application of it. Humble Addresses of a peni-
 “ tent People to a merciful God have prevailed with
 “ him : They prevailed for *Nineveh* when Sentence
 “ seemed to be gone out against her ; and may also
 “ prevail for *England*.

“ It is therefore thought necessary, by the Lords
 “ and Commons in Parliament assembled, that all
 “ his Majesty’s Subjects be stirred up to lay hold of
 “ this only, and unfailing Remedy of *Repentance*,
 “ freely acknowledging, and heartily bewailing,
 “ with deepest Humiliation, both their own perso-
 “ nal Sins, and those of the Nation ; a Confession of
 “ national Sins being most agreeable to the national
 “ Judgments under which the Land groans, and
 “ most likely to be effectual for the Removing of
 “ them.

“ Among the national Sins are to be reckoned,
 “ *The Contempt of God’s Ordinances, and of Holiness it*
 “ *self ; gross Ignorance, and Unfruitfulness under the*
 “ *Means of Grace ; multitudes of Oaths, Blasphemies,*
 “ *Profanation of the Sabbath by Sports and Games ;*
 “ *Luxury, Pride, Prodigality in Apparel, Oppression,*
 “ *Fraud, Violence, &c. A Connivance, and almost a*
 “ *Toleration of the Idolatry of Popery, the Massacre of*
 “ *Ireland, and the Bloodshed of the Martyrs in Queen*
 “ *Mary’s Time*, which having been a national Sin,
 “ still calls for a national Confession.

“ Now, that all the Sin and Misery of this pollu-
 “ ted and afflicted Nation may be bitterly sorrowed
 “ for, with such Grief of Heart, and preparedness
 “ for a thorough Reformation, as God may be plea-
 “ sed

“ sed graciously to accept, it is ordained that all
 “ Preachers of God’s Word do earnestly inculcate
 “ these Duties on their Hearers, that at length we
 “ may obtain a firm and happy Peace, both with
 “ God and Man, that Glory may dwell in our Land;
 “ and the Prosperity of the Gospel, with all the Pri-
 “ vileges accompanying it, may crown this Nation
 “ unto all succeeding Ages.”

King
 Charles I.
 1643.

The Reverend Prelate abovementioned makes the following Remark upon this Ordinance. “ When
 “ once the two Houses could descend to have such
 “ fulsome penitential Forms put upon them, to
 “ adopt, and to obtrude in their Name upon the
 “ Nation, it was a sure Sign, that all that was sound
 “ and decent in Faith and Worship was now to be
 “ commanded into Enthusiasm and endless Schisms.”
 I leave the Reader to examine, whether he can find
 any ground for so severe a Censure.

Though the King had rejected the *Scots Mediation*, *Treaty of*
 and *set up his Rest upon the Justice of his Cause*, he *Oxford*.
 was pleased, before the Beginning of the Campaign,
 to admit of a Treaty with his two Houses, for which
 Purpose he sent a safe Conduct to six Lords, and as
 many Commoners, with their Attendants, to repair
 to him at *Oxford*, who being admitted to an Audience
 in one of the Colleges, produced the following *Propo-*
sals, which were read by the Earl of *Northumberland*.

1. “ That the Armies may be disbanded on both
 “ Sides, and the King return to his Parliament.
2. “ That Delinquents may submit to a legal
 “ Trial, and Judgment of Parliament.
3. “ That all Papists be disbanded and disarmed.
4. “ That his Majesty will please to give his Con-
 “ sent to the five Bills hereafter mentioned.
5. “ That an Oath may be established by Act of
 “ Parliament, wherein the Papists shall abjure and
 “ renounce the Pope’s Supremacy, Transubstantia-
 “ tion,

The Par-
liament’s
Proposi-
tions.
 Rushw.
 Vol. V.
 p. 165;
 166.

King
Charles I.
1642.

tion, Purgatory, Worshipping the consecrated Host, Crucifixes and Images, and the refusing such Oath lawfully tender'd shall be a sufficient Conviction of Recusancy. — That your Majesty will graciously please to consent to a Bill for the Education of the Children of Papists in the Protestant Religion. — And to another Bill for the better putting the Laws in Execution against them.
6. " That the Earl of *Bristol*, and Lord *Herbert*, may be removed from your Majesty's Counsels, and from the Court.

7. " That the Militia may be settled in such Manner as shall be agreed upon by both Houses.

8. " That the chief Justices and Judges of the several Courts of Law may hold their Places *quam diu se bene gesserint*.

9. " That such Persons as have been put out of the Commission of the Peace since *April 1. 1642.* may be restored, and that those whom the Parliament shall except against be removed.

10. " That your Majesty will please to pass the Bill now presented, to secure the Privileges of Parliament from the ill Consequences of the late Proceedings against the Lord *Kimbolton* and the five Members.

11. " That an Act may be passed for satisfying such publick Debts as the Parliament has engaged the publick Faith for.

12. " That your Majesty will please to enter into Alliances with foreign Protestant Powers, for the Defence of the Protestant Religion, and recovering the *Palatinate*.

13. " That in the general Pardon, all Offences committed before the 10th of *Jan. 1641.* which have been, or shall be questioned in the House of Commons before the 10th of *Jan. 1643.* be excepted. — That all Persons concerned in the *Irish Rebellion* be excepted; as likewise, *William Earl of Newcastle*, and *George Lord Digby*.

14. " That such Members of Parliament as have
 " been turned out of their Places since the Beginning
 " of this Parliament may be restored, and may
 " have some Reparation, upon the Petition of both
 " Houses."

King
Charles I.
 1643.


These Things being granted and performed, we shall be enabled (say they) to make it our hopeful Endeavour, that your Majesty and your People may enjoy the Blessings of Peace, Truth, and Justice —

The Bills mentioned in the fourth Proposition were these :

The first is entitled, an *Act for the Suppression of di-* Bill a-
vers Innovations in Churches and Chapels in and about the gainst In-
Worship of God ; and for the due Observation of the Lord's novations.
Day, and the better Advancement of Preaching God's holy Husband's
Word in all Parts of this Kingdom. Collect.
 Fol. 119.

It enacts, " That all Altars and Rails be taken
 " away out of Churches and Chapels before April 18.
 " 1643. and that the Communion Table be fix'd in
 " some convenient Place in the Body of the Church.
 " That all Tapers, Candlesticks, Basons, Crucifixes,
 " Crosses, Images, Pictures of Saints, and supersti-
 " tious Inscriptions in Churches, or Church Yards,
 " be taken away or defaced.

" That all Damages done to the Churches, or
 " Windows of Churches, by the Removal of any of
 " the aforesaid Innovations, be repaired by the pro-
 " per Officers of the Parish or Chapel.

" This Act is not to extend to any Image, Pi-
 " cture, or Monument for the Dead.

It enacts further, " That all Bowing towards the Al-
 " tar, or at the Name of *Jesus*, shall be forborn ; and
 " for the better Observation of the Sabbath, that
 " all Dancing, Gaming, Sports and Pastimes, shall
 " be laid aside. That every Minister that has Cure
 " of Souls shall preach, or expound the Scriptures,
 " or procure some other able Divine to preach to
 " his

King Charles I. 1643. " his Congregation every Lord's Day in the Fore-
 noon; and it shall be lawful for the Parishioners
 " to provide for a Sermon in the Afternoon, and a
 " Lecture on the Week-Day, where there is no
 " other Lecture, or Preaching at the same Time;
 " and if any Person oppose or hinder them he shall
 " forfeit forty Shillings to the Poor.

Husb. Collect. Fol. 124. The second, entitled an *Act for the utter abolishing,*
and taking away of all Archbishops, Bishops, their Chancel-
lors, and Commissaries, &c. has been already inserted in
 the former Part of this History, Vol. II. p. 584.

For punish-
 ing scanda-
 lous Clergy. The third is entitled, an *Act for Punishing scanda-*
lous Clergymen, and others.

Husb. Collect. Fol. 129. It ordains, " That the Lord Chancellor, or Lord
 Keeper, for the Time being, shall award Com-
 missions under the great Seal, to Persons of Worth
 and Credit in every County of *England and Wales*;
 " which Commissioners, or any Three, or more of
 " them, shall have Power to enquire by the Oaths
 " of twelve lawful Men of the said County of the fol-
 " lowing Offences in the Clergy (*viz.*) not Preach-
 " ing six Times at least in a Year, by any ec-
 " clesiastical Person having Cure of Souls under
 " the Age of Sixty, and not hinder'd by Sick-
 " ness or Imprisonment: Of Blasphemy, Perjury,
 " or Subornation of Perjury, Fornication, Adultery,
 " common Ale-House or Tavern hunting, Drunkenness,
 " profane Swearing or Cursing, done or
 " committed within three Years past, by any Parson
 " or Vicar, or other Person having Cure of Souls,
 " or by any Lecturer, Curate, Stipendiary, School-
 " Master, or Usher of any School. The Commis-
 " sioners shall take Information by Articles in Writ-
 " ting; the Party complaining to be bound in a Re-
 " cognizance of ten Pounds to prosecute at a Time
 " appointed; the Articles of Complaint being first
 " delivered to the Party complain'd of, twenty Days
 " before the Trial, that he may prepare for his
 " Defence. Upon Conviction, by the Verdict of
 " twelve

“ twelve Men, the Party complained of shall be deprived of his spiritual Promotions, and be adjudged a disabled Person in Law, to have and enjoy the same Incumbency or ecclesiastical Promotion. This Act to continue till Nov. 1. 1645. and no longer.

King
Charles I.
1643.

The fourth is entitled, an *Act against the enjoying Pluralities of Benefices by spiritual Persons, and Non-Residence.*

It enacts, “ That all Persons that have two or more Benefices with Cure of Souls, of what yearly Value soever they be, shall resign them All but one, before April 1. 1643. any Licence, Toleration, Faculty, or Dispensation to the contrary notwithstanding.

Against
Pluralities
and Non-
Residence.
Husb. Coll.
Fol. 140.

“ That if any spiritual Person, having Cure of Souls, shall be absent from his Cure above ten Sundays, or eighty Days in a Year, except in case of Sicknes, Imprisonment, or except he be a Reader in either University, or be summoned to Convocation; and be thereof lawfully convicted in any Court of Justice, that his *Living* shall be deemed void, and the Patron have Power to nominate another Person, as if the former Incumbent was dead.

The fifth, *For calling an Assembly of learned and godly Divines to be consulted with by the Parliament, for the Settling of the Government and Liturgy of the Church, and for the Vindicating and Clearing of the Doctrine of the Church of England from false Aspersions and Interpretations,* will be inserted at large, when we come to the Sitting of the Assembly.

To the forementioned Propositions and Bills, his Majesty, after a sharp Reply to the Preamble, returned the following Answer; That though many of them were destructive of his just Power and Prerogative, yet because they might be mollified and explained upon Debates, he is pleased to agree, that a Time and

King and Place be appointed for the Meeting of Com-
Charles I. missioners on both Sides to discuss them, and to con-
 1647. sider of the following Proposals of his own.

- The King's* 1. " That his Majesty's Revenues, Magazines,
Proposals. " Towns, Forts, and Ships, may be forthwith re-
Rushw. " stored.
Vol. V. 2. " That whatsoever has been done, or publish-
p. 169. " ed contrary to the known Laws of the Land, and
 " his Majesty's legal Rights, may be renounced and
 " recalled.
 3. " That whatever illegal Power over his Maje-
 " sty's Subjects has been exercised by either, or
 " both Houses, or any Committee, may be dis-
 " claimed, and all Persons that have been im-
 " prisoned by virtue thereof be forthwith dis-
 " charged.
 4. " That a good Bill may be framed, for the
 " better preserving the Book of *Common Prayer* from
 " the Scorn and Violence of *Brownists*, *Anabaptists*,
 " and other Sectaries, with such Clauses for the Ease
 " of tender Consciences as his Majesty has formerly
 " offered.
 5. " That all Persons to be excepted out of the
 " general Pardon shall be tried *per Pares*, according to
 " common Course of Law, and that it be left to that,
 " to acquit or condemn them.
 6. " That in the mean Time there be a Cessation
 " of Arms, and free Trade for all his Majesty's Sub-
 " jects for twenty Days."

Rapin,
p. 69.

His Majesty desired the last Article might be first settled, by which he proposed not only to gain Time, but to provide himself with several Necessaries from *London*, and to convoy safely to *Oxford* the Ammunition and other Stores, the Queen had lately landed at *Burlington Bay*; but the Parliament were too sensible of his Designs to consent to it. They therefore empowered their Commissioners to begin with the first Propo-

Proposition, concerning *Restoring the Revenues of the King's Crown, and the Delivery of his Majesty's Magazines, Towns, Forts and Ships, &c.* All which they were authorized to agree, on condition the Persons with whom he would intrust them were such as they could confide in. To which the King replied, that the Oaths of the Officers were a sufficient Security, and if they abused their Trust he would leave them to the Law. The Commissioners then went upon the other Articles, and spun out the Treaty till the 12th of April, without concluding one single Point. The King would be restored to the Condition he was in before the War, upon a bare Promise, that he would govern for the future according to Law; but the Parliament were resolved not to trust themselves, nor the Constitution in his Hands, without the Redress of some Grievances, and a better Security. Mr. *Whitlock* says, That the Commissioners (of which he was one) having been with the King one Evening till Midnight, gave his Majesty such Reasons to consent to a very material Point, which would have much conduced to an happy Issue, and Success of the Treaty, that he told them, *He was fully satisfied, and promised to let them have his Answer in writing, according to their desire, next Morning.* But when the Commissioners were withdrawn, some of the King's Bed-Chamber, and they went higher, fearing the King's Concessions would tend to Peace, never left persuading him, till he had altered his Resolution, and gave Orders for the following Answer to be drawn up directly contrary to what he had promised the Commissioners.

King
Charles I.
1643.

Whitl.
Mem.
p. 65.

“ As soon as his Majesty is satisfied concerning
“ his own Revenue, Magazines, Ships and Forts,
“ in which he desires nothing, but that the just
“ known legal Rights of his Majesty, devolved to
“ him from his Progenitors, and of the Persons
“ trusted by him, which have violently been
“ taken

Rushw.
Vol. V.
p. 259,
260.

King Charles I. " taken from both, be restored to him and
 " them ———

1643.

" As soon as all the Members of both Houses
 " shall be restored to the same Capacity of sitting and
 " voting in Parliament, as they had on the 1st of
 " Jan. 1641. the same Right belonging unto them
 " by their Birthrights, and the free Elections of
 " those that sent them; and having been voted from
 " them for adhering to his Majesty in these Distrac-
 " tions; his Majesty not intending that this should
 " extend either to the Bishops, whose Votes have
 " been taken away by Bill; or to such in whose
 " Places, upon new Writs new Elections have been
 " made;

" As soon as his Majesty and both Houses may
 " be secured from such tumultuous Assemblies, as
 " to the great Breach of the Privileges, and the high
 " Dishonour of Parliaments, have formerly assembled
 " about both Houses, and awed the Members of the
 " same; and occasioned two several Complaints from
 " the House of Lords, and two several Desires of that
 " House to the House of Commons, to join in a
 " Declaration against them, the complying with
 " which Desire might have prevented all the misera-
 " ble Distractions which have ensued; which Se-
 " curity his Majesty conceives can be only settled by
 " adjourning the Parliament to some other Place,
 " at the least twenty Miles from *London*, the Choice
 " of which his Majesty leaves to both Houses.

" His Majesty will then most chearfully and readi-
 " ly consent, that both Armies be immediately dis-
 " banded, and give a present Meeting to both his
 " Houses of Parliament, at the same Time and
 " Place, at, and to which the Parliament shall agree
 " to be adjourned.

" His Majesty being confident, that the Law will
 " then recover the due Credit and Estimation, and
 " that upon a free Debate, in a full and peaceable
 " Convention of Parliament, such Provisions will
 " be

“ be made against seditious Preaching and Printing
 “ against his Majesty, and the established Laws,
 “ which hath been one of the chief Causes of the
 “ present Distractions; and such Care will be taken
 “ concerning the legal and known Rights of his Ma-
 “ jesty, and the Property and Liberty of his Sub-
 “ jects, that whatsoever hath been published or done
 “ in, or by Colour of any illegal Declarations, Or-
 “ dinances, or Order of one or both Houses, or
 “ any Committee of either of them, and particular-
 “ ly the Power to raise Arms without his Majesty’s
 “ Consent, will be in such manner recalled, dis-
 “ claimed, and provided against, that no Seed will
 “ remain for the like to spring out of for the future,
 “ to disturb the Peace of the Kingdom, and to en-
 “ danger the very Being of it —

King
 Charles I.
 1643.

This resolute Answer broke off the Treaty, and left the Quarrel to be decided by the Sword; upon which Bishop Kennet makes the following Remark,
 “ ’Tis to be lamented, that some of the King’s most
 “ intimate Friends were against his concluding a
 “ Peace, and Others were against his obtaining
 “ an absolute Victory. They were afraid he should
 “ comply, lest his Prerogative might not be great
 “ enough to protect him; and yet afraid he should
 “ conquer, lest he might be tempted to assume an
 “ arbitrary Power.” ’Tis plain from hence, that
 by *Peace* the King meant nothing but being restored to all the Prerogatives of his Crown as before the War, without any additional Security; and that there was no room for a Treaty till the previous Question was determined, *Whether there was just Reason to confide in the King, and restore him to his Rights upon his bare Promise of governing by Law for the future?* For all the Propositions necessarily lead to this Point, and till this was decided it was in vain to lose Time upon the others.

Compl.
 Hist.
 p. 135.

King
Charles I.
1643.
Death and
Character
of Dr.
Crisp.

Thus ended the Year 1642. in which died the famous *Tobias Crisp*, D. D. third Son of *Ellis Crisp*, of *London*, Esq; He was born in *Bread-Street*, *London*, 1600. educated at *Eaton School*, and having took the Degree of Batchelor of Arts at *Cambridge* retired to *Oxford*, and was incorporated into *Baliol College* in the Beginning of *Feb. 1626*. In the Year 1627. he became Rector of *Brinkworth* in *Wiltshire*, and a few Years after proceeded D. D. At *Brinkworth* he was much followed for his edifying Manner of Preaching, and for his great Hospitality. Upon the Breaking out of the War he was obliged to fly to *London*, to avoid the Insolencies of the King's Soldiers; where his peculiar Sentiments about the Doctrines of *Grace* being discovered, he met with a vigorous Opposition from the City Divines. The Doctor in his younger Years had been a Favourer of *Arminianism*, but changing his Opinions, he ran into the contrary Extream of *Antinomianism*. He was certainly a learned and religious Person, modest and humble in his Behaviour, fervent and laborious in his ministerial Work, and exact in his Morals. Mr. *Lancaster*, the Publisher of his Works, says, " That his Life was so innocent
" and harmless from all Evil; so zealous and fervent
" in all Good, that it seemed to be designed as a
" practical Confutation of the Slander of those who
" would insinuate, that his Doctrine tended to Li-
" centiousness." The Doctor was possessed of a very large Estate, with which he did a great deal of Good; but being engaged in a grand Dispute against several Opponents (if we may believe Mr. *Wood*) he over-heated himself, and fell Sick of the Small-Pox, of which he died *Feb. 27. 1642.* and was buried in the Family Vault in *Bread-street*, *London*. In his last Sickness he was in a most comfortable and resigned Frame of Mind, and declared to them that stood by his firm Adherence to the Doctrines he had preached; that as he had lived in the Belief of the Free Grace of God through Christ, so he did now with Confidence

dence and great Joy, even as much as his present Condition was capable of, resign his Life and Soul into the Hands of his heavenly Father. He published nothing in his Life-time, but after his Death his Sermons were published in three Volumes from his own Notes, which with some Additions, were reprinted by his Son, in one Volume Quarto, about the Year 1689. and gave Occasion to some intemperate Heats among the Non-Conformist Ministers of those Times.

King
Charles I.
1643.

Towards the End of this Year died *Robert Lord Brooke*, a virtuous and religious Gentleman, a good Scholar, and Patriot of his Country, but a determined Enemy of the Hierarchy. In the Beginning of the War he took part with the Parliament, and being made Lord Lieutenant of the Counties of *Warwick* and *Stafford*, put himself at the Head of twelve Hundred Men, and marched against the Earl of *Chesterfield* at *Litchfield*, whom he dislodged from the Town, *March 1.* but next Day as he was looking out of a Window with his Beaver up, and giving Direction to his Soldiers to assault *St. Chad's Church*, adjoining to the Close where the Earl of *Chesterfield's* Forces lay, a Musket Ball struck him near the left Eye, of which he instantly died. The Parliamentary Chronicle calls him "the most noble, and ever to be honoured, and renowned, pious Lord *Brooke*, whose most illustrious Name and Memory, both for his Piety, Prudence, incomparable Magnanimity, and heroick martial Spirit, for his Loyalty to the King, and Fidelity to his Country, deserves to remain deeply engraven in Letters of Gold on high erected Pillars of Marble." On the other hand Archbishop *Laud* in his Diary, has some very remarkable Observations upon his Death, which shew the Superstition of that Prelate. "First, (says his Grace) I observe, that this great and known Enemy to Cathedral Churches died thus fearfully, in the Assault of a *Cathedral*; a fearful Manner of Death in such a Quarrel! Secondly, That this happen'd upon

Lord
Brooke's
Death.

p. 272.

Diary,
p. 201.

King Charles I. 1643. " *St. Chad's* Day, of which Saint the Cathedral bears the Name. *Thirdly*, That this *Lord* coming from " Dinner about two Years since from the *Lord Herbert's* House in *Lambeth*, upon some Discourse of *St. Paul's* Church then in their Eye upon the Water, " said to some young Lords that were with him, " That he hoped to live to see that one Stone of that " Building should not be left upon another; but that " Church stands yet, and that Eye is put out, that " hoped to see the Ruins of it."

Tomkins's Plot. Rushw. Vol. V. p. 322. Rapin, p. 150, 154. While the *Treaty of Oxford* was depending his Majesty's Friends in the City were contriving to bring him to *London*, and deliver the Parliament into his Hands. Mr. *Tomkins*, *Chaloner*, and *Waller* a Member of the House of Commons, in Conjunction with some others were to carry off the King's Children, to secure the most active Members of the House of Commons, as Mr. *Pym*, *Hampden*, *Strode*, &c. to seize the *Tower* and the Gates of the City with the Magazines, and to let in a Party of the royal Forces, who were to be at hand; for all which they had the King's Commission, dated *March* 16, 1643. The Day of Rising was to be the last *Wednesday* in *May*: but the Plot was discovered by a Servant of *Tomkins's* before it was ripe for Execution, upon which the Conspirators were apprehended and tried; *Tomkins* and *Chaloner* confessed the Facts, and were executed; but *Waller* purchased his Life for ten Thousand Pounds, and was banished.

A new Oath or Covenant. Rushw. Vol. V. p. 325. Upon this Discovery both Houses resolved to strengthen themselves by a new *Covenant* or *Vow*, which was tender'd first to their own Members, then to the Army, and such of the People as were willing to take it. In it they declare, " Their Abhorrence " of the late Plot, and engage not to lay down " their Arms as long as the Papists were protected " from Justice, but to assist the Parliament according to their Abilities in the just Defence of the " Protestant Religion, and the Liberties of the Sub-
ject,

“ject, against the Forces raised by the King, without
 “their Consent.” Nevertheless the King’s Friends were
 not disheartened from entering into several other Com-
 binations against the Parliament; one was discovered in
August, and another towards the latter End of the Year:
 Even the lower Sort of Women, to the Number of
 two or three Thousand, with white silk Ribbons in
 their Hats, went in a Body to *Westminster* with a Pe-
 tition for Peace upon the King’s Terms, and could
 not be dispersed without the military Arm: All which
 was occasioned by the Correspondence the King held
 in *London*, in Defiance of the Ordinance the Parlia-
 ment had published in *April* last, to prevent Spies and
 Intelligences from *Oxford* or the royal Army, coming
 to any part of the Parliament’s Quarters.

King
 Charles I.
 1643.

Rushw.
 Vol. V.
 P. 357.

The King having failed in his Designs of surprizing
 the City, resolved at last to starve the Citizens into
 their Duty, for which Purpose he issued a Proclama-
 tion, *July* 17. prohibiting all Intercourse of Trade
 and Commerce with them, and expressly forbidding all
 Persons to travel to *London*, or to carry any Goods,
 Merchandize, or Provisions thither, without special
 Licence from himself. By another Proclamation,
 [*Octob.* 17.] his Majesty forbids his Subjects of *Scot-*
land, and all foreign Kingdoms and States in Amity
 with him, to bring any Ammunition, Provision,
 Goods, or Merchandize, of any Sort to *London*, or
 any other Town or City in Rebellion against him.
 The Prohibiting foreign Merchandizes had very little
 Influence upon the Trade of the City, because the
 Parliament were Masters of the Seas; but the Town
 of *Newcastle* being garrisoned by the King, the *Lon-*
doners were distressed the following Winter for Coals,
 which obliged them to have Recourse to the digging
 Turf, and cutting down all fell Wood on the Estates of
Delinquents within sixty Miles of *London*. By another
 Proclamation his Majesty forbid all his Subjects, up-
 on Pain of high Treason, to obey the Orders of Par-
 liament; and all Tenants to pay their Rents to such

Proclama-
 tions a-
 gainst the
 City of
 London.
 Husb. Col.
 Fol. 237.
 366.

King Landlords as adhered to the Rebellion, but to reserve
Charles I. them for his Majesty's Use.

1643.

The People
reduc'd to
great
Hardships.

After this Account of Things 'tis reasonable to suppose, that very extraordinary Burdens must be laid upon the People on both Sides to support the Expences of the War. The Parliament at *Westminster* Excised every Thing, even the Necessaries of Life: All *Butchers Meat* paid one Shilling in twenty; every *Rabbit* an half Penny; and *Pigeons* one Penny in the Dozen. The King's Parliament at *Oxford* did the like in his Majesty's Quarters; and by an Ordinance of *March 26.* following, all Persons and Families within the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and the Bills of Mortality, were to pay the weekly Value of *one Meal* a Week, on every *Tuesday*, for the publick Service, which they were supposed to abate in their Families. Such were the Hardships of the Times!

Success of
the King's
Affairs.

Rapin,
p. 98, 99.

The King's Affairs this Summer were very prosperous, and threaten'd the Ruin of his Enemies; for besides his Army, which had been recruiting in the Winter, the Queen furnished him with foreign Money, and with two Thousand Foot, a Thousand Horse, a Hundred Waggon laden with Ammunition of all Sorts, six Pieces of Cannon, and two Mortars. Upon which the House of Commons impeached her of *High Treason*, for levying Forces without Consent of Parliament. In the Month of *April* the Earl of *Essex* besieged and took the Town of *Reading*, from whence he marched within ten Miles of *Oxford*, where Prince *Rupert* with a Party of Horse beat up his Quarters, and killed the Famous Mr. *Hampden* in *Chalgrave Field*, after which *Essex* retired, and put his sickly Forces into Quarters of Refreshment. In the North the King's Armies had a Train of Successes. Lord *Fairfax* was defeated by the Earl of *Newcastle* at *Atherston Moor*, *June 30.* and Sir *William Waller* at the Battles of *Lansdown* and *Roundaway Down*, *July 5th* and *13th.* which was followed with the Loss
of

of *Weymouth, Dorchester, Portland Castle, Exeter,* and almost all the West. About the latter End of *July* King Charles I. 1643. Prince *Rupert* besieged and took the City of *Bristol*, and the King himself sat down before *Gloucester* [*Aug. 10th.*] which so alarmed the two Houses, that the Shops in *London* were ordered to be shut till the Siege was raised, and a strong Body of the Train'd Bands dispatched to join the Earl of *Essex's* broken Troops, who, by this Means, was in a Condition in fifteen Days to march to the Relief of that important City; upon the Earl's Approach the King raised the Siege, and *Essex* enter'd the Town, when reduced to the last Extremity; and having supplied it with all Necessaries, after three Days returned towards *London*. The King being joined by Prince *Rupert* with five Thousand Horse, got before him to *Newbury*, where both Armies engaged with pretty equal Success, till Night parted them, when his Majesty retired toward *Oxford*, and left the Way open for the Earl to pursue his March. In this Battle the City Trained Bands, by their undaunted Bravery, are said to have gained immortal Honour. But it is the Opinion of most Historians, that if instead of sitting down before *Gloucester*, the King had marched his victorious Army directly to *London* after the taking of *Bristol*, he might have put an End to the War, the Parliament being in no Readiness to oppose him; however 'tis certain, that about this Time the King's Cause was in the Height of its Prosperity, and the Parliament's at so low an Ebb, that they were obliged to throw themselves into the Hands of the *Scots*. But it is no Part of my Design to give a particular Description of Sieges and Battles, or a Recital of the warlike Exploits of the Heroes of these Times, any further than to inform the Reader of the true Situation of Affairs, and to enable him to form a just Idea of the Grounds and Reasons of those extraordinary Measures that each Party took for the Support of

King their Cause. Let us now attend the Affairs of the Charles I. Church.

1643.

The Clergy on both Sides had a deep Share in the Calamities of the Times, being plunder'd, harras'd, imprison'd, and their Livings sequester'd, as they fell into the Hands of the Enemy. The King's Party were greatly incens'd against the *Puritan Clergy*, as the chief Incendiaries of the People and Trumpeeters of Rebellion. Such as refused to read the King's Proclamations and Orders against the Parliament were apprehended, and shut up in the common Gaols of *York*, and other Places within his Majesty's Quarters. When any Parties of the royal Army got Possession of a Town that adher'd to the Parliament, they enquired presently for the *Minister's House*, which was rifled and plunder'd of every Thing that was valuable, and himself imprisoned, if he could be found; but the *Incumbents* usually took Care to avoid the Danger, by flying to the next Parliament Garrison. Above thirty *Puritan Ministers* took Shelter in the City of *Coventry* after the Fight of *Edge-Hill*. Great Numbers came to *London* with their Families in a naked and starving Condition, leaving their Books, and every Thing they could not bring away, to the Mercy of the King's Soldiers. The Prisoners underwent uncommon Hardships, and would have been executed as *Rebels*, if the Parliament had not threaten'd Reprisals.

And of the
Episcopal.

Walker's
Suff. Cler.
Part II.
p. 180.

On the other hand, the *Episcopal Clergy* were no less harrassed by the Parliament Soldiers; these being in Possession of the best Livings in the Church were liable to suffer most Damage; Multitudes of them left their Cures, and took Sanctuary in the King's Armies or Garrisons, having disposed of their Goods and Chattles in the best Manner they could. Others that had render'd themselves obnoxious by their Sermons, or Declarations for the King, were put under Confinement in *Lambeth*, *Winchester*, *Ely*, and most of

of the Bishops Houses about *London*; and for want of Room about twenty (according to Dr. *Walker*) were imprisoned on Board of Ships in the River *Thames*, and shut down under Decks, no Friend being suffered to come to them. The same Writer observes, that about one Hundred and ten of the *London* Clergy were turned out of their Livings in the Years 1642, and 1643. and that as many more fled to prevent Imprisonment; but it ought to be remember'd, that none were turned out or imprisoned, for their adhering to the Doctrine or Discipline of the Church of *England*, till after the imposing of the *Scots* Covenant, but for Immorality, false Doctrine, Non-Residence, or for taking Part with the King against the Parliament. However it is to be lamented, that several pious and good Bishops, and other Clergymen, who withdrew from the World, and were desirous to live peaceably without joining either Side, suffered afterwards in common with the rest of their Brethren; their Estates and Livings being sequester'd, their Houses and Goods very often plunder'd by ungovernable Soldiers, and themselves reduced to live upon the *Fifths*, or a small Pension from the Parliament, either because they could not take the *Covenant*, or comply with the new Directory for publick Worship. Among these we may reckon the most Reverend Archbishop *Usher*, Bishop *Morton*, *Hall*, and many others. When the Bishops Lands were seized for the Service of the War, which was called *Bellum Episcopale* or the *Bishops War*, it was not possible to shew Favour to any under that Character; and though the two Houses voted very considerable Pensions to some of the Bishops, in lieu of their Lands that were sequester'd, due Care was not taken of the Payment; nor would several of their Lordships so far countenance the Votes of the Houses as to apply for it.

In order to account for these Things, it will be necessary to set before the Reader the Proceedings of the several Committees of Religion from the Beginning of

King
Charles I.
1643.

Commit-
tees for
Religion.

King of the present Parliament. It has been remember'd,
 Charles I. that a grand Committee, consisting of the whole
 1643. House of Commons, was appointed *Novemb. 6th.*
 Walker's 1640. to enquire into the *scandalous Immoralities of the*
 Attempt, Clergy, of which the Famous Mr. *White*, Member of
 p. 63. Parliament for *Southwark*, a good Lawyer, and, ac-
 cording to Mr. *Whitlock*, an honest, learned, and
 faithful Servant of the Publick, was Chairman.
 Great Numbers of Petitions, with Articles of Mis-
 behaviour were brought before them, relating to Su-
 perstition, Heresy, or the Immorality of their Mi-
 nisters, insomuch that the House was forced to branch
 the Committee into several Sub-divisions, for the
 quicker Dispatch of Business. *Nov. 19. 1640.* a Sub-
 Committee was appointed "to consider how there may
 be *preaching Ministers* set up where there are none ;
 " how they may be maintained where there is no
 " Maintenance, and all other Things of that Na-
 " ture ; also to enquire into the true Grounds and
 " Causes of the great Scarcity of preaching Ministers
 " throughout the Kingdom, and to consider of some
 " Way of removing scandalous Ministers, and put-
 " ting others in their Places." For which Purposes
 the Knights and Burgeses of the several Corporations
 were ordered to bring Informations within six Weeks,
 of the State of Religion in their respective Counties.
 This Sub-Committee consisted of Sixty one Members,
 together with the Knights and Burgeses of *Northum-*
berland, Wales, Lancashire, Cumberland, and the Bur-
 geses of *Canterbury*. Mr. *White* was Chairman of
 this, as well as of the grand Committee ; they had
 their regular Meetings in the *Court of Wards*, and
 from the *Powers* abovementioned, were sometimes
 called the Committee for *preaching Ministers*, but
 more usually for *scandalous Ministers*. They had the
 Inspection of all Hospitals and Free-Schools, and
 were authorized to consider of the Expediency of
 sending Commissions into the several Counties, to
 examine such Clergymen as were accused, and
 could

Committee
 for scanda-
 lous Mini-
 sters.

could not with Convenience be brought up to ^{King} *London.* ^{Charles I.} ^{1643.}

But Presentments against the Clergy came in so fast, that for the Dispatch of Business they were obliged to divide again into several smaller Committees, which from the Names of the Gentlemen in the respective Chairs, were called Mr. *White's*, *Corbet's*, Sir *Robert Harlow's*, and Sir *Edward Deering's* Committees, &c. Within a short Space above two Thousand Petitions were brought before them, of which Mr. *Corbet's* Committee had no less than nine Hundred. But great Complaints have been made of their Severity, by those who will not believe the Clergy were so corrupt as really they were; nor remember the political Principles for which most of them suffer'd. The Orders of the Committees were certainly unexceptionable, for they were obliged to give proper Notice to the Party accused to make his Appearance; the Witnesses were usually examined upon Oath in his Presence; a Copy of the Articles was given him if desired, and a reasonable Time assigned to prepare for his Defence. The Articles of Enquiry on which they proceeded were, 1. Scandalous Immoralities of Life, as Drunkenness, Swearing, Incontinency, and sometimes Blasphemy and Sodomy. 2. False or scandalous Doctrines, *i. e.* Popish and Arminian, these being understood to be inconsistent with the Articles of the Church of *England*. 3. Profanation of the Sabbath, by reading and countenancing the Book of Sports. 4. Practising and pressing the late Innovations, after they had been censur'd by the Parliament as illegal. 5. Neglect of their Cures, by not Preaching according to their Duty. 6. Malignancy and Disaffection to the Parliament, discovered by their assisting his Majesty with Money, and perswading others to do so; by reading the King's Declarations, and refusing to read the Parliament's; by not observing the Parliament's Fasts, but calling them *Rebels*, *Traytors*, and *wishing the Curse of God upon*

King upon them and their Cause. These were apprehended Charles I. reasonable Matters of Enquiry, and just Grounds of Exception, as Matters stood between the King and the two Houses. But after all, the final Determination was not with the Committee; their Opinion, with the Evidence, was first laid before the grand Committee, then it was reported to the whole House, and finally referr'd to the House of Lords before it was decisive. One would think, here should be little room for Complaint, and yet there was too much Passion and Prejudice on both Sides, which was owing to the Confusion of the Times, and the violent Resentments of each Party. The Commissioners were sometimes too forward in exposing the Failings of the Clergy, and encouraging Witnesses of slender Credit; on the other hand, the Clergy were insufferably rude to the Committee, defaming the Witnesses, and threatening Revenge, for being obliged to plead their Cause before Laymen. However, few Clergymen were sequester'd by the Committee for scandalous Ministers before it was joined with that for *plunder'd Ministers*; an Account of which I shall lay before the Reader, after I have given two or three Examples of the Proceedings of the present Committee, from the Relations of those Clergymen who have left behind them an Account of their own Sufferings.

Reverend Mr. Symmonds of Rayne, his Case. The first is Mr. Symmonds, of Rayne in Essex, who acknowledges, That he was sequester'd for preaching and publishing, that *the King being the supreme Magistrate hath immediate Dependance on God, to whom alone he is accountable — That Authority is a sacred Thing, and essential to the King's Person — That Resistance is against the Way of God, destructive to the whole Law of God, inconsistent with the Spirit of the Gospel, the perpetual Practice of Christianity, the Calling of Ministers, common Prudence, the Rule of Humanity, Nature it self, Reason, the Oath of Allegiance, and even the late Protestation.* Besides, he had notoriously defamed the Parliament, and press'd his Auditors to believe the

Suff. Clergy, p. 67.

the King's Declarations, *because a divine Sentence was in his Mouth, and he cannot err.* And that if David's Heart smote him for cutting off Saul's Garment, what would it have done if he had kept him from his Castles, Towns, and Ships? For which Reasons the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, ordered [March 3, 1642.] his Living to be sequestered into the Hands of Robert Atkins, M. A. who was appointed to preach every Lord's Day till further Order. Mr. Symmonds endeavoured to discredit the Evidence, but was so far from disowning the Charge, that he afterwards vindicated it in a Pamphlet entitled, *The loyal Subject's Belief.*

King
Charles I.
1643.

A second Gentleman, who has left an Account of his Sufferings, is the Reverend Mr. Squire of Shore-ditch; he was articted against for “*practising and presing the late Innovations, for saying the Papists were the King's best Subjects, because of their Loyalty and Liberality; for declaring that none should come to the Sacrament, unless they were as well affected to the King as the Papists; for comparing his Majesty to the Man that fell among Thieves, being wounded in his Honour, and robbed of his Castles, and of the Hearts of his People; that the Priest passing by, was the Protestant; the forward Professor the Levite, but the Papist was the good Samaritan; and for affirming, that the King's Subjects, and all that they had were at his command.*” Mr. Squire denied some of these Articles, and extenuated others; he procured a Certificate from several of his Parishioners of his Diligence in Preaching, in Catechising, and in beating down Popery, for thirty Years past, all which might be true; but Dr. Walker admits, that from the Beginning of the War he was a most strenuous Champion for Allegiance; that is, for Passive-Obedience and Non-Resistance, and most earnestly exhorted his People to the Practice of it, which, as the Times then were, might be a sufficient Reason for the Parliament to silence him.

Rev. Mr.
Squire's
of Shore-
ditch.
Suff. Cler.
p. 67.

Ibid.
p. 176.

King
Charles I.
1643.

Rev. Mr.
Finch of
Christ
Church.
Walker's
Attempt,
p. 71.

p. 72.

The other Clergyman is Mr. *Finch* of *Christ Church*, who was articted against for *Extortion, Superstition, Non-Residence, and Neglect of his Cure, and for being a common Swearer, Tavern-Hunter, and Drunkard*, which was proved by very substantial Evidence. Dr. *Walker's* Defence of this Gentleman is very remarkable, "Common Charity (says he) will oblige every one to give more Credit to the bare Word of a Clergyman, though in his own Vindication, than to that of his known and profess'd Enemies." And yet in the next Page he owns, he was not satisfied in Mr. *Finch's* Character, nor in some Parts of his Defence, in which he thinks, he does by no Means acquit himself from having been a Man of an ill Life. His Case was reported by the grand Committee to the House of Commons, and by them to the *Lords*, who all agreed that he was unfit to hold any ecclesiastical Living.

It must be left with the impartial World to judge, Whether the Parliament had reason to sequester these Clergymen, in their own Defence? The last was a Man of an immoral Life, and the two former, allowing them to be otherwise good Men, were certainly Incendiaries against the two Houses, and preached up those Doctrines which were inconsistent with the Constitution and Laws of their Country, as most of the parochial Clergy at that Time did.

Commit-
tee for
plunder'd
Ministers.

The Committee for PLUNDERED MINISTERS took its Rise from those Puritan Clergymen, who being driven from their Cures in the Country by the King's Soldiers fled to *London* with their Families, leaving their Substance and Household Furniture to the Mercy of the Enemy: These being reduced to very great Poverty, applied to the Parliament for Relief; the Commons first ordered a charitable Collection for them at their monthly Fast, and four Days after, viz. *December 31. 1642.* appointed a Committee to consider of the fittest Way for the Relief of such godly and well affected Ministers as have been
plun-

plunder'd ; and what malignant Clergymen have Benefices in and about the Town, whose Benefices being sequester'd may be supplied by others who may receive their Profits. King
Charles I.
1643.

The Names of the Committee were Mr. Solicitor, Mr. Martyn, Sir Gilbert Gerrard, Sir William Armyn, Mr. Prideaux, Mr. Holland, Mr. Rouse, Mr. Case, Mr. Knightly, Sir William Hayman, Mr. Wentworth, Mr. Ruthen, Mr. Wheeler, and Mr. Spurstow, to whom were afterwards added some others ; among whom Dr. Walker supposes was the Famous Mr. White, p. 73. who sat in the Chair of this Committee, March 2. 1643. The Commissioners were upon their Oath ; any Four had a Power to act ; they were distinguished by the Name of the *Committee for plundered Ministers* ; but the Royalists, by way of Reproach, called them the *Committee for plundering Ministers*. They began their Meetings in the Court of *Exchequer*, Jan. 2. in the Afternoon ; two Days after, they were ordered to examine the Complaints against Dr. Soam, Minister of *Twittenham* and *Stains*, to send for Parties and Witnesses, to consider of proper Persons to supply the Cures, to apply the Revenues to their Use if they found it necessary, and to report the whole to the House. July 27. 1643. they were empowered to consider of Informations against *scandalous Ministers*, though there were no *Malignancy* proved against them, and to put out such whose Scandal was sufficiently proved ; from which Time the Committee for *scandalous and plundered Ministers* were in a sort united, and so continued to the End of the Long Parliament.

In order to silence the Clamours of the Royalists, and justify the severe Proceedings of these Committees, it was resolved to print the Cases of those whom they ejected, and submit their Conduct to the publick Censure ; accordingly, towards the latter End of the Year Mr. WHITE the Chairman published a Pamphlet, entitled, *The first Century of scandalous malignant Priests, made and admitted into Benefices by* White's
Century
of scandalous
Ministers.
the

King Charles I. 1643. *the Prelates, in whose Hands the Ordination of Ministers, and Government of the Church hath been; or, a Narration of the Causes for which the Parliament has ordered the Sequestration of the Benefices of several Ministers complained of before them, for Viciousness of Life, Errors in Doctrine, contrary to the Articles of our Religion, and for practising and pressing superstitious Innovations against Law, and for Malignancy against the Parliament. The Author in his Preface says, The Reason of his appearing in print was, That the Parliament might appear just in their Doings, that the Mouth of Iniquity might be stopt; that all the World might see, that the Tongues of them that speak Evil of the Parliament are set on Fire of Hell; that they hide themselves under Falshood, and make Lies their Refuge. And then adds, That the grossest Faults which were charged on the Clergy were proved by many Witnesses, seldom less than six. The whole Century were convicted of Maliginity, or Disaffection to the Parliament; and about Eighty of them of scandalous Immoralities in their Lives. Dr. Walker has endeavoured to recover the Reputation of Seven or Eight, and would insinuate that the rest were convicted upon too slender Evidence, the Witnesses not being always upon Oath, nor in his Opinion, of sufficient Credit to impeach a Clergyman; that some of the Crimes were capital, and therefore if they had been prov'd, must have touch'd not only the Livings but the Lives of the Criminals; and that the Parliament who set up for precise Morals, accepted the meer verbal Evidence of the most infamous People. However the Doctor himself has admitted and confirmed the Centurist's Account of many of these scandalous Ministers, by the Enquiries he has made into their Characters in the Places from whence they were ejected. Mr. Fuller confesses, " That several " of the Offences of the Clergy were so foul, that it " is a Shame to report them, crying to Justice for " Punishment." But then adds in favour of others, " That Witnesses against them were seldom exami- " ned*

“ ned on Oath. That many of the Complainers
 “ were factious People. That some of the Clergy
 “ were convicted for delivering Doctrines that were
 “ disputable, and others only for their Loyalty.”
 Bishop Kennet says, That several of them were Vicious
 to a Scandal. And Mr. Archdeacon *Eachard* is of
 the same Mind. But Mr. *Baxter's* Testimony is
 more particular and decisive, who says, “ That in
 “ all the Countries where he was acquainted *fix to*
 “ *one at least*, if not many more, that were seque-
 “ ster'd by the Committees, were by the Oaths of
 “ Witnesses proved insufficient or scandalous, or
 “ especially guilty of Drunkenness and Swearing.
 “ *This I know* (says the Reverend Author) *will dis-*
 “ *please the Party, but I am sure that this is true.*”

King
Charles I.
1643.

Baxter's
Life, p. 74.

’Tis impossible to account for the particular Pro-
 ceedings of all the Committees, of which great Out-
 cries have been made by the Friends of the Sufferers.
 “ If the meanest and most vicious Parishioners could
 “ be brought to prefer a Petition against their *Parson*
 “ to the House of Commons, how falsely soever,
 “ (says Lord *Clarendon*) he was sure to be prosecuted
 “ for a scandalous Minister.” His Lordship adds,
 “ That the Committees accepted of the Evidence
 “ not only of mean People, but of them who were
 “ professed Enemies of the Discipline of the Church ;
 “ that they baited the Clergy with rude and uncivil
 “ Language ; that they obliged them to a long and
 “ tedious Attendance, and were very partial in vo-
 “ ting them out of their Livings, right or wrong.”
 In another Place he says, “ That these Com-
 “ plaints were frequently exhibited by a few of the
 “ Meanest of the People against the Judgment of the
 “ Parish.” The like Account is given by most of
 the Royalists ; but the Writers on the Side of the
 Parliament deny the Charge, and complain as loudly
 of the contemptuous Behaviour of the King’s Clergy
 to the Commissioners, treating them as a Combina-
 tion of illiterate Laymen, who had nothing to do

Their Pro-
ceedings
censur’d.

Suff. Cler.
p. 65.

King
Charles I.
1643.

with the Church; nay, as Rebels and Traytors. Some refused to obey their Summons, and others that appeared took up their Time in examining the Spelling of Words, the Propriety of Grammar, and other little Evasions, foreign to the Purpose. They declared roundly, they did not own the Tribunal before which they stood; they insulted the Witnesses, and threaten'd Reprisals out of Court; when Things should revert to their former Channel; and upon the whole behaved as if they had engrossed all the Law, Learning, and good Sense of the Nation to themselves. The Commissioners, provoked with this Usage, were obliged to behave with some Sharpness, in order to support their own Authority; they would not indulge them the peculiar Privilege they claimed as Clergymen, nor allow them as Scholars to debate the Truth of those Doctrines of which they were accused, but confined them to Matters of Fact. When they excepted against the Witnesses as ignorant Mechanics, factious, schismatical, Enemies to the Church, &c. they over-ruled their Exceptions, as long as there were no legal Objections to their Competency or Credibility.

Country
Commit-
tees.

With regard to the *Country Committees*, the Commissioners were chosen out of the Deputy Lieutenants, and the best Country Gentlemen in the Parliament Interest. Most of the Crimes for which the Clergy were sequester'd were confessed by themselves; Superstition and false Doctrine were hardly ever objected, but far the greatest Part, if not all, were cast out for *Malignity*; and yet the Proceedings of the Sequestrators were not always justifiable; for whereas a Court of Judicature should rather be Counsel for the Prisoner, the Commissioners considered the King's Clergy as most dangerous Enemies, and were therefore ready to lay hold of all Opportunities to discharge them their Pulpits.

Their In-
structions.

But whatever might be the Excesses, or Partiality of particular Committees, no reasonable Blame can be

be laid upon the two Houses, whose Instructions were, in my Opinion, unexceptionable: The Words of the Ordinance are these, —“ And to the End that
 “ those who will appear before the Committee may
 “ have the Witnesses examined in their Presence, it is
 “ further ordained, that Summonses, with sufficient
 “ Warning of the Time and Place, when and where
 “ the Charge against them shall be proved, be
 “ either given to their Persons, or left at their Houses; and if they desire it, they shall have a Copy
 “ of the Articles against them, with a convenient
 “ Time to give in their Answer under their Hands,
 “ which, together with their Charge, and the Proofs
 “ upon every Particular of it, the said Deputy
 “ Lieutenants, and Committees of Parliament, shall
 “ send up to the Committee of this House, appointed
 “ to provide for plunder’d Ministers; which Committee shall from Time to Time transmit them to
 “ this House.” And further, to prevent all Abuses,
 ’tis ordained in the Ordinance for Sequestration,
 “ That if any Person or Persons find themselves
 “ agrieved with any Acts done by the Sequestrators,
 “ their Agents or Deputies, and shall not therein be
 “ relieved by the Sequestrators, upon Complaint
 “ made to them, or any Two or more of them; then
 “ upon Information given to both Houses of Parliament, or to the Committee of Lords and Commons aforementioned, such further Order shall be
 “ taken therein as shall be agreeable to Justice.”
 Here was an Appeal from a lower to a higher Court; and to prevent too severe a Scrutiny into the Lives
 and Manners of the Clergy, they were limited in
 their Enquiries, to such Crimes as had been committed within three Years before the Beginning of the present Parliament; so that if the Committees observed their Orders there could be no just Ground of Complaint; but as no one will undertake to vindicate all their Proceedings, we must not, on the other hand, give ear to the petulant and angry Complaints

King
Charles I.
 1643.

Husb. Col.
 p. 311.

Ibid. p. 153.

Suff. Cler.
 p. 84.

King Charles I. of every discontented Clergyman. I shall only ob-
1643. serve further, that these Country Committees hardly
 began to sit till the Year 1644. That they exercised
 their Power very sparingly while the War was in
 suspense, but when the royal Forces were beat out
 of the Field, and Victory declared on their Side,
 they proceeded with more Freedom, especially
 against those who had made themselves Parties in the
 War.

Quality of Persons ejected. Very different Accounts are given of the Numbers
 and Quality of the ejected Clergy by their several
 Friends. Lord *Clarendon* says, That all the Learned
 and Orthodox Divines of *England* were deemed scan-
 dalous. And Dr. *Walker* has taken a great deal of
 Pains to encrease their Numbers, and vindicate
 their Characters. By his Account one would think
 most of them were of the first Rank and Chara-
 cter; but Mr. *Baxter*, who was much better ac-
 quainted with the Clergymen of these Times, says,
 p. 95. "That when the Parliament purged the Ministry
 " they cast out the grosser Sort of insufficient and
 " scandalous Ones, and also some few civil Men who
 " had assisted in the Wars against the Parliament, or
 " set up Bowing to Altars, and such Innovations,
 " but they left in near one half of the Ministers that
 " were not good enough to do much Service, nor
 " bad enough to be utterly intolerable. These were
 " a Company of poor weak Preachers who had no
 " great Skill in Divinity, nor Zeal for Godliness,
 " but preached weekly that that was true, and were
 " free from notorious Sins." This seems a pretty
 fair Relation of the Matter; but we shall have Occa-
 sion to consider it more fully hereafter.

Sequestration of their Estates. Besides the Sequestration of *Benefices* the Parliament
 considered the King's Clergy as *Parties in the War*,
 and seized their Estates both real and personal under
 that Character, to help bear the Expences of it; for
 this Purpose they passed the following Ordinance,
Husb. Collect. Vol. 13. April 1, 1643. the Preamble to which sets forth,
 " That

King
Charles I.
1643.

“ That it is most agreeable to common Justice, that
“ the Estates of such notorious Delinquents as have
“ been the Causers or Instruments of the publick Ca-
“ lamities, which have hitherto been employed to
“ the fomenting and nourishing of this miserable Di-
“ straction, should be converted and applied towards
“ the Support of the Commonwealth.

“ **B**E it therefore enacted, that the Estates, as
“ well real as personal, of all such Bishops,
“ Deans, Deans and Chapters, Prebends, Archdeacons,
“ and of all other Persons ecclesiastical or temporal, who
“ have, or shall raise Arms against the Parliament; or
“ have been, or shall be in actual War against the same;
“ or who have, or shall voluntarily contribute Money,
“ Horse, Plate, Arms, Ammunition, or other Aid or
“ Assistance, towards the Maintenance of any Force rai-
“ sed against the Parliament, or for the Plundering of
“ the King's Subjects, who have willingly contributed,
“ or yielded Obedience to the Commands of both Houses of
“ Parliament, and of all such who have joined, or shall join
“ in any Oath or Association against the Parliament, &c.
“ shall be seized into the Hands of Sequestrators, to
“ be named by both Houses of Parliament, which
“ Sequestrators, or their Deputies, are to seize into
“ their Hands, as well all the Money, Goods, Chat-
“ tels, Debts, and personal Estates, and all the Ma-
“ nors, Lands, Tenements, Hereditaments, Rents,
“ Revenues, and Profits, of all the said Delinquents
“ before specified; and also, two Parts of all the
“ personal and real Estates of every Papist, and to
“ let, set, and demise the same from Year to Year,
“ as the respective Landlords or Owners thereof
“ might have done. And the Authority of both
“ Houses is engaged to save them harmless from
“ paying any Rents to their Landlords being Delin-
“ quents: And all the Monies, Rents, and Reve-
“ nues, that shall arise from this Ordinance, shall
“ be applied to the Maintenance of the Army and

King Charles I. 1643. " Forces raised by the Parliament, and such other
 " Uses as shall be directed by both Houses of Parlia-
 " ment for the Benefit of the Commonwealth.

A further
 Explanation of it.
 Scobel's
 Collect.
 p. 49.

August 19th, 1643. this Ordinance was further explained, as including in the Number of Delinquents, *Such as absented from their usual Places of Abode, or betook themselves to the King's Forces, such as should embezzle or conceal any of their Effects, to avoid payment of Taxes, and Assessments to the Parliament; or who kept out of the Way so that no Tax could be levied upon them; or who concealed or harboured the Goods or Persons of Delinquents; or who should seize or molest any Person for obeying or executing any of the Parliament's Orders.* A Clause was then added to the Ordinance, empowering the Commissioners to allow to the Wives and Children of such Delinquents for their Maintenance, any Portion of their Goods, provided it did not exceed one fifth Part. This Clause was construed to extend to the Wives and Children of all Clergymen who were ejected their Livings on any Account whatsoever. The Commissioners were also to seize two Thirds of the Estates of *Papists*, both real and personal, and for the Discovering of them, were to tender such whom they suspected, the following Oath.

Abjuration
 Oath.

" **I** A. B. do abjure and renounce the Pope's Su-
 " premacy, and Authority over the Catholick
 " Church in general, and over my self in particular.
 " And I do believe that there is not any Transub-
 " stantiation in the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper,
 " or in the Elements of Bread and Wine after Con-
 " secration thereof by any Person whatsoever. And
 " I do also believe that there is not any Purgatory,
 " or that the consecrated Host, Crucifixes, or Ima-
 " ges, ought to be worshipp'd; or that any Wor-
 " ship is due to any of them. And I also believe,
 " that Salvation cannot be merited by Works; and
 " all Doctrines in Affirmation of the said Points, I
 " do

“ do abjure, and renounce, without any Equivocation, ^{King}
 “ mental Reservation, or secret Evasion whatsoever, ^{Charles I.}
 “ taking the Words by me spoken according to the ^{1643.}
 “ common Meaning of them.

“ *So help me G O D.*”

Divers Clergymen of good Learning, and blame-^{The Effects}
 less Lives, sound Protestants, and good Preachers, ^{of this Or-}
 lost their Estates and Livelihoods, by falling with-^{dinance.}
 in the Compass of this Ordinance. How far such
 Severities are justifiable by the Law of Arms, in
 a Time of civil War and Confusion, I shall not
 determine. It had been well, if those who would
 have given Security for their peaceable Behaviour,
 could have been distinguished. But what could
 the Parliament do with Men that were always
 dealing in Politicks, privately sending the King
 Money, preaching publicly that he was above
 Law, and stirring up the People to Sedition and Dis-
 affection to those Powers by whom they were pro-
 tected? If *Others* suffered in this Manner it was very
hard Measure; their Estates might have been double
 taxed, as those of Papists and Nonjurors have since
 been; but to take away their whole Property, and
 reduce them to a *Fifth*, and this at the Mercy of Se-
 questrators, was extremely rigorous and severe.

However, his Majesty did the like, and gave Di-^{The King}
 rections to seize the Lands and Goods of the Parlia-^{makes Re-}
 mentarians, as appears by his Proclamation of *April 7.*^{prisals.}
 and *May 8.* wherein he forbids all his Subjects to
 submit to their Orders; and by another dated
May 15. 1643. complains, “ That divers of his Clergy, ^{Husb.}
 “ eminent for Piety and Learning, because they ^{Collect.}
 “ publish his royal and just Commands and Declara-^{P. 177.}
 “ tions, and will not (against the known Laws of the
 “ Land, and their own Consciences) submit to Con-
 “ tributions, nor publicly pray against us and our
 “ Assistants, but conform to the Book of Common
 “ Prayer established by Law, and preach God’s

King Charles I. 1643. " Word according to the Purity of it, and in their Sermons will not teach Sedition, nor publish illegal Commands and Orders for fomenting the unnatural War levied against us, are some of them driven from their Cures and Habitations, others silenced and discharged from their Cures, and persecuted, and their Curates, if *Orthodox*, displaced, in whose Places factious and seditious Persons are introduced. — His Majesty therefore forbids all his Subjects to hinder any of his Clergy from exercising their Functions, or to displace them; and if any transgress this Command his Majesty declares them Assistants of the Rebellion, and will proceed against them according to Law, as soon as he can apprehend them, *and in the mean Time will give Direction for taking their Lands and Goods into safe Custody.*" Such were the Extremities on both Sides!

Vacant Benefices filled up. The Silencing so many Clergymen at once made it very difficult to find Persons qualified to fill the vacant Pulpits. This was an Inconvenience that attended the Reformation of Queen *Elizabeth*, and was the Case of the established Church again in the Year 1662. when near two Thousand Ministers were ejected for Non-Conformity. Lord *Clarendon*, with his usual Candor, says, *That from the Beginning of this Parliament he is confident not one Learned or Orthodox Man was recommended by them to any Church in England;* and yet some of the greatest Ornaments of the Church for Learning and good Sense, in the Reign of King Charles II. were of their Promotion, as Bishop *Reynolds*, Bishop *Wilkins*, Dr. *Lightfoot*, Dr. *Cudworth*, Dr. *Wallis*, and others. Mr. *Baxter*, who was a more competent Judge in this respect, says, " That though now and then an unworthy Person, by sinister Means, crept into the Places of the ejected Ministers, yet commonly those whom they put in were such as set themselves laboriously to seek the Saving of Souls. Indeed the one Half of them " were

“ were very young, but that could not be help’d,
 “ because there were no others to be had ; the Par-
 “ liament could not make Men learned or godly,
 “ but only put in the learnedest and ablest that they
 “ could have ; and though it had been to be wished,
 “ that they might have had Leisure to ripen in the
 “ Universities, yet many of them did (as *Ambrose*)
 “ teach and learn at once so successfully, as that they
 “ much encreased in Learning themselves whilst
 “ they profited others, and proportionably more
 “ than many in the Universities do.” Those Cler-
 gymen who had been silenced and imprisoned by
 Archbishop *Laud* were set at Liberty and encouraged ;
 some who had fled to *Holland* and *New-England* on the
 Account of Non-Conformity returned home, and
 were preferr’d to considerable Lectures in the City,
 or to the Livings of those who were sequester’d.
 The Parliament entertained and promoted several
Scots Divines, and yet after all, they wanted a Supply
 for several vacant Benefices, which obliged them to
 admit of some unlearned Persons, and Pluralists, not
 of Choice, but of Necessity, for when Things were
 more settled the Assembly of Divines declared against
 both ; and it deserves to be remember’d, that the Par-
 liament did not give their Divines an absolute and
 full Possession of the sequester’d Livings, but refer-
 ved to themselves a Right in their Warrants to dis-
 place them if they saw Occasion, which shews their
 great Prudence and Caution ; for by this Means it
 was in their Power, upon the Conclusion of a Peace,
 to restore those who had been ejected, meerly for
 their Attachment to the King, without any Injury to
 the present Possessor. And to put some Stop to the
 Clamours of the Royalists at *Oxford*, who gave out,
 that the Parliament admitted *Butchers, Coblers, Brick-*
layers, and those who had no Call from God or Man,
 they ordained, *July 27. 1643.* “ That the Commit-
 “ tees should not nominate any Persons to vacant
 “ Benefices, but such as should be examined and
 “ appro-

King
Charles I.
 1643.

King Charles I. 1643. " approved by the Assembly of Divines then sitting at *Westminster*." Upon the whole it is evident, that the two Houses did the best they could in their present Circumstances, and perhaps better than the Royalists did at the Restoration 1660. when according to Dr. *Walker*, all the sequester'd Clergy that survived were restored to their Livings, even those who had been convicted of the most scandalous Immoralities, without any Marks of Repentance or Amendment.

Suff. Cler.
p. 397.
& alibi.

Strict Ob-
servation
of the Sab-
bath.

Husband's
Collect.
p. 7.

The Parliament's Affairs being low, and their Counsels divided, they not only applied to Heaven by extraordinary Fastings and Prayers, but went on vigorously with their intended Reformation. They began with the Sabbath, and on *March 22. 164 $\frac{2}{3}$* . sent to the Lord Mayor of the City of *London*, to desire him to put in Execution, the Statutes for the due Observation of the Lord's Day ; his Lordship accordingly sent his Precept the very next Day to the Aldermen, requiring them to give strict Charge to the Church-Wardens and Constables within their several Wards, that from henceforth " they " do not permit or suffer any Person or Persons, in " Time of divine Service, or at any Time on the " Lord's Day, to be tipling in any Tavern, Inn, " Tobacco-Shop, Ale-House, or other Victualling " House whatsoever ; nor suffer any Fruiterers or " Herb-Women to stand with Fruit, Herbs, or " other Victuals or Wares in any Streets, Lanes, " or Allies, or any other Ways to put those Things " to sale, at any Time of that Day, or in the Even- " ing of it ; or any Milk-Women to cry Milk ; nor " to suffer any Persons to unlade any Vessels of Fruit, " or other Goods, and carry them on Shoar ; or to " use any unlawful Exercises or Pastimes ; and to " give expresse Charge to all Inn-Keepers, Taverns, " Cooks - Shops, Ale - Houses, &c. within their " Wards, not to entertain any Guests to tipple, eat, " drink, or take Tobacco in their Houses on the " Lord's Day, except Inn-Keepers, who may re-
" ceive

“ receive their ordinary Guests or Travellers, who
 “ come for the Dispatch of their necessary Business;
 “ and if any Persons offend in the Premises, they
 “ are to be brought before the Lord Mayor, or one
 “ of his Majesty’s Justices of Peace to be punished
 “ as the Law directs.” This Order had a very con-
 siderable Influence upon the City, which began to
 wear a different Face of Religion to what it had be-
 fore. *May 5.* the Book tolerating Sports upon the
 Lord’s Day was ordered to be burnt by the Hands of
 the common Hangman in *Cheapside*, and other usual
 Places; and all Persons having any in their Hands
 were required to deliver them to one of the Sheriffs of
London to be burnt.

Next to the *Lord’s Day* they had a particular Re-
 gard to their monthly Fast: *April 24.* all Constables,
 or their Deputies, were ordered to repair to every
 House within their respective Liberties, the Day be-
 fore every publick Fast, and charge all Persons strict-
 ly to observe it according to the said Ordinances.
 And upon the Day of the publick Fast they were en-
 joined to walk through their said Liberties, to search
 for Persons who either by following the Work of
 their Calling, or sitting in *Taverns*, *Viſtualling*, or
Ale-Houses, or any other Ways should not duly ob-
 serve the same; and to return their Names to the
 Committee for Examination, that they may be pro-
 ceeded against for Contempt. The Fast was obser-
 ved the last *Wednesday* in every Month, the publick
 Devotions continued with little or no Intermission
 from Nine in the Morning till Four in the Afternoon,
 and (as has been already observed) with uncommon
 Strictness and Rigor.

Besides these *ſtated* Fasts, it was usual upon extra-
 ordinary Emergencies to appoint *occasional* Ones; as
 when the Army was going upon any hazardous En-
 terprize, or within sight of the Enemy, or under ve-
 ry disadvantageous Circumstances. When the Earl
 of *Essex* was shut up in *Cornwal*, the two Houses ap-
 pointed

King
Charles I.
1643.

Husb. Col.
P. 159.

Manner of
keeping the
Monthly
Fast.

Occasional
Fasts.
Husb. Col.
P. 534.

King Charles I. 1643. pointed a Day of Fasting and Prayer in six Churches within the Lines of Communication, and in such other Churches where it should be desired; and the Crowds of serious and attentive Hearers on such Occasions is almost incredible.

King dissolves the Parliament Fast, and appoints another. The King apprehending the Parliament's monthly Fast was perverted from its original Design, and turn'd into a Nursery of Rebellion, was pleased to dissolve it, and appoint another, for the Reasons contained in the following Proclamation from *Oxford*, dated *Octob. 5. 1643.* " When a general Fast was first propounded to us in Contemplation of the Miseries of our Kingdom of *Ireland*, we readily consented to it. — But when we observe what ill Use has been made of these publick Meetings, in Pulpits, in Prayers, and in the Sermons of many seditious Lecturers, to stir up and continue the Rebellion raised against us within this Kingdom. — We thought fit to command that such an hypocritical Fast, to the Dishonour of God, and Slander of true Religion, be no longer continued and countenanced by our Authority. — And yet we being desirous to express our own Humiliation, and the Humiliation of our People, for our own Sins, and the Sins of the Nation, are resolved to continue a monthly Fast, but not on the Day formerly appointed. — We do therefore hereby command, that from henceforth no Fast be held on the last *Wednesday* in the Month, as for many Months it has been; nor on any other Day than is hereby appointed by us. — But we do expressly charge and command, that in all Churches and Chapels, &c. there be a solemn Fast religiously observed on the second *Friday* in every Month, with publick Prayers and Preaching where it may be had, that as one Man we may pour out our Prayers to God, for the Continuance of his gracious Presence and Blessing upon us, and for establishing a happy Peace; for which Purpose we

" have

Husb. Col.
p. 353.

“ have caused devout Forms of Prayer to be composed and printed, and intend to disperse them, that they may be used in all Parts of our Kingdom.”

King
Charles I.
1643.

Agreeably to this Proclamation the King's Friends in the Counties of *Cornwal* and *Devonshire* took an Oath, and enter'd into an Association upon sundry

Rushw.
Vol. V.
P. 380.

Articles, of which this was one, That if any Minister shall refuse, or wilfully neglect to observe the Fast appointed by his Majesty, or shall not read the Service and Prayers appointed for that Fast, and being carried before a Justice of Peace, shall not promise and protest for their future Conformity, he shall be forthwith secured, and *his Estate sequester'd*; the like Course to be taken with such Ministers as absent themselves that Day, unless upon Sickness, or other Cause allowed by two Justices of Peace; and with those that will not read such Books as shall be appointed to be read by his Majesty; and the Constables are to certify their Defaults to the next Justice of Peace. This was a new Hardship upon Clergy and People, for the Parliament having enjoin'd the Continuance of the Fast on *Wednesday*, the Royalists were obliged to an open Separation, by changing it to *Friday*. Thus the Devotions of the Kingdom were divided, and Almighty God called into the Quarrel on both Sides.

The next Thing the Parliament undertook was the Removal of those Monuments of Superstition out of Churches, &c. which had been voted down the last Year, but without any considerable Effect, because of the Dissent of the House of Lords; but in the Beginning of *May*, Sir *Robert Harlow*, by Order of the two Houses took down the Crosses in *Cheapside*, *Charing Cross*, and *St. Paul's Cross*, which was a Pulpit of Wood covered with Lead, in form of a Cross, and mounted on several Steps of Stone about the Middle of *St. Paul's Church Yard*, where the first Reformers used to preach frequently to the People; and upon a further Representation of the Assembly of Divines,

they

King they past the following Ordinance, “ That before
 Charles I. “ the first of *November* all Altars and Tables of
 1643. “ Stone shall be utterly taken away and demolish-
 Ordinance “ ed ; and all Communion Tables removed from the
 for that “ East End of every Church, Chapel, or Place of
 purpose. “ publick Worship, and be set in some other fit
 Husb. Col. “ and convenient Place or Places of the Body of the
 Fol. 307. “ Church or Chapel ; and all Rails whatsoever
 “ which have been erected near to, or before, or
 “ about any Altar or Communion Table, in any of
 “ the said Churches or Chapels, shall before the said
 “ Day be taken away, and the Chancel Ground of
 “ every such Church, or Chapel, or other Place
 “ of publick Prayer, which has been within these
 “ twenty Years raised for any Altar or Communion
 “ Table to stand upon, shall before the said Day be
 “ laid down and levell’d as it was before ; and all
 “ Tapers, Candlesticks, and Basins, shall before
 “ the said Day be removed and taken away from the
 “ Communion Table in every Church, Chapel, or
 “ Place of publick Prayer, and not be used again
 “ afterwards. And all Crucifixes, Crosses, Ima-
 “ ges, and Pictures, of any one or more Persons
 “ of the Trinity, or of the Virgin *Mary* ; and all
 “ other Images, and Pictures of Saints, or supersti-
 “ tious Inscriptions in, or upon any of the said
 “ Churches, Church Yards, or other Places be-
 “ longing to the said Churches or Church Yards, or
 “ in any other open Place, shall before the said first
 “ of *November*, be taken away and defaced by
 “ the proper Officers that have the Care of such
 “ Churches. And ’tis further ordained, that the
 “ Walls, Windows, Grounds, and other Places
 “ that shall be broken, impaired, or altered by any
 “ the Means aforesaid, shall be made up and repair-
 “ ed in good and sufficient Manner, in all and every
 “ the said Parish Churches, Chapels, or Places of
 “ publick Prayer belonging to the Parish, by the
 “ Church Wardens for the Time being, and in any
 “ Cathe-

“ Cathedral or Collegiate Church or Chapel by the
 “ Deans or Sub-Deans; and in the Inns of Court,
 “ by the Benchers and Readers of the same, at the
 “ Cost and Charge of all and every such Person or
 “ Persons, Bodies Politick, or Corporations, to
 “ whom the Charge of Repair does usually belong,
 “ upon Penalty of forty Shillings to the Use of the
 “ Poor, for the Space of twenty Days after such De-
 “ fault; and if Default be made after *December 1.*
 “ the Justice of Peace of the County or City shall
 “ have Power to perform it. Provided that this
 “ Ordinance shall not extend to any Image, Picture,
 “ or Coat of Arms in Glass, Stone, or otherwise in
 “ any Church, Chapel, or Church Yard, set up
 “ by, or engraven for a Monument of any King,
 “ Prince, Nobleman, or other dead Person, which
 “ has not been commonly reputed or taken for a
 “ Saint.”

King
Charles I.
1643.

This Ordinance is almost the same with the Bill *Manner of*
 against Innovations presented to the King at the Treaty *the Execu-*
 of *Oxford*, and does not much differ from Queen *Eliza-*
beth's Injunctions at the Reformation; there were some
 Disorders and Tumults in putting it in Execution, and
 great Neglect of Repairs; but if the Reader will look
 back to the superstitious Decorations and Ornaments
 of the Cathedrals, mentioned in the former Volume
 of this Work, *p. 224.* he will see there was some
 need of a Reformation. *December 14.* the Commis-
 sioners cleared the Cathedral of *Canterbury* of all the
 Images, and Paintings in the Windows. *Heylin* says, *Hist. Pref.*
 the Rabble violated the Monuments of the Dead, *p. 45.*
 spoiled the Organs, took down the Rails, &c. and
 affronted the Statue of our blessed Saviour. *Dec. 30.*
 they removed the Pictures, Images and Crucifixes in
Henry the Seventh's Chapel; and about *Lady Day*
 the Paintings about the Walls and Windows were de-
 faced, and the Organs taken down in presence of a
 Committee of the House. The Cathedral of *Saint*
Paul's was stripp'd about the same Time, the Can-
 dlesticks,

King
Charles I.
1643.

dlesticks, Crucifixes, and Plate, being sold for the Service of the War; and within a few Months most of the Cathedrals throughout *England* underwent the same Fate. If the Parliament, instead of leaving this Work to the Officers of every Parish, had put it into the Hands of some skilful Persons, to give Directions what might remain, and what was fit to be removed, all the Mischiefs that have been complain'd of might have been prevented; the Monuments of the Dead might have remained entire, and a great many fine Paintings preserved; Dr. *Heylin* charges the Officers with Sacrilege, and fixes the divine Vengeance upon them as a Terror to others, one of them being killed in pulling down the Cross in *Cheapside*, and another hanged soon after he had pulled down the rich Cross in *Abingdon*. But without remarking on the Doctor's Prognostications, it was very proper to remove these Images and Crosses, because of the superstitious Resort of great Numbers of People to them; which might have been done in a peaceable Manner, without any Damage to the other venerable Remains of Antiquity.

Orders for
Restraining
the
Press.

The Paper Combate between the two Parties at *Oxford* and *London* was carried on with no less Fury than the War it self; numberless Pamphlets were scatter'd up and down the City of *London* and the Countries, big with Disaffection and Scandal against the two Houses; to put a Stop to which the Commons, by an Order of *March* 6. 1643². had impowered the Committee of Examinations to search for printing Presses in such Places where they had Cause to suspect they were employed against the Parliament, and to break them in pieces, and destroy all the Materials. They were also to seize the Pamphlets, and to commit the Printer and Vender to Prison. But this Order not being effectual, another was published *June* 14, 1643. the Preamble to which sets forth, " That the former Orders of Parliament to prevent the Printing and Dispersing scandalous Pamphlets having been ineffe-

" Etual

Rushw.
Vol. V.
p. 335.

“ ctual, it is ordained, That no Person or Persons
 “ shall print any Book or Pamphlet without Licence,
 “ under the Hands of such Persons as shall be appoint-
 “ ed by Parliament ; nor shall any Book be reprint-
 “ ed without the Licence and Consent of the Owner,
 “ and the Printer to put his Name to it ; the Com-
 “ pany of *Stationers*, and the Committee of Exami-
 “ nations are required to make strict Enquiry after
 “ private Presses, and to searh all suspected Shops
 “ and Warehouses for unlicensed Books and Pam-
 “ phlets, and to commit the Offenders against this
 “ Order to Prison to be punished as the Parliament
 “ shall direct..” The Names of the Licensers ap-
 pointed by this Ordinance were these ;

King
Charles I.
 1643.

For Books of Divinity.

<i>The Reverend</i>	{	Mr. Tho. Gataker,	<i>The Reverend</i>	{	Mr. Carter, of York-
		Mr. J. Downham,			shire,
		Mr. Callicut Down-			Mr. Ch. Herle,
		ing,			Mr. Ja. Cranford,
		Dr. Tho. Temple,			Mr. Obad. Sedg-
		Mr. Jos. Caryl,			wick,
		Mr. Edmund Cala-			Mr. Batchelor,
		my,			Mr. John Ellis, <i>jun.</i>

For Law Books.

Sir John Brampton,		Mr. Serj. Phesant,
Mr. Serj. Rolls,		Mr. Serj. Jermyn.

For Physick and Surgery,


The President and four Censors of the College of
 Physicians, for the Time being.

For Civil and Canon Law.

Sir Nath. Brent, or any three Doctors of the Civil
 Law.

For Heraldry, Titles of Honour, and Arms.

One of the three Kings at Arms.

^{King}
Charles I. *For Philosophy, History, Poetry, Morality and Arts.*
1643. *Sir Nath. Brent, Mr. Langley, and Mr. Farnaby,*
 *School-Masters of St. Paul's.*

For small Pamphlets, Pictures, &c.

The Clerk of the Company of Stationers, for the Time being; and,

For Mathematicks, Almanacks and Prognostications.

The Reader of Gresham College for the Time being.

But neither this, nor any other Regulation of the Press, could restrain the *Oxonians* from dispersing their *Mercuries* and *Diurnals* over the whole Kingdom as long as the University was in the King's Hands.



C H A P. II.

From the Calling the Assembly of Divines at Westminster to the Oxford Parliament.

IT has been observed, that at the Setting down of this Parliament, the Resolution of the leading Members was to remove the Grievances of the Church as well as State, and for this Purpose to address the King to call an Assembly of Divines to reform the Liturgy and Discipline of it. To forward this Design the *London* Ministers in their Petitions in the Year 1641. prayed the Houses to be Mediators to his Majesty for a free Synod, and the Commons accordingly mentioned it in their grand Remonstrance of Dec. 1. 1641. “*We desire (say they) that there may be a general Synod of the most grave, pious, learned, and judicious Divines of this Island, assisted with some from foreign Parts professing the same Religion with us, who may consider of all Things necessary for the Peace and good Government of the Church, and to represent the Result of their Consultations to be allowed and confirmed, and to receive the Stamp of Authority.*”

In the Treaty of Oxford a Bill was presented to the same Purpose but rejected: Some Time after Dr. Burges, at the Head of the Puritan Clergy, applied again to Parliament, but the Houses were unwilling to take this Step without the King, till they were reduced to the Necessity of calling in the Scots, who insisted, that *there should be an Uniformity of Doctrine and Discipline between the two Nations.* To make way for which the Houses turned their Bill into an Ordinance, and convened the Assembly by their own Authority.

King
Charles I.
1643.

The Ordinance bears date June 12. 1643. and is the very same with the Oxford Bill, except in the Point of Lay-Affessors, and of restraining the Assembly

King Charles I. bly from exercising any Jurisdiction, or Authority Ecclesiastical whatsoever. It is entitled,
1643.

Ordinance for calling an Assembly of Divines.
Rushw.
Vol. II.
Part III.
p. 337.

An Ordinance of the Lords and Commons in Parliament, for the Calling of an Assembly of learned and godly Divines, and others, to be consulted with by the Parliament, for Settling the Government and Liturgy of the Church of England, and for vindicating and clearing of the Doctrine of the said Church, from false Aspersions and Interpretations.

The Preamble sets forth,

“ That whereas amongst the infinite Blessings of
 “ Almighty God upon this Nation, none is, or can
 “ be more dear to us, than the Purity of our Reli-
 “ gion; and forasmuch as many Things as yet re-
 “ main in the Discipline, Liturgy, and Government
 “ of the Church, which necessarily require a more
 “ perfect Reformation. And whereas it has been
 “ declared and resolved, by the Lords and Com-
 “ mons assembled in Parliament, that the present
 “ Church Government by Archbishops, Bishops,
 “ their Chancellors, Commissaries, Deans, Deans
 “ and Chapters, Archdeacons, and other ecclesiasti-
 “ cal Officers depending on the Hierarchy, is evil,
 “ and justly Offensive and Burdensome to the King-
 “ dom, and a great Impediment to Reformation,
 “ and Growth of Religion, and very prejudicial to
 “ the State and Government of this Kingdom,
 “ that therefore they are resolved, the same shall
 “ be taken away, and that such a Government
 “ shall be settled in the Church as may be most
 “ agreeable to God’s holy Word, and most apt to
 “ procure and preserve the Peace of the Church at
 “ home, and nearer Agreement with the Church of
 “ Scotland, and other reformed Churches abroad.
 “ And for the better effecting hereof, and for the
 “ vindicating and clearing of the Doctrine of the
 “ Church

King
Charles I.
1643.

“ Church of *England* from all false Calumnies and
“ Aspersions, it is thought fit to call an Assembly
“ of learned, godly, and judicious Divines, to con-
“ sult and advise of such Matters and Things touch-
“ ing the Premises, as shall be proposed to them by
“ both, or either Houses of Parliament; and to
“ give their Advice and Counsel therein to both, or
“ either of the said Houses, when, and as often as
“ they shall be thereunto required.”

“ **B**E it therefore ordained by the Lords and
“ Commons in this present Parliament assem-
“ bled, That all and every the Persons hereafter in
“ this Ordinance named [the Ordinance here names
“ the Persons] and such other Persons as shall be
“ nominated by both Houses of Parliament, or so
“ many of them as shall not be letted by Sicknes, or
“ other necessary Impediment, shall meet and as-
“ semble, and are hereby required and enjoined up-
“ on Summons signed by the Clerks of both Houses
“ of Parliament left at their severall respective
“ Dwellings, to meet and assemble at *Westminster*, in
“ the Chapel called King *Henry* the Seventh’s Cha-
“ pel, on the first of *July*, 1643. and after the first
“ Meeting, being at least of the Number of Forty,
“ shall from Time to Time sit, and be removed from
“ Place to Place; and also, that the said Assembly
“ shall be dissolved in such manner as by both Hou-
“ ses of Parliament shall be directed. *And the said*
“ *ASSEMBLY shall have Power and Authority, and are*
“ *hereby enjoined from Time to Time, during this present*
“ *Parliament, or till further Order be taken by both the*
“ *said Houses, to confer and treat among themselves of such*
“ *Matters and Things concerning the Liturgy, Discipline,*
“ *and Government of the Church of England, or the*
“ *vindicating and clearing of the Doctrine of the same*
“ *from all false Aspersions and Misconstructions, as shall be*
“ *proposed by either or both Houses of Parliament, and*
“ *no other; and to deliver their Advices and Opini-*

King
Charles I.
1643.

“ ons touching the Matters aforesaid, as shall be
“ most agreeable to the Word of God, to both or
“ either Houses from Time to Time, in such man-
“ ner as shall be required, and not to divulge the
“ same by printing, writing, or otherwise, without
“ Consent of Parliament.”

If any Difference of Opinion arose they were to re-
present it to Parliament with their Reasons, that
the Houses might give further Direction. Four
Shillings ¶ Day was allowed for each one during his
Attendance. Dr. *William Twisse* of *Newbury* was ap-
pointed *Prolocutor*, and in case of his Sickness or
Death the Parliament reserved to themselves the
Choice of another. The Ordinance concludes with
the following Proviso: “ *Provided always, That this*
“ *Ordinance shall not give them, nor shall they in this*
“ *Assembly assume or exercise any Jurisdiction, Power,*
“ *or Authority Ecclesiastical whatsoever, or any other*
“ *Power than is herein particularly expressed.*”

Then follow the Names of Thirty *Lay-Assessors*,
(viz.) ten Lords, and twenty Commoners, and one
Hundred twenty one Divines.

N.B. The LAY-ASSESSORS had an equal Liberty
of debating and voting with the Divines, and were
these;

*Names of
the Lay-
Assessors.*

Peers.
Algernoon *E.* of Northum-
berland,
William *E.* of Bedford,
William *E.* of Pembroke
and Montgomery,
William *E.* of Salisbury,
Henry *E.* of Holland,
Edward *E.* of Manchester,
William Lord *Visc.* Say
and Seal,

Edward Lord *Visc.* Con-
way,
Philip Lord Wharton,
Edward Lord Howard of
Esrick.

Commoners.
John Selden, *Esq;*
Francis Rouse, *Esq;*
Edmund Prideaux, *Esq;*
Sir Henry Vane, *Knt. sen.*
Sir

Sir Henry Vane, *Knt. jun.*
 John Glynne, *Esq;* *Recorder of London,*
 John White, *Esq;*
 Bulstrode Whitlocke, *Esq;*
 Humphry Salway, *Esq;*
 Oliver St. John, *Esq;*
 Sir Benj. Rudyard, *Knt.*
 John Pym, *Esq;*
 Sir John Clotworthy, *Knt.*
 Sir Tho. Barrington, *Knt.*
 William Wheeler, *Esq;*
 William Pierpoint, *Esq;*
 Sir John Evelyn, *Knt.*
 John Maynard, *Esq;*

Mr. Serjeant Wild,
 Mr. Young,
 Sir Matth. Hale, *afterwards Lord chief Justice of the King's Bench*
[appeared, says Anthony Wood, among the Lay-Assessors.]
Lay-Assessors from Scotland.
 Lord Maitland, *after Duke*
 Lauderdale,
 E. Lothian,
 A. Johnston, *called Lord*
 Warrifston.

King
Charles I.
 1643.

The Divines were chosen out of such Lists as the Knights and Burgessees brought in, of Persons best qualified in their several Counties, out of which the Parliament agreed upon two; though according to Dr. Calamy some Counties had but one.

A LIST of the Assembly of Divines at Westminster, in Alphabetical Order.

*Those with two ** gave constant Attendance; those with one * sat in the Assembly and took the Protestation, but withdrew, or seldom appear'd; those with no Star did not appear at all.*

To supply the Vacancies that happen'd by Death, Desertion, or otherways, the Parliament named others from Time to Time, who were called Superadded Divines.

*** The Rev. Dr. WILLIAM TWISSE, of Newbury, was appointed by Parliament, Prolocutor.*

*** The Rev. { Dr. CORNELIUS BURGESS, of Watford, Mr. JOHN WHITE, of Dorchester, A. M. } Assessors.*

King

Charles I.

1643.

Names of
the Di-
vines.

- (Mr. HENRY ROBOROUGH,) Scribes,
 * The Rev. { Mr. ADONIRAM BYFIELD, } but had no
 A. M. Votes.
- ** The Rev. John Arrowsmith, of Lynne, afterwards
 D. D. and Master of Peter House, Cambridge
- ** Mr. Simeon Ash, of St. Brides, or Basinghaw
- ** Mr. Theodore Backhurst, of Overton Waterville
- ** Mr. Tho. Bayly, B. D. of Manningford Bruce
- ** Mr. John Bond, a superadded Divine
- * Mr. Boulton, superadded
- ** Mr. Oliver Bowler, B. D. of Sutton
- ** Mr. William Bridge, A. M. of Yarmouth
- The Right Rev. Dr. Ralph Brownrigge, Bp. of Exon
- Mr. Richard Buckley
- ** Mr. Antony Burges, A. M. of Sutton Coldfield
- ** Mr. Jer. Burroughs, A. M. of Stepney
- ** Mr. Richard Byfield, A. M. superadded
- ** Edmund Calamy, B. D. Aldermanbury
- ** Mr. Tho. Case, Milk-Street
- Mr. Richard Capel, of Pitchcombe, A. M.
- ** Mr. Joseph Caryl, A. M. Lincoln's Inn
- ** Mr. William Carter, of London
- ** Mr. Thomas Carter, of Oxon
- ** Mr. William Carter, of Dynton, Bucks
- ** Mr. John Cawdrey, A. M. St. Mart. Fields, superadd.
- ** Humph. Chambers, D. D. of Claverton
- ** Francis Cheynel, D. D. of Petworth
- ** Mr. Peter Clarke, A. M. of Carnaby
- ** Mr. Richard Clayton, of Showel
- ** Mr. Francis Coke, of Yoxhall
- ** Mr. Tho. Coleman, A. M. of Bliton
- ** John Conant, of Lymington, D. D. afterwards
 Archdeacon of Norwich, and Preb. of Worcester
- ** Mr. Edw. Corbet, A. M. Merton Coll. Oxon
- * Rob. Crosse, D. D. aft. Vicar of Chew, Somerset
- ** Mr. Philip Delmé, superadded
- Mr. Tho. Dillingham, of Dean
- * Calibute Downing, D. D. of Hackney
- Mr. William Dunning, of Godalston



- *The Rev. Mr. John Drury, superadded*
- Mr. Edward Ellis, B. D. Gilfield
- Mr. Jonn Erle, *of* Bishopstowne
- * Dan. Featley, D. D. *of* Lambeth
- Mr. Tho. Ford, A. M. *superadded*
- Mr. John Foxcroft, *of* Gotham
- Mr. Hannibal Gammon, A. M. *of* Cornwall
- Tho. Gataker, B. D. Rotherhithe
- Mr. Samuel Gibson, *of* Burleigh
- Mr. John Gibbon, *of* Waltham
- Mr. George Gippes, *of* Aylston
- Tho. Goodwin, D. D. *of* Lond. *ast. Presi. Mag. C. Oxon*
- Mr. William Goad, *superadded*
- Mr. Stanly Gower, *of* Brampton Bryan
- William Gouge, D. D. *of* Black-Friars
- Mr. William Greenhill, *of* Stepney
- Mr. Green, *of* Pentecomb
- John Hacket, D. D. *of* St. Andrew's, Holborn, *afterwards Bishop of* Lichfield
- Henry Hammond, D. D. *of* Penshurst, Kent
- Mr. Henry Hall, B. D. Norwich
- Mr. Humphry Hardwicke, *superadded*
- * John Harris, D. D. *Preb. Winch. Warden of* Wickham
- Rob. Harris, D. D. *of* Hanwel, *Presi. Trin. Coll. Oxon*
- Mr. CHARLES HERLE, A. M. *Winwick, ast. Proloc.*
- Mr. Rich. Heyrick, A. M. *of* Manchester
- Thomas Hill, D. D. *of* Tichmarsh, *afterwards*
Master of Trin. Coll. Cambridge
- * Samuel Hildertham, B. D. *of* Felton
- Mr. Jasper Hukes, A. M. *of* Lawrick
- Mr. Tho. Hodges, B. D. *of* Kensington
- Richard Holdsworth, D. D. *M. Eman. Coll. Camb.*
- Joshua Hoyle, D. D. *of* Dublin, Ireland
- Mr. Henry Hutton
- Mr. John Jackson, A. M. *of* Queen's Coll. Camb.
- * Mr. Johnson
- Mr. Lance, Harrow, Middlesex
- Mr. John Langley, *of* West Tuderly, *Preb. Glou.*
- Mr. John Ley, A. M. Great Budworth

- King Charles I. 1643. *King* ****** *The Rev. John Lightfoot, D.D. of Ashby, M. Cath. H.*
***** Rich. Love, D. D. of Ekinton
***** Mr. Christoph. Love, A. M. *superadded*
 Mr. William Lyford, A. M. Sherbourne
***** Mr. John de la March, *Minst. of the French Church*
****** Mr. Stephen Marshal, B. D. of Finchingfield
***** Mr. William Massam, *superadded*
 Mr. John Maynard, A. M. *superadded*
****** Mr. William Mew, B. D. of Effington
****** Mr. Tho. Micklethwait, Cheriburton
 George Morley, D. D. *afterwards Bp. Winchester*
 Mr. William Moreton, Newcastle
***** Mr. Moore
****** Mr. Matth. Newcomen, Dedham
***** Mr. William Newscore, *superadded*
 William Nicholson, D. D. *astw. Bp. of Gloucester*
 Mr. Henry Nye, of Clapham
****** Mr. Philip Nye, of Kimbolton
 Mr. HERBERT PALMER, B. D. Ashwel, *ast. Assessor*
 Mr. Henry Painter, of Exeter
 Mr. Christopher Parkly, of Hawarden
****** Mr. Edw. Peal, of Compton
****** Mr. Andrew Pern, of Wilby Northampton
****** Mr. John Philips, Wrentham
****** Mr. Benj. Pickering, East Hoatly
***** Mr. Samuel de la Place, *Min. of French Church*
****** Mr. Will. Price, of St. Paul's Covent Garden
 John Prideaux, D. D. *Bishop of Worcester*
****** Mr. Nicolas Proffet, of Marlborough
 Mr. John Pyne, of Bereferrars
****** Mr. William Rathband, of Highgate
****** Mr. William Reyner, B. D. Egham
****** Edw. Reynolds, of Brampton, D. D. *ast. Bp. Norwich*
****** Mr. Arthur Salway, Severn Stoke
 Rob. Saunderson, D. D. *ast. Bishop of Lincoln*
****** Mr. Henry Scudder, of Colingbourne
****** Lazarus Seaman, B. D. of Lond. M. Peter H. Camb.
****** Mr. Obadiah Sedgwick, B. D. Coggeshall
 Mr. Josias Shute, B. D. Lombard-Street

- ** *The Rev.* Mr. Sydrach Sympson, London
- ** Peter Smith, D. D. *of* Barkway
- ** William Spurftow, D. D. *of* Hampden
- ** Edmund Staunton, D. D. *of* Kingfton
- ** Mr. Peter Sterry, London
- ** Mr. John Strickland, B. D. New Sarum, *superadded*
- ** Matth. Styles, D. D. Eaftcheap
- * Mr. Strong, Weftminfter, *superadded*
- ** Mr. Francis Taylor, A. M. Yalding
- ** Tho. Temple, D. D. *of* Batterfey
- ** Mr. Tho. Thoroughgood, Maffingham
- ** Mr. Chriftoph. Tisdale, Uphurft Bourne
- * Mr. Henry Tozer, B. D. Oxon
- ** Henry Tuckney, D. D. *of* Bofton, *afterw.* *Master*
of Saint John's Coll. Oxon, and Regius Profefſor
- ** Mr. Tho. Valentine, B. D. Chalfort, *Saint Giles's*
- ** Mr. Rich. Vines, A. M. *of* Calcot, *M. Pemb. H. Camb.*
- The moſt Rev.* Dr. James Uſher, *Archbp. of* Armagh
- ** Mr. George Walker, B. D. *St.* John Evans
- Samuel Ward, D. D. *Master of* Sidney Coll. Camb.
- ** Mr. JOHN WALLIS, *afterwards* D. D. and Scribe
- ** Mr. John Ward, *superadded*
- Mr. James Welby, Sylatten
- * Thomas Weftfield, D. D. *Biſhop of* Briſtol
- ** Mr. Jeremiah Whitaker, A. M. Stretton
- Mr. Francis Whiddon, Moreton
- ** Henry Wilkinſon, *ſen.* D. D. Waddeſdon, *afterw.*
Margaret Profefſor, Oxon
- ** Mr. Henry Wilkinſon, *jun.* B. D. *St.* Dunſtans
- ** Mr. Tho. Wilſon, Otham
- * Tho. Wincop, D. D. Eleſworth
- ** John Wincop, D. D. *St.* Martin's *in the Fields*
- ** Mr. Francis Woodcock, *Proſtor of the Univ.* Camb.
- ** Mr. Thomas Young, Stow Market
- Minifters from Scotland.*
- ** Mr. Alexander Henderſon
- ** Mr. George Gillespie
- ** Mr. Samuel Rutherford
- ** Mr. Robert Bayly

King
Charles I.
1643.

Before the Assembly sat, the King by his royal Proclamation of *June 22.* forbid their Meeting, for the Purposes therein mentioned; and declared, that no Acts done by them ought to be received by his Subjects; he also threatened to proceed against them with the utmost Severity of the Law; nevertheless, Sixty nine assembled in King *Henry* the Seventh's Chapel the first Day, according to Summons, not in their Canonical Habits, but chiefly in black Coats and Bands, in Imitation of the foreign Protestants. Few of the Episcopal Divines appeared, and those, after some Time withdrew, for the following Reasons.

Reasons of
the Episco-
pal Divines
against the
Assembly.

Obj. 1. " Because the Assembly was prohibited by the royal Proclamation; which Dr. *Twisse* in his Sermon, at the opening the Assembly lamented, but hoped in due Time his Majesty's Consent might be obtained.

Ans. To which it was replied, " That the Constitution at present was dissolved; that there were two sovereign contending Powers in the Nation; and if the War in which the Parliament was engaged was just and necessary, they might assume this Branch of the Prerogative, till the Nation was settled, as well as any other.

Obj. 2. " Because the Members of the Assembly were not chosen by the Clergy, and therefore could not appear as their Representatives.

Ans. To which it was answered, " That the Assembly was not designed for a *National Synod*, or *Representative Body of the Clergy*, but only as a Committee, or Council to the Parliament, to give their Opinion touching such Church Matters as the Houses should lay before them; they had no Power of themselves to make Laws or Canons, or determine Controversies in Matters of Faith. They were to enter upon no Business but what the Parliament appointed, and when they had done they were to offer it to the two Houses only as their *humble Advice*; and surely the Parliament
" might

“ might choose their own Council, without being
 “ obliged to depend upon the Nomination of the
 “ Clergy.

King
 Charles I.
 1643.

Obj. 3. “ But as great an Exception as any, was
 “ their Dislike of the Company, and of the Business
 “ they were to transact; there was a Mixture of
 “ *Laity* with the *Clergy*; the *Divines* were for the
 “ most part of a puritanical Stamp, and Enemies to
 “ the Hierarchy; and their Business (they apprehended)
 “ was to pull down that which they would uphold.

Ans. “ This being not designed for a legal Convocation,
 “ but for a *Council* to the Parliament in the Reformation of the Church, they apprehended they had a Power to join some of their own Members with such a *Committee* or *Council*, without intrenching upon the Rights of Convocation.
 “ — The *Divines*, except the *Scots* and *French*, were in Episcopal Orders, educated in our own Universities, and most of them Graduates; their Business was only to advise about such Points of Doctrine and Church Discipline as should be laid before them, in which the Episcopal Divines might have been of Service, if they had continued with the Assembly, to which they were most earnestly invited.”

I believe no Set of Clergy since the Beginning of Christianity have suffered so much in their Characters and Reputations, as these, for their *Advices* to the two Houses of Parliament. In his Majesty’s Proclamation of June 22. the far greatest Part of them are said to be *Men of no Learning or Reputation*. Lord Clarendon admits, “ about Twenty of them were renowned and worthy Persons, and Episcopal in their Judgments; but as to the Remainder, they were but Pretenders to Divinity; some were infamous in their Lives and Conversations, and most of them of very mean Parts and Learning, if not of scandalous Ignorance, and of no other Reputation.”

Character
 of the Assembly.
 Vol. I.
 P. 530.

King Charles I. 1643. "putation than of Malice to the Church of *England*." His Lordship would insinuate, That they understood not the original Text, because the learned Mr. *Selden* sometimes corrected the *English* Translation of their little Pocket Bibles, and put them into Confusion, by his uncommon Acquaintance with *Jewish* Antiquities; as if that great Man would have treated a Convocation with more Decency or Respect. But Archbishop *Laud*'s Account is still more extravagant; for though 'tis notorious the Assembly would not allow a Toleration to those whom they called Sectaries, yet his *Grace* says, "The greatest Part of them were "*Brownists* or *Independents*, or *New England* Ministers, if not worse, or at best Enemies to the Doctrine and Discipline of the Church of *England*;" whereas in truth there were not above six *Independents* in the Assembly, and not one *New England* Minister that I know of. If the Reader will carefully peruse the List, he will find in it some of the most considerable Lawyers and ablest Divines of the last Age; and though they might have mistaken Notions of Church Discipline, and were no better acquainted with the Rights of Conscience and private Judgment, than their Predecessors the Bishops, yet with all their Faults, impartial Posterity will admit the far greatest Number were Men of exemplary Piety and Devotion, who had a real Zeal for the Glory of God, and the Purity of the Christian Faith and Practice. Mr. *Eachard* confesses, that Lord *Clarendon* had, perhaps, with too much Severity said, that some of these Divines were infamous in their Lives and Characters; but Mr. *Baxter*, who was better acquainted with them than his Lordship, or any of his Followers, adds, "That they were Men of eminent Learning, Godliness, ministerial Abilities, and Fidelity."

The Assembly opens.

The Assembly was opened on *Saturday* July 1. with a Sermon preached by Dr. *Twisse* in King *Henry* the Seventh's

Seventh's Chapel, both Houses of Parliament being present. The Ordinance for their Convention was then read, and the Names of the Members called over, after which they adjourned to *Monday*, and agreed on the following Rules.

King
Charles I.
1643.

(1.) " That every Session begin and end with Prayer. *Rules agreed to by the Assembly.*

(2.) " That after the first Prayer the Names of the Assembly be called over, and those that are absent marked; but if any Member comes in afterwards he shall have liberty to give in his Name to the *Scribes*.

(3.) " That every Member before his Admission to sit and vote do take the following Vow or Protestation.

" **I** *A. B.* do seriously and solemnly, in the Presence of Almighty God, declare that in this Assembly whereof I am Member, I will not maintain any Thing in Matter of Doctrine but what I believe in my Conscience to be most agreeable to the Word of God; or in Point of Discipline, but what I shall conceive to conduce most to the Glory of God, and the Good and Peace of his Church.

And to refresh their Memories this *Protestation* was read in the Assembly every *Monday* Morning.

(4.) " That the appointed Hour of Meeting be Ten in the Morning; the Afternoon to be reserved for Committees.

(5.) " That three of the Members of the Assembly be appointed weekly as Chaplains, one to the House of Lords, another to the House of Commons, and a third to the Committee of both Kingdoms." The usual Method was to take it by Turns, and every *Friday* the Chaplains were appointed for the following Week,

King Charles I. 1643. (6.) " That all the Members of the Assembly have liberty to be covered, except the Scribes;" who some Time after had also this Liberty indulged them.

Besides these, the Parliament on *Thursday* following sent them some further Regulations. As,

Regulations sent them by the Parliament. (1.) " That *two Assessors* be joined with the Prolocutor, to supply his Place in case of Absence or Sicknes, (*viz.*) *Dr. Cornelius Burges* and the Reverend Mr. *John White* of *Dorchester*.

(2.) " That *Scribes* be appointed, who are not to vote in the Assembly, *viz.* the Reverend Mr. *Roborough* and Mr. *Byfield*.

(3.) " That every Member at his first Entrance into the Assembly take the forementioned *Protestation*.

(4.) " That no Resolution be given upon any Question the same Day wherein it was first proposed.

(5.) " What any Man undertakes to prove as a necessary Truth in Religion he shall make good from the Holy Scriptures.

(6.) " No Man shall proceed in any Dispute, after the Prolocutor has enjoin'd him Silence, unless the Assembly desire he may go on.

(7.) " No Man shall be denied the Liberty of entering his Dissent from the Assembly, with his Reasons for it, after the Point has been debated; from whence it shall be transmitted to Parliament, when either House shall require it.

(8.) " All Things agreed upon, and prepared for the Parliament, shall be openly read, and allowed in the Assembly, and then offered as their Judgment, if the Majority assent; provided, that the Opinions of the Persons dissenting, with their Reasons, be annexed, if they desire it, and the Solution of those Reasons by the Assembly."

The

The Proceedings being thus settled, the Parliament sent the Assembly an Order to review the XXXIX Articles of the Church; but before they enter'd upon Business they petition'd the two Houses for a Fast. Upon which Bishop Kennet passes the following severe Censure, *Impartially speaking, 'tis stuf't with Schism, Sedition and Cruelty*, I will therefore set the Substance of the Petition before the Reader in their own Language, that he may form his own Judgment upon it, and upon the State of the Nation.

King
Charles I.
1643.

To the Right Honourable the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament,

The humble Petition of divers Ministers of Christ, in the Name of themselves, and sundry others,

Humbly sheweth,

“ **T**HAT your Petitioners upon serious Consideration, and deep Sense of God's heavy Wrath lying upon us, and hanging over our Heads, and the whole Nation, manifested particularly by the two late sad and unexpected Defeats of our Forces in the North and in the West, do apprehend it to be our Duty, as Watchmen for the good of the Church and Kingdom, to present to your religious and prudent Consideration these ensuing Requests, in the Name of JESUS CHRIST, your Lord and ours.

*Assembly's
Petition for
a Fast.
Rushw.
Vol. V.
p. 344.*

First, “ That you would be pleased to command a publick and extraordinary Day of Humiliation this Week, throughout the Cities of London, Westminster, the Suburbs of both, and Places adjacent within the weekly Bills of Mortality, that every one may bitterly bewail his own Sins, and cry mightily to God, for Christ sake, to remove his Wrath, and to heal the Land; with professedly new Resolution of more full Performance of the late Covenant, for the Amendment of our Ways.

King
Charles I.
1643.

Secondly, “ That you would vouchsafe instantly to take into your most serious Consideration, how you may more speedily set up CHRIST more gloriously in all his Ordinances within this Kingdom, and reform all Things amiss throughout the Land, wherein God is more specially, and more immediately dishonoured, among which we humbly lay before you these Particulars.

1. “ That the brutish Ignorance, and palpable Darkness possessing the greatest Part of the People, in all Places of the Kingdom may be remedied, by a speedy and strict Charge to all Ministers, constantly to catechize all the Youth and ignorant People within their Parishes.

2. “ That the grievous and heinous Pollution of the Lord’s Supper, by those who are grossly ignorant, and notoriously profane, may be henceforth with all Christian Care, and due Circumspection prevented.

3. “ That the bold venting of corrupt Doctrines, directly contrary to the sacred Law of God, may be speedily suppressed.

4. “ That the Profanation of any Part of the Lord’s Day, and the Days of solemn Fasting, by buying, selling, working, sporting, travelling, or neglecting of God’s Ordinances, may be remedied, by appointing special Officers in every Place for the due Execution of all good Laws and Ordinances against the same.

5. “ That there may be a thorough and speedy Proceeding against blind Guides, and scandalous Ministers; and that your Wisdom would find out some Way to admit into the Ministry such godly and hopeful Men as have prepared themselves, and are willing thereunto, without which there will suddenly be such a Scarcity of able and faithful Ministers, that it will be to little Purpose to cast out such as are unable, idle, or scandalous.

6. “ That

6. " That the Laws may be quickened against
" Swearing and Drunkenness, with which the Land
" is filled and defiled, and under which it mourns. King
Charles I.
1643.

7. " That some severe Course be taken against
" Fornication, Adultery and Incest, which do great-
" ly abound.

8. " That all Monuments of Idolatry and Super-
" stition, but more especially the whole Body and
" Practice of Popery may be totally abolished.

9. " That Justice may be executed on all Delin-
" quents, according to your religious *Vow* and *Pro-*
" *testation* to that Purpose.

10. " That all possible Means may be used for
" the speedy Relief and Release of our miserable,
" and extreemly distressed Brethren, who are Priso-
" ners in *Oxford, York*, and elsewhere, whose heavy
" Sufferings cry aloud in the Ears of our God; and
" it would lie very heavy on the Kingdom should
" they miscarry, suffering as they do for the Cause
" of God.

" That so God, who is now by the Sword aveng-
" ing the Quarrel of his Covenant, beholding your
" Integrity and Zeal, may turn from the Fierceness
" of his Wrath, hear our Prayers, go forth with
" our Armies, perfect the Work of Reformation,
" forgive our Sins, and settle Truth and Peace
" throughout the Kingdom.

" *And your Petitioners shall ever pray, &c.*"

Pursuant to this Petition, *Friday, July 21.* was
appointed for a Fast, when the Reverend Mr. *Bowles*
and *Newcomen* preached before both Houses of Parlia-
ment and the Assembly together; and the Fast was
observed with great Solemnity in all the Churches
within the Limits abovementioned.

Next Day a Committee of Divines was appointed *Alterations*
to consider what Amendments were proper to be *in the*
made in the doctrinal Articles of the Church of Eng- XXXIX
Articles.
land, and report them to the Assembly, who were

King Charles I. ten Weeks in debating upon the first *fifteen*, before the Arrival of the *Scots* Commissioners; the Design was to render their Sense more exprefs and determinate in favour of *Calvinism*. 'Tis not necessary to trouble the Reader with the theological Debates; but the Articles, as they were new modell'd, being rarely to be met with, I have placed them in the Appendix, with the original Articles of the Church, in opposite Columns, that the Reader by comparing them may judge, whether the Alterations are for the better or not.

Appendix,
N^o I

Censures of Antinomianism. As the Assembly were for strengthening the Doctrines of the Church against *Arminianism*, they were equally solicitous to guard against the opposite Extream of *Antinomianism*, for which Purpose they appointed a Committee to peruse the Writings of Dr. *Crisp*, *Eaton*, *Saltmarsh*, and others; who having drawn out some of their most dangerous Positions, reported them to the Assembly, where they were not only condemned, but confuted in their publick Sermons and Writings.

Parliament and Assembly apply to the Scots.

Rushw. Vol. V. p. 463, 466, 469.

At this Time the Interest of the Parliament was so reduced, that they were obliged to call in the Assistance of the *Scots*. The Conservators of the Peace of that Kingdom had appointed a Convention of the States, *June 22.* under Pretence of securing their Country against the Power of the Royal Army in the North; and a general Assembly, *Aug. 2.* to consider the State of Religion. His Majesty would have forbid their Meeting, but that being impracticable, he gave Orders to limit their Consultations to the Concerns of their own Country; but the Parliament of *England* sent the Earl of *Rutland*, Sir *William Armyn*, Sir *H. Kane*, Mr. *Hatcher*, Mr. *Darley*, and two Divines from *Westminster*, (*viz.*) Mr. *Marshall* and Mr. *Nye*, with Letters to each of these Assemblies, desiring their Assistance in the War, and the Assistance of some of their Divines with those at *Westminster*, to settle an Uniformity of Religion and Church

King
Charles I.
1643.

Church Government for the two Nations. To enforce these Requests they delivered a Letter from the Assembly, “ setting forth the deplorable Condition of
“ the Kingdom of *England*, which was upon the Edge
“ of a most desperate Precipice, ready to be swallow-
“ ed up by Satan and his Instruments ; they repre-
“ sent the Cruelty of their Enemies against such as
“ fall into their Hands, being armed against them,
“ not only as Men, but as Christians, as Protestants,
“ and as Reformers ; and that if they should be gi-
“ ven up to their Rage, they fear it will endanger
“ the Safety of all the Protestant Churches. In a
“ deeper Sense of this Danger (say they) than we
“ can express, we address you in the Bowels of
“ Christ, for your most fervent Prayers and Advice,
“ what further to do for the making our own and the
“ Kingdom’s Peace with God, and for the Uniting
“ the Protestant Party more firmly, that we may
“ all serve God with one Consent, and stand up
“ against Antichrist as one Man.”

The Commissioners arrived at *Edinburgh Aug. 9.* and were favourably received by the Assembly, who proposed, as a Preliminary, that the two Nations should enter into a perpetual *Covenant* for themselves and their Posterity, that all Things might be done in God’s House according to his Will ; and having appointed some of their Number to consult with the *English* Commissioners about a proper Form, they chose Delegates for the *Westminster* Assembly, and unanimously advised the *Convention of States* to assist the Parliament in the War, for the following Reasons.

1. “ Because they apprehended the War was for Religion.
2. Because the Protestant Faith was in danger.
3. Gratitude for former Assistances at the Time of the *Scots* Reformation, required a suitable Return.
4. Because the Churches of *Scotland* and *England* being embarked in one Bottom, if one be ruined the other can’t subsist.
5. The

Reasons of the G. Assembly of Scotland for assisting the English Parliament.
Rushw. Vol. V. p. 472.

King
Charles I.
1643.

“ Prospect of an Uniformity between the two King-
doms in Discipline and Worship will strengthen the
“ Protestant Interest at home and abroad. 6. The
“ present Parliament had been friendly to the *Scots*,
“ and might be so again. 7. Though the King had so
“ lately established their Religion according to their
“ Desires, yet they could not confide in his royal
“ Declarations, having so often found *facta verbis con-*
“ *traria.*”

The Instructions of the Commissioners sent to the Assembly at *Westminster*, were to promote the Extirpation of Popery, Prelacy, Heresy, Schism, Scepticism and Idolatry, and to endeavour an Union between the two Kingdoms in one Confession of Faith, one Form of Church Government, and one Directory of Worship.

Committee
appointed
to frame a
Solemn
League
and Cove-
nant.
Hamil. M.
p. 239.

The Committee for drawing up the solemn League and Covenant delivered it into the Assembly, Aug. 17. where it was read, and highly applauded, by the Ministers and *Lay-Elders*, none opposing it but the King's Commissioners; so that it pass'd both the Assembly and Convention in one Day, and was dispatch'd next Morning to *Westminster*, with a Letter to the two Houses, wishing that it might be confirmed, and solemnly sworn, and subscribed in both *Kingdoms*, as the surest and strictest Obligation to make them stand and fall together in the Cause of Religion and Liberty.

Mr. Mar-
shal and
Nye's Let-
ter to the
Assembly at
Westmin-
ster.

Mr. *Marshal* and *Nye* in their Letter to the Assembly of Aug. 18. assure their Brethren, the *Scots* Clergy were entirely on the Side of the Parliament in this Quarrel, against the Popish and Episcopal Faction; that there were between Twenty and Thirty of the prime Nobility present when the *Covenant* pass'd the Convention; and that even the King's Commissioners confessed, that in their private Capacity they were for it, though as his Majesty's Commissioners they were bound to oppose it. So that if the *English* Parliament (say they) comply with the Form of this Cove-
nant,

nant, we are perswaded the whole Body of the Scots Kingdom will live and die with them, and speedily come to their Assistance.

King
Charles I.
1643.
Debates
upon it.

When their Commisſioners arrived at London they presented the *Covenant* to the two Houses, who referred it to the Assembly of Divines, where it met with some little Opposition; Dr. Featly declared, he durst not abjure Prelacy *absolutely*, because he had sworn to obey his Bishop in all Things lawful and honest, and therefore proposed to qualify the second Article thus, *I will endeavour the Extirpation of Popery, and all Antichristian, Tyrannical, or Independent Prelacy*; but it was carried against him. Dr. Burges objected to several Articles, and was not without some Difficulty perswaded to subscribe, after he had been suspended. The Prolocutor, Mr. Gataker, and many others, declared for primitive Episcopacy, or for *one stated President with his Presbyters to govern every Church*; and refused to subscribe till a Parenthesis was inserted, declaring what Sort of Prelacy was to be abjured, (*viz.*) *[Church Government by Archbishops, Bishops, Deans and Chapters, Archdeacons, and all other Ecclesiastical Officers depending upon them.]* The Scots, who had been introduced into the Assembly Sept. 15. were for abjuring Episcopacy as simply unlawful, but the *English* Divines were generally against it.

Calamy's
Abridg.
P. 81.

Bishop Burnet says, our Commissioners pressed chiefly for a *Civil League*, but the Scots would have a *Religious One*, to which the *English* were obliged to yield, but took Care, at the same Time, to leave a Door open for a Latitude of Interpretation. Sir Henry Vane put the Word LEAGUE into the Title, as thinking that might be broken sooner than a *Covenant*; and in the first Article he inserted that general Phrase, of Reforming ACCORDING TO THE WORD OF GOD; by which the *English* thought themselves secure from the Inroads of Presbytery; but the Scots relied upon the next Words, AND ACCORDING TO THE PRACTICE OF THE BEST REFORMED CHURCHES;

Hamil. M.
P. 237,
240.

King Charles I. 1643. CHURCHES; in which they were confident their Discipline must be included. When Mr. Colman read the *Covenant* before the House of Lords, in order to their subscribing it, he declared, That by *Prelacy* all Sorts of Episcopacy was not intended, but only the Form therein described. Thus the wise Men on both Sides endeavoured to out-wit each other in wording the Articles; and with these slight Amendments the *Covenant* pass'd the Assembly, and both Houses of Parliament; and by an Order dated *September 21.* was printed and published as follows:

'A Solemn League and Covenant for Reformation, and Defence of Religion, the Honour and Happiness of the King, and the Peace and Safety of the Three Kingdoms of England, Scotland, and Ireland.

The Solemn League and Covenant.

Rushw. Vol. V. p. 478.

WE Noblemen, Barons, Knights, Gentlemen, Citizens, Burgessees, Ministers of the Gospel, and Commons of all Sorts, in the Kingdoms of *England, Scotland, and Ireland*, by the Providence of God, living under one King, and being of one Reformed Religion, having before our Eyes the Glory of God, and the Advancement of the Kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, the Honour and Happiness of the King's Majesty, and his Posterity, and the true publick Liberty, Safety and Peace of the Kingdoms, wherein every one's private Condition is included; and calling to Mind the treacherous and bloody Plots, Conspiracies, Attempts, and Practices of the Enemies of God, against the true Religion, and Professors thereof in all Places, especially in these three Kingdoms, ever since the Reformation of Religion; and how much their Rage, Power, and Presumption, are of late, and at this Time encreased and exercised, whereof the deplorable Estate of the Church and Kingdom of *Ireland*, the distressed Estate of the Church and

" King-

“ Kingdom of *England*, and the dangerous Estate of
 “ the Church and Kingdom of *Scotland*, are present
 “ and publick Testimonies; we have (now at last)
 “ after other Means of Supplication, Remonstrance,
 “ Proteſtations, and Sufferings, for the Preſervation
 “ of our Lives, and our Religion, from utter Ruin
 “ and Deſtruction, according to the commendable
 “ Practice of theſe Kingdoms in former Times, and
 “ the Example of God’s People in other Nations,
 “ after mature Deliberation, reſolved and determi-
 “ ned to enter into a mutual and ſolemn League and
 “ Covenant, wherein we all ſubſcribe, and each one
 “ of us for himſelf, with our Hands liſted up to the
 “ moſt high God, do ſwear,

King
Charles I.
1643.

I.

“ That we ſhall ſincerely, really, and conſtantly,
 “ through the Grace of God, endeavour in our ſeve-
 “ ral Places and Callings, the Preſervation of the
 “ Reformed Religion in the Church of *Scotland*, in
 “ Doctrine, Worſhip, Diſcipline and Government,
 “ againſt our common Enemies; the Reformation
 “ of Religion in the Kingdoms of *England* and *Ireland*,
 “ in Doctrine, Worſhip, Diſcipline and Govern-
 “ ment, according to the Word of God, and the
 “ Example of the beſt Reformed Churches; and we
 “ ſhall endeavour to bring the Church of God in the
 “ three Kingdoms to the neareſt Conjunction, and
 “ Uniformity in Religion, Confeſſing of Faith, Form
 “ of Church Government, Directory for Worſhip,
 “ and Catechiſing, that we, and our Poſterity after
 “ us, may, as Brethren, live in Faith and Love,
 “ and the Lord may delight to dwell in the miſt
 “ of us.

II.

“ That we ſhall in like Manner, without reſpect
 “ of Perſons, endeavour the Extirpation of Popery,
 “ Prelacy (that is, Church Government by Arch-
 “ biſhops,

King
Charles I.
1643.

“ bishops, Bishops, their Chancellors and Commis-
saries, Deans, Deans and Chapters, Archdeacons,
“ and all other Ecclesiastical Officers depending on
“ that Hierarchy) Superstition, Heresy, Schism,
“ Profaneness, and whatsoever shall be found to be
“ contrary to sound Doctrine, and the Power of
“ Godliness, lest we partake in other Mens Sins, and
“ thereby be in danger to receive of their Plagues;
“ and that the Lord may be one, and his Name
“ one, in the three Kingdoms.

III.

“ We shall with the same Reality, Sincerity and
“ Constancy, in our several Vocations, endeavour
“ with our Estates and Lives, mutually to preserve
“ the Rights and Privileges of the Parliaments, and
“ the Liberties of the Kingdoms, and to preserve
“ and defend the King’s Majesty’s Person and Autho-
“ rity, in the Preservation and Defence of the true
“ Religion and Liberties of the Kingdoms, that the
“ World may bear Witness with our Consciences, of
“ our Loyalty, and that we have no Thoughts or
“ Intentions to diminish his Majesty’s just Power
“ and Greatness.

IV.

“ We shall also with all Faithfulness, endeavour
“ the Discovery of all such as have been, or shall be
“ Incendiaries, Malignants, or evil Instruments, by
“ hindring the Reformation of Religion, dividing
“ the King from his People, or one of the King-
“ doms from another, or making any Factions or
“ Parties among the People, contrary to the League
“ and Covenant, that they may be brought to pub-
“ lick Trial, and receive condign Punishment, as
“ the Degree of their Offences shall require or de-
“ serve, or the supream Judicatories of both King-
“ doms respectively, or others having Power from
“ them for that Effect, shall judge convenient.

V.

V.

“ And whereas the Happinefs of a blessed Peace
“ between these Kingdoms, denied in former Times
“ to our Progenitors, is by the good Providence of
“ God granted unto us, and has been lately concluded
“ and settled by both Parliaments, we shall, each
“ one of us according to our Places and Interests,
“ endeavour that they may remain conjoined in a
“ firm Peace and Union to all Posterity, and that
“ Justice may be done on all the wilful Opposers
“ thereof, in manner expressed in the precedent
“ Articles.

VI.

“ We shall also, according to our Places and
“ Callings, in this common Cause of Religion, Li-
“ berty, and Peace of the Kingdom, assist and de-
“ fend all those that enter into this League and Co-
“ venant, in the maintaining and pursuing thereof;
“ and shall not suffer our selves, directly or indirect-
“ ly, by whatsoever Combination, Perswasion, or
“ Terror, to be divided and withdrawn from this
“ blessed Union and Conjunction, whether to make
“ Defection to the contrary Part, or give our selves
“ to a detestable Indifferency or Neutrality in this
“ Cause, which so much concerneth the Glory of
“ God, the Good of the Kingdoms, and Honour of
“ the King; but shall, all the Days of our Lives,
“ zealously, and constantly continue therein against
“ all Opposition, and promote the same according
“ to our Power, against all Lets and Impediments
“ whatsoever; and what we are not able our selves
“ to suppress or overcome, we shall reveal and make
“ known, that it may be timely prevented or re-
“ moved.

“ And because these Kingdoms are guilty of many
“ Sins and Provocations against God, and his Son
Jesus

King
Charles I.
1643.

“ Jesus Christ, as is too manifest by our present Distresses and Dangers, the Fruits thereof, we profess and declare before God and the World, our unfeigned Desire to be humbled for our own Sins, and for the Sins of these Kingdoms; especially that we have not, as we ought, valued the inestimable Benefit of the Gospel; that we have not laboured for the Purity and Power thereof; and that we have not endeavoured to receive Christ in our Hearts, nor to walk worthy of him in our Lives, which are the Cause of other Sins and Transgressions, so much abounding amongst us; and our true and unfeigned Purpose, Desire, and Endeavour for our selves, and all others under our Charge, both in publick and private, in all Duties we owe to God and Man; to amend our Lives, and each one to go before another in the Example of a real Reformation, that the Lord may turn away his Wrath and heavy Indignation, and establish these Churches and Kingdoms in Truth and Peace. And this Covenant we make in the Presence of Almighty God, the Searcher of all Hearts, with a true Intention to perform the same, as we shall answer at that great Day, when the Secrets of all Hearts shall be disclosed; most humbly beseeching the Lord to strengthen us by his holy Spirit for this End, and to bless our Desires and Proceedings with such Success, as may be a Deliverance and Safety to his People, and Encouragement to the Christian Churches, growing under, or in danger of the Yoke of Antichristian Tyranny, to join with the same, or like Attestation and Covenant, to the Glory of God, the Enlargement of the Kingdom of Jesus Christ, and the Peace and Tranquility of Christian Kingdoms and Commonwealths.”

Manner of Monday, September 25. was appointed for subscribing this Covenant, when both Houses, with the
Scots

Scots Commissioners, and Assembly of Divines, being met in the Church of St. Margaret's Westminster, the Reverend Mr. White of Dorchester opened the Solemnity with Prayer; after him Mr. Henderson and Mr. Nye spoke in justification of taking the Covenant from Scripture Precedents, and display'd the Advantage the Church had received from such sacred Combinations. Mr. Henderson spoke next, and declared, That the States of Scotland had resolved to assist the Parliament of England in carrying on the Ends and Designs of this Covenant; then Mr. Nye read it from the Pulpit with an audible Voice Article by Article, each Person standing uncovered, with his right Hand lifted up bare to Heaven, worshipping the great Name of God, and swearing to the Performance of it. Dr. Gouge concluded the Solemnity with Prayer, after which the House of Commons went up into the Chancel and subscribed their Names in one Roll of Parchment, and the Assembly in another, in both which the Covenant was fairly transcribed. Lord's Day following it was tender'd to all Persons within the Bills of Mortality, being read in the several Churches to their Congregations as above. Oct. 15. it was taken by the House of Lords, after a Sermon preached by Dr. Temple, from *Nehemiah* x. 29. and an Exhortation by Mr. Coleman. October 29. it was ordered by the Committee of States in Scotland to be sworn to, and subscribed all over that Kingdom, on Penalty of the Confiscation of Goods and Rents, and such other Punishment as his Majesty and the Parliament should inflict on the Refusers. All the Lords of the Council were summoned to sign the Covenant Nov. 2. and those who did not, to appear again, the 14th of the same Month, under the severest Penalties, when some of the King's Party not attending were declared Enemies to Religion, and to their King and Country; Nov. 17. their Goods were ordered to be seized, and their Persons apprehended; upon which they fled into England. Such was the unbound-
ed

King
Charles I.
1643.

Rushw.
Vol. V.
P. 475.

Hamil. M.
p. 240.

King Charles I. 1643. ed Zeal of that Nation ! *February 2. following, the Covenant was ordered to be taken throughout the Kingdom of England, by all Persons above the Age of eighteen Years; and the Assembly were commanded to draw up an Exhortation to dispose People to it, which being approved by both Houses, was published under the Title of*

An Exhortation to the taking of the Solemn League and Covenant, for Reformation and Defence of Religion, the Honour and Happiness of the King, and the Peace and Safety of the three Kingdoms of England, Scotland and Ireland, and for satisfying such Scruples as may arise in the taking of it; assented to by the House, and ordered to be printed.

Die Veneris, Feb. 9. 1643.

An Exhortation to the taking of the Solemn League and Covenant.
Rushw. Vol. V. p. 475. Husb. Col. p. 424.

IF the Power of Religion, or solid Reason; if Loyalty to the King, and Piety to their native Country, or Love to themselves, and natural Affection to their Posterity; if the Example of Men touched with a deep Sense of all these; or extraordinary Success from God thereupon; can awaken an embroiled bleeding Remnant to embrace the Sovereign and only Means of their Recovery, there can be no Doubt but this Solemn League and Covenant will find, wheresoever it shall be tender'd, a People ready to entertain it with all Chearfulness and Duty.

And were it not commended to the Kingdom by the concurrent Encouragement of the honourable Houses of Parliament, the Assembly of Divines, the renowned City of *London*, multitudes of other Persons of eminent Rank and Quality of this Nation, and the whole Body of *Scotland*, who have all willingly sworn and subscribed it with rejoicing at the Oath, so graciously seconded from Heaven already, by blasting the Counsels, and breaking the Power of the Enemy more than

“ ever.

“ ever, yet it goeth forth in its own Strength with
 “ such convincing Evidence of Equity, Truth, and
 “ Righteousness, as may raise in all (not willfully
 “ Ignorant, nor miserably seduced) inflamed Affe-
 “ ctions to join with their Brethren in this happy
 “ Bond, for putting an End to the present Miseries,
 “ and for saving both King and Kingdom from ut-
 “ ter Ruin, now so strongly and openly laboured
 “ by the Popish Faction, and such as have been be-
 “ witched and befotted by that viperous and bloody
 “ Generation —

King
Charles I.
1643.

It then proceeds to answer Objections against taking the Covenant ; as,

Obj. 1. That it obliges to the Extirpation of Prelacy, which stands as yet by the known Laws of the Land.

Answ. The Life and Soul of the Hierarchy is already taken away ; nothing of Jurisdiction remaining ; and since 'tis but a human Constitution, if it be found a Grievance, we may certainly endeavour its Extirpation in a lawful way.

Obj. 2. 'Tis said to be inconsistent with the Oath of Canonical Obedience.

Answ. If Men have sworn Obedience to the Laws of the Land, may they not endeavour by lawful Means the Repealing those Laws, if they are found inconvenient ? or, If any Ministers have taken Oaths not warranted by the Laws of God and the Land, ought they not to repent of them ?

Obj. 3. But the Covenant crosses the Oaths of Supremacy and Allegiance.

Answ. This is false, for it binds to the Preservation of the King's Person and Authority, in the Defence of the Religion and Liberties of the Kingdom.

Obj. 4. But it is done without the King's Consent.

Answ. So was the Protestation of May 5. which went through the whole Kingdom, his Majesty not excepting against it, though he was then at Whitehall. The same has been done by the united Netherlands under
 King

King Charles I. King *Philip*; and more lately in *Scotland*, his Majesty himself declaring by Act of Parliament, that they had done nothing but what became loyal and obedient Subjects.

It is answered. Dr. *Barwick* says, That some Persons in the University of *Cambridge*, published an Answer to this Exhortation, which I have not seen; but if the Reader will look forward to the Year 1647. he will find the Reasons of the University of *Oxford* against it, confirmed in Convocation, the Validity of which he will judge of for himself. 'Tis certain most of the religious Part of the Nation, who apprehended the Protestant Religion in danger, and were desirous of reducing the Hierarchy of the Church, were zealous for the *Covenant*. Others took it only in Obedience to the Parliament, being sensible of the distressed Circumstances of their Affairs, and that the Assistance of the *Scots* was to be obtained on no other Terms. But as it was a Test of a mixed Nature, and contained some Obligations upon Conscience, which wise and honest Men might scruple, who were otherwise well affected to the Protestant Religion, and the Liberties of their Country; the imposing it as a Test was not to be justified, though it appears most of the Episcopal Divines who made the greatest Figure in the Church after the Restoration did not refuse it.

Together with the *Exhortation of the Assembly*, the following Orders and Instructions were dispersed over the Kingdom.

Instructions for taking the Covenant in the Country. Ordered, " That Copies of the Covenant be sent to all Commanders in chief, and Governors of Towns, Forts, Garrisons, and Soldiers, that it may be taken by all Soldiers under their Command. " That Copies be sent to the Committees of Parliament, in the several Counties that are under the Power of the Parliament, and that the Committees within six Days disperse the said Copies, and cause them to be delivered to the Ministers, Church-Wardens, or Constables of the several Parishes.

" That

“ That the several Ministers be required to read the Covenant to the People the next Lord’s Day after they have prepared the People to take it.

King Charles I.
1643.

“ That the Committees of Parliament take it themselves within seven Days after they have received the Copies; and then disperse themselves throughout their Counties, so as three or four of them may be together at the several Places appointed for the People to take it. That they summon all the Ministers, Church-Wardens, Constables, and other Officers, to that Place, and after a Sermon preached by a Minister whom they shall appoint, they shall cause the said Minister to tender the Covenant to all such Ministers, and other Officers, to be taken and subscribed in the Presence of the Committee.

“ The said Ministers are then to be required to tender the Covenant to all the rest of their Parishioners next Lord’s Day. And if any Minister refuse, or neglect to appear at the said Summons; or refuse to take the said Covenant, the Committee shall appoint another Minister to do it in his place.

“ If any Minister refuse to take, or tender the Covenant; or if any other Person refuses to take it after a second Tender, upon two Lord’s Days, their Names shall be returned to the Committee, and by them to the House of Commons; and all Persons that absent themselves after Notice given, shall be returned as Refusers.

The *English* in foreign Parts were not exempted from this Test; Directions were sent to Mr. Strickland, the Parliament’s Agent at the *Hague*, to tender it to all the *English* in those Countries, and to certify the Names of such as refused. Here the Elector Palatine took it, and after some Time came into *England*, and condescended to sit in the Assembly of Divines. December 20. 1643. it was ordered by the Lords and Commons, That no Person should be

Whitlock, p. 79.
Parl. Chr. p. 172.

Hugh Col. p. 44.

King
Charles 1. capable of being elected a Common Council Man of
 1643. the City of *London*, or so much as have a Voice in
 such Elections, who has not taken the Covenant.
 On the 29th of *Jan.* 1644. it was ordered by the
 Commons, That the Solemn League and Covenant
 be upon every Day of Fasting, and publick Humili-
 ation, publickly read in every Church and Congre-
 gation within the Kingdom; and every Congre-
 gation is enjoined to have *One* fairly printed in a
 large Letter, in a Table fitted to be hung up in a
 publick Place of the Church or Congregation, to be
 read by the People. All young Ministers were re-
 quired to take the Covenant at their Ordination;
 none of the Laity were continued in any Office of
 Trust, neither Civil or Military, who refused it.
 When the War was ended, all the Noblemen, Knights,
 Gentlemen, and Officers who had opposed the Par-
 liament, were obliged to submit to it, before they
 were admitted to Composition. But notwithstanding
 all this Severity, Dr. *Calamy* says, Mr. *Baxter* kept his
 People from taking the Covenant, as fearing it might
 be a Snare to their Consciences. Nay, he prevented its
 being much taken in the County he lived in, by keeping
 the Ministers from offering it to their People, except
 the City of *Worcester*, where he had no great Interest.

Abridg.
 p. 104.

*King for-
 bids it.*

The King could not be unacquainted with these
 Proceedings, for the *Covenant* lay before the Parlia-
 ment and Assembly almost a Month, during which
 Time his Majesty took no publick Notice of it;
 but a Fortnight after it had been subscribed by both
 Houses, and by all the Clergy and Laity within the
 Bills of Mortality, he issued out the following Pro-
 clamation, dated from *Oxford*, *Octob.* 9. in the Nine-
 teenth Year of his Reign.

By the King.

Rush.
 Vol. V.
 p. 482.

“ WHEREAS there is a printed Paper, en-
 titled *A Solemn League and Covenant*, for
 Reformation and Defence of Religion, &c. pretended

“ to

“ to be printed by Order of the House of Commons,
 “ *Sept. 21.* which Covenant, though it seems to ^{King Charles I.}
 “ make specious Expressions of Piety and Religion, ^{1643.}
 “ is in truth nothing else but a traiterous and sedi-
 “ tious Combination against us and the established
 “ Religion and Laws of this Kingdom, in pursuance
 “ of a traiterous Design and Endeavour to bring in
 “ foreign Force to invade this Kingdom: We do
 “ therefore straitly charge and command all our
 “ loving Subjects, of what Degree or Quality so-
 “ ever, upon their Allegiance, that they presume
 “ not to take the said seditious and traiterous Cove-
 “ nant. And we do likewise hereby further inhibit
 “ and forbid all our Subjects to impose, administer,
 “ or tender the said Covenant, as they, and every
 “ one of them, will answer the contrary at their ut-
 “ most and extreamest Perils.”

His Majesty sent the like Declaration into *Scotland*, but the States of that Kingdom paid no further Regard to it, than to send him the Reasons of their Conduct, with their Advice to his Majesty to take the *Covenant* himself.

Great Complaints have been made, and not with- ^{The Insuffi-}
 out some Reason, of the Execution this Test did upon ^{ence it had}
 the King's Clergy throughout the Kingdom. It was ^{on the}
 a new Weapon put into the Hands of the Committees, ^{Clergy.}
 which enabled them with more ease and certainty to
 discover *malignant or disaffected Ministers*; for instead
 of producing a Number of Witnesses, as had been
 the Method hitherto, they now tender'd the *Cove-*
nant, which the others refusing gave Occasion to the
 general Report, that the Clergy were turned out of
 their Livings *only for refusing the Covenant*, whereas
 their Sequestration was grounded upon other Causes,
 or at least the Articles of Immorality or Disaffection to
 the Parliament, were almost always joined with it. When
 the *Covenant* passed through the Parliament Quarters,
 in some Towns it was neglected, in others the Incum-

King
Charles I.
1643.

bent avoided it, by withdrawing for a few Weeks, and getting another to officiate. Some that refused were displaced, and the Names of those who absented were returned to the Parliament, but little or nothing came of it. The Writer of the Life of Bishop *Saunderson* says, that in the associated Counties of *Cambridgeshire*, &c. all were ejected who refused the *Covenant*, that is, all to whom it was tender'd; for though it was pressed pretty closely in some Places notorious for Disaffection, in others, that had been quiet, it was but little regarded. The Earl of *Manchester* had particular Instructions to tender the *Covenant* to the *Cambridge* Scholars, and yet the Commissioners imposed it only upon such who had adher'd to the King, or of whose Disaffection they had sufficient Proof; several who behaved peaceably being permitted to keep their Places, who would certainly have refused it. It has been observed, that Mr. *Baxter* prevented its being much taken in *Worcestershire*; and no doubt, there were Men of Moderation and Influence who did the same in other Counties. Those Clergymen who had declared for the King were usually put to the Trial; but reputed *Calvinists*, of sober Lives, who had stood Neuter, were frequently overlooked; so that the beneficed Clergy suffered by the *Covenant*, rather as *Parties in the War*, than as Friends of the Hierarchy. However, it being a *Religious Test*, the imposing it was, in my Opinion, unwarrantable, and a very great Hardship, especially as it was for some Time a Door of Entrance into Ecclesiastical Preferments for such young Divines as had no Concern in the War. A Test of a civil Nature might have answered all the Ends of civil Government, without burdening the Consciences of Men with what had no Relation to Liberty and Property; but if the Puritan Powers bore hard upon the Loyalists in imposing the *Covenant*, the King's Clergy were even with them at the Restoration, when they obliged them publicly to *abjure* it, or quit their Livings in the Church.

The

The Necessity of the King's Affairs having obliged him to arm the Papists, and commission the Duke of *Ormond* to agree to a Cessation of Arms with the *Irish Catholics*, in order to draw off his Forces from thence, his Majesty fell under the Suspicion of favouring that Religion, especially when it appeared that not only the Protestant Soldiers, but the *Irish* Rebels were transported with them. Mr. *Whitlock* says, several of their Officers and Soldiers came over with the King's Army; that a Month or two after, eight Hundred native *Irish* Rebels landed at *Weymouth* under the Lord *Inchequin*, and another Party at *Beaumaris*, which committed great Spoils, destroying with Fire what they could not carry off. Another Party landed near *Chester* under the Earl of *Cork*, and fifteen Hundred were cast away at Sea: These Wretches brought hither the same savage Disposition as they had discovered in their own Country; they plundered and killed People in cold Blood, observing neither the Rules of Honour nor the Laws of Arms. The *Scots* Forces in the North of *Ireland* enter'd into a Confederacy to stand by each other against the Cessation, the Parliament of *England* protested against it, and published a Declaration informing the World, that his Majesty had broke through his royal Promise, of leaving the *Irish* War to them; they forbid all Masters of Ships to bring over any Officers or Soldiers, on Penalty of the Forfeiture of their Vessels, and gave Letters of Mart to Merchants and others, who would fit out Ships at their own Expence, empowering them to take to their own Profit all such Ships and Goods as they should meet coming over with Soldiers or warlike Stores for the King. Next Year an Ordinance was published, that no Quarter should be given to any *Irish* Papist taken in Arms against the Parliament; all Officers were to except them out of their Capitulations, and upon making them Prisoners were immediately to put them to Death.

King
Charles I.
1643.

King
brings
over Forces
from Ire-
land.
p. 75, 76.
Rapin, p.
141, 144.
Clarend.
Vol. II,
Part I.
p. 414.

King
Charles I.
1643.
Ill Consequences
of it.
Rushw.
p. 383.

This unhappy Management of the King alienated the Affections of great Numbers of his Friends who had the Protestant Religion at heart; many who wished well to his Person deserted him upon this Occasion, and made their Peace with the Parliament, as the Earls of *Holland, Bedford, Clare, Carlisle*, Sir *Edward Deering*, and others; this last Gentleman published the Reasons of his Conduct to the World, the chief of which were, the *Irish Cessation*; his Majesty's preferring Popish Officers to chief Places of Trust and Honour; and the Language of the *Oxford* Clergy and others, That *the King should come no other Way to his Palace but by Conquest*. There was certainly a very malignant Spirit among those Gentlemen at this Time, as appears by their Form of Thanksgiving, or rather Imprecation, for the taking of *Bristol*, and the Success of the Earl of *Newcastle's* Army in the North; "O Lord (say they) though our
" Sins cry aloud, hear them not, but look to the
" Righteousness of our Cause; see the seamless Coat
" of thy Son torn; the Throne of thine Anointed
" trampled upon; thy Church invaded by Sacrilege,
" and thy People miserably deceived by Lyes; see
" it, O God, as see it thou dost, and vindicate what
" thou seest on the Heads of those who lead these
" Wretches." Many of the Earl of *Newcastle's* Soldiers in the North, upon News of the *Irish Cessation* threw down their Arms, and offered a Composition; and if we may believe the Parliamentary Chronicle, this single Action lost the King all the Northern Counties. To put a Stop to the Clamours of the People, and prevent any farther Desertions, his Majesty resolved to support his own Character as a *Protestant*, and accordingly made the following Protestation in Presence of the Congregation at *Christ Church, Oxford*, immediately before his Receiving the Sacrament from the Hands of Archbishop *Usher*.

Part III.
p. 86.

King
Charles I.

My Lord,

“ I Espy here many resolved Protestants, who
 “ may declare to the World the Declaration I
 “ do now make. I have, to the utmost of my
 “ Power, prepared my Soul to be a worthy Recei-
 “ ver, and may I so receive Comfort from the blef-
 “ sed Sacrament, as I do intend the Establishment of
 “ the true reformed Protestant Religion, as it stood
 “ in its Beauty in the happy Days of Queen *Eliza-*
 “ *beth, without any Connivance at Popery.* I bleſs
 “ God, that in the midst of these publick Distra-
 “ ctions I have still liberty to communicate. And
 “ may this Sacrament be my Damnation, if my
 “ Heart do not join with my Lips in this Protesta-
 “ tion.”

1643.

King's

Protesta-
tion.

Rushw.

p 346.

Vide

Rapin,

p. 169,

&c.

But how inconsistent was this with his Majesty's
 Actions, when within a few Days he agreed to a Ces-
 sation with the *Irish* Papists for a Year, and a Tolera-
 tion of their Religion? All Men knew, that his Ma-
 jesty not only connived at Popery, but indulged it as
 far as was in his Power; Historians therefore are at
 a Loss to reconcile this solemn Appeal to Heaven
 with the King's Piety and sincere Devotion. The
 Parliament was so apprehensive of the Consequences
 of bringing over the *Irish* Papists, that by an Order
 of Nov. 22. they desired the Assembly of Divines to
 write Letters to the foreign Churches of *Holland*,
France, *Switzerland*, and other Places, to inform
 them of the Artifices of his Majesty's Agents; of the
 constant Employment of *Irish* Rebels, and other Pa-
 pists, to be Governors, Commanders, and Soldiers in
 his Armies; of the many Evidences of their Intentions
 to introduce Popery; to hinder the intended Refor-
 mation, and to condemn other Protestant Churches
 as unsound because not Prelatical; and that the *Scots*
 Commissioners be desired to join with them. In pur-

King Charles I. 1643. fuance of this Order the Assembly wrote the following Letter, dated Nov. 30. 1643.

To the Belgick, French, Helvetian, and other reformed Churches.

Right Rev. and dearly beloved in our Lord Jesus Christ,

Assembly's
Letter to
fore. gn
Churches.
Ruthw.
p. 371.

WE the Assembly of Divines, and others, convened by the Authority of both Houses of Parliament, with the Commissioners from the General Assembly of the Church of *Scotland*, do heartily salute you in the Lord. We doubt not, but the sad Reports of the Miseries under which the Church and Kingdom of *England* do bleed, and wherewith we are ready to be swallowed up, is long since come to your Ears; and 'tis probable, the same Instruments of Satan and Anti-Christ have by their Emissaries, endeavoured to represent us as black as may be among your selves. — And we sometimes doubt, whether we have not been wanting to our own Innocence, and your Satisfaction, in being thus long silent; but pardon us, *dear Brethren*, if this Cup of Trembling wherewith our Spirits have been filled to Amazement, and our wrestling with extream Difficulties ever since our Meeting, has hinder'd from that which was our Duty; and give us leave now a little to ease our Grief, while we relate the Desolation made by the Antichristian Faction, who are for hindring the Work of Reformation, and for introducing and cherishing Popery; and are now arrived to that Strength, that if the Lord do not speedily help us, we shall be altogether laid waste by them.

How great a Hand they [the Prelates] have had, in the Miseries of other reformed Churches, in the Destruction of the *Palatinate*, in the Loss of *Rosbel*, are so fully known and felt by you all, that we need not speak any Thing of them. And


“ we

“ we suppose their inveterate Hatred against you all
 “ is sufficiently manifest, in that Multitudes of them
 “ have refused to acknowledge any of you for
 “ Churches of Christ because you are not Prelatical,
 “ and thereby (as they conceive) want a lawful Vo-
 “ cation of Ministers. Sure we are, that among our
 “ selves, scarce one Thing can be thought of which
 “ may be supposed an Argument of their Design to
 “ advance Popery, that has not been attempted.
 “ The Laws against Popery have been suspended;
 “ Judges forbid to proceed against condemn’d Priests;
 “ Jesuits set free; Houses of Superstition in *Ireland*
 “ and *England* have been set up and not discountenan-
 “ ced; notorious Papists harbour’d about the Court
 “ and prefer’d; many released from legal Penalties
 “ and their Prosecutors discountenanced; Agents
 “ have been sent into *Italy*, and Nuncios from *Rome*
 “ received, while the most zealous Protestants have
 “ been persecuted; many Prelates and Clergymen
 “ have publicly preached, and endeavoured to lea-
 “ ven the People with all Points of Popery, except
 “ the *Supremacy*, and introduced abundance of cor-
 “ rupt Innovations into the Worship of God; for
 “ Non-compliance with which many have been for-
 “ ced to fly for Refuge to the remote Parts of the
 “ World.

“ They imposed upon the Kingdom of *Scotland* a
 “ new Popish Service Book and Canons, to which,
 “ when that Nation would not submit, they prevail-
 “ ed with his Majesty to proclaim them Rebels, and
 “ raise an Army against them, to which all the Pa-
 “ pists, and those who were Popishly affected, con-
 “ tributed; and had not the Lord, by his Blessing
 “ on the *Scots* Arms, and by the Calling of this Par-
 “ liament prevented it, the two Nations had been
 “ imbruing their Hands in each others Blood.

“ But though we hoped through the Goodness of
 “ God, and his Blessing upon this Parliament, whose
 “ Hearts were inclined to a more perfect Reforma-
 “ tion,

King
Charles I.
1643.



tion, that our Winter had been past, yet, alas !
we find it to be quite otherwise. We know our
Sins have deserved all, and if we die and perish the
Lord is righteous ; to his Hand we submit, and to
him alone we look for Healing. The same Anti-
christian Faction not being discouraged, by their
want of Success in *Scotland*, have stirred up a bloody
Rebellion in *Ireland*, wherein above one hundred
Thousand Protestants have been destroyed in one
Province, within a few Months. They have alie-
nated the Heart of his Majesty from his Parlia-
ment, and prevailed with him to withdraw and
raise an Army, which at first pretended only to be
made up of Protestants — but soon after Papists
were armed by Commission from the King ; many
great Papists were put into Places of publick Com-
mand, and the Body of all the Papists have join'd his
Majesty with all their Might ; they profess and exer-
cise their Religion publicly in several Parts of the
Kingdom, and go up and down plundering, mur-
dering, and spoiling of their Goods, all such as ad-
here to the Parliament ; and to the Cause of Reli-
gion. Nor has the Parliament been able, by their
Petitions and Remonstrances, to recover his Ma-
jesty out of their Hands, or bring these Men to
deserved Punishment, but the Sword rages almost
in every Corner of this woful Land.

And to compleat our Miseries, they have pre-
vailed with his Majesty so far to own the *Rebels*
in *Ireland*, as not only to call them his *Roman Ca-*
tholick Subjects now in Arms, but to grant them
a Cessation of Arms for a Year, and to hold what
they have gotten, with Liberty to strengthen
themselves with Men, Money, Arms, Ammuni-
tion, &c. whereby they are enabled not only to
destroy the Remnant of Protestants in *Ireland*, but
to come over hither, (as many of them are alrea-
dy) to act the same Butchery upon us.

“ In

“ In the Midst of these troublesome Times the two Houses of Parliament have called this Assembly, to give them our best Counsel for the Reformation of the Church, requiring us to make God’s Word only our Rule, and to endeavour the nearest Conformity to the best reformed Churches, and Uniformity to all the Churches of the three Kingdoms —

King
Charles I.
1643.

“ The Church and Kingdom of *Scotland* have made Offer of their humble Mediation to the King for a *Pacification*, which being rejected, both Nations have enter’d into a mutual *League and Covenant*; and the *Scots* have resolved to join in Arms with their Brethren in *England*, for their mutual Preservation from the common Enemy, and so far as in them lieth for the Safety of their native King. They have also sent their Commissioners hither, for Uniformity of Religion in the Churches of both Kingdoms.

“ And we their Commissioners do exceedingly rejoice, to behold the Foundation of the House of God, not only in Doctrine, but in Church Government, laid before our Eyes in a Reverend Assembly of so wise, learned, and godly Divines. And we find our selves bound in all Christian Duty, as well as by our late *Covenant*, to join in representing to the reformed Churches abroad, the true Condition of Affairs here, against all Mistakes and Misinformations.

“ And now, dear Brethren, we beg of you, *First*, To judge aright of our Innocence and Integrity in this our just Defence; if our Enemies say, that we are risen up in Rebellion to deprive the King of his just Power and Greatness, and to bring Anarchy and Confusion into the Church of Christ, we doubt not but our *solemn Covenant* (a Copy of which we humbly
“ pre-

King
Charles I.
1643.

“ present you herewith) will sufficiently clear us.
“ Let the righteous Lord judge between us,
“ whom we implore to help us no further than
“ we can plead these Things in sincerity.

Secondly, “ That you would sympathize with us
“ as Brethren, who suffer in and for the same
“ Cause wherein your selves have been oppressed.

Thirdly, “ That you would conceive of our Condition as your own common Cause, which, if
“ it be lost with us, your selves are not like long
“ to escape, the Quarrel being not so much against
“ Mens Persons, as against the Power of Godliness, and the Purity of God’s Word. The Way
“ and Manner of your owning us we leave to
“ your selves, only we importunately crave your
“ fervent Prayers, both publick and private, That
“ God would bring Salvation to us ; that the Blessings of Truth and Peace may rest upon us ;
“ that these three Nations may be joined as one
“ Stick in the Hands of the Lord ; and that we
“ our selves, contemptible Builders, called to repair the House of God, in a troublesome Time,
“ may see the Pattern of this House, and commend such a Platform to our *Zerubbabels* as may
“ be *most agreeable to his sacred Word, nearest in*
“ *Conformity to the best reformed Churches, and to*
“ *establish Uniformity among our selves ;* that all
“ Mountains may become Plains before them,
“ and us ; that then all who now see the Plummets
“ in our Hands, may also behold the top Stone
“ set upon the Head of the Lord’s House among
“ us, and may help us with shouting to cry, *Grace,*
“ *Grace, to it.*

“ Thus much we have been commanded to inform you of, Reverend Brethren (and by you all
“ faithful Christians under your Charge) by the honourable House of Commons, in whose Name,
“ and

“ and in our own, we bid you heartily farewell in
“ the Lord.”

King
Charles I.
1643.

Your most affectionately devoted Brethren in Christ,

William Twisse, *Prolocutor,*

Cornelius Burges, }
John White, } *Assessors,*

Henry Roborough, }
Adoniram Byfield, } *Scribes,*

John Maitland, }
A. Johnston, }
Alex. Henderson, } *Commissioners of the*
Sam. Rutherford, } *Church of Scotland.*
Rob. Bailie, }
Geo. Gillespie, }

The Inscription was, *To the Reverend and Learned
Pastors and Elders of the Classes and Churches of the
Province of Zealand, our much honoured Brethren.*

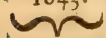
Letters of the same Import were sent to the seve-
ral Churches of the *seven Provinces*; to the Churches
of *Geneva*; the Protestant Cantons of *Switzerland*; Stuarts; P. 232.
the Churches of *Hesse, Hannaw, and Anhalt*; and to
the Protestant Congregation at *Paris*; all which
were received with Respect, and answered by the re-
spective Classes. But the Churches of *Bobemia, Tran-*
silvania, Poland, Silesia, and Austria, and other Ci-
ties and Principalities of *Germany*, were not written
to. The Answer from the *French Church at Paris* MS. penes me.
was read in the Assembly the beginning of *March*;
from *Switzerland* *June 12. 1644.* and from *Geneva* at
the same Time; from the Classes of *Amsterdam* and
Gelderland *June 29.* and Mr. *Whitlock* observes, That
the *Netherland Divines* express'd not only their Ap-
probation of the Proceedings of the Parliament and
Assembly touching the Covenant, but desired to join
with the two Kingdoms therein.

The

King

Charles I.

1643.



The King apprehending himself misrepresented to the foreign Churches, in that part of the Assembly's Letter which insinuates a Design to introduce Popery, and being advised to vindicate his Character from that Imputation, caused a Manifesto to be drawn up in *Latin* and *English*, to all foreign Protestants; which though not published till the beginning of next Year, may be properly inserted in this Place.

CHARLES, by the especial Providence of Almighty God, King of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &c. to all those who profess the true reformed Protestant Religion, of what Nation, Degree, or Condition soever they be, to whom this present Declaration shall come, Greeting,

King's
Reply.

Rushw.
Vol. V.
p. 752.

“ **W**HEREAS we are given to understand,
 “ that many false Rumours, and scandalous
 “ Letters, are spread up and down among the re-
 “ formed Churches in foreign Parts, by the poli-
 “ tick, or rather the pernicious Industry of some ill
 “ affected Persons, that we have an Inclination to
 “ recede from that orthodox Religion which we were
 “ born, baptized, and bred in, and which we have
 “ firmly professed and practised throughout the
 “ whole Course of our Life to this Moment; and
 “ that we intend to give Way to the Introduction,
 “ and publick Exercise of Popery again, in our Do-
 “ minions; which most detestable Calumny being
 “ grounded upon no imaginable Foundation, hath
 “ raised these horrid Tumults, and more than bar-
 “ barous Wars, throughout this flourishing Island,
 “ under Pretence of a kind of Reformation which is
 “ incompatible with the fundamental Laws and Go-
 “ vernment of this Kingdom: We desire that the
 “ whole Christian World should rest assured, that
 “ we never entertain'd the least Thought to attempt
 “ such a Thing, or to depart a Jot from that holy
 “ Religion, which when we received the Crown and
 “ Scepter

“ Scepter of this Kingdom, we took a most solemn
 “ sacramental Oath to profess and protect. Nor
 “ does our constant Practice, and daily Presence in
 “ the Exercise of this Religion, with so many Affe-
 “ verations at the Head of our Armies, and the pub-
 “ lick Attestation of our Barons, with the *Circum-*
 “ *spection used in the Education of our royal Off-*
 “ *spring*, besides divers other undeniable Arguments
 “ only demonstrate this, but also that happy Alli-
 “ ance of Marriage we contracted between our eld-
 “ est Daughter and the illustrious Prince of Orange,
 “ most closely confirms the Reality of our Intentions
 “ herein; by which it appears, that our Endeavours
 “ are not only to make a Profession thereof in our
 “ own Dominions, but to strengthen it abroad as
 “ much as lieth in our Power.

King
 Charles I.
 1643.

“ This most holy Religion of the *Anglicane* Church,
 “ ordain’d by so many Convocations of learned Di-
 “ vines, confirm’d by so many Acts of Parliament,
 “ and strengthened by so many royal Proclamations,
 “ together with the Ecclesiastical Discipline and Li-
 “ turgy, which the most eminent Protestant Au-
 “ thors, as well as *Germans, French, Danes, and*
 “ *Swedes, Dutch and Bohemians*, do with many Elo-
 “ gies, and not without a kind of Envy, approve
 “ and applaud in their publick Writings, particu-
 “ larly in the Transactions of the Synod of *Dort*,
 “ wherein (besides others of our Divines who were
 “ afterwards Prelates) one of our Bishops assisted, to
 “ whose Dignity all due Respects and Precedency
 “ were given: This Religion, we say, which our
 “ royal Father, of blessed Memory, doth publickly
 “ assert in his famous Confession address’d to all
 “ Christian Princes, with the Hierarchy and Litur-
 “ gy thereof, we solemnly protest, that by the
 “ Help of God, we will endeavour to our utmost
 “ Power, and last Period of our Life, to keep intire
 “ and inviolable; and will be careful, according to
 “ our Duty to Heaven, and the Tenor of our Oath

“ at

King Charles I. 1643. “ at our Coronation, That all our Ecclesiasticks, in
 “ their several Degrees and Incumbencies, shall
 “ preach and practise. Wherefore we command all
 “ our Ministers of State beyond the Seas, as well
 “ Ambassadors as Residents, Agents and Messen-
 “ gers; and we desire all the rest of our loving Sub-
 “ jects that sojourn in foreign Parts, to communicate
 “ and assert this our solemn and sincere Protestation,
 “ when Opportunity of Time and Place shall be
 “ offer’d.”

Given in our University and City of Oxford,
 May 14. 1644.

Remarks. This Declaration did the King little Service among foreign Protestants, for though it assured them, his Majesty would not turn Papist, it convinc’d them that no Alteration in the *English* Hierarchy was to be expected. His marrying his Daughter to the Prince of *Orange* was perhaps the only Evidence of his Charity for the *Dutch* Reformation; but his Appeal to the Education of his Children was trifling, when all the World knew they were under *Papish* *Instructors*, in pursuance of a Marriage Contract, till twelve or fourteen Years of Age, and had received Impressions not to be easily defaced. His insinuating to the foreign Churches, that their most learned Divines prefer’d the *English* Hierarchy to the Government of their own Countries, convinced them they ought to be more sparing of their Compliments for the future, to Persons that would draw such Conclusions from them. As to the Synod of *Dort*, no Precedency was given to the Bishop on account of his Episcopal Character, but as a Baron of the *English* Parliament. Nor is there any Thing in the Declaration that might encourage the foreign Clergy to hope his Majesty would own their Churches, Ministers, or Sacraments, or unite with them against the common Enemy of the Reformation, any more than before these unhappy Troubles began.

All the Episcopal Divines left the Assembly before the bringing in of the Covenant, except Dr. *Featly*, who was expell'd for holding Correspondence with Archbishop *Usher* at Oxford, and for revealing their Proceedings, contrary to the express Words of the Ordinance, which obliges them *not to divulge by Printing or Writing, or otherwise, their Opinions or Advices, touching the Matters proposed to them by Parliament, without the Consent of both or either Houses.* The Doctor was a learned Man, and a Calvinist, upon which Account the Assembly paid him great Regard, and indulged him in all his Speeches in favour of Episcopacy, and against the Covenant, some of which were afterwards published to the World. They appointed him to answer a Popish Pamphlet called the *Safeguard*; and he bore a Part in the Annotations on the Bible, which go under the Name of the Assembly. Lord *Clarendon* says, the King sent him a Letter forbidding him to sit any longer, but that the Doctor excused it in a Letter to Archbishop *Usher*, which being intercepted, he was committed Prisoner to Lord *Peter's* House in *Aldersgate Street* as a Spy; the Archbishop at the same Time being declared incapable of sitting in the Assembly for the like Reason. And here was an End of all the publick Concern the Episcopal Party had in the Government of the Church till the Restoration.

King
Charles I.
1643.

From the Time of taking the Covenant we may date the entire Dissolution of the Hierarchy of the Church, though it was not as yet set aside by an Ordinance of Parliament. There were no more Ecclesiastical Courts, no Visitations, no wearing the Habits, no regard paid to the Canons or Ceremonies, nor even to the Common Prayer it self. The Archbishop of *Canterbury*, by an Ordinance of May 16. had been forbid to collate any Benefices in his Gift, but to Persons nominated by Parliament; for Disobedience to which he was by another Ordinance of June 10. “suspended *ab Officio & Beneficio*,
VOL. III. H “and

King Charles I. 1643. *Parliament nominate Men to Livings.* “ and from all Archiepiscopal Jurisdiction, till he should be acquitted, or convicted of the High Treason of which he was impeached; and as to such Livings, Dignities, Promotions, &c. in the said Archbishop’s Gift or Collation, as are, or shall hereafter become void, Institution or Induction, shall henceforward be given by the Archbishop’s Vicar General, or any other having Authority on this behalf, upon the Nomination and Recommendation of both Houses of Parliament.”

By this extraordinary Method the Reverend Mr. Corbet was inducted into the Living of *Chatham*, *Ratione Suspensionis Dom. Guil. Archiepiscopi Cant. & Sequestrationis temporalium Archiepiscopatus in manibus supremæ curiæ Parliamenti, jam existentis.* By reason of the Suspension of the Archbishop of Canterbury, and the Sequestration of the Temporalities of his Archbishoprick into the Hands of the present high Court of Parliament, the same belonging to their Gift. But this Ordinance was of no long Continuance, for upon the Sitting of the Assembly of Divines all Church Business went through their Hands; the *Parishes* chose their Ministers the Assembly examined and approved, and the *Parliament* confirmed them in their Benefices without any regard to the Archbishop or his Vicar. Thus the Earl of *Manchester* filled the vacant Pulpits in the associated Counties; and when Lord *Fairfax* was authorized to supply those in the North, by an Ordinance of *Feb. 27.*

Parl. Chr. Part IV. p. 128. the Preamble says, “ The Houses being credibly informed that many Ministers in the County of *York* were not only of a scandalous Life, but having left their Churches and Cures, had withdrawn themselves wilfully from the same, and join’d such Forces as had been raised against the Parliament, and assisted them with Men, Money, Horses, and Arms; therefore it is ordained, that Lord *Fairfax* be authorized to fill up their Places with such learned and godly Divines as he shall think fit, with Advice of the Assembly.”

This

This created a great deal of Business; for though the Assembly had not a Parliamentary Authority to ^{King} *ordain*, yet the Examination and Approbation of ^{Charles I.} *such* Clergymen already in Orders, as petitioned for ^{1643.} *sequester'd* Livings, being by express Order of the ^{Committee} *two Houses* referr'd to them, they were obliged to ^{to examine} *chuse* a select Committee for this Work; their Names were,

The Rev. Dr. Gouge,
Dr. Staunton,
Dr. Lightfoot,
Dr. Smith,
Dr. Temple,
Dr. Tuckney,
Dr. Hoyle,
Dr. Burges,
Dr. Spurstow,
Mr. Ley,
Mr. Reynolds,

The Rev. Mr. Conant,
Mr. Gower,
Mr. Colman,
Mr. Hill,
Mr. Corbet,
Mr. Gataker,
Mr. Herle,
Mr. Hall,
Mr. Whitaker,
Mr. Bathurst,
Mr. Cheynel.

The Method of Examination was this; the ^{Their Method of Examination.} Names of the Ministers who petitioned for Livings, or were recommended by either House of Parliament, being published in the Assembly two or three Days before the Examination, Liberty was given in that Time to make Exceptions to their Characters; if nothing was objected they were examined by the Committee, or any five of them, who reported their Qualifications to the House, upon which each Candidate received a Certificate from the Assembly to the following Effect:

“ According to an Order bearing Date — from
“ the Committee of the House of Commons
“ for plundered Ministers, to the Committee of Di-
“ vines for the Examination of *A. B.* concerning his
“ Fitness to be admitted to the Benefit of the Seque-
“ stration of the Church of ———, in the County

King Charles I. 1643. " of ———, and so to officiate in the Cure thereof,
 " these are to certify the said Committee of plunder-
 " ed Ministers, that upon Examination of the said
 " A. B. and some Trial of his Gifts and Abilities,
 " we conceive him fit to officiate in the Cure of —,
 " in the County aforesaid. In witness whereof we
 " have hereunto subscribed our Names."

The Scribes of the *Assembly* were ordered to keep a Record of all Orders and Certificates concerning Ministers recommended to Sequestrations, and to enter them in a Register Book. This continued for about a Year, till the new Directory and Form of Church Government took Place.

Death of Mr. Chillingworth Towards the latter End of this Year died *William Chillingworth*, A. M. whom I mention not as a *Puritan*, but as a Witness against some of those Hardships the present Dissenters complain of; he was born at *Oxford*, 1602. and educated in *Magdalen College*, of which he became Fellow in *June* 1628. He afterwards turn'd *Roman Catholic*, and went to the *Jesuits College* at *St. Omer's*, but not being thoroughly satisfied in some of their Principles he return'd to *England*, 1631. and having embraced the Religion of the Church of *England*, publish'd an excellent Treatise, entitled *The Religion of Protestants a safe Way to Salvation*, for which he was prefer'd to the Chancellorship of the Church of *Sarum*, and made Master of *Wygstan Hospital* in *Leicester*. He was put into the List with other Loyalists to be created *D. D.* in the Year 1642.

Chill. Life, p. 370. but came not thither to receive that Honour. It was the general Opinion of the Times that he was a *Socinian*, but in his last Letter at the End of his Works,

Chill. Letter to Dr. Sheldon, at the End of his Works, p. 5. he appears an *Arian*. 'Tis very certain he refused to subscribe the Thirty nine Articles for some Years after his Conversion, (1.) Because he did not believe the Morality of the Fourth Commandment. (2.) Because he did not agree to the Damnatory Clauses in the *Athanasian Creed*, and therefore could

not

not read the Common Prayer. He objected also to the Twentieth Article, *Of the Churches Power to decree Rites and Ceremonies*; to the Nineteenth Article, *That Works done before the Grace of Christ, &c. are not pleasing to God*; and indeed, says the Writer of his Life, to the Articles in general, as an Imposition on Men's Consciences, much like the Authority which the Church of *Rome* assumes. Mr. *Chillingworth* blesses God, that when he had entertain'd some Thoughts of Subscription, two unexpected Impediments diverted him from it; "For (says he) I profess, since I entertain'd it I never enjoy'd Quiet Day nor Night, till now that I have rid my self of it again; and I plainly perceive, that if I had swallowed this Pill, howsoever gilded over with Glosses and Reservations, and wrapt up in Conserves of good Intentions and Purposes, yet it would never have agreed nor stay'd with me, but I should have cast it up again, and with it whatsoever Preferment I should have gained as the Wages of Unrighteousness; but now I thank God, I am resolved, that I will never do that while I am living and in Health, which I would not do if I was dying; and this I am sure I would not do, and therefore whenever I make such a preposterous Choice, I will give you leave to believe, that I am out of my Wits or do not believe in God —" But notwithstanding these Resolutions, he was prevailed with to subscribe, by his Godfather Archbishop *Laud*, to qualify him for the above-mentioned Preferments. How the Pill was gilded over is not certain; the Writer of his Life says, he subscribed as Articles of Peace, but not of Belief. Mr. *Chillingworth* was a quick Disputant, and of very high Principles, for in one of his Sermons before the King, he says, *That the most unjust and tyrannical Violence of Princes may not be rejected; this being unlawful, even though Princes be most impious, tyrannical, and idolatrous.* But though his political

King
Charles I.
1643.
~~~~~

Chillingworth's L  
P. 97.

P. 162.



*King Charles I.* Principles were high, he was low enough with regard to the Authority of Councils, Fathers, and Con-  
*1643.* vocations, in Matters of Faith ; and declares roundly, *That the BIBLE alone is the Religion of a Protestant.* He was an excellent Mathematician, and served as Engineer in *Arundel Castle* in *Suffex*, where he was taken Prisoner, and when indisposed had the Favour of being lodged in the Bishop's House at *Chil-  
 Chill-Life*, where he died *Jan. 20. 1643<sup>1</sup>*. 'Tis surpris-  
*Ib. p. 314.* ing, that Lord *Clarendon* should say, *The Parliament Clergy prosecuted him with all the Inhumanity imaginable, so that by their barbarous Usage he died within a few Days :* When, as he himself acknowledged, he wanted for nothing ; and by the Interest of *Dr. Cheynel* who attended him in his Sickness, was courteously used. The Doctor would have reasoned him out of some of his Principles but could not prevail, and therefore at his Interment, after a reflecting Speech upon the deceased, he threw his Book, entitled *The Religion of Protestants a safe Way to Salvation*, into the Grave saying, “ Get thee gone, thou cursed Book, which  
 “ hast seduced so many precious Souls ; Earth to  
 “ Earth, Dust to Dust ; get thee into the Place of  
 “ Rottenness, that thou mayst rot with thy Author,  
 “ and see Corruption.” A most unchristian and uncharitable Imprecation !

*Character of Mr. Hampden.* Among the considerable States-Men who died this Year, may be reckon'd *John Hampden, Esq;* of *Buckinghamshire*, a Gentleman of good Extraction, and one of the greatest Patriots of his Age, as appears by his standing Trial with the King in the Case of *Ship-Money*, which raised his Reputation to a very great Height throughout the Kingdom. He was not a Man of many Words, but a very weighty Speaker ; his Reputation for Honesty was universal, and his Affections seemed so publickly guided, that no corrupt or private Ends could bias them. He was indeed a very wise Man, of great Parts and Modesty, and possessed of the most absolute Spirit of Popularity  
 (says

(says Lord Clarendon) I ever knew. He was one of the impeached Members of the House of Commons, and in the Beginning of the War took the Command of a Regiment, and performed the Duty of a Colonel on all Occasions punctually, being a Man of great personal Courage, not to be tired out by the most laborious; and of Parts not to be imposed upon by the most subtle; but because he fought against the Court, Lord Clarendon says (if this be not an Interpolation of the Editors) that he had a Head to contrive, a Tongue to perswade, and a Hand to execute any Mischief. Which is very unaccountable in one whom his Lordship had commended as a Person not only of Chearfulness and Affability, but of extraordinary Sobriety and Strictness of Life. Mr. Hampden was certainly in all Respects one of the greatest and best Men of his Age, and the Parliament had an irreparable Loss in his Death, which happened June 24. about a Week after his Shoulder Bone had been broken by a Musket Ball, in a Skirmish with Prince Rupert's Forces in Chalgrave Field.

King  
Charles I.  
1643.

Hist.  
Stuarts,  
p. 227.

John Pym, Esq; Member of Parliament for Tavistock in all the Parliaments of King Charles I. was a Man of the greatest Experience in Parliamentary Affairs of any Man of his Time. He was an admirable Speaker, and by the Gravity of his Countenance and graceful Behaviour, could turn the House which way he pleas'd; he was a Man of Business and for moderate Measures, according to Lord Clarendon, till the King impeach'd him of High Treason. In his private Life he was a Person of true Piety and Exactness of Manners; and though inclin'd to the Puritan Party, not averse to the Hierarchy of the Church with some Emendations. He was one of the Lay-Members of the Assembly of Divines, and at the Head of all publick Business, the Fatigue of which wore out his Constitution, and put an End to his Life, December 8. 1643. in the Sixtieth Year of his Age. The News of no Man's Death was more

Character  
of Mr.  
Pym.

King  
Charles I.  
1643.

Rushw.  
p. 376.

welcome to the Royalists than his, who spread a Report, that he died of the *Morbus pediculofus*, to confute which his Body was exposed to publick View for many Days, and at last interred in the most honourable Manner in *Westminster Abbey*. A little before his Death he published his own Vindication to the World, against the many Slanders that went abroad concerning him. “ He declares himself a faithful “ Son of the Protestant Religion, and of the Orthodox Doctrine of the Church of *England*. He confesses he had been for reforming Abuses in the “ Government of the Church, when the Bishops, “ instead of taking care of Men’s Souls, were banishing their Bodies into the most desolate Places; “ bringing in new Canons, *Arminian* and *Pelagian* “ Errors, and such a Number of Rites and Ceremonies as the People were not able to bear. — When “ since that Time they had as much as in them lay “ fomented the civil Differences between the King “ and his Parliament, abetting and encouraging “ Malignants with large Supplies of Men and Money, and stirring up the People to Tumults by “ their seditious Sermons. For these Reasons (says “ he) I gave my Opinion for abolishing their Functions, which, I conceive, may as well be done as “ the Dissolution of Monasteries, Monks and Friars “ was in King *Henry* the Eighth’s Time. He concludes with declaring, That he was not the Author “ of the present Distractions; with acknowledging “ the King for his lawful Sovereign, but thinks, “ when he was proscribed for a Traitor, meerly for “ the Service of his Country, no Man can blame “ him for taking care of his own Safety, by flying “ for Refuge to the Protection of Parliament, who “ were pleased to make *his Case their own*.



## C H A P. III.

*The Oxford Parliament. Progress of the War.  
Visitation of the University of Cambridge by  
the Earl of Manchester. Committees for plun-  
dered, sequestered, and scandalous Ministers.*

THE Campaign being over without a Prospect of Peace, both Parties endeavour'd to strengthen themselves by new and sovereign Acts of Power. The Parliament experiencing the Want of a *Great Seal* for many Purposes, gave Orders that one should be made. They continued to list Soldiers, to levy Taxes, and to use every Method they thought proper to support their Cause. On the other hand, the King rais'd Contributions without Form of Law; ordered the Removal of the Courts of Justice from *Westminster*; and that he might seem to act in a Parliamentary Way, summoned the Members who had been expelled the Houses, and all others willing to withdraw from the rebellious City of *London*, to meet him at *Oxford*, Jan. 22. 1643. which was, in effect, disannulling the Act for continuing of the present Parliament. In obedience to the Proclamation there appeared Forty nine Peers, and one Hundred forty one of the House of Commons, not reckoning those employ'd in his Majesty's Service, or absent with leave. Lord *Clarendon* says, the Appearance of both Houses with the King was superior in Number, as well as Quality, to those at *Westminster*, which must be a Mistake; for though the Majority of Peers were on his Side, Mr. *Whitlock* assures us, that upon a Call of the House of Commons, the very Day the others were to meet at *Oxford*, there were present two Hundred and eighty Members, not reckoning one Hundred more, who were engaged in their Service in the several Counties. This is a very considerable

King  
Charles I.  
1643.  
The Ox-  
ford Par-  
liament.  
Rushw.  
Vol. V.  
p. 560.  
Clar. Rem.  
p. 165.  
Mem.  
p. 76.

Majo-

King  
Charles I.  
1643.

Rushw.  
p. 567,  
688.  
Rapin,  
p. 202,  
230.  
Hist.  
Stuarts,  
p. 246.

Majority, though if there had been but *Forty* the King could not have prorogued or dissolved them without their own Consent. However, the *Oxford* Members stiled themselves the *Parliament*, Lord *Littleton* being Speaker for the Peers, and Serjeant *Evers* for the Commons. Their first Step was to satisfy the World they desired Peace, such a Peace, to use the King's own Words, "wherein God's true Religion may be secured from the Danger of Popery, Sectaries, and Innovations; the Crown may possess those just Prerogatives which may enable me to govern my People according to Law, and the Subjects be confirmed in those Rights which I have granted them in Parliament, to which I shall be ready to add such new *Graces*, as I shall find may most conduce to their Happiness." They laid an Excise upon *Tobacco*, *Wine*, *Strong Waters*, *Ale*, *Cyder*, *Grocery*, and *Mercery Wares*, *Soap*, *Salt*, and *Butcher's Meat*, and subscribed considerable Sums of Money for Support of the War; they declared the *Scots* then entring *England* with an Army, *Traytors*, and the Lords and Commons at *Westminster* guilty of *High Treason*, for inviting them, as well as for counterfeiting the *Great Seal*. On the other hand, the Parliament at *Westminster* would not acknowledge the *Oxford* Members, nor receive a Message from them under the Character of a Parliament, but expell'd them the House, except they returned to their Seats within a limited Time. *April* 16. the King prorogued his *Oxford* Members to *November* following, when they fell under his Displeasure, for advising to pacifick Measures at the Treaty of *Uxbridge*, which was then upon the Carpet, and in a fair way of producing an Accommodation. This was so disagreeable to the Queen, and her *Roman Catholick* Counsellors, that they never left off teasing the unhappy King till he had dismissed them, and broke off the Treaty; an Account of which he sent her in the following Letter, which seems to breath an Air of too great Satisfaction.

Dear

Rushw.  
Vol. V.  
p. 383.  
Rapin,  
p. 186,  
192.

King  
Charles I.

Dear Heart,

“ **W**HAT I told thee last Week, concerning  
 “ a good Parting with our Lords and Com-  
 “ mons here, was on *Monday* last handsomly per-  
 “ formed; now if I do any Thing unhandsome, or  
 “ disadvantageous to my self or Friends, in order to  
 “ a Treaty, it will be meerly my own fault — Now  
 “ I promise thee, if the Treaty be renewed (which  
 “ I believe it will not) without some eminent good  
 “ Success on my side, it shall be to my Honour and  
 “ Advantage, I being now as well free from the  
 “ Place of base and mutinous Motion (that is to say,  
 “ our *mongrel Parliament* here) as of the chief Cau-  
 “ sers, for whom I may justly expect to be chidden  
 “ by thee, for having suffered thee to be vexed by  
 “ them —

1643.

King's Let-  
ter to the  
Queen.

Mr. *Whitlock* says, this Assembly sat again at *Oxford*, in the Year 1645. and voted against the *Directory*, and for the Common Prayer; but the King's Cause being grown desperate they soon after shifted for themselves, and made their Peace at *Westminster* upon the best Terms they could.

On the 19th of *Jan.* 164 $\frac{3}{4}$ . the *Scots Army*, consisting  
 of twenty one Thousand Men, under the Command  
 of General *Leven*, crossed the *Tweed* at *Berwick*, and  
 enter'd *England*. The two Houses sent a Committee  
 to meet them, which being joined by another of that  
 Nation, was called the *Committee of both Kingdoms*, and  
 were a Sort of Camp Parliament, to direct the Mo-  
 tions of the Army, which after some Time united  
 with the Lord *Fairfax's* Forces, and with the Earl of  
*Manchester*, and Lieutenant General *Cromwel*, from  
 the associated Counties; the united Armies laid Siege  
 to the City of *York*, which Prince *Rupert* having re-  
 lieved, occasioned the Battle of *Marston Moor*,  
 wherein the Prince was routed, with the Loss of  
 three Thousand Men, and his whole Train of Artil-  
 lery;

*Scots Army*  
enters  
*England*.  
*Rushw.*  
Vol. VI.  
p. 603.



King  
Charles I.  
1644.

lery; after which the Marquis of *Newcastle* left the royal Army, and embarked with divers Lords and Gentlemen for *Hamburg*, Prince *Rupert* retired towards *Chester*, and deserted all the Northern Garrisons to the Mercy of the Enemy, which falling into their Hands next Summer, concluded the War in those Parts.

E. of Essex  
defeated in  
Cornwall.  
Rushw.  
Vol. V.  
p. 691,  
701, 705,  
710.

But his Majesty had better Success in the West, where being strengthen'd by Prince *Maurice*, he followed the Earl of *Essex*, and shut up his Army within the narrow Parts of *Cornwall*, so that he could neither fight nor retreat. Here the King invited the Earl to make his Peace, but he chose rather to retire in a Boat to *Plymouth*, leaving his Men to the Fortune of War. As soon as the General was gone, the Horse under the Command of Sir *William Balfour*, bravely forced their Way through the royal Quarters by Night; but the Foot under the Command of Major General *Skippon*, were obliged to surrender their Arms, Artillery, Ammunition and Baggage, consisting of Forty Brass Cannon, two Hundred Barrels of Powder, Match and Ball proportionable, seven Hundred Carriages, and between eight and nine Hundred Arms, and to swear not to bear Arms against the King till they came into *Hampshire*. This was the greatest Disgrace the Parliament's Forces underwent in the Course of the War, the Foot being forced to travel in a naked and starving Condition to *Portsmouth*, where they were supplied with new Cloaths and Arms. And now again the King made Offers of such a Peace, as he says, he had been labouring for, that is, to be restored to his Prerogatives as before the War; but the Houses would not submit.

Rise of the  
Club-Men.  
Rapin,  
p. 239.

Upon the Defeat of the Earl of *Essex* his Majesty resolved to march directly for *London*, and upon the Road issued out a Proclamation, Sept. 30. requiring all his loving Subjects to appear in Arms, and accompany him in his present Expedition. This gave rise

rise to a Combination of Men, distinguish'd by the Name of CLUB-MEN, who got together in *Worcestershire* and *Dorsetshire*, agreed to defend themselves against the Orders both of King and Parliament. Their Increase was owing to the prodigious Ravages of the King's Forces in their March. Prince *Rupert* was a fiery Youth, and with his flying Squadrons of Horse burnt Towns and Villages, destroy'd the Countries where he came, and indulged his Soldiers in Plunder and Blood. In *Wales* he drove away the People's Cattle, rifled their Houses, and spoiled their standing Corn. Aged and unarmed People were stript naked, some murdered in cold Blood, and others half hanged and burnt, and yet suffer'd to live. " Lord *Goring*, the King's General of the Horse, was one of the most finished Debauchees of the Age, and wanted nothing but Industry to make him as eminent and successful in the highest Attempts of Wickedness as ever any Man was. *Wilmot*, the Lieutenant General, was as great a Debauchee as the other, and had no more regard to his Promises, or any Rules of Honour or Integrity." Sir *Richard Greenville*, who commanded the Army before *Plymouth*, is represented by the noble Historian, as having been exceeding barbarous and cruel in *Ireland*, hanging up old Men and Women of Quality, even though they were bed-rid, if he did not find the Plunder he expected; when he came into the *West* he exercised all kinds of Cruelty, and would sometimes make one of the Company hang all the rest, contrary to the Law of Arms.

The Licentiousness of the King's Soldiers was not inferior to that of his Officers, for having no regular Pay, they committed Rapines and Plunders, without Distinction of Friends or Foes; and were infamous for the most execrable Oaths, and all Kinds of Impiety. " Lord *Goring*'s Horse (says the noble Historian) committed horrid Outrages and Barbarities in *Hampshire*, and infested the Borders of *Dorsetshire*, " *Somer-*

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

Character  
of the  
King's  
Officers.  
Whitl.  
p. 87.

Clar.  
Vol. II.  
p. 555.

p. 537.

lb p. 534.

Anti Sol-  
diers.

Clar.  
p. 631.

King Charles I. 1644. " *Somersetshire*, and *Devon*, with unheard of Rapines, so that the People who were well devoted to the King wished for the Accession of any Forces to redeem them." They raised vast Contributions in several Counties without any other Pretence but the King's sovereign Pleasure. In *Cornwall* they levied seven Hundred Pounds a Week; in *Devonshire* two Thousand two Hundred Pounds a Week, and proportionable in other Parts. As the Army marched along the Country, they seized the Farmers Horses, and carried them away without any Consideration. At *Barnstable* they plunder'd the Town, and hanged the Mayor, though it was surrender'd upon Articles. At *Evesham* the King sent away the Mayor and Aldermen Prisoners to *Oxford*. At *Woodhouse* in *Devonshire* they seized fourteen substantial West Country Clothiers, who were not in Arms, and hanged them, by way of Reprisal for some *Irish* Rebels that had been executed according to the Ordinance of Parliament. In short, where-ever they came they lived at free Quarter, and took but every Thing they could, and therefore no wonder the CLUB-MEN united in their own Defence.

Fight of Newbury. The King thought to have reach'd *London* before the Parliament could recruit their Army, but the two Houses sent immediately six Thousand Arms, and a Train of Artillery to *Portsmouth*, with new Clothing for the *Cornish* Soldiers. They ordered Sir *William Waller* and the Earl of *Manchester* to join them, and dispatched thither five Thousand of the City Train Bands, under the Command of Sir *James Harrington*, by which Accession they were enabled to face his Majesty's Army at *Newbury*, *Octob.* 27. and having forced the Town, which the King had fortified, after a smart Battle they took nine of his Cannon and several Colours, but under covert of the Night his Majesty secured the rest of his Artillery in *Dennington Castle*, and marched off with his broken Army to *Oxford*; the Parliament Generals left a Body of Troops



to block up the Castle, being assured it must surrender in the Winter for want of Provision; but on a sudden a Party of the King's Horse raised the Blockade, and carried off the Artillery to *Oxford*. This occasioned great Murmurings at *London*, and Quarrels among the Generals, *Essex*, *Manchester*, and *Cromwel*, which ended in the new Modelling of the Army, as will be seen under the next Year.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

As the royal Army was little better than a Company of *Banditti*, or publick Robbers; the Parliament's were kept under the strictest Discipline, and grew up, for the most part, into great Diligence and Sobriety, which (says Lord *Clarendon*) begot Courage and Resolution in them, and notable Dexterity in Atchievements and Exercises. Most of their Officers were Men of Religion; their Soldiers were possess'd with the Belief, that their Cause was the Cause of God, and that they fought for the Protestant Religion, and *Magna Charta*; but still there were among them Men of dissolute Lives, who fought for nothing but Pay and Plunder; strange Complaints were sent up from *Bedfordshire*, *Buckinghamshire*, and *Sussex*, of the Disorders of the common Soldiers, whereupon the Parliament appointed a Committee to enquire into the Facts, and make Examples of the Offenders, which put an effectual Stop to the growing Mischief. And as the Parliament were enabled, by the inexhaustible Treasure of the City of *London*, to give their Soldiers regular Pay, they had them under such strict Government that they were little or no Burden to the Towns and Villages where they quartered.

Character  
of the Par-  
liament  
Army.  
Vol. III.  
p. 384.

Upon the whole, though the Parliament Affairs were low at the End of the Year, and their Counsels divided, by reason of the Length of the War, the King's were much worse; for though he had triumph'd over the Earl of *Essex* in *Cornwall*, and was Master of the open Country in the West, he had no Accession of real Strength, nor had taken any considerable

State of Af-  
fairs at the  
End of the  
Year.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

Clar.  
Vol. II.  
P. 389,  
391.

considerable Garrisons : The Entrance of the *Scots* broke his Army in the *North*, and lost him that part of the Kingdom, whereby the Parliament were enabled to draw off their Forces to the *West* ; but the worst Circumstance of all was, that his Majesty had exhausted all his Treasure, and had no way of Raising a Supply, which obliged him to connive at his Soldiers living at free Quarter ; his Officers being poor, quarrel'd in the royal Presence, and carried their Resentments to such an height, that the King himself could not reconcile them, which had but an ill Aspect upon the following Campaign. The Parliament Generals also were censuring each others Conduct in the House, on Occasion of the Escape of the King's Artillery from *Dennington Castle*. The Earl of *Essex's* Party were charg'd with a Design to protract the War, in order to an Accommodation; while others being weary, were for putting it to a decisive Issue. In short, both Parties were in Confusion and Distress ; they were divided in their Judgments, some being for Peace, and others for carrying on the War to the last Extremity. All Property was in a manner lost, the Farmers paid no Rent to their Landlords ; nor could any Man be secure of his Property except he buried it under Ground. The Spirits of the contending Parties were as much exasperated as ever, and there was no seeing to the End of these Troubles.

Affairs of  
the Church.

To return to the Church ; the State of the Controversy about Ecclesiastical Discipline was now changed, for whereas before the Entrance of the *Scots* the Parliament insisted only upon a *Reformation of the Hierarchy*, now they were obliged to attempt the *total Extirpation of it*, and to establish another Scheme for both Kingdoms in its room ; but it was a considerable Time before this could be perfected. In the mean while, they resolved to purge the University of *Cambridge*, which was the Head Quarters of their Forces, that they might have a Succession of Clergy-

Clergymen training up in the Principles they had espoused.

King  
Charles I.

The Town of *Cambridge* was in the Interest of the Parliament, but the *Colleges* were so many little Gar-  
risons for the King, and Sanctuaries of Disaffection; the University Press was at his Majesty's Disposal, and their Sermons were filled with Invectives against the two Houses. Frequent Quarrels happened between the Townsmen and Scholars, which would have ended in the Ruin of the University, had not the Parliament forbid the offering any Violence to the Colleges, Chapels, Libraries and Schools, under severe Penalties. Indeed the *Committee* enjoined the proper Officers of the Parish to put in execution, the Ordinance for destroying the Relicks of Superstition, whereby the Paintings in Windows, Images of the Deity, and a great deal of carved Work was demolished, which the Masters and Fellows were so incensed, that when they were ordered to repair the Damages they peremptorily refused, and were fined forty Shillings a College, as the Ordinance directed.

1644.  
Behaviour  
of the Uni-  
versity of  
Cam-  
bridge.  
Suff. Cler-  
gy, p. 168.

Suff. Cler-  
gy, p. 111.

The Heads of the University raised a great Clamour at this pretended Invasion of their Rights, as if the Parliament intended to seize all their Revenues, and destroy the very Fountains of Learning; whereupon the Houses published the following Ordinance, Jan. 6. 164 $\frac{1}{4}$ . declaring, " That none of the  
" Estates, Rents, and Revenues of the University,  
" or of the Colleges and Halls respectively, shall be  
" sequester'd or seized upon, or in any wise disposed  
" of, by virtue of the Ordinance for sequestering the  
" Estates, Rents, and Revenues of Delinquents, but  
" shall remain to the University, and the respective  
" Halls and Colleges, to all Intents and Purposes as  
" if the said Ordinance had not been made; and  
" the Rents and Revenues, &c. are ordered to be  
" paid to the usual Receivers or Treasurers, being  
" approved of by the Earl of *Manchester*, and to  
" be applied to their proper Uses as heretofore. But

Husb. Col.  
p. 409.



King Charles I. 1644. " if any of the Heads, Fellows, Scholars, or other Officers, were convicted of Delinquency, the Receiver was to pay their Dividend into the Hands of the Committee of Sequestrations."

Cambridge Visitation, Ordinance for the Committee of Sequestration. Husb. Col. p. 415. This Committee was founded upon an Ordinance of Jan. 22. for regulating the University of Cambridge, and removing scandalous Ministers in the several associated Counties; the Preamble sets forth, " That the Service of the Parliament was retarded, the People's Souls starved, by the idle, ill-affected, and scandalous Clergy of the University of Cambridge, and the associated Counties; and that many who were willing to give Evidence against them not being able to bear the Charges of a Journey to London, the Earl of Manchester was therefore empowered to appoint Committees in all the associated Counties, to consist of ten Persons, being Deputy-Lieutenants, or such as had been nominated to Committees by some former Ordinance of Parliament; Five of these were a Quorum, and they were empowered to call before them all Provosts, Masters and Fellows of Colleges, all Students and Members of the University, all Ministers in any of the Counties of the Association, all School-Masters, *that were scandalous in their Lives, or ill-affected to the Parliament, or Fomenters of this unnatural War, or that shall wilfully refuse Obedience to the Orders of Parliament, or that have deserted their ordinary Places of Residence, not being employed in the Service of the King and Parliament.* The said Committees were also empowered to send for Witnesses, and to examine any Complaints against the forementioned Delinquents upon Oath, and to certify the Names of the Persons accused to the Earl of Manchester, with the Charge and Proof, who shall have Power to eject such as he shall judge unfit for their Places; to sequester their Estates, Means, and Revenues, and to dispose of them as he shall think fit, and place others in their room, being  
" first

“ first approved by the Assembly of Divines sitting  
 “ at *Westminster*. He had also Power to order the  
 “ *Covenant* to be administer’d where he thought fit,  
 “ and to assign the Fifths of sequester’d Estates for  
 “ the Benefit of their Wives and Children.” The  
 Ordinance makes no mention of the Doctrine or Disci-  
 pline of the Church, but seems to be levell’d only against  
 those who took part with the King in the War.

The Earl of *Manchester*, who was at the Head of  
 these Sequestrations, was in the Life time of his Fa-  
 ther, Lord *Kimbolton*, and one of the impeached Mem-  
 bers of the House of Commons: Lord *Clarendon* ob-  
 serves, that “ he was of a genteel and generous Na-  
 “ ture; that his natural Civility and good Manners  
 “ flowed to all Men, and that he was never guilty of  
 “ any Rudeness even to those whom he was obliged to  
 “ oppress; that he long and heartily wished for the  
 “ Restoration, and never forfeited that Grace and  
 “ Favour to which his Majesty received him after his  
 “ Return.” The Earl repaired in Person to *Cam-*  
*bridge* about the middle of *February*, with his two  
 Chaplains, Mr. *Ashe* and Mr. *Good*, and by his War-  
 rant of the 24th Instant, required the Heads of the se-  
 veral Colleges and Halls to send him their Statutes,  
 with the Names of all their Members, and to certify  
 who were present, and who absent, with the express  
 Time of their Discontinuance. Two Days after, the  
 Officers of each College and Hall were ordered to  
 give speedy Advertisement to the Masters, Fellows,  
 Scholars, &c. to repair to *Cambridge* by the 10th of  
*March*, in order to answer such Enquiries as should  
 be made by himself or by his Commissioners. But  
 the *Earl* being informed, that this Notice was too  
 short, the Time was prolonged to the 3d of *April*,  
 when the Earl summoned Mr. *Tunstal* and Mr. *Pal-*  
*grave*, Fellows of *Corpus Christi College*, to appear be-  
 fore the Commissioners at the *Bear Inn* in *Cambridge*,  
 on penalty of Ejectment. Warrants of the same  
 Nature were sent to several of the Fellows of *Caius*,

King  
 Charles I.  
 1644.

Character  
 of Earl of  
 Manche-  
 ster.

Clarend.  
 Vol. I.  
 p. 183.  
 Vol. II.  
 p. 211.

Manner of  
 his Pro-  
 ceeding.  
 Suff. Cler.  
 p. 112.

*King* St. John's, Queen's, Peter House, Sidney, Trinity,  
*Charles I.* Christ's, Magdalen, and Jesus Colleges; and to Pem-  
 1644. brook and Clare Hall; who not appearing according to  
 the Summons, were by a Warrant of April 8. ejected,  
 to the Number of Sixty five. The Reasons assigned  
 for their Expulsion were, *Non-Residence*, and *not re-*  
*turning upon due Summons*, and *several other political*  
*Misdemeanors*. If the Parties ejected returned after  
 Suff. Cler. p. 151, this, they were required not to continue in the Uni-  
 160. versity above three Days, on Pain of Imprisonment,  
 and Confiscation of Goods; their Names were put  
 out of the *Butteries*, and the Profits of their Places re-  
 served for their Successors. Not one Fellow or Stu-  
 dent in *Trinity Hall*, or *Katherine Hall*, was turned  
 out, but all *Queen's College* was evacuated.

Covenant The Covenant, which was read March 18. in the  
*not tender'd* Churches and Chapels of the Town and University,  
*to the whole* and tender'd to the Inhabitants and Soldiers, was not  
*University.* offer'd to the whole University, but only to such of  
 Introd. whose Disaffection they had sufficient Proof. Arch-  
 Suff. Cler. bishop Tillotson says, the greatest part of the Fellows of  
 p. 113. King's College were exempted, by the Interest of Dr.  
*Witchcott*; and nodoubt, others that had behaved peace-  
 ably obtained the same Favour. Dr. Barwick, Au-  
 thor of the *Querela Cantabrigiensis*, a famous Loyalist,  
 mentions an *Oath of Discovery* for the University, like  
 that of the *Oath ex Officio*; but Mr. Fuller, the Histo-  
 rian, about the Year 1653. having requested an Ac-  
 count of this Oath from Mr. Ashe the Earl's Chap-  
 lain, he returned for Answer, that he remember'd  
 no such Thing. Mr. Fuller adds, That he is upon  
 just Grounds daily confirmed in his Confidence, that  
 neither the Earl of Manchester, nor any under him by  
 his Command or Consent, enforced such an Oath.

Appeal, The whole Number of Graduates expell'd the Uni-  
 p. 72. versity in this and the following Year, by the Earl of  
*Numbers* Manchester and his Commissioners, including Ma-  
*ejected.* sters and Fellows of Colleges, were, according to  
 Introd. Dr. Walker, near two Hundred, besides inferior Schol-  
 Suff. Cler. ars,  
 p. 114.



lars, which was something more than one half; for the same Author tells us in another Place, there were about three Hundred fifty five Fellowships in the several Houses of the University; above one Hundred and fifty therefore kept their Places, and far the greatest part of the rest had deserted their Stations and fled to the King. There were six Heads of Colleges out of sixteen that complied, (*viz.*) Dr. Bainbrigge, of *Christ's College*, Dr. Eden, of *Trinity Hall*, Dr. Richard Love, of *Bennet College*, Dr. Brotonrigge, of *Katharine Hall*, ejected in the Year 1645. Dr. Bachcroft, of *Caius College*, and Dr. Rainbow of *Magdalen College*. The Ten that were ejected by the Earl of Manchester, March 13. or some little Time after, with the Names of their Successors, are contained in the following Table.

| <i>Masters turn'd out.</i> | <i>Colleges.</i>        | <i>Succeeded by</i> |
|----------------------------|-------------------------|---------------------|
| Dr. Jn. Cofins, from       | <i>Peter House</i>      | Dr. Laz. Seaman,    |
| Dr. Tho. Pask,             | <i>Clare Hall</i>       | Dr. R. Cudworth,    |
| Dr. Benj. Laney,           | <i>Pembroke Hall</i>    | Mr. Rich. Vines,    |
| Dr. Sam. Collins,          | <i>King's College</i>   | Dr. Ben. Witchcott, |
| Dr. Edw. Martin,           | <i>Queen's College</i>  | Mr. Herb. Palmer,   |
| Dr. Rich. Stern,           | <i>Jesus College</i>    | Dr. T. Young,       |
| Dr. William Beale,         | <i>St. John's Coll.</i> | Dr. J. Arrowsmith,  |
| Dr. Tho. Comber,           | <i>Trinity Hall</i>     | Dr. Tho. Hill,      |
| Dr. R. Holdsworth,         | <i>Eman. College</i>    | Dr. Ant. Tuckney,   |
| Dr. Samuel Ward,           | <i>Sidney College</i>   | Dr. Rich. Minshull, |
| Anno 1645.                 |                         | Dr. W. Spurstow,    |
| Dr. Ralph Brown-           | <i>Kath. Hall</i>       | } and afterwards,   |
| rigge,                     |                         |                     |
|                            |                         | Dr. Lightfoot.      |

It has been objected to the Proceedings of the Commissioners, that they were not according to the Statutes of the University; to which it was replied, That the Nation was in a State of War; that these Gentlemen were declared Enemies to the Proceedings of Parliament; " They instilled into their Pupils

*King*  
*Charles I.*  
1644.  
*Suff. Cler.*  
p. 163.

*Reason-*  
*ableness of*  
*it.*  
*Hist.*  
*Can. b.*

*King Charles I.* 1644. “ (says *Fuller*) the Unlawfulness of resisting the King upon any Pretence whatsoever,” and preached upon these Subjects to the People. It was therefore necessary to take the Education of the Youth out of their Hands, which could not be done any other way at present; but in all future Elections they returned to the Statutes — It has been said further, That it was a great Loss to Learning, because those who succeeded were not equal to those who were ejected. If this had been true, ’tis no sufficient Reason for keeping them in their Places, in a Time of War, when the Constitution and Liberties of their Country were at stake. But the best Way of determining this Fact is by comparing the Characters of both.

*Walker's Attempt,*  
p. 114.

*Characters of the ejected Professors.*

*Suff. Cler.*  
p. 68.

Dr. COSINS had been sequester'd by the Parliament in the Year 1640. for his high Principles, and was retired to *France*, where he continued till the Restoration, and was then preferr'd to the rich Bishoprick of *Durham*: He was a learned Man, of an open, frank, and generous Temper, and well versed in the Canons, Councils and Fathers.

*Ib.* p. 141. Dr. PASKE lived peaceably and cheerfully under the Parliament, and was restored to all his Livings at the Restoration, except the Mastership of this College, which he quitted to his Son. The *Querela Cantab.* says, he was eminent for Learning; but I don't remember that he has given any Specimens of it to the World.

*Ib.* p. 153. Dr. LANEY was first Chaplain to Dr. *Neil*, and afterwards Prebendary of *Westminster*; he was one of the King's Divines at the Treaty of *Uxbridge*, and attended upon King *Charles II.* in his Exile; after the Restoration he was successively Bishop of *Peterborough*, *Lincoln*, and *Ely*, and was more favourable to the Non-Conformists than some of his Brethren. He has some Sermons extant, and a small Treatise against *Hobbes*.

*Calamy's Abrdg.*  
p. 173.

Dr. COLLINS was *Regius Professor*, Provost of *King's College*, and Rector of *Fenny Ditton*; of which last

last he was deprived by the Earl of *Manchester*, for his steady Adherence to the royal Cause. He kept his Provostship till the Year 1645. and his Professorship much longer. He died in the Year 1651. and had the Reputation of a great Scholar (says Dr. *Barwick*) and his Name was famous in foreign Universities, though he has transmitted very little down to Posterity.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.  
Suff. Cler.  
p. 150.

Dr. MARTIN was one of Archbishop *Laud*'s Chaplains, and is one of Mr. *White*'s scandalous Ministers; he was accused not only of practising the late Innovations, and of being in the Scheme of reconciling the Church of *England* with *Rome*; but of stealing Wheat Sheaves out of the Field in Harvest on the Sabbath Day, and laying them to his Tithe Stock. He was very high in his Principles, and was imprisoned for sending the University Plate to the King. After his Enlargement he retired to *France*, and at the Restoration was preferr'd to the Deanry of *Ely*. *Loyd* says he was a godly Man, and excellently well skilled in the Canon, Civil, and Common Law; but Mr. *Prynne* gives him but a very indifferent Character; and Bishop *Kennet* acknowledges his Principles were rigid, and his Temper sour.

Ken. Chr.  
p. 670.

Dr. STERN was another of Archbishop *Laud*'s Chaplains, and was imprisoned for the same Reason as the former. He afterwards assisted the Archbishop on the Scaffold, and lived retired till the Restoration, when he was made Bishop of *Carlisle*, and in 1664. Archbishop of *York*. He had a sober, honest, mortified Aspect, but was of very arbitrary Principles, and a very uncharitable Temper; for when Mr. *Baxter*, at the *Savoy* Conference, was entreating the Bishops not to cast out so many Ministers in the NATION, he made this mean Remark to his Brethren, that Mr. *Baxter* would not use the Word KINGDOM lest he should own a King.

Suff. Cler.  
p. 146.

Dr. BEALE was also imprisoned for sending the University Plate to the King; after his Enlarge-



King  
Charles I.  
1644.  
Suff. Cler.  
p. 148.

ment he retired to *Oxford*, and was one of the Preachers before the Court, but upon the declining of the King's Cause he retired to *Madrid*, where he died about the Year 1651. He was a Man of very high Principles; but if we may believe the *Querela*, a Person of such Worth, as rendered him above the reach of Commendation.

Dr. COMBER was another of the King's Chaplains, but was imprisoned and deprived, for sending the University Plate to the King; after his Enlargement he lived privately till the Year 1653. when he died; he was a learned Man, and of great Piety and Charity.

Dr. HOLDSWORTH had been a celebrated Preacher in the City of *London*, and Divinity Reader in *Gresham College*; he was afterwards chosen Master of *Emanuel College Cambridge*, and was a zealous Advocate for the King, for which he was sometimes under Confinement. He attended his Majesty at *Hampton-Court* and the *Isle of Wight*, but soon after died with Grief. He was a pious and charitable Man, but high in his Principles, and of an hasty and passionate Temper. He published but one Sermon in his Life-time, but after his Death his Friends published his *Prælectiones*, and a Volume of Sermons.

Dr. WARD was one of the *English* Divines at the Synod of *Dort*, and nominated of the Committee of Divines that sat in the *Jerusalem Chamber*, and of the Assembly at *Westminster*, tho' he never sat; he was a very learned Man, and died soon after his Ejection.

Dr. BROWNRIGGE was installed Bishop of *Exeter*, 1642. and deprived of his Mastership in the Year 1645. for some Expressions in his Sermon upon the King's Inauguration. He was an excellent Man, and of a peaceable and quiet Disposition; after the War he was allowed the Liberty of the Pulpit, and was chosen Master of the *Temple*, where he died about the Year 1659.

Far be it from me to detract from the personal Merits of any of these Sufferers; or from their Rank in the Commonwealth of Learning; but their political Principles, like those of Archbishop *Laud*, were certainly inconsistent with the Constitution and Liberties of *England*, and exposed them very justly to the Resentments of the Parliament in these boisterous Times.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

Those who succeeded the ejected *Masters*, having been first examined, and approved by the Assembly of Divines at *Westminster*, were these;

DR. LAZARUS SEAMAN, a very considerable Divine, according to Mr. *Wood*, a compleat Master of the oriental Languages, an excellent Casuist, and a judicious moving Preacher. He was well versed in the Controversy of Church Government, which made the Parliament send him with their Commissioners to the Isle of *Wight*, where his Majesty was pleased to take particular Notice of his Abilities. He was ejected out of his Mastership of *Peter House* in 1662. and died in 1667. He printed several Sermons, and a *Vindication of the Judgment of the reformed Churches concerning Ordination*.

And of their  
Successors.  
Calamy's  
Abridg.  
Vol. II.  
p. 16.

DR. RALPH CUDWORTH is so universally known in the learned World, for his great Learning, which he discovered in his *Intellectual System*, that I shall only observe, he conformed at the Restoration, and a little before resigned his Mastership of *Clare Hall* into the Hands of Dr. *Dillingham*, who continued in it to his Death.

DR. RICHARD VINES was a very learned and excellent Divine, a popular and laborious Preacher, one of the Parliament Divines at the Treaty of the *Isle of Wight*, and a most industrious and useful Man in his College. He was turned out of his Mastership for refusing the *Engagement*, and died before the Restoration.

*King*  
*Charles I.*  
 1644.  
 Dr. BENJAMIN WITCHCOT was Fellow of *Emmanuel College*, and upon the Ejection of Dr. Collins preferr'd to the Mastership of *King's College*, in which he continued till the Restoration, and then conform'd. The Account that Archbishop *Tillotson* gives of him is this; "That he was an excellent Tutor and Instructor of Youth, and bred up many Persons of Quality, and others, who afterwards proved useful and eminent; that he contributed more to the forming the Students to a sober Sense of Religion than any Man of that Age. He never took the Covenant, and by his particular Friendship and Interest with some of the chief Visitors, prevailed to have the greatest Part of the Fellows of his College exempted from that Imposition."

*Til. Works,*  
*Vol. I.*  
 p. 277.  
 Cl. Lives,  
 p. 183.  
 Mr. HERBERT PALMER, B. D. was one of the University Preachers in 1632. and Clerk in Convocation for the Diocese of *Lincoln*, at the beginning of this Parliament; he was one of the Assessors of the Assembly of Divines at *Westminster*, and on April 11. 1644. constituted Master of *Queen's College* by the Earl of *Manchester*. He was very careful to appoint such Persons for Tutors of Youth as were eminent for Learning and Piety; and being possessed of a good paternal Estate was unbounded in his Liberality. He was a polite Gentleman, a compleat Master of the *French* Languages, in which he could preach as well as in *English*; but his Constitution being infirm he died in the Year 1647. when he was but Forty seven Years of Age.

p. 194.  
 Dr. T. YOUNG was an eminent Member of the Assembly of Divines (says Mr. *Clarke*) a Man of great Learning, of much Prudence and Piety, and of great Ability and Fidelity in the Work of the Ministry. He was a Preacher at *Duke's Place*, in *London*, from whence he was preferr'd to the Mastership of *Jesus College*, where he behaved with great Prudence and Piety, till he was turn'd out for refusing the Engagement. He was one of the Authors of the Pamphlet called *Smectymnus*,  
 Dr.



Dr. JOHN ARROWSMITH was Fellow of *King's Hall*, and of an unexceptionable Character for Learning and Piety. He was an acute Disputant, and a judicious Divine, as appears by his *Taëtica Sacra*, a Book of great Reputation in those Times. He died before the Restoration.

Dr. THOMAS HILL was Fellow of *Emanuel College*, Cl. Lives, and one of the Assembly of Divines at *Westminster*. P. 230. He was first constituted Master of *Emanuel*, and afterwards removed to *Trinity College*, where he employed all his Zeal in the Advancement of Knowledge and Virtue, and in keeping up the College Exercises. He was twice Vice-Chancellor, and was as solicitous to preserve the Honour and Privileges of the University as any of his Predecessors. He was a zealous Calvinist, and after about ten Years Government of his College died in the Year 1653.

Dr. ANTONY TUCKNEY had been Vicar of *Boston* in *Lincolnshire*, from whence he was called up to sit in the Assembly of Divines at *Westminster*. In the Year 1645. he was constituted Master of *Emanuel College*. In 1653. he was chosen Master of *St. John's*, and upon the Death of Dr. *Arrowsmith* Regius Professor, which Place he enjoyed till the Restoration, when King *Charles II.* by Letter under the Hand of Secretary *Nicolas*, ordered him to resign, promising him, in Consideration of his great Pains and Diligence in discharge of his Duty, one Hundred Pounds *per Ann.* which was paid by his Successor till his Death, in the Year 1671. He left behind him the Character of a pious and learned Man, an indefatigable Student, a candid Disputant, and a zealous Promoter of Truth and Piety. He published some practical Treatises in his Life; and his *Prælectiones Theologicæ*, with a Volume of Sermons, were printed after his Death.

Dr. RICHARD MINSHULL was Fellow of *Sidney College*, and upon the Death of Dr. *Ward* chosen regularly, according to the Statutes, into the vacant Mastership, and continued therein till the Restoration, when he

King Charles I. he conformed, and was confirmed in his Place, which he filled with Reputation to his Death.

1644. Dr. WILLIAM SPURSTOW, one of the Assembly of Divines, and one of the Commissioners at the *Savoy* in the Year 1662. he was a Person of good Learning, of a peaceable and quiet Disposition, and of great Humility and Charity. He was turn'd out of his Mastership of *Katherine Hall* for refusing the *Engagement*, and succeeded by the famous

Calamy's  
Abridg.  
Vol. II.  
P. 471.

Dr. LIGHTFOOT, the most compleat Master of oriental Learning of his Age; the Doctor enjoyed this Mastership, with the sequester'd Living of *Much Munden*, given him by the Assembly of Divines, till the Restoration, when he would have resign'd it back into the Hands of Dr. *Spurstow*, but he declining it, *Lightfoot* conformed, and upon his Application to the King was confirmed in both his Preferments till his Death. His Works were published by Mr. *Strype* in two Volumes Folio.

*Remarks.* If it should be granted, that the new Professors were not at first so expert in the Learning of the Schools as their Predecessors, that Defect was abundantly supplied by their Application and Diligence in their Places, for they observ'd a very strict and severe Discipline; the Tutors were constant in reading Lectures not only in *Term-time*, but out of it; the *Professors* and other Officers had a strict Eye over the Students to keep them within Bounds, and oblige them to be present at Morning and Evening Prayer. The Lord's Day was observed with uncommon Rigour; there were Sermons and Prayers in all the Churches and Chapels both Morning and Afternoon. Vice and Profaneness were banished, insomuch, that an Oath was not to be heard within the Walls of the University; and if it may be said without Offence, the Colleges never appeared more like Nurseries of Religion and Virtue than at this Time. The noble Historian confesses, the University of *Oxford* flourished

Vol. V.  
P. 74.

rished as much in Learning and learned Men at the Restoration, as before the Civil Wars, which is equally true of *Cambridge*. And it ought to be remember'd, that most of the great Divines and Philosophers who flourished in the Reigns of King *Charles the Second* and King *William the Third*, owed their Education to the Tutors of those Times, for whom they always retained a great Veneration, though displaced afterwards for Non-Conformity.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

Though the Form of inducting the new *Masters* was not according to the Statutes (as has been observed) because of the Distraction of the Times, it is evident, this was not designed to be a Precedent for their Successors, as appears by the Manner of their Investiture, which was this; Mr. *Lazarus Seaman* having been examined, and approved by the Assembly of Divines at *Westminster*, the Earl of *Manchester* came in Person into the Chapel of *Peter House*, April 11. and did there declare, and publish Mr. *Lazarus Seaman* to be constituted Master of the said *Peter House*, in the Room of Dr. *Cosins*, late Master, but justly and lawfully ejected; requiring Mr. *Seaman* to take upon him that Office, putting him into the Master's Seat, and delivering to him the Statutes of the College in token of his Investiture, straitly charging the Fellows, &c. to acknowledge and yield Obedience to him, notwithstanding he was not elected, nor admitted according to the ordinary Course prescribed by the said Statutes in this Time of Distraction and War, there being a Necessity of reforming, as well the Statutes themselves, as the Members of the said House. The Earl then gave him an Instrument under his Hand and Seal to the same Effect, and administer'd him an Oath or Protestation, which he took in the following Words,

Form of In-  
duction of  
the new  
Masters.  
Suff. Cler.  
p. 114.

ib. p. 115.

“ I Do solemnly and seriously promise, in the Presence of Almighty God, the Searcher of all Hearts, that during the Time of my Continuance in this Charge, I shall faithfully labour to promote

The Oath.



King Charles I. 1644. “ more Learning and Piety in my self, the Fellows, Scholars, and Students, that do or shall belong to the said College, agreeably to the late solemn, national *League and Covenant*, by me sworn and subscribed, with respect to all the good and wholesome Statutes of the said College, and of the University correspondent to the said Covenant; and by all Means to procure the Good, Welfare, and perfect Reformation both of the College and University so far as to me appertaineth.”

The other Masters were introduced into their several Chairs after the same solemn Manner, their Warrants bearing Date the 11th, 12th, or 13th of *April*; but the Clause of the Covenant was left out by those that did not take it, as in the Case of Dr. *Witchcot*, and others.

And of the Fellows. Suff. Cler. P. 114. But the vacant Fellowships being more numerous were not so quickly filled, though the Earl took the most prudent Method in that Affair, for *April* 10. he directed a Paper to the several Colleges, declaring, that “ his Purpose was forthwith to supply the vacant Fellowships, and desiring, that if there were any in the respective Colleges, who in regard of Degree, Learning and Piety, should be found fit for such Preferment, they would, upon Receipt of that Paper, return him their Names, in order to their being *examined by the Assembly*, and invested in them.” The Persons thus examined and presented, were constituted *Fellows* by Warrant under the Hand and Seal of the Earl of *Manchester*, to the Heads of the several Colleges, in the following Form.

Ib. p. 115. “ WHEREAS *A. B.* has been ejected out of his Fellowship in this College; and whereas *C. D.* has been examined, and approved by the *Assembly of Divines*, these are therefore to require you to receive the said *C. D.* as Fellow in the Room  
“ of

“ of *A. B.* and to give him place, according to his King  
 “ Seniority in the University, in Preference to all Charles I.  
 “ those that are, or shall hereafter be put in by 1644.  
 “ me.”

I have before me the Names of Fifty five Persons, MS. penes  
 who *after they had been examined by the Assembly*, were me.  
 put into vacant Fellowships in the Compass of the  
 Year 1644. and within six Months more all the Va-  
 cancies were in a manner supplied, with Men of ap-  
 proved Learning and Piety.

From this Time the University of *Cambridge* enjoy-  
 ed a happy Tranquillity, Learning revived, Religion  
 and good Manners were improved, at a Time when  
 the rest of the Nation was in Blood and Confusion.  
 And though this Alteration was effected by a Mixture  
 of the Civil and Military Power, yet in a little Time  
 Things reverted to their former Channel, and the  
 Statutes of the University were as regularly observed  
 as ever. Let the Reader now judge of the Candor  
 and Impartiality of the famous *Dr. Barwick*, Author  
 of the *Querela Cantabrigiensis*, whose Words are these :

“ Thus the *Knipperdollings* of the Age reduced a glo- Querela;  
 “ rious and renowned University almost to a meer Pref. p. 2,  
 “ *Munster*, and did more in less than three Years, than 26, 27.  
 “ the Apostate *Julian* could effect in his Reign, (*viz.*) Walker's  
 “ broke the Heart-strings of Learning, and all Attempt,  
 “ learned Men, and thereby luxated all the Joints p. 115.  
 “ of Christianity in this Kingdom. We are not  
 “ afraid to appeal to any impartial Judge, Whether  
 “ if the *Goths and Vandals*, or even the *Turks* them-  
 “ selves, had over-run this Nation, they would have  
 “ more inhumanly abused a flourishing University,  
 “ than these pretended Advancers of Religion have  
 “ done? Having thrust out one of the Eyes of this  
 “ Kingdom, made Eloquence dumb, Philosophy  
 “ sottish; widdowed the Arts, drove the Muses  
 “ from their ancient Habitation, plucked the Reve-  
 “ rend and Orthodox Professors out of the Chairs,  
 “ and

King Charles I. 1644. “ and silenced them in Prison or their Graves; turn’d  
 “ Religion into Rebellion; changed the Apostolical  
 “ Chair into a Desk for Blasphemy; tore the Gar-  
 “ land from off the Head of Learning to place it on  
 “ the dull Brows of disloyal Ignorance, and unhived  
 “ those numerous Swarms of labouring Bees, which  
 “ used to drop Honey-dews over all this Kingdom,  
 “ to place in their room Swarms of senseless Drones.”  
 Such was the Rant of this Reverend Clergyman; and  
 such the Language and Spirit of the ejected Loyalists!

Committee for scandalous Ministers. While the Earl was securing the University to the  
 Parliament he appointed Commissioners for removing  
 scandalous Ministers in the seven associated Counties,  
 empowering them to act by the following Warrant.

March 15.

E. of Man- chetter’s Warrant empowering them to act. Suff. Cler. P. 117. “ BY virtue of an Ordinance of both Houses of  
 “ Parliament, bearing Date Jan. 22. 164<sup>2</sup><sub>4</sub>. I  
 “ do authorize and appoint you ———, or any five  
 “ of you, to call before you all Ministers or School-  
 “ Masters within the Counties of ———, that are scan-  
 “ dalous in their Lives, or ill-affected to the Parliament,  
 “ or Fomenters of this unnatural War; or that shall wil-  
 “ fully refuse Obedience to the Ordinances of Parliament;  
 “ or that have deserted their ordinary Places of Residence,  
 “ not being employed in the Service of the King and Par-  
 “ liament, with full Power and Liberty to send for  
 “ any Witnesses, and to examine Complaints upon  
 “ Oath. And you are to certify the Names of such  
 “ Ministers, with the Charge and Proof against them  
 “ to me.”

It is to be observed, that the *Warrant* is pointed  
 only against those who were immoral, or disaffected  
 to the Parliament, or had deserted their Cures; and  
 was accompanied with *Instructions*, and a *Letter*, ex-  
 horting them to the faithful and effectual Dis-  
 charge of their Trust. The *Instructions* were to  
 this Effect.

First,



First, " That they should be speedy and effectual  
 " in executing the Ordinances, and sit in such Pla-  
 " ces within the County that all Parties, by the easi-  
 " ness of Access, may be encouraged to address them-  
 " selves to them with their Complaints.

King  
 Charles I.  
 1644.  
 E. of Man-  
 chester's

Secondly, " That they should issue their Warrants,  
 " to summon before them such Ministers and Witnes-  
 " ses as the Articles preferr'd against them should  
 " require.

Instructi-  
 ons to them.  
 Suff. Cler,  
 p. 117.

Thirdly, " That the Party accused should not be  
 " present at the taking the Depositions, because of  
 " discountenancing the Witnesses, and disturbing the  
 " Service\*; but when the Depositions were taken  
 " upon Oath the Party accused should have a Copy,  
 " and have a Day given him to return his Answer in  
 " writing, and to make his Defence within fourteen  
 " Days, or thereabouts:

Fourthly, " They were to return both the Accusa-  
 " tion and Defence to Mr. Good and Mr. Ashe, the  
 " Earl's Chaplains, and upon such Receipts they  
 " should have further Directions.

Fifthly, " If the Party accused would not appear  
 " to make his Defence they were to certify the Cause  
 " of his Absence, because if they were Non-Residents,  
 " or in Arms against the Parliament, the Earl would  
 " proceed against them.

Husb. Col.  
 p. 311.

Sixthly, " It being found by Experience, that Pa-  
 " rishioners were not forward to complain of their  
 " Ministers, though very scandalous; some being  
 " Enemies to the intended Reformation, and others  
 " sparing their Ministers, because they favoured  
 " them in their Tithes, and were therefore esteemed  
 " quiet Men; therefore they were required to call unto  
 " them, some well-affected Men within every Hun-

\* This was owing to the insolent and unmannerly Behaviour of the Clergy before the Commissioners; for the Ordinance of Sept. 6. 1643. appoints, That the Witnesses shall be examined in their Presence; and, that sufficient Warning shall be given of the Time and Place where the Charge against them should be proved.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

“dred, who having no private Engagements, were to be encouraged by the Committees to enquire after the Doctrines, Lives, and Conversations of all Ministers and School-Masters, and to give Information what could be depofed, and who could depofe the fame.

*Seventbly*, “Each Commiffioner fhall have five Shillings for every Day he fits; and the Clerk to receive fome Pay, that he might not have occafion to demand Fees for every Warrant or Copy, unlefs the Writings were very large.

*Eighbthly*, “Upon the Ejecting of any fcandalous, or malignant Minifters, they were to require the Parifhioners to make Choice of fome fit and able Perfon to fucceed, who was to have a Testimonial from the well-affected Gentry and Miniftry; and to take particular Care that no *Anabaptift*, or *Antinomian*, be recommended.

*Ninthly*, “They were to certify the true Value of each Living; as alfo the Eftate, Livelihood, and Charge of Children which the accused Perfon had, for his Lordfhip’s Direction in the Affignment of the Fifths. And,

*Laftly*, “They were to ufe all other proper Ways and Methods for fpeeding the Service.”

With thefe *Inftuctions* the Earl fent an Exhortation by *Letter*, in the following Words,

*Gentlemen,*

*The Earl’s Letter.*  
*Suff. Cler.*  
*p. 118.*

I Send you by this Bearer a Commiffion, with Inftuctions, for executing the Ordinance, &c. within your County. I neither doubt of your Abilities, nor Affections, to further this Service, yet, according to the great Truft impofed on me herein by the Parliament, I muft be earneft with you to be diligent therein. You know how much the People of the Kingdom have formerly fuffered in their Perfons, Souls, and Eftates, under an idle,

“ ill-

“ ill-affected, scandalous, and insolent Clergy, up-  
 “ held by the Bishops; and you can’t but foresee,  
 “ that their Pressures and Burthens will still conti-  
 “ nue, though the Form of Government be alter’d,  
 “ unless great Care be taken to displace such Mini-  
 “ sters, and to place orthodox and holy Men in eve-  
 “ ry Parish; for let the Government be what it  
 “ will for the Form thereof, yet it will never be  
 “ good unless the Parties employed therein be good  
 “ themselves. By the Providence of God it now lies  
 “ in your power to reform the former Abuses, and  
 “ to remove these Offenders. Your Power is great,  
 “ and so is your Trust. If a general Reformation  
 “ follows not within your County, assuredly the  
 “ Blame will be laid upon you, and you must ex-  
 “ pect to be called to Account for it, both here and  
 “ hereafter. For my part, I am resolv’d to employ  
 “ the utmost of my Power, given to me by the Or-  
 “ dinance for procuring a general Reformation in all  
 “ the associated Counties, expecting your forward-  
 “ ness, and heartily joining with me herein,”

King  
 Charles I.  
 1644.

*I rest, &c.*

When a Clergyman was convicted according to  
 the Instructions above-mentioned, report was made  
 to the Earl, who directed a Warrant to the Church-  
 Wardens of the Parish, to eject him out of his Parso-  
 nage, and all the Profits thereof; and another to re-  
 ceive the Tithes, and all the Benefits into their own  
 Hands, and to keep them in safe Custody till they  
 should receive further Order from himself. At the  
 same Time he directed the Parishioners to choose a  
 proper Minister for the vacant Place, and upon their  
 Presentation his Lordship sent him to the *Assembly of*  
*Divines at Westminster*, with an Account of his Cha-  
 racter, for their Trial and Examination. And upon  
 a Certificate from the Assembly, that they approved  
 of him as an orthodox Divine, and qualified to offi-  
 ciate in the pastoral Function, his Lordship issued out

*Their Me-  
 thod of Pro-  
 ceeding.  
 Suff. Cler.  
 p. 119.*



King Charles I. 1644. his last Warrant, setting forth, that "such an one having been approved by the Assembly, &c. he did therefore authorize and appoint him the said ———, to officiate as Minister, to preach, teach, and catechize in such a Parish *during his* (the Earl's) *Pleasure*, and then empower him to take Possession of the Church, Parsonage Houses, Glebe Lands, and to receive the Tithes and Profits, and enjoy the same, until his Lordship should take further Order concerning the same, requiring all Officers to aid and assist him for that purpose."

*Remarks.* If the Committees observed these Articles there could be no reasonable Ground of Complaint, except of the *Sixth*, which might be construed as giving too much Encouragement to Informers; but the Methods of Conviction were unexceptionable; the Persons to be called before the Commissioners were scandalous, or Enemies to the Parliament; the Depositions were upon Oath; a Copy of them allowed the Defendant, with Time to give in his Answer in writing; then a Day appointed to make his Defence in presence of the Witnesses, to whom he might take Exceptions; and after all, the final Judgment not left with the Commissioners but with the *Earl*. The filling the vacant Benefice was no less prudent; the Parishioners were to choose their own Minister, who was to produce Testimonials of his Sobriety and Virtue; the Assembly were then to examine into his Learning and ministerial Qualifications; and after all, the new Incumbent to hold his Living only *during Pleasure*; the Parliament being willing to leave open a Door, at the Conclusion of a Peace, for restoring such Royalists as were displaced merely for adhering to the King, without Prejudice to the present Possessor. One cannot answer for Particulars under such uncommon Distractions and Violence of Parties; but the Orders were, in my Opinion, not only reasonable but necessary, for the Support of the Cause in which the Parliament was engaged.

The

The Committees for the associated Counties acted, I apprehend, no longer than the Year 1644. The last Warrant of Ejection mentioned by Dr. *Nalson*, bearing Date *March 17. 1644*. in which Time Affairs were brought to such a Settlement in those Parts, that the Royalists could give them no Disturbance. The associated Counties, says Mr. *Fuller*, escaped the best of all Parts in this civil War, the Smoak thereof only offending them, while the Fire was felt in other Places. The chief Ejections by the Commissioners in other Parts of *England*, were in the Years 1644, 1645. and till the Change of Government in the Year 1649. when the *Covenant* it self was set aside, and changed into an ENGAGEMENT to the new Commonwealth.

'Tis hard to compute the Number of Clergymen that might lose their Livings by the several Committees during the War, nor is it of any great Importance, for the *Law* is the same whether more or fewer suffer by it; and the not putting it in Execution might be owing to want of Power or Opportunity. Dr. *Nalson* says, that in five of the associated Counties one Hundred fifty six Clergymen were ejected in little more than a Year; namely, in *Norfolk* Fifty one, *Suffolk* Thirty seven, *Cambridgeshire* Thirty one, *Essex* Twenty one, *Lincolnshire* Sixteen; and if we allow a proportionable Number for the other two, the whole will amount to two Hundred and eighteen; and if in seven Counties there were two Hundred and eighteen Sufferers, the Fifty two Counties of *England*, by a like Proportion, will produce upwards of sixteen Hundred. Dr. *Walker* has fallaciously increased the Number of suffering Clergymen to eight Thousand, even though the List at the End of his Book makes out little more than a fifth part. Among his Cathedral Clergy he reckons up several *Prebends* and *Canonries*, in which he supposes Sufferers without any Evidence. Of this Sort Dr. *Calamy* has reckon'd above two Hundred. If one Clergyman was possess'd

King  
Charles I.  
1644.  
Suff. Cler.  
p. 119.

Numbers  
ejected.

Ch. and  
Dissenters  
compared,  
p. 52.

King  
Charles I.

1644.

of three or four Dignities there appear as many Sufferers. The like is to be observed in the Case of Pluralists; for Example, *Richard Stuart*, L. L. D. is set down as a Sufferer in the Deanry of *St. Paul's*, as Prebendary of *St. Pancras*, and Residentiary; in the Deanry and Prebend of the third Stall in *Westminster*; in the Deanry of the Royal Chapel; in the Provostship of *Eaton College*, and Prebend of *Northalton* in the Church of *Salisbury*; all which Preferments he enjoyed (says *Dr. Walker*) or was entitled to together, and his Name is repeated in the several Places. By such a Calculation 'tis easy to deceive the Reader and swell the Account beyond Measure. The Reverend *Mr. Withers*, a late Non-Conformist Minister at *Exeter*, has taken Pains to make an exact Computation in the associated Counties of *Suffolk*, *Norfolk*, and *Cambridgeshire*, in which are one Thousand three Hundred and Ninety eight Parishes, and two Hundred fifty three Sequestrations; so that if these may be reckon'd as a Standard for the whole Kingdom, the Number will be reduced considerably under two Thousand. He has also made another Computation from the County of *Devon*, in which are three Hundred ninety four Parishes, and one Hundred thirty nine Sequestrations, out of which Thirty nine are deducted for Pluralities, &c. and then by comparing this County (in which both *Dr. Walker* and *Mr. Withers* lived) with the rest of the Kingdom, the amount of Sufferers according to him, is *one Thousand seven Hundred twenty six*; but admitting they should arise to the Number of the Doctor's Names in his Index, which are about two Thousand four Hundred, yet when such are deducted as were fairly convicted upon Oath, of Immoralities of Life, &c. (which were a fourth in the associated Counties) and all such as took Part with the King in the War, or disowned the Authority of the Parliament; preaching up Doctrines inconsistent with the Cause for which they had taken Arms, and exciting the People to an absolute Submission to the Authority of  
the



the Crown, the Remainder that were displaced *only* <sup>King Charles I.</sup> *for refusing the Covenant*, must be very inconsiderable; Mr. Baxter says, they cast out the grosser Sort of insufficient and scandalous Clergy, and some few civil Men that had acted in the Wars for the King, and set up the late Innovations, but left in near one half of those that were but barely tolerable. He adds further, "That in all the Counties in which he was acquainted <sup>Hist. of L.</sup> *six to one at least, if not more*, that were sequestered <sup>and Times,</sup> by the Committees, were by the Oaths of Witnesses <sup>P. 74, 75.</sup> proved insufficient or scandalous, or both."

But admitting their Numbers to be equal to those Puritan Ministers ejected at the Restoration, yet the Cause of their Ejection, and the Circumstances of the Times, being very different, <sup>Compared with the</sup> the Sufferings of the former ought not to be compared <sup>ejected Ministers in</sup> with the latter; though Doctor Walker is <sup>1662.</sup> pleased to say in his Preface, That if the Sufferings of the Dissenters bear any tolerable Proportion to those of the ejected Loyalists, in Number, Degrees, or Circumstances, he will be gladly deemed not only to have lost all his Labour, but to have revived a great and unanswerable Scandal on the Cause he has undertaken to defend. I shall leave the Reader to pass his own Judgment upon this Declaration, after I have produced the Testimony of one or two Divines of the Church of England. "Who can answer (says one) for the Conform. "Violence and Injustice of Actions in a Civil War? <sup>first Plea,</sup> "Those Sufferings were in a Time of general Calamity, <sup>P. 12, 13.</sup> but *these* [in 1662.] were ejected not only "in a Time of Peace, but a Time of Joy to all the "Land, and after an Act of Oblivion, to which "common Rejoicing these suffering Ministers had "contributed their earnest Prayers, and great Endeavours ——" "I must own (says another of "the Doctor's Correspondents) that though both "Sides have been excessively to blame, yet that the "Severities used by the Church to the Dissenters are "less excusable than those used by the Dissenters to

King Charles I. 1644. Calamy's Ch. and Dissenters compared, p. 23, 24. " the Church ; my Reason is, that the former were used in Times of Peace, and a settled Government, whereas the latter were inflicted in a Time of Tumult and Confusion, so that the Plundering and Ravaging endured by the Church Ministers were owing (many of them at least) to the Rudeness of the Soldiers, and the Chances of War ; THEY WERE PLUNDER'D NOT BECAUSE THEY WERE CONFORMISTS, BUT CAVALIERS, AND OF THE KING'S PARTY." The Case of those that were sober and virtuous, seems to me much the same with the *Non-Jurors* at the late Revolution of King *William III.* and I readily agree with Mr. *Fuller*, that " moderate Men bemoaned these Severities, for as much Corruption was let out by these Ejectments (many scandalous Ministers being deservedly punished) so at the same Time the Veins of the *English Church* were also emptied of much good Blood."

Hist. p. 207.

*The Fifth.* We have already observed, that a *fifth* Part of the Revenues of these ejected Clergymen was reserved for the Maintenance of their poor Families, " Which was a Christian Act, and which I should have been glad (says the Divine above-mentioned) to have seen imitated at the Restoration." Upon this the *Cavaliers* sent their Wives and Children to be maintained by the Parliament Ministers, while themselves were fighting for the King. The Houses therefore ordained, *Sept.* 8. 1645. That the *Fifths* should not be paid to the Wives and Children of those who came into the Parliament Quarters without their Husbands or Fathers, or who were not bred in the Protestant Religion. But when the War was over all were allowed their *Fifths*, though in some Places they were ill paid, the Incumbent being hardly able to allow them, by reason of the Smallness of his Living, and the Devastation of the War. But when some pretended to excuse themselves on the fore-mentioned Exceptions, the two Houses published the following Explanation, *November 11.* 1647. (*viz.*) " That

Calamy's Ch. and Dissenters, p. 24.

Husb. Col. p. 726.

“ That the Wives and Children of all such Persons  
 “ whose Estates and Livings are, have been, or shall  
 “ be sequester’d by Order of either House of Parlia-  
 “ ment, shall be comprehended within the Ordinance which allows a fifth Part for Wives and  
 “ Children, and shall have their fifth Part allowed  
 “ them; and the Committee of Lords and Com-  
 “ mons for Sequestrations, and the Committees for  
 “ plunder’d Ministers, and all other Ministers, are  
 “ required to take Notice hereof, and yield Obe-  
 “ dience hereunto.” Afterwards, when it was ques-  
 “ tion’d, whether the *Fifths* should pay their Pro-  
 “ portion of the publick Taxes, it was ordained,  
 “ That *the Incumbent only* should pay them. Under  
 the Government of the Protector *Cromwel* it was or-  
 dained, That if the ejected Minister left the quiet  
 Possession of his House and Glebe to his Successor  
 within a certain Time, he should have *his Fifths, and*  
*all his Arrears*, provided he had not a real Estate of  
 his own of thirty Pounds *per Annum*, or five Hundred  
 Pounds in Money.

*King*  
*Charles I.*  
 1644.  
 Suff. Cler.  
 p. 100.

But after all, it was a hard Case on both Sides; the *Incumbents* thought it hard to be obliged to all the  
 Duties of their Place, and another to go away with  
 a *Fifth* of the Profit, at a Time when the Value of  
 Church Lands was considerably lessened by the Neg-  
 lect of Tillage, and exorbitant Taxes were laid upon  
 all the Necessaries of Life. To which may be added,  
 an Opinion that began to prevail among the Farmers,  
 of the Unlawfulness of paying Tithes: Mr. *Selden* had  
 led the Way to this in his Book of Tithes, whereupon  
 the Parliament, by an Ordinance of Nov. 8. 1644.  
 “ Strictly enjoyned all Persons fully, truly, and effe-  
 “ ctually to set out, yield, and pay respectively all and  
 “ singular Tithes, Offerings, Oblations, Obventions,  
 “ Rates for Tithes, and all other Duties commonly  
 “ known by the Name of Tithes.” Others, that  
 had no Scruple about the Payment of Tithes, refused  
 to pay them to the new Incumbent, because the ejected

*The Hard-*  
*ship on*  
*both Sides.*



King  
Charles I.  
1644.

ed Minister had the legal Right, insomuch that the Presbyterian Ministers were obliged in many Places to sue their Parishioners, which created Disturbances and Divisions, and at length gave rise to several Petitions from the Counties of *Buckinghamshire, Oxfordshire, Hertfordshire, &c.* praying, That their Ministers might be provided for some other Way. The Parliament referr'd them to a Committee, but came to no Agreement, because they could not fix upon another Fund, nor provide for the Lay-Impropriations.



## C H A P. IV.

*Of the several Parties in the Assembly of Divines, PRESBYTERIANS, ERASTIANS, INDEPENDANTS. Their Proceedings about Ordination, and the Directory for Divine Worship. The Rise, Progress, and Sufferings of the English ANABAPTISTS.*

BEFORE we proceed to the Debates of the Assembly of Divines it will be proper to distinguish the several Parties of which it was constituted. King Charles I. 1644.  
The Episcopal Clergy had entirely deserted it before Parties in the Assembly of Divines.  
the bringing in of the *Covenant*, so that the Establishment had not a single Advocate. All who remained were for taking down the main Pillars of the Hierarchy, before they had agreed what Sort of Building to erect in its room.

The Majority at first intended only the Reducing Of the Presbyterians.  
Episcopacy to the Standard of the first or second Age, but for the Sake of the *Scots Alliance*, they were prevailed with to lay aside the Name and Function of Bishops, and attempt the Establishing a Presbyterial Form upon the Ruins of all others, which at length they advanced into *Jus Divinum*, or *Divine Institution*, derived expressly from Christ and his Apostles. But this engaged them in so many Controversies, as prevented their laying the top Stone to their Building, so that it fell to pieces before it was perfected. The chief Patrons of Presbytery in the House of Commons were Denzil Hollis, Esq; Sir William Waller, Sir Philip Stapleton, Sir John Clotworthy, Sir Benjamin Rudyard, Serjeant Maynard, Colonel Massey, Colonel Harley, John Glyn, Esq; and a few others.

The ERASTIANS formed another Branch of the Assembly, so called from *Erastus*, a German Divine of the sixteenth Century. The *Pastoral Office*, according to Of the Erastians. Baxter's Letters, p. 39.

King Charles I. 1644. him, was only perswasive, like a Professor of the Sciences over his Students, without any Power of the Keys annexed. The Lord's Supper, and other Ordinances of the Gospel, were to be free and open to all. The Minister might dissuade the vicious and unqualified from the Communion, but might not refuse it, or inflict any kind of Censure; the Punishment of all Offences, either of a civil or religious Nature, being reserved to the Magistrate. The pretended Advantage of this Scheme was, that it avoided the erecting *Imperium in Imperio*, or two different Powers in the same civil Government; it effectually destroyed all that spiritual Jurisdiction and co-ercive Power over the Consciences of Men which had been challenged by Popes, Prelates, Presbyteries, &c. and made the Government of the Church *a Creature of the State*. Most of our first Reformers were so far in these Sentiments as to maintain, that no one Form of Church Government is prescribed in Scripture as an invariable Rule for future Ages; as *Cranmer, Redmayn, Cox, &c.* and Archbishop *Whitgift*, in his Controversy with *Cartwright*, delivers the same Opinion; "I deny (says he) that the Scripture has set down any one certain Form of Church Government to be perpetual. — Again, it is well known, that the Manner and Form of Government expressed in the Scriptures neither is now, nor can, nor ought to be observed either touching Persons or Functions. — The Charge of this is left to the Magistrate, so that nothing be contrary to the Word of God. The Government of the Church must be according to the Form of Government in the Commonwealth." The chief Patrons of this Scheme in the Assembly were Dr. *Lightfoot*, Mr. *Colman*, Mr. *Selden*, Mr. *Whitlock*; and in the House of Commons, besides *Selden* and *Whitlock*, *Oliver St. John*, Esq; Sir *Thomas Widdrington*, *John Crew*, Esq; Sir *John Hipps*, and others of the greatest Names.



The INDEPENDANTS, or *Congregational Brethren*, <sup>King</sup> composed a third Party, and made a bold Stand <sup>Charles I.</sup> against the Proceedings of the high Presbyterians; <sup>1644.</sup> their Numbers were small at first, but encreased <sup>Of the In-</sup> prodigiously in a few Years, and grew to a consider- <sup>depen-</sup> able Figure under the Protectorship of *Oliver Crom- <sup>dants.</sup> *well.**

We have already related their Original, and carried on their History, till they appeared in publick about the latter End of the Year 1640. The Divines that passed under this Denomination in the Assembly had fled their Country in the late Times, and formed Societies, according to their own Model in *Holland*, upon the States allowing them the Use of *their* Churches, after their own Service was ended, with liberty of ringing a Bell to publick Worship. Here (as they declare) they set themselves to consult the Holy Scriptures as impartially as they could, in order to find out the Discipline that the Apostles themselves practised in the very first Age of the Church; the Condition they were in, and the melancholy Prospect of their Affairs affording no Temptation to any particular Biass. The rest of their History, with their distinguishing Opinions, I shall draw from their *Apo- logetical Narration*, published at this Time, and presented to the House of Commons.

“ As to the Church of *England* (say they) we pro- <sup>Apologet.</sup>  
 “ fess before God and the World, that we do appre- <sup>Narr. of</sup>  
 “ hend a great deal of Defilement in their Way of <sup>the Inde-</sup>  
 “ Worship, and a great deal of unwarranted Power <sup>pendants,</sup>  
 “ exercised by their Church Governors, yet we al- <sup>p. 78.</sup>  
 “ lowed Multitudes of their Parochial Churches to  
 “ be true Churches, and their Ministers true Mini-  
 “ sters. In the late Times, when we had no Hopes of  
 “ returning to our own Country, we held Communi-  
 “ on with them, and offered to receive to the Lord’s  
 “ Supper some that came to visit us in our Exile,  
 “ whom we knew to be godly, upon that Relation  
 “ and Membership they held in their Parish Churches  
 “ in

King Charles I. 1644. *in England, they professing themselves to be Members thereof, and belonging thereto. The same charitable Disposition we maintained towards the Dutch Churches among whom we lived. We mutually gave and received the right Hand of Fellowship, holding a brotherly Correspondence with their Divines, and admitting some of the Members of their Churches to Communion in the Sacrament, and other Ordinances, by virtue of their Relation to those Churches.*

Ib. p. 12, 15. The Scheme they embraced was a middle Way between *Brownism* and *Presbytery*, (viz.) that “every particular Congregation of Christians has an entire and compleat Power of Jurisdiction over its Members, to be exercised by the Elders thereof within it self. This they are sure must have been the Form of Government in the Primitive Church, before the Numbers of Christians in any City were multiplied so far as to divide into many Congregations, which, ’tis dubious, whether it was the Fact in the Apostles Times.

“Not that they claim an entire Independency with regard to other Churches, for they agree, that in all cases of Offence the offending Church is to submit to an open Examination, by other neighbouring Churches, and on their persisting in their Error or Miscarriage, they then are to renounce all Christian Communion with them, till they repent, which is all the Authority or Ecclesiastical Power that one Church may exercise over another, unless they call in the civil Magistrate, for which they find no Authority in Scripture.

Ib. p. 18. “Their Method of publick Worship in *Holland* was the same with other Protestants; they read the Scriptures of the Old and New Testament in their Assemblies, and expounded them on proper Occasions; they offered up publick and solemn Prayers, for Kings, and all in Authority; and though they did not approve of a prescribed Form, they

“ they admitted that publick Prayer in their Assemblies ought to be framed by the Meditation and Study of their Ministers, as well as their Sermons; the Word of God was constantly preached; the two Sacraments of Baptism to Infants, and the Lord’s Supper were frequently administer’d; to which was added, singing of Psalms, and a Collection for the Poor every Lord’s Day.

“ They profess their Agreement in Doctrine with the Articles of the Church of *England*, and other reformed Churches.


“ Their Officers, and publick Rulers in the Church, were Pastors, Teachers, Ruling Elders (not Lay, but Ecclesiastical Persons, separated to that Service) and Deacons.

“ They practised no Church Censures but Admonition; and Excommunication upon obstinate and impenitent Offenders, which latter they apprehended should not be pronounced but for Crimes of the last Importance, and which may be reasonably supposed to be committed contrary to the Light and Conviction of the Person’s Conscience.

“ In conclusion they call God and Man to witness, <sup>p. 24, 25,</sup> that out of a Regard to the publick Peace they had <sup>27,</sup> forbore to publish their peculiar Opinions, either from the Pulpit or Press, or to improve the present Disposition of the People to the Increase of their Party; nor should they have published that Apology to the World, had not their Silence been interpreted as an Acknowledgment of those Reproaches and Calumnies that have been cast upon them by their Adversaries; but should have waited for a free and open Debate of their Sentiments in the present Assembly of Divines, though they are sensible they shall have the Disadvantage with regard to Numbers, Learning, and the Stream of publick Interest; however, they are determined in all Debates, to yield to the utmost Latitude of their Consciences, professing it to be as high a  
“ Point

King  
Charles I.  
1644.



- King Charles I. 1644.  " Point of Religion, to acknowledge their Mistakes  
 " when they are convinced of them, as to hold fast  
 " the Truth ; and when Matters are brought to the  
 " neatest Agreement, to promote such a Temper as  
 " may tend to Union, as well as Truth.
2. 503. " They therefore beseech the honourable Houses  
 " of Parliament, not to look upon them as Disturb-  
 " ers of the publick Peace, but to consider them as  
 " Persons that differ but little from their Brethren ;  
 " yea, far less than they do from what themselves  
 " practised three Years ago. They beseech them  
 " likewise to have some regard to their past Exile,  
 " and present Sufferings, and upon these Accounts  
 " to allow them to continue in their native Country,  
 " with the Enjoyment of the Ordinances of Christ,  
 " and an Indulgence in some lesser Differences, as  
 " long as they continue peaceable Subjects."

Sign'd by,

Tho. Goodwin,  
 Sydrach Simpson,  
 Philip Nye,  
 Jer. Burroughs,  
 William Bridge.

*Remarks.* The Reverend Mr. *Herle*, afterwards Prolocutor of the Assembly, in his *Imprimatur* to this Apology, calls it a Performance full of Peaceableness, Modesty and Candor ; and though he wrote against it, yet in the Preface to his Book, entitled *The Independency upon Scripture of the Independency of Churches*, says,  
 " The Difference between us and our Brethren who  
 " are for Independency, is nothing so great as some  
 " may conceive ; at most it does but ruffle the  
 " Fringe, not any way rend the Garment of Christ ;  
 " it is so far from being a Fundamental, that it is  
 " scarce a material Difference." But the more rigid Presbyterians attacked the *Apology* with greater Severity ; swarms of Pamphlets were published  
 against

against it in a few Months, some reflecting on the Persons of the *Apologists*, and others on their Principles, as tending to break the Uniformity of the Church, under the Pretence of Liberty of Conscience. The most furious Adversaries were Dr. *Bastwick*, old Mr. *Vicars*, and Mr. *Edwards*, Minister of *Christ Church, London*, who printed an *Antapologia*, of three Hundred Pages in Quarto, full of such bitter Invectives, that the Pacifick Mr. *Burroughs* said, “ he questioned whether any good Man ever vented so much Malice against others, whom he acknowledged to be pious and religious Persons.” But we shall have occasion to remember this Gentleman again hereafter.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

Lord *Clarendon* and Mr. *Eachard* represent the *Independants* as ignorant and illiterate Enthusiasts; and though Mr. *Rapin* confesses, he knew nothing of their Rise and Progress, he has painted them out in the most disadvantageous Colours, affirming, “ That their Principles were exceeding proper to put the Kingdom into a Flame; that they abhorred Monarchy, and approved of none but a Republican Government, and that as to Religion, their Principles were contrary to all the rest of the World; that they would not endure ordinary Ministers in the Church, but every one among them prayed, preached, admonished, and interpreted Scripture, without any other Call, than what himself drew from his supposed Gifts, and the Approbation of his Hearers.”

Their Vin-  
dication.  
Vol. XII.  
p. 290.

’Tis surprizing so accurate an Historian should take such Liberties with Men whose Principles he was so little acquainted with, as to say, *The Independants abhorred Monarchy, and approved of none but a Republican Government*. Whereas they assure the World in their Apology, That they prayed publicly for Kings, and all in Authority. This was no Point of Controversy between them and the Presbyterians, for when they had the King in their Custody they served

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

p. 8.

him on the Knee, and in all probability would have restored him to all the Honours of his Crown, if he had complied with their Proposals. When they were reproached with being *Enemies to Magistracy*, a Declaration was published by the *Congregational Societies* in and about *London* in the Year 1647. wherein they declare, “ That as Magistracy and Government in general is the Ordinance of God, they do not disapprove of any Form of civil Government, but do freely acknowledge, that a kingly Government, bounded by just and wholesome Laws, is both allowed by God, and a good Accommodation unto Men.” And if we may believe Dr. *Welwood*, when the Army resolved to set aside the present King, the governing Party would have advanced the Duke of Gloucester to the Throne if they could have done it with safety. With regard to Religion he adds, *Their Principles were contrary to all the rest of the World*; and yet they gave their Consent to all the doctrinal Articles of the Assembly’s Confession of Faith, and declared in their Apology, their Agreement with the doctrinal Articles of the Church of *England*, and with all the Protestant reformed Churches in their *Harmony of Confessions*, differing only about the Jurisdiction of Classes, Synods and Convocations, and the Point of Liberty of Conscience — Our Historian adds, that they were not only averse to Episcopacy, but would not endure so much as ordinary Ministers in the Church. They maintained, that every Man might pray in publick, exhort his Brethren and interpret Scripture, without any other Call than what himself drew from his Zeal and supposed Gifts, and without any other Authority than the Approbation of his Hearers. But here his Annotator, Mr. *Tindal*, rightly observes, that he has mistook the Independants for the Brownists; the Independants had their stated Officers in the Church for publick Prayer, Preaching, and Administring the Sacraments, as Pastors, Teachers, and Elders (who were Ecclesiasticks) and Deacons to take Care of the Poor; nor did they admit



admit of Persons unordained to any Office, to exercise their Gifts publicly, except as *Probationers*, in order to their devoting themselves to the Ministry. The Words of their Confession are; "The Work of Preaching is not so peculiarly confined to Pastors and Teachers, but that others also gifted, and fitted by the Holy Ghost for it, and approved (*being by lawful Ways and Means, by the Providence of God called thereunto*) may publicly, or dinarily, and constantly perform it, so that they give themselves up thereunto." 'Tis necessary the Reader should make these Remarks, to rectify a Train of Mistakes which run through this Part of Mr. *Rapin's* History, and to convince him, that the King's Death was not owing to the distinguishing Tenets of any Sect or Party of Christians. There were indeed some *Republicans* and *Levellers* in the Army, whose Numbers encreased after they despaired of bringing the King into their Measures, but 'tis well known that at their first Appearance, *Cromwell* by his personal Valour, suppressed them with the Hazard of his Life. These were chiefly *Anabaptists*, and proved as great Enemies to the *Protector* as to the King. But there is nothing in the Principles of the *Presbyterians*, *Independants*, or *Anabaptists* (as far as I can learn) inconsistent with Monarchy, or that had a natural Tendency to put the Kingdom into a Flame.

Mr. *Baxter*, who was no Friend to the Independants, and knew them much better than the above-mentioned Writers, admits, "That most of them were zealous, and very many learned, discreet Life, and pious, capable of being very serviceable to the Church, and Searchers into Scripture and Anti-quity;" though he blames them on other Occasions, for making too light of Ordination; for their too great Strictness in the Qualification of Church-Members; for their popular Form of Church-Government; and their too much exploding of Synods and

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

Savoy  
Conf. 4to.  
p. 24.  
Art. 14.

Baxter's  
P. 140.  
143.

*King Charles I.* 1644. Councils; but then adds, "I saw a commendable Care of serious Holiness and Discipline in most of the Independant Churches; and I found, that some Episcopal Men, of whom Archbishop *Usher* was one, agreed with them in this, that every Bishop was independent, and that Synods and Councils were not so much for Government as Concord." And I may venture to declare, that these are the Sentiments of almost all the Protestant Non-Conformists in *England* at this Day.

*Of the Anabaptists.*

*Life,*  
*p. 140.*

There was not one professed *Anabaptist* in the Assembly, but their Sentiments began to spread wonderfully without Doors. Their Teachers were for the most part illiterate, though Mr. *Baxter* says, "He found many of them sober, godly, and zealous, not differing from their Brethren but as to Infant Baptism." These joining with the *Independants* in the Point of Discipline and Toleration, made *them* the more considerable, and encouraged their Opposition to the *Presbyterians* who were for establishing their own Discipline, without regard to such as differ'd from them.

*Proceedings of the Assembly.*

It is not to be wonder'd, that so many Parties, with different Views, should entangle the Proceedings of this venerable Body, and protract the intended Union with the *Scots*, though as soon as the *Covenant* was taken they enter'd upon that Affair, the Parliament having sent them the following Order, dated *Octob. 12. 1643.*

*Order to confer about Discipline.*

"UPON serious Consideration of the present State of Affairs, the Lords and Commons assembled in this present Parliament do order, That the Assembly of Divines, and others, do forthwith confer, and treat among themselves, of such a Discipline and Government as may be most agreeable to God's holy Word, and most apt to procure and preserve the Peace of the Church at home, and a nearer Agreement with the Church  
" of

“ of *Scotland*, &c. to be settled in this Church instead  
 “ of the present Church Government by Archbi-  
 “ shops, Bishops, &c. which it is resolved to take  
 “ away; and to deliver their Advice touching the  
 “ same to both Houses of Parliament with all con-  
 “ venient speed.”

*King*  
*Charles I.*  
 1644.

Hereupon the Assembly set themselves to enquire into the Constitution of the Primitive Church in the Days of the Apostles, which being founded upon the Model of the *Jewish Synagogues*, gave the *Lightfoots*, *Light-*  
 the *Seldens*, the *Colemans*, and other Masters of *foot's Re-*  
*Jewish* Antiquities, an Opportunity of displaying *mains, in*  
 their superior Learning, by new and unheard of In- *Pres. p. 8.*  
 terpretations of Scripture, whereby the warmer Pres-  
 byterians were frequently disconcerted, whose Plan  
 of Discipline they had no mind should receive the  
 Stamp of an *Apostolick Sanction* in the Church of  
*England*.

But it was a capital Mistake in the Proceedings of Parliament, to destroy one Building before they were agreed upon another. The ancient Order of Worship and Discipline in the Church of *England* was set aside above twelve Months before any other Form was appointed; no wonder therefore, that in this Time *Sects* and *Divisions* arrived to such a Pitch, that it was not in their Power afterwards to destroy. Committees indeed were appointed to prepare Materials for the Debate of the Assembly; some for *Discipline*, and others for *Worship*, which were argued in their Order, but then laid aside without being perfected, or sent up to Parliament to receive the Sanction of a Law. Nothing can be alledged in excuse for this, but their backwardness to unite with the *Scots*, or the Prospect the Parliament might yet have of an Agreement with the King.

The first Point that came upon the Carpet was of *Ordi-*  
 the ORDINATION OF MINISTERS; which was the *nation.*  
 more necessary, because the Bishops refused to ordain



King  
Charles I.  
1644.

any who were not in the Interest of the Crown: This gave occasion to enquire into the *ancient Right of Presbyters to Ordain without a Bishop*, which meeting with some Opposition, the Committee proposed a temporary Provision till the Matter could be settled, and offered these two Queries.

*First*, “Whether in extraordinary Cases something extraordinary may not be admitted, till a settled Order can be fixed, yet keeping as near to the Rule as possible?”

*Secondly*, “Whether certain Ministers of this City may not be appointed to ordain Ministers in the City and Neighbourhood, for a certain Time, *jure fraternitatis*?”

To the last of which the *Independants* enter'd their Dissent, unless the Ordination was attended with the previous Election of some Church. New Difficulties being continually started, upon this and some other Heads, the *Scots* Commissioners were out of all Patience, and applied to the City Ministers to petition the Parliament to call for the *Advice of the Assembly*. The Petition was presented *Sept. 18. 1644.* in which, having reminded the *Commons* of their *Remonstrance*, wherein they declare, it was not their Intention to let loose the golden Reins of Discipline; and of their *National Covenant*, wherein they had engaged to the most high God, to settle an Uniformity in the Church, they add, “Give us leave, we beseech you, in pursuance of our National Covenant, to sigh out our Sorrows at the Foot of this honourable Senate. Through many erroneous Opinions, ruining Schisms, and damnable Heresies, unhappily somented in this City and Country, the orthodox Ministry is neglected, the People are seduced, Congregations torn asunder, Families distracted, Rights and Duties of Relations, National, Civil, and Spiritual, scandalously violated, the Power of Godliness decayed, Parliamentary Authority undermined, fearful Confusions introduced, imminent Destruction

Russw.  
Vol. V.  
p. 780.

“ ction threaten’d, and in part inflicted upon us late-  
 “ ly in the West. May it therefore please your Wis-  
 “ doms, as a sovereign Remedy for the Removal of  
 “ our present Miseries, and preventing their fur-  
 “ ther Progress, to expedite a Directory for publick  
 “ Worship, to accelerate the Establishment of a pure  
 “ Discipline and Government, according to the Word  
 “ of God, and the Example of the best Reformed  
 “ Churches, and to take away all Obstructions that  
 “ may impede and retard our humble Desires.” Upon *Advice of*  
 this the Assembly were ordered to send up their *hum- the Assem-*  
*ble Advice* upon this Head; which was to the following *bly.*  
 Effect, [Sept. 22.] (viz.) That in this present Exigency,  
 while there were no Presbyteries, yet it being neces-  
 sary that Ministers should be ordained for the Army  
 and Navy, and for the Service of many destitute  
 Congregations, by some who having been ordained  
 themselves, have Power to join in the setting apart  
 of others: They advise,

(1.) That an Association of some godly Ministers *vol. Pam.*  
 in and about the City of *London* be appointed by pub- *penes me,*  
 lick Authority, to ordain Ministers for the City and *Nº 68.*  
 the neighbouring Parts, keeping as near to the Rule  
 as may be.

(2.) That the like Associations be made by the  
 same Authority in great Towns and neighbouring  
 Parishes in the several Counties which are at present  
 quiet and undisturbed.

(3.) That such as are chosen, or appointed for the  
 Service of the Army or Navy, being well recom-  
 mended, be ordained as aforesaid, by the associated  
 Ministers of *London*, or some others in the Country;  
 and the like for any other Congregations that want a  
 Minister.

According to this Advice the two Houses pass  
 an Ordinance, *Octob. 2.* for the Ordination of Mini-  
 sters *pro tempore*, which appoints the following ten  
 Persons, being Presbyters, and Members of the As-  
 sembly, to examine and ordain, by Imposition of  
 L 4 Hands,

*King*  
Charles I. Hands, all those whom they shall judge qualified to  
1644. be admitted into the sacred Ministry, (*viz.*)

|                                         |                        |
|-----------------------------------------|------------------------|
| Dr. Cornelius Burges, <i>Assessor</i> , | Mr. Starkey Gower,     |
| Dr. William Gouge,                      | Mr. John Conant,       |
| Mr. John Ley,                           | Mr. Humphrey Chambers, |
| Mr. George Walker,                      | Mr. Henry Roborough,   |
| Mr. Edmund Calamy,                      | Mr. Dan. Cawdrey.      |

And the following Thirteen being Presbyters of the City of *London*, but not Members of the Assembly, *viz.*

|                                   |                                   |
|-----------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| <i>The Rev.</i> Mr. John Downham, | <i>The Rev.</i> Mr. Tho. Glendon, |
| Mr. Charles Offspring,            | Mr. Sam. Clarke,                  |
| Mr. Richard Lee,                  | Mr. Arthur Jackson,               |
| Mr. Tim. Dod,                     | Mr. Em. Bourne,                   |
| Mr. James Cranford,               | Mr. Fulk Billers,                 |
| Mr. Tho. Horton,                  | Mr. Fr. Roberts,                  |
|                                   | Mr. Leon. Cooke.                  |

Any Seven, or more, to be a *Quorum*, and all Persons so ordained to be reputed Ministers of the Church of *England*, sufficiently authorized for any Office or Employment therein, and capable of all Advantages appertaining to the *same*. Their Rules for Examination, and Trial of Candidates, will be seen the next Year, when this Affair was fully settled. In the mean Time another Ordinance past the Houses, for the Benefit of the County of *Lancaster*, whereby the Reverend Mr. *Charles Herle*, Mr. *Richard Herrick*, Mr. *Hyet*, Mr. *Bradshaw*, Mr. *Isaac Ambrose*, and others, to the Number of Twenty one, had full Power given them to ordain *pro tempore* in the County of *Lancaster*. And to obviate the Reproaches of the *Oxford* Divines, the following Clause

was



was added, that "If any Person do publickly preach,  
" or otherwise exercise any ministerial Office, that  
" shall not be ordained, or thereunto allowed by se-  
" ven of the said Ministers, their Names shall be re-  
" turned to both Houses of Parliament, to be dealt  
" with as they in their Wisdom shall think fit."

*King*  
*Charles I.*  
*1644.*

It was voted further, that "No Minister be allowed  
" to preach, unless he has a Certificate of his Ordina-  
" tion, or at least of his being examined and appro-  
" ved by the Assembly." And *Feb. 16.* at a Con-  
ference between the two Houses it was agreed, That  
the Assembly of Divines be desired to admit none in-  
to their Pulpits, but such whose Doctrine they would  
be answerable for. Such was the Concern of the Par-  
liament in these distracted Times, to have a sober and  
well regulated Clergy.

*Parl. Chr.*  
*p. 152.*

Next to the providing for a Succession of Ministers  
by *Ordination*, the Assembly consulted about a  
Form of publick Devotion; for the old Liturgy be-  
ing laid aside there were no publick Offices in the  
Church: A Committee was therefore appointed,  
*Octob. 17. 1643.* to agree upon certain general  
Heads, for the Direction of the Minister in the Dis-  
charge of his Office, which having passed through  
the Assembly, were sent into *Scotland*, for the Ap-  
probation of the General Assembly, and then esta-  
blished by an Ordinance of Parliament bearing Date  
*Jan. 3. 1644.* under the Title of a DIRECTORY FOR  
PUBLICK WORSHIP.

*Directory*  
*for publick*  
*Worship.*

The Reasons which induced the Parliament to dis-  
card the old Liturgy, and form a new Plan for the  
Devotion of the Church, I shall transcribe from their  
own Preface. " 'Tis evident (say they) after long and  
" sad Experience, that the Liturgy used in the Church  
" of *England*, notwithstanding all the Pains and reli-  
" gious Intentions of the Compilers, has proved  
" an Offence to many of the Godly at home, and to  
" the reformed Churches abroad. The Enjoining  
" the reading all the Prayers, heighten'd the Gre-  
" vances ;

*Pref. to*  
*Directory.*

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

“ vances; and the many unprofitable and burden-  
 “ some Ceremonies has occasioned much Mischief,  
 “ by disquieting the Consciences of many, who could  
 “ not yield to them. Sundry good People have, by  
 “ this Means, been kept from the Lord’s Table,  
 “ and many faithful Ministers debarr’d from the  
 “ Exercise of their Ministry, to the Ruin of them  
 “ and their Families. The Prelates and their Fa-  
 “ ction have rais’d their Estimation of it to such an  
 “ Height, as if God could be worshipp’d no other  
 “ Way but by the *Service Book*; in consequence of  
 “ which the Preaching of the Word has been de-  
 “ preciated, and in some Places entirely neg-  
 “ lected.

“ In the mean Time the Papists have made their  
 “ Advantage this way, boasting, that the Common  
 “ Prayer Book came up to a Compliance with a  
 “ great Part of their *Service*; by which Means they  
 “ were not a little confirmed in their Idolatry and  
 “ Superstition, especially of late, when new Cere-  
 “ monies were daily obtruded on the Church.

“ Besides, the Liturgy has given great Encou-  
 “ ragement to an idle, and unedifying Ministry,  
 “ who chose rather to confine themselves to *Forms*  
 “ made to their Hands, than to exert themselves in  
 “ the Exercise of the Gift of Prayer, with which  
 “ our Saviour furnishes all those whom he calls to  
 “ that Office.

“ For these, and many other weighty Considera-  
 “ tions, relating to the Book in general, besides di-  
 “ vers Particulars, which are a just Ground of Of-  
 “ fence, it is thought adviseable to set aside the for-  
 “ mer Liturgy, with the many Rites and Ceremo-  
 “ nies formerly used in the Worship of God, not out  
 “ of any Affectation of Novelty, nor with an In-  
 “ tention to disparage our first Reformers, but that  
 “ we may answer in some Measure the gracious Pro-  
 “ vidence of God, which now calls upon us for a fur-  
 “ ther Reformation; that we may satisfy our own

“ Con-

“ Consciences ; answer the Expectations of other re-  
 “ formed Churches ; ease the Consciences of many  
 “ godly Persons among our selves ; and give a pub-  
 “ lick Testimony of our Endeavours after an Uni-  
 “ formity in divine Worship, pursuant to what we  
 “ had promised in our *Solemn League and Cove-*  
 “ *nant.*”

King  
 Charles I.  
 1644.

It has been observed, that the *Directory* is not an absolute Form of Devotion, but agreeably to its Title, contains only some general Directions, taken partly from the Word of God, and partly from Rules of Christian Prudence ; It points out the Heads of publick Prayer, of Preaching, and other Parts of the Pastoral Function, leaving the Minister a discretionary Latitude to fill up the Vacancies according to his Abilities. It is divided into several Chapters, and being a Book of a publick Nature, comprehending all the Peculiarities of the Presbyterian Reformation, I have given it a Place in the Appendix. Mr. Fuller observes, That the *Independants* in the Assembly were hardly perswaded to consent to it, for fear of infringing the Liberty of Prayer, but being admitted to qualify some Things in the Preface they complied. The Committee that composed the Preface were Mr. Nye, Mr. Bridges, Mr. Burges, Mr. Tho. Goodwin, all Independants ; Mr. Vines, Mr. Reynolds, Mr. Marshall, and Dr. Temple, with the Scots Commissioners.

Appendix,  
 N<sup>o</sup> II.  
 P. 222.

The *Directory* passed the Assembly with great Unanimity ; those that were for set Forms of Prayer resolving to confine themselves to the very Words of the *Directory*, while Others made use of them only as Heads for their Enlargement.

It may not be improper in this Place to advise the Reader of the following Variations introduced into the Church upon this Occasion. Instead of one prescribed Form of Prayer the *Directory* only points out certain Topicks on which the Minister might enlarge. The whole *Apocrypha* is rejected ; *Private and Lay Baptism*, with

Variations  
 in the Di-  
 rectory  
 from the  
 Common  
 Prayer.



King  
Charles I.  
1644.

Clar.  
Vol. II.  
p. 588.

with the Use of God-Fathers and God-Mothers, and the Sign of the Cross, are discontinued. In the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper no mention is made of private Communion, or administering it to the Sick. The *Altar with Rails* is changed into a Communion Table, to be placed in the Body of the Church, about which the People might stand or sit, *Kneeling* not being thought so proper a Posture. The Presbyterians were for giving the Power of the Keys into the Hands of the *Ministers and Elders*, as the Independants were, to the *whole Brotherhood*; but *Light-foot, Selden, Coleman*, and others, were for an open Communion, to whom the Parliament were most inclinable, for all they would yield was, that *the Minister immediately before the Communion should warn in the Name of Christ, all such as are ignorant, scandalous, prophane, or that live in any Sin or Offence against their Knowledge or Conscience, that they presume not to come to that holy Table, shewing them, That he that eateth and drinketh unworthily eateth and drinketh Judgment to himself.* The Prohibition of Marriage in *Lent*, and the Use of the *Ring*, is laid aside. In the Visitation of the Sick, no mention is made of private Confession, or authoritative Absolution. No Service is appointed for the *Burial of the Dead*. All particular Vestments for Priests or Ministers, and all *Saints Days* are discarded. It has been reckon'd a considerable Omission, that the Directory does not enjoin reading the *Apostles Creed* and the *Ten Commandments*; Lord Clarendon reports, that when this was observed, in private Conversation at the Treaty of *Uxbridge*, the Earl of *Pembroke* said, He was sorry for the Omission, but that upon a Debate in the House of Commons it was carried in the Negative by eight or nine Voices. Which made many smile (says his Lordship;) but the *Jest* will be lost, when the Reader is informed, that the Question in the House was not, Whether the *Creed* should be received or rejected, but whether it should be printed with the *Directory for Worship*; it being

being apprehended more proper for a *Confession of Faith*; and accordingly the Creed and Ten Commandments were added to the *Assemblies Confession*, published a Year or two forwards. The Ordinance for establishing the *Directory* repeals and makes void the Acts of *Edward VI.* and *Queen Elizabeth*, by which the old Liturgy was established, and forbids the Use of it within any Church, Chapel, or Place of publick Worship in *England* or *Wales*, appointing the Use of the *Directory* in its room; and thus it continued till the Restoration of *King Charles II.* when the Constitution being restored, the old Liturgy took Place again, the Ordinance for its Repeal having never obtained the royal Assent.

It was a considerable Time before this great Revolution in the Form of publick Worship took place over the whole Kingdom. In some Parts of the Country the Church-Wardens could not procure a *Directory*, and in others they despised it, and continued the old *Common Prayer Book*; some would read no Form, and others would use one of their own. In order therefore to give Life to the *Directory*, the Parliament next Summer called in all *Common Prayer Books*, and imposed a Fine upon those Ministers that should read any other Form than that contained in the *Directory*. The Ordinance is dated *Aug. 23. 1645.* and enacts, that “the Knights and Burgeesses of the several Counties in *England* and *Wales* shall send printed Books of the *Directory* fairly Bound to the Committee of Parliament in their several Counties, who shall deliver them to the Officers of the several Parishes in *England* and *Wales*, by whom they shall be delivered to the several Ministers of each Parish. It ordains further, That the several Ministers next Lord’s Day after their receiving the *Book of the Directory* shall read it openly in their respective Churches before Morning Sermon. — It then forbids the Use of the *Common Prayer Book* in any Church, Chapel, or Place of publick Worship,

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

Ordinance  
for enforcing the  
Use of the  
*Directory*.  
Rushw.  
Part IV.  
Vol. I.  
P. 205.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

“ ship, or in any private Place or Family, under  
“ Penalty of five Pounds for the first Offence, ten  
“ for the second, and for the third a Year’s Impri-  
“ sonment. Such Ministers as do not observe the  
“ *Directory* in all Exercises of publick Worship shall  
“ forfeit forty Shillings; and they who with a De-  
“ sign to bring the *Directory* into Contempt, or to  
“ raise Opposition to it, shall preach, write, or  
“ print any Thing in Derogation of it, shall forfeit a  
“ Sum of Money not under five Pounds, nor more  
“ than fifty, to be given to the Poor. All Com-  
“ mon Prayer Books remaining in Parish Churches  
“ or Chapels are ordered, within a Month, to be  
“ carried to the Committee of the several Counties,  
“ to be disposed of as the Parliament shall direct.”

Remarks.

These were the first Fruits of Presbyterian Uniformity, and are equally to be condemned with the Severities and Oppressions of the late Times; for tho’ it should be admitted, that the Parliament or Legislature had a Right to abrogate the Use of the *Common Prayer Book* in Churches, was it not highly unreasonable to forbid the Reading it in private Families or Closets? Surely the Devotion of a private Family could be no Disturbance to the Publick; nor is it any Excuse to say, that very few suffered by it, because the Law is still the same, and equally injurious to the natural Rights of Mankind.

King for-  
bids the  
Use of it.  
Rushw.  
Part IV.  
Vol. I.  
p. 207.

Though his Majesty’s Affairs were very desperate after the Battle of *Naseby*, yet he had the Courage to forbid the Use of the new *Directory*, and enjoin the Continuance of the *Common Prayer*, by a Proclamation from *Oxford*, dated *Novemb. 13. 1645.* in which his Majesty takes Notice, that “ the Book of Com-  
“ mon Prayer being a most excellent Form of Wor-  
“ ship, grounded on the Holy Scriptures, is a great  
“ Help to Devotion, and tends to preserve an Uni-  
“ formity in the Church of *England*; whereas the  
“ *Directory* gives liberty to ignorant, factious, and  
“ evil Men, to broach their own Fancies and Con-  
“ ceits,



“ ceits, and utter those Things in their long Prayers  
 “ which no conscientious Man can assent to ; and  
 “ be the Minister never so pious, it breaks in upon the  
 “ Uniformity of publick Service. And whereas this  
 “ Alteration is introduced by an Ordinance of Parlia-  
 “ ment, inflicting Penalties on Offenders, which was  
 “ never pretended to be in their Power without our  
 “ Consent : Now, least our Silence should be inter-  
 “ preted as a Connivance in a Matter so highly con-  
 “ cerning the Worship of God, and the established  
 “ Laws of the Kingdom, we do therefore require  
 “ and command all Ministers in all Cathedrals and  
 “ Parish Churches, and all other Places of publick  
 “ Worship, that the said Book of Common Prayer  
 “ be kept and used in all Churches, Chapels, &c.  
 “ according to the Statute *primo Eliz.* and that the  
 “ Directory be in no sort admitted, received, or  
 “ used ; and whensoever it shall please God to restore  
 “ us to Peace, and the Laws to their due Course, we  
 “ shall require a strict Account, and Prosecution  
 “ against the Breakers of the said Law. And in the  
 “ mean Time, in such Places where we shall come  
 “ and find the Book of Common Prayer suppressed  
 “ and laid aside, and the Directory introduced, we  
 “ shall account all those that are Aiders, Actors, or  
 “ Contrivers therein, to be Persons disaffected to the  
 “ Religion and Laws established.”

*King*  
 Charles I.  
 1644.

His Majesty likewise issued out Warrants under his own Hand, to the Heads of the *University*, commanding them to read divine Service as usual, Morning and Evening ; and assured his Peers at *Oxford*, that he was still determined to live and die for the Privileges of his Crown, his Friends, and Church Government.

About this Time the ANABAPTISTS began to *Rise and* make a considerable Figure, and spread themselves *Progress of* into several separate Congregations. We have al- *the Eng-* ready distinguished the *German* Anabaptists from the *lish Ana-* *baptists.* *English*, who differ'd only from their Protestant Brethren about the Subject and Mode of *Baptism* ; these were

King Charles I. were divided into *Generals* and *Particulars*, from their different Sentiments upon the *Arminian* Controversy ; the former appeared in *Holland*, where Mr. *Smith* their Leader published a Confession of Faith in the Year 1611. which Mr. *Robinson*, the Minister of the Independant Congregation at *Leyden* answered in 1614. but the Severity of those Times would not admit them to venture into *England*. The *Particular Baptists* were strict *Calvinists*, and were so called, from their Belief of the Doctrines of *particular Election*, *Redemption*, &c. They separated from the Independant Congregation about the Year 1638. and set up for themselves under the Pastoral Care of Mr. *Jesse*, (as has been related) but having renounced their former Baptism, they sent over one of their Number, [Mr. *Blunt*] to be dipp'd by one of the *Dutch Anabaptists* of *Amsterdam*, that he might be qualified to baptize his Friends in *England* after the same Manner. A strange and unaccountable Conduct ! for unless the *Dutch Anabaptists* could derive their Pedigree in an uninterrupted Line from the Apostles, the first Reviver of this Usage must have been unbaptized, and consequently not capable of communicating the Ordinance to others. But upon Mr. *Blunt*'s Return, he baptized Mr. *Blacklock* a Teacher, and Mr. *Blacklock* dipped the rest of the Society, to the Number of Fifty three, in this present Year 1644. " Presuming upon the Patience of the State (says Dr. *Featly*) they " have Rebaptized one Hundred Men and Women " together, in the Twilight, in Rivulets, and some " Arms of the *Thames*, and elsewhere, dipping them " over Head and Ears. They have printed divers " Pamphlets in Defence of their Heresy (says the " same Author) and challenged some of our Preachers to a Disputation." Nay, so wonderfully did this Opinion prevail, that there were no less than Forty seven Congregations in the Country, and seven in *London* at this Time, who published a Confession of their Faith, signed in the Name of their Congregations,

MS. penes  
me.

tions, by *William Kiffin, Thomas Patience, George Tipping, John Spilbury, Thomas Sheppard, Thomas Mun-* King  
Charles I.  
1644.  
*den, Thomas Gun, John Mabbett, John Webb, Thomas Kilcop, Paul Hobson, Thomas Gore, John Philips, and Edward Heath.* In the Year 1646. it was reprinted, with the additional Names of *Denis le Barbier* and *Christopher Durell*, Ministers of the *French Congregation* in *London*, of the same Judgment.

Their Confession consisted of Fifty two Articles, Their Confession of Faith. and is strictly *Calvinistical* in the doctrinal Part, and according to the Independent Discipline; it confines the Subject of Baptism to grown Christians, and the Mode to Dipping; it admits of gifted Lay-Preachers, and acknowledges a due Subjection to the Civil Magistrate in all Things lawful; and concludes thus, “ We desire to live quietly and peaceably, as become Saints, endeavouring in all Things to keep a good Conscience, and to do to every Man (of what Judgment soever) as we would they should do to us; that as our Practice is, so it may prove us to be a conscionable, quiet, and harmless People (no way dangerous or troublesome to human Society) and to labour to work with our Hands, that we may not be chargeable to any, but to give to him that needeth, both Friend and Enemy, accounting it more excellent to give than to receive. Also we confess, that we know but in part, and that we are ignorant of many Things that we desire and seek to know; and if any shall do us that friendly Part, to shew us from the Word of God, that which we see not, we shall have Cause to be thankful to God and them. But if any Man shall impose upon us any Thing that we see not to be commanded by our Lord Jesus Christ, we should, in his Strength, rather embrace all Reproaches, and Tortures of Men; to be stripp’d of all our outward Comforts, and, if it were possible, to die a thousand Deaths, rather than do any Thing against the Truth of God, or against the Light of our own



King Charles I. 1644. " Consciences. And if any shall call what we have said Heresy, then do we with the Apostle acknowledge, That after the Way they call Heresy so worship we the God of our Fathers; disclaiming all Heresies (rightly so called) because they are against Christ; and desiring to be stedfast and immoveable, always abounding in Obedience to Christ, as knowing our Labour shall not be in vain in the Lord."

When Dr. Featley had read this Confession he owned, they were neither Hereticks nor Schismaticks, but tender-hearted Christians, upon whom, through false Suggestions, the Hand of Authority had fallen heavy whilst the Hierarchy stood.

Their Character.

The Advocates of this Doctrine were, for the most part, of the meanest of the People; their Preachers were generally illiterate, and went about the Countries making Profelytes of all that would submit to their *Immersion*, without a due regard to their Acquaintance with the Principles of Religion, or their moral Characters. The Writers of these Times represent them as tainted with a kind of enthusiastick Fury against all that oppos'd them. Mr. Baxter says, " There were but few of them that had not been the Opposers and Troublers of faithful Ministers — That in this they strengthen'd the Hands of the Profane, and that in general, *Reproach of Ministers, Faction, Pride, and scandalous Practices, were fomented in their Way.*" But still there were among them some learned, and a great many sober and devout Christians, who disallowed of the Imprudence of their Country Friends. The two most learned Divines that espoused their Cause were Mr. Francis Cornwall, M. A. of Emanuel College, and Mr. John Tombes, B. D. educated in the University of Oxford, a Person of incomparable Parts, well versed in the Greek and Hebrew Languages, and a most excellent Disputant. He wrote several Letters to Mr. Selden against Infant Baptism, and published a *Latin Exercitation* upon the same Subject, containing several Arguments, which he

Baxter's Life,  
p. 102,  
144.

he presented to the Committee appointed by the Assembly to put a Stop to the Progress of this Opinion. The *Exercitation* being translated into *English* brought upon him a whole Army of Adversaries, among whom were the Reverend Dr. *Hammond*, Dr. *Holmes*, Mr. *Marshall*, *Fuller*, *Geree*, *Baxter*, and others. The People of this Persuasion were more exposed to the publick Resentments, because they would hold Communion with none but such as had been *dipp'd*. All must pass under this Cloud before they could be received into their Churches; and the same narrow Spirit prevails too generally among them even at this Day.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

Besides the above-mentioned Writers, the most eminent Divines in the City of *London*, as Mr. *Vines*, *Calamy*, and others, preached vigorously against these Doctrines, which they had a Right to do; but it was most unjustifiable to fight them at the same Time with the Sword of the Civil Magistrate, and shut them up in Prison, as was the Case of several in this and the following Year, among whom are reckon'd the Reverend Mr. *Henry Dein*, formerly ordain'd by the Bishop of *St. David's*, and possessed of the Living of *Pyetou* in *Hertfordshire*; Mr. *Coppe* Minister in *Warwickshire*; and sometime Preacher to the Garrison in *Compton House*; Mr. *Hanserd Knollys*, who was several Times before the Committee for preaching *Antinomianism* and *Antipædobaptism*; and being forbid to preach in the publick Churches, he opened a separate Meeting in *Great St. Helen's*, from whence he was quickly dislodged, and his Followers dispersed. Mr. *Andrew Wyke*, in the County of *Suffolk*, was imprisoned on the same Account; and Mr. *Oates* in *Essex*, tried for his Life at *Chelmsford* Affizes for the Murder of *Anne Martin*, because she died a few Days after her Immersion, of a Cold that seized her at that Time. *Lawrence Clarkson* was imprisoned by the Committee of *Suffolk*, and having lain in Gaol six Months signed a Recantation and was released. The

Their Sufferings.

King Recantation, as enter'd in the Committee's Books,  
Charles I. was in these Words;

1644.

July 15: 1645.

Mr. Clark-  
son's Re-  
cantation.

THIS Day *Lawrence Clarkson*, formerly com-  
mitted for an *Anabaptist*, and for Dipping,  
does now, before the Committee, disclaim his  
Errors. And whereas formerly he said he durst  
not leave his dipping, if he might gain all the Com-  
mittees Estates, now he says, That he, by the  
holy Scriptures is convinced, that his said Opini-  
ons were erroneous, and that he will not, nor  
dares not practise it again, if he might gain all the  
Committees Estates by doing it. And that he  
makes this Recantation not for fear, or to gain his  
Liberty, but meerly out of a Sense of his Error,  
wherein he will endeavour to reform others."

Remarks.

It must be granted, That the imprudent Behaviour  
of the *Baptist Lay Preachers*, who declaimed against  
human Literature, and hireling Priests; crying down  
Magistracy, and a regular Ministry, and talking in  
the most exalted Strains of a fifth Monarchy, and  
King *Jesus*, prejudiced the Minds of many sober  
People against them; but still the imprisoning Men  
meerly on account of religious Principles, not incon-  
sistent with the publick Peace, nor propagated in a  
riotous and tumultuous Manner, is not to be justified  
in any Light; and 'tis the more inexcusable in this  
Case, because Mr. *Baxter* admits, that the Presby-  
terian Zeal was in a great Measure the Occasion  
of it.

Baxter's  
Life,  
p. 103.

Charles  
Lewis,  
Electo-  
r Palatine,  
comes into  
the Assem-  
bly.

Before we leave the Assembly for this Year, it will  
be proper to take notice, that it was honoured with the  
Presence of CHARLES LEWIS Elector *Palatine* of the  
*Rhine*, eldest Son of *Frederick*, &c. King of *Bobemia*, who  
married King *James's* Daughter, and lost his Territories  
by the fatal Battle of *Prague* in 1619. The unhappy  
*Frederick* died in 1632. and left behind him six Sons  
and



and five Daughters, among whom were Prince *Rupert*, Prince *Maurice*, and the Princess *Sophia*. The young Elector and his Mother often solicited the *English* Court for Assistance to recover their Dominions, and were as often complimented with empty Promises. All the Parliaments of this Reign mention with Concern the calamitous Condition of the Queen of *Bohemia* and her Children, and offer to venture their Lives and Fortunes for the Recovery of the *Palatinate*, but King *Charles I.* did not like his Sister's Principles, who being a resolved Protestant, had been heard to say (if we may believe *L'Estrange*) *That rather than have her Son bred up in Idolatry at the Emperor's Court, she had rather be his Executioner.* And Mr. *Eachard* adds, that the Birth of King *Charles II.* in the Year 1630. gave no great Joy to the *Puritans*, because, as one of them said, *God had already provided for them in the Family of the Queen of Bohemia, who were bred up in the Protestant Religion, while it was uncertain what Religion King Charles's Children would follow, being to be brought up by a Mother devoted to the Church of Rome.* When the War broke out between the King and Parliament, the Elector's younger Brothers *Rupert* and *Maurice*, served the King, but the Elector himself being in *Holland* took the *Covenant*, and by a Letter to the Parliament testified his Approbation of the Cause in which they were engaged. This Summer he made a Tour to *England*, and was welcomed by a Committee of the two Houses, who promised him their best Advice and Assistance; to whom the Prince made the following Reply.

“ I HOLD my self much obliged to the Parlia-  
 “ ment for their Favours, and my coming is to  
 “ express in Person what I have often done by Let-  
 “ ter, my sincere Affections to them, and to take  
 “ off such Jealousies, as either the Actions of some  
 “ of my Relations, or the ill Effects of what my  
 “ Enemies might by my Absence cast upon me.  
 “ My

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

The Pala-  
stine Fami-  
ly Favou-  
rites of the  
Puritans.

Hist.  
p. 449.

Hist.  
Stuarts,  
p. 268.

King Charles I. 1644. " My Wishes are constant for the good Success of the great Work you have undertaken, for a thorough Reformation ; and my Desires are to be rul'd and govern'd by your grave Counsels."

Hist.  
Stuarts,  
p. 279.

The Parliament ordered an Apartment to be fitted up for the Prince at *Whitehall*, and voted him eight Thousand Pounds a Year for his Maintenance, and ten Thousand for his royal Mother, till he should be restor'd to his Electorate. While he stayed here he frequently attended the Assembly in their Debates, and after some Time had a Pass for himself and forty Horse into the *Low Countries*. His Sister, Princess SOPHIA, afterwards married the Duke of *Brunswick and Hanover*, whose Son, upon the Decease of Queen *Anne*, succeeded to the Crown of *Great Britain*, by the Name of GEORGE I. the numerous Posterity of King *Charles I.* being set aside as Papists, and the Children of the Queen of *Bohemia*, Electress *Palatine*, and Daughter of King *James I.* advanced to the Imperial Crown of these Kingdoms in their room, as a Reward for their Firmness to the Protestant Religion ; And may the same illustrious Family continue to be the GUARDIANS of our LIBERTIES, both Sacred and Civil, to the End of Time !

State of  
Religion.

Religion was the Fashion of these Times ; the Assembly was often turned into a House of Prayer, and hardly a Week past without solemn Fasting and Humiliation, in several of the Churches of *London* and *Westminster* ; the Laws against Profaneness were carefully executed ; and because the former Ordinances for the Observation of the Lord's Day were not effectual, it was ordained, *April 6.* that all Persons should apply themselves to the Exercise of Piety and Religion on the Lord's Day, " That no Wares, Fruit, Herbs, or Goods of any Sort, be exposed to Sale, or cry'd about Streets, upon Penalty of forfeiting the Goods. That no Person, without Cause, shall travel, or carry a Burden, or do any world-

Ordinance  
for better  
Observation  
of the  
Lord's Day  
Scobell's  
Colours  
p. 38.

“ worldly Labour, upon Penalty of ten Shillings for  
 “ the Traveller, and five Shillings for every Bur- <sup>King</sup>  
 “ den. That no Person shall, on the Lord’s Day, <sup>Charles I.</sup>  
 “ use, or be present at any Wrestling, Shooting, <sup>1644.</sup>  
 “ Fowling, Ringing of Bells for Pleasure, Markets,  
 “ Wakes, Church-Ales, Dancing, Games or Sports  
 “ whatsoever, upon Penalty of five Shillings, to  
 “ every one above fourteen Years of Age. And if  
 “ Children are found offending in the Premises, their  
 “ Parents or Guardians to forfeit twelve Pence for  
 “ every Offence. That all May-Poles be pulled down,  
 “ and none others erected. That if the several Fines  
 “ above-mentioned can’t be levied, the offending  
 “ Party shall be set in the Stocks for the Space of  
 “ three Hours. That the King’s Declaration con-  
 “ cerning lawful Sports on the Lord’s Day be called  
 “ in, suppressed, and burnt.

“ This Ordinance shall not extend to prohibit  
 “ dressing Meat in private Families, or selling Vi-  
 “ ctuals in a moderate Way in Inns or Victualling  
 “ Houses, for the Use of such as can’t otherwise be  
 “ provided for; nor to the Crying of Milk before  
 “ Nine in the Morning, or after Four in the After-  
 “ noon.”

The *Solemn League and Covenant* was in such high <sup>Lond. Min.</sup>  
 Repute at this Time, that by an Order of the House <sup>Testimony</sup>  
 of Commons, *Jan. 29. 1644.* it was appointed, <sup>to the</sup>  
 “ That on every Fast-Day, and Day of publick <sup>Truth of</sup>  
 “ Humiliation, the *Covenant* should be publickly <sup>y. Christ,</sup>  
 “ read in every Church and Congregation within the  
 “ Kingdom; and that every Congregation be en-  
 “ joined to have one of the said *Covenants* fairly  
 “ printed, in a fair Letter, in a Table fitted to hang  
 “ up in some publick Place of the Church to be  
 “ read.” Which was done accordingly, and they  
 continued there till the Restoration.

But that which occasioned the greatest Disturbance  
 over the whole Nation, was an Order of both Houses  
 relating to *Christmas Day*. Dr. *Lightfoot* says, The



King Charles I. 1644. London Ministers met together last Year, to consult, whether they should preach on that Day; when one of considerable Name and Authority opposed it, and was near prevailing with the rest, but the Doctor convinced them so far of the Lawfulness and Expediency of it, that when the Question was put it was carried in the Affirmative with only four or five dissenting Voices. But this Year it happening to fall on the *Monthly Fast*, so that either the *Fast*, or the Festival, must be omitted, the Parliament, after some Debate, thought it most agreeable to the present Circumstances of the Nation, to go on with Fasting and Prayer; and therefore published the following Order,

*Die Jovis 19 Dec. 1644.*

Order for  
laying a-  
side the  
Observati-  
on of  
Christmas.

Rushw.  
p. 817.

“ WHERE AS some Doubts have been rais’d,  
“ Whether the *next Fast* shall be celebrated,  
“ because it falls on the Day which heretofore was  
“ usually called the Feast of the Nativity of our Savi-  
“ our? The Lords and Commons in Parliament as-  
“ sembled do order and ordain, that publick Notice  
“ be given, That the Fast appointed to be kept the  
“ last *Wednesday* in every Month ought to be obser-  
“ ved, till it be otherwise order’d by both Houses;  
“ and that this Day in particular is to be kept with  
“ the more solemn Humiliation, because it may call  
“ to remembrance our Sins, and the Sins of our Fore-  
“ fathers, who have turned this Feast, pretending  
“ the Memory of Christ, into an extreme Forgetful-  
“ ness of him, by giving liberty to carnal and sen-  
“ sual Delights, being contrary to the Life which  
“ Christ led here on Earth, and to the spiritual  
“ Life of Christ in our Souls, for the sanctifying and  
“ saving whereof, Christ was pleased both to take a  
“ human Life, and to lay it down again.”

Remarks. The Royalists rais’d loud Clamours on account of the suppos’d Impiety and Profaneness of this Transaction, as what had never been heard of in the Christian World before,

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

before, tho' they could not but know, that this, as well as other Festivals, is but of Ecclesiastical Appointment; that there is no mention of the Observation of *Christmas* in the first or second Age of Christianity; that the Kirk of *Scotland* never observ'd it since the Reformation, but when under the Power of the Bishops, and do not regard it at this Day. Some of the most learned Divines among the Presbyterians, as well as Independants, were in this Sentiment. Mr. *Edmund Calamy*, in his Sermon before the House of Commons on this Day, has these Expressions. " This Day is commonly called *Christmas Day*, a Day that has heretofore been much abused to Superstition and Profaneness. It is not easy to say, whether the Superstition has been greater, or the Profaneness. I have known some that have preferr'd *Christmas Day* before the *Lord's Day*. Some that would be sure to receive the Sacrament on *Christmas Day* though they did not receive all the Year after. Some thought, though they did not play at Cards all the Year long, yet they must play at *Christmas*, thereby, it seems, to keep in Memory the Birth of Christ. This, and much more, hath been the Profanation of this Feast; and truly, I think the Superstition and Profaneness of this Day is so rooted into it, that there is no way to reform it, but by dealing with it as *Hezekiah* did with the brazen Serpent. This Year God, by his Providence, has buried this Feast in a Fast, and I hope it will never rise again. You have set out, Right Honourable, a strict Order for keeping of it, and you are here this Day to observe your own Order, and I hope you will do it strictly. The Necessities of the Times are great, never more need of Prayer and Fasting. The Lord give us Grace to be humbled in this Day of Humiliation, for all our own and *England's* Sins, and especially for the old Superstition and Profaneness of this Feast.

About

King Charles I. *About Midsummer this Year died Doctor Thomas Westfield, Bishop of Bristol; he was born in the Isle of Ely, 1573. educated in Jesus College Cambridge, and afterwards Rector of Hornsey, and of St. Bartholomew the Great, London, and Arch-Deacon of St. Al-Walkers Suff. Cler. it (as is said) Twenty five Years before. He was a Gentleman of great Modesty, a good Preacher, and excellent Orator. The Parliament had such an Esteem for him, that they named him one of the Assembly of Divines, and he had the Goodness to appear among them for some Time. Upon the Bishop's Complaint, that the Profits of his Bishoprick were detained, the Committee ordered them to be restored, and gave him a Pass to go to Bristol to receive them, wherein they stile him a Person of great Learning and Merit. He died in Possession of his Bishoprick, June 25. 1644. aged Seventy one, and composed his own Epitaph, one Line of which was,*

*Senio & Mærore confectus,*

*Worn out with Age and Grief.*

And another ;

*Episcoporum infimus, Peccatorum primus,*

*The least of Bishops, the greatest of Sinners.*

Of Doctor Downing *Dr. Calibute Downing was born of an ancient Family in Gloucestershire, about 1616. he was educated in Oriel College, Oxford, and at length became Vicar of Hackney, near London, by the Procurement of Archbishop Laud; which is very strange, if (as Mr. Wood says) he always look'd awry on the Church. In his Sermon to the Artillery Company, Sept. 1. 1640. he maintain'd, That for Defence of Religion,*  
and



and Reformation of the Church, it was lawful to take up Arms against the King, if it could be obtain'd no other way. For which he was forced to abscond till the Beginning of this present Parliament. He was afterwards Chaplain in the Earl of *Essex's* Army, and a Member of the Assembly of Divines, but died before he was Forty Years of Age, having the Character of a pious Man, a warm Preacher, and very zealous for the Parliament.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.



## C H A P. V.

*Abstract of the Trial of Archbishop LAUD; and,  
of the Treaty of Uxbridge.*

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

Trial of  
Abp. Laud.

**N**EXT Day after the Establishment of the *Director*y, Dr. WILLIAM LAUD, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, received Sentence of Death: He had been in the *Tower* almost three Years, upon an Impeachment of High Treason from the House of Commons, without once petitioning for a Trial, or so much as putting in his Answer to the Articles; but as soon as the Parliament had united with the *Scots*, it was resolved to gratify that Nation by bringing him to the Bar; accordingly Serjeant *Wild* was sent up to the House of Lords, *Octob. 23.* with ten additional Articles of High Treason, and other Crimes and Misdemeanors; and to pray, That his *Grace* might be brought to a speedy Trial. We have already recited the fourteen original Articles under the Year 1640. The additional Ones were to the following Purpose.

Articles of  
Impeach-  
ment.  
Prynne's  
Compl.  
Hist. of the  
Trial of  
Abp. Laud,  
p. 38.

1. " That the Archbishop had endeavoured to destroy the Use of Parliaments, and to introduce an arbitrary Government.
2. " That for ten Years before the present Parliament he had endeavoured to advance the Council Table, the Canons of the Church, and the King's Prerogative above Law.
3. " That he had stopt Writs of Prohibition to stay Proceedings in the Ecclesiastical Courts, when the same ought to have been granted.
4. " That he had caused Sir *John Corbet* to be committed to the *Fleet* for six Months, only for causing the *Petition of Right* to be read at the Sessions.

5. " That

5. " That Judgment having been given in the Court  
" of *King's Bench* against Mr. *Burley*, a Clergyman  
" of a bad Character, for Non-Residence, he had  
" caused the Judgment to be stay'd, saying, *He*  
" *would never suffer Judgment to pass upon any Clergy-*  
" *man by nihil dicit.*

6. " That large Sums of Money having been con-  
" tributed for buying in Impropropriations, the Arch-  
" bishop had caused the *Feoffments* to be overthrown  
" in his Majesty's *Exchequer*, and by that Means  
" suppressed the Design.

7. " That he had harboured and relieved divers  
" Popish Priests, contrary to Law.

8. " That he had said at *Westminster*, there  
" must be a Blow given to the Church, such as had  
" not been given before it could be brought to Con-  
" formity, declaring thereby his Intention to alter  
" the true Protestant Religion established in it.

9. " That after the Dissolution of the last Parlia-  
" ment he had caused a Convocation to be held, in  
" which sundry Canons were made contrary to the  
" Rights and Privileges of Parliament, and an ille-  
" gal Oath imposed upon the Clergy, with certain  
" Penalties, commonly known by the *Et cætera*  
" Oath.

10. " That upon the abrupt Dissolving of the  
" short Parliament 1640. he had told the King, *He*  
" *was now absolved from all Rules of Government, and*  
" *at liberty to make Use of extraordinary Methods for*  
" *Supply.*"

I omit the Charge of the *Scots* Commissioners, be-  
cause the Archbishop pleaded the Act of Oblivion.

The Lords ordered the Archbishop to deliver in Prynne,  
his Answer in Writing to the above-mentioned Ar- P. 45.  
ticles in three Weeks, which he did, but took no  
Notice of the original ones. The Trial was put off  
from Time to Time, at the Request of the Prisoner  
till Sept 16. when the Archbishop appeared at the Bar,  
and



King  
Charles I.  
1644.

and having kneeled for some Time and then ordered to stand, one of the Managers for the Commons moved the Lords, that their Articles of Impeachment, with the Archbishop's Answer, might be read; but when the Clerk of the House had read the Articles, there was no Answer to the *original Ones*. Upon which Serjeant *Maynard* stood up, and observed, "How unjust the Archbishop's Complaints of his long Imprisonment, and of the Delay of his Hearing must be, when in all this Time he had not put in his Answer to their original Articles, though he had long since, *Counsel* assign'd him for that Purpose. That it would be absurd in them to proceed on the additional Articles, when there was no Issue joyn'd on the original ones; he therefore prayed, that the Archbishop might forthwith put in his Answer to all their Articles, and then they should be ready to confirm their Charge whenever their Lordships should appoint."

Wharton's  
Hist. of Abp.  
Laud's  
Troubles,  
p. 214,  
215.

The Archbishop says, the *Lords* look'd hard one upon another, as if they would ask where the Mistake was, but himself said nothing, but that his Answer had not been call'd for. His *Grace* would have embarras'd them further, by desiring them to hear his Counsel, Whether the Articles were certain and particular enough to receive an Answer. He moved likewise, That if he must put in a *new* Answer, his *former* might be taken off the File; and that they would please to distinguish which Articles were *Treason*, and which *Misdemeanor*. But the Lords rejected all his Motions, and ordered him to put in a peremptory Answer to the original Articles of the Commons by the 22d Instant, which he did accordingly, to this Effect.

Abp's Answer.

"As to the 13th Article, concerning the Troubles in *Scotland*, and all Actions, Attempts, Assistance, Counsel, or Device relating thereto, this Defendant pleadeth the late Act of Oblivion, he  
"being

“ being none of the Persons excepted by the said  
 “ Act, nor are any of the Offences charged upon this  
 “ Defendant excepted by the said Act.

King  
 Charles I.  
 1644.

“ And as to all the other Articles, both Original  
 “ and Additional, this Defendant saving to himself  
 “ all Advantages of Exception to the said Articles,  
 “ humbly saith, that he is *not Guilty* of all, or any  
 “ the Matters, by the said Articles charged, in such  
 “ Manner and Form as the same are by the said Ar-  
 “ ticles charged against him.”

The Trial was deferr'd all the Month of *February*, Order and Method of the Trial.  
 as the Archbishop insinuates, because Mr. *Prynne*  
 was not ready with his Witneses. When it came on,  
 Lord *Grey of Werk*, Speaker of the House of Lords,  
 was appointed President ; but the Archbishop com-  
 plained, that there was seldom above sixteen or eighteen  
 Peers present at a Time. The Managers for the Com-  
 mons were Serjeant *Wild* and Mr. *Maynard*, Mr.  
*Brown*, Mr. *Nicolas*, Mr. *Hill*, whom the Archbi-  
 shop calls *Consul Bibulus*, because he said nothing ;  
 their Solicitor was Mr. *Prynne*, the Archbishop's  
 grand Enemy. His Grace's Counsel were, Mr.  
*Hearne*, Mr. *Hales*, Mr. *Chute*, Mr. *Gerard* ; and his  
 Solicitor was his own Secretary, Mr. *Dell*. The  
 Trial was depending almost five Months, in which  
 Time the Archbishop was heard twenty Days with  
 as much Liberty and Freedom of Speech as could be  
 reasonably desired. When he complain'd of the Sei-  
 zure of his Papers, the Lord's ordered him a Copy of  
 all such as he should say were necessary for his De-  
 fence ; and when he acquainted them, That by rea-  
 son of the Sequestration of his Estate, he was unca-  
 pable of seeing his Counsel, they moved the Com-  
 mittee of Sequestrations in his Favour, who ordered  
 him two Hundred Pounds. His Counsel had free  
 Access to him at all Times, and stood by to advise him  
 throughout his whole Trial.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

The Method of Proceeding was thus, the Archbishop had three or four Days Notice of the Day of his Appearance, and of the Articles they designed to proceed on. He was brought to the Bar about *ten* in the Morning, and the Managers were till *one* making good their Charge; the House then adjourn'd to *four*, when the Archbishop made his Defence, after which one of the Managers replied, and the Archbishop returned to the *Tower* between *seven* and *eight* of the Clock at Night.

'Tis unhappy that this remarkable Trial, which contains the chief Heads of Controversy between the Puritans and the Church, was not publish'd by Order of the House of Peers, that the World might have seen the Arguments on both Sides in their full Strength. Mr. *Prynne*, by Order of the House of Commons, has given us *their* Evidence to that Branch of the Charge which relates to Religion, and the Archbishop has left behind him his own Defence on every Day's Hearing, mixed with satyrical and stinging Reflections on his Adversaries; but these being broken Performances, I have endeavoured to put the most material Passages into a proper Method, without confining my self to the exact Order of Time in which the Articles were debated.

Summary  
of the  
Charge.

All the Articles may be reduced to these Three general Heads or Charges, according to which Method we shall go through them.

*First*, " That the Archbishop had traiterously attempted, and endeavoured to *subvert the Rights of Parliament, and to exalt the King's Power above Law.*

*Secondly*, " That he had traiterously endeavoured to subvert the Fundamental temporal Laws and Government of the Realm of *England*, and to introduce an arbitrary Government against Law, and the Liberties of the Subject.

*Thirdly*,



Thirdly, " That he had traiterously endeavoured, and practised, to alter and subvert God's true Religion by Law established in this Realm, and instead thereof to set up Popish Superstition and Idolatry, and to reconcile us to the Church of Rome."

King Charles I.  
1644.

The Trial began March 12. 1644. when Mr. Serjeant Wild, one of the Managers for the House of Commons, opened the Impeachment with a smart Speech, in which he aggravated the several Crimes charged upon the Archbishop, and concluded, with comparing him to *Naaman the Syrian*, who was a great Man, but a Leper.

The Archbishop having obtained leave to reply, endeavoured to wipe off the Aspersions that were cast upon him, in a laboured Speech, which he held in his Hand. He said, " It was no less than a Torment to him to appear in that Place, and plead for himself on that Occasion, because he was not only a Christian but a Clergyman, and by God's Grace advanced to the greatest Place this Church affords. He blessed God, that he was neither ashamed to live, nor afraid to die; that he had been as strict an Observer of the Laws of his Country, both in publick and private, as any Man whatsoever; and as for Religion, that he had been a steady Member of the Church of *England*, as establish'd by Law, which he had endeavoured to reduce to Decency, Uniformity, and Beauty, in the outward Face of it; but he had been as far from attempting any Alterations in favour of Popery, as when his Mother first bore him into the World; and let nothing be spoken but Truth (says he) and I do here challenge whatsoever is between Heaven and Hell, that can be said against me in point of my Religion, in which I have ever hated Dissimulation;" He then concludes with a List of Twenty

The Archbishop's Speech.  
Wharton's Hist. of Laud's Troubles, P. 223.

King Charles I. one Persons whom he had converted from Popery to the Protestant Religion.

1644.

It was observed by some, that if the passionate Expressions in this Speech had been a little qualified, they would have obtained more Credit with his Grace's Judges; but as they were pronounced, were thought hardly fit for the Mouth of one who lay under the Weight of so many Accusations from the whole Representative Body of the Nation.

March 13. 1644. The next Day the Managers for the Commons enter'd on their first Charge, to the following Purpose.

First  
Branch of  
the Charge  
for subvert-  
ing the  
Rights of  
Parlia-  
ment.

Laud's  
Hist.

p. 229,  
230,  
231.

" That the Archbishop had traiterously attempt-  
ed to subvert the Rights of Parliament, and to  
exalt the King's Power above the Laws."

1. To support which they produced a Passage out of his own Diary, Dec. 5. 1639. "*A Resolution was voted at the Board to assist the King in extraordinary Ways, if (says he) the Parliament should prove Peevish and refuse.*"

The Archbishop replied, That this was the Vote of the whole Council Table, of which he was but a single Member, and therefore could not be called his Counsel. Besides, the Words had relation to the Troubles of Scotland, and are therefore within the Act of Oblivion.

2. " They produced another Expression in one of the Archbishop's Papers under his own Hand, in the beginning of which he says, that *Magna Charta had an obscure Birth, and was foster'd by an ill Nurse.*"

Laud's  
Hist.

p. 409.

The Archbishop replied, That it was no disgrace to *Magna Charta* to say, it had an *obscure Birth*; our Histories confirm the Truth of it, and some of our Law-Books of good Account use almost the same Expressions; and shall the same Words be History and Law in them and Treason in me?

3. They

3. They averr'd, "That he had said in Council, <sup>King</sup> "that the *King's Proclamation* was of as great Force as <sup>Charles I.</sup> "an *Act of Parliament*; and that he had compar'd <sup>1644.</sup> "the King to the Stone spoken of in the Gospel, <sup>Managers</sup> "That *whosoever falls upon it shall be broken, but upon* <sup>Charge.</sup> "whomsoever it falls it will grind him to Powder."

The Archbishop replied, That this was in the <sup>Abp's Re-</sup> Case of the *Soap Business*, twelve Years ago; and he <sup>ply,</sup> thinks it impossible those Words should be spoken by <sup>Land's</sup> him; nor does he apprehend the Gentlemen who <sup>Hitt.</sup> press this Evidence can believe it themselves, con- <sup>p. 234.</sup> sidering they are accusing him for a *cunning Delinquent*. So God forgive these Men the Falshood and Malice of their Oaths (says he)! but as to the Allusion to the *Stone* in the Scripture, if I did apply it to the *King* it was far enough from Treason, and let them and their like take care, lest it prove true upon themselves, for *Solomon* says, *The Anger of a King is Death*.

4. In further Maintenance of this Part of their <sup>Arbitrary</sup> Charge the Managers produced "two Speeches which <sup>Speeches</sup> "his *Grace* framed for the King to be spoken to the <sup>made for</sup> "Parliament; and his Majesty's Answer to the Re- <sup>the K. by</sup> "monstrance of the House of Commons in the Year <sup>the Abp.</sup> "1628. which was all written with the Archbishop's <sup>M. Charge.</sup> "own Hand, and these Words endors'd by himself, "My Answer to the Parliament's Remonstrance. In "which Papers were sundry Passages tending to set "up an absolute Power in the King, and to make "the Calling of Parliaments in a manner useles. "The King is made to say, that *his Power is only* <sup>King's</sup> "from God, and to him only he is accountable for <sup>Speech,</sup> "his *Actions*. That never King was more jealous of <sup>March 29,</sup> "his Honour, nor more sensible of the Neglect and <sup>1626.</sup> "Contempt of his Royal Rights. His Majesty bids "the Commons remember, that Parliaments are "altogether in his Power, for their Calling, Sitting, "and Dissolution; and that according as they be- "haved themselves they should continue, or not be. "When some of the Members of Parliament had

N 2

" spoken



King Charles I. 1644. *King's Speech,* May 11. 1626. March 27. 1629.

" spoken freely against the Duke of *Buckingham*, they were, by the King's Command, sent to the *Tower*; and his Majesty coming to the House of Peers, tells them, That he had thought fit to punish some insolent Speeches lately spoken against the Duke, for I am so sensible of all your Honours (says he) that he that touches any of you touches me in a very great Measure. Further, when the Parliament was dissolved in the Year 1628. a Proclamation was published together with the above-mentioned Remonstrance, in which his Majesty declares, That since his Parliament was not so dutiful as they ought to be, he was resolved to live without them, till those who had interrupted his Proceedings should receive condign Punishment, and his People come to a better Temper; and that, in the mean Time, he would exact the Duties that were received by his Father, which his now Majesty neither could nor would dispense with."

*Abp's Reply,* Laud's *Hist.* p. 230, 403, 404, 406.

The Archbishop replied, That he did indeed make the abovementioned Speeches, but was commanded to the Service, and followed his Instructions as close as he could. As for the smart Passages complained of, he hopes they will not be thought such, when 'tis considered whose Mouth was to utter them, and upon what Occasion. However, if they be, he is heartily sorry for them, and humbly desires they may be pass'd by. The Answer to the Remonstrance was drawn by his Majesty's Command, as appears by the Endorsement; and the severe Passages objected to, were in his Instructions. When a Parliament errs may not their King tell them of it? Or, must every Passage in his Answer be such that pleases not?

The Managers went on to produce some other Passages tending more immediately to subvert the Rights of Parliament, and among others, they insisted on these Three,

1. " That

1. " That the Archbishop had said at the Council <sup>King</sup> *Table*, after the ending of the late Parliament, <sup>Charles I.</sup> " that *now the King might make use of his own Power.* <sup>1644.</sup> " This was attested by Sir Harry Vane the Elder, <sup>Arbitrary</sup> " who was a Privy Counsellor, and then present." <sup>Speeches of</sup> The Archbishop replied, That he did not remem- <sup>the Abp.</sup> ber the Words; that if he did speak them they were <sup>himself.</sup> not treasonable; or if they were, he ought to have <sup>M. Charge.</sup> been tried within six Months, according to the Sta- <sup>Abp's Re-</sup> tute. <sup>ply,</sup> 1 *Eliz. cap. 6.* That Sir Henry Vane was but a <sup>Laud's</sup> single Witness, whereas the Law requires two Wit- <sup>Hist.</sup> nesses for Treason; besides, he conceived that this <sup>P. 231.</sup> Advice relating to the *Scottish* Troubles was within the Act of Oblivion, which he had pleaded. But *last of all*, let it be remember'd, says the Archbishop, for Sir Harry's Honour, that he being a Man in Years, has so good a Memory, that he alone can remember Words spoken at a full Council Table, which no Person of Honour remembers but himself; but I would not have him brag of it, for I have read in St. Austin, that *some, even the worst of Men, have great Memories, and so much the worse for having them.* God bless Sir Henry!

2. The Archbishop had affirmed, " That the <sup>Parlia-</sup> Parliament might not <sup>ments</sup> meddle with Religion, with- <sup>Power in</sup> out the Assent of the Clergy in Convocation. <sup>Matters of</sup> " Now, if this were so (say the Managers) we <sup>Religion.</sup> should have had no Reformation, for the Bishops <sup>M. Charge.</sup> " and Clergy dissented."

The Archbishop in his Reply cited the Statute <sup>Abp's Re-</sup> 1 *Eliz. cap. 1.* which says, that *what is Heresy shall be* <sup>ply.</sup> *determined by the Parliament, with the Assent of the* <sup>Laud's</sup> *Clergy in Convocation,* from whence he concluded, the <sup>Hist.</sup> Parliament could not by Law determine the Truth <sup>p. 401.</sup> of Doctrine without the Assent of the Clergy; and to this the Managers agreed, as to the Point of *Heresy*, but no further. The Archbishop added, that in his Opinion, It was the Prerogative of the Church alone to determine *Truth and Falshood*, but that the Power

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

of making Laws for the Punishment of erroneous Persons, was in the Parliament, with the Assent of the Clergy. Indeed the King and Parliament may, by their absolute Power, change *Christianity* into *Turcism*, if they please, and the Subjects that can't obey must fly, or endure the Penalty of the Law; but of *Right* they can't do this without the *Church*. Thus the Parliament in the beginning of Queen *Elizabeth's* Reign, by absolute Power, abolish'd Popish Superstition; but when the Clergy were settled, and a Form of Doctrine was to be agreed on, a Synod was called 1562. and the Articles of Religion were confirmed by Parliament, with the Assent of the Clergy, which gave all Parties their just Right, and is so evident, that the Heathens could see the Justice of it, for *Lucullus* says in *Tully*, that *the Priests were Judges of Religion, and the Senate of the Law*.

Of the K  
Prev. ga  
tive and  
the Canons  
of the  
Church.  
M. Charge.

3. " At a Reference between Dr. Gill, School-Master of *St. Paul's*, and the *Mercers Company*, the Archbishop had said, that the Company could not turn him out of the School, without Consent of his Ordinary; and that upon mention of an Act of Parliament he replied, I see nothing will down with you but Acts of Parliament, no regard at all to the Canons of the Church; but I will rescind all Acts that are against the Canons, and I hope shortly to see the Canons and the King's Prerogative of equal Force with an Act of Parliament."

Abp's Re-  
ply,  
Laud's  
Hist. p.  
236, 237.

The Archbishop was so provok'd with the Oath of this Witness [*Mr. Samuel Blood*] that he was going to bind his Sin on his Soul, not to be forgiven him, till he should ask him Forgiveness; but he conquered his Passion, and replied, That since by a Canon no Person is allowed to teach School without the Bishop's Licence, and that in case of Offence, he is liable to Admonition and Suspension, it stands good, that he may not be turned out without the said Bishop's Knowledge and Approbation. As for the Words, that he saw nothing would down with them but an Act of Par-



Parliament, and that no Regard was had to the Canons, King Charles I. 1644. he conceived them to be no Offence; for though the Superiority belongs to Acts of Parliament in this Kingdom, yet certainly some Regard is due to the Canons; and therefore he says again, that if nothing will down with Men but Acts of Parliament, the Government in many Particulars can't subsist. But as to the last Words, of his rescinding those Acts that were against the Canons, he is morally certain he could not say them; nor does he believe any Man that knows him will believe him such a Fool, as to say, He hoped to see the Canons and the King's Prerogative of equal Force with an Act of Parliament, since he has lived to see sundry Canons rejected, and the King's Prerogative discuss'd by Law, neither of which can be done by any Judges to an Act of Parliament. But however, if such Words should have escaped him, he observes, there is but one Witness to the Charge; and if they be within the Danger of the Statute, then to that Statute which requires his Trial within six Months he refers himself.

The Managers went on to the *second Charge* against the Archbishop, which was his Design to SUBVERT 2d Charge, Attempts to set aside the Laws. THE FUNDAMENTAL TEMPORAL LAWS OF THE KINGDOM, AND TO INTRODUCE AN ARBITRARY Of Ship-Money, Tonnage and Poundage. GOVERNMENT AGAINST LAW AND THE LIBERTY OF THE SUBJECT. In Maintenance whereof they acknowledged, "His illegal Pressures of *Tonnage and Poundage* without Act of Parliament, *Ship-Money*, Coat M. Charge. " and *Conduct Money*, *Soap-Money*, &c. and his Commitment of divers Persons to Prison for Non-Payment; for Proof of which there appeared, among others, three Aldermen (*viz.*) Aldermen *Atkins*, *Chambers*, and *Adams*."

The Archbishop confessed, that as to the Business Atk's Reply. of *Ship-Money*, he was zealous in that Affair, but not with an intent to violate the Law, for though this was Laud's Hist. p. 232, 233. before Judgment given for the King, yet it was after the 234.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

the Judges had declared the Legality of it under their Hands, and he thought he might safely follow such Guides. He was likewise of Opinion, that *Tonnage* and *Poundage*, *Coat* and *Conduet Money*, were lawful on the King's Part; that he was led into this Opinion by the exprefs Judgment of some Lords present, and by the Silence of others; none of the great Lawyers at the Table contradicting it; however, that it was the common Act of the *Council Table*, and therefore All were as culpable as himself; but he was sure this could not amount to Treason, except it were against the three Aldermen, *Atkins*, *Chambers*, and *Adams*.

Depopulations and pulling down Houses.  
M. Charge.

They objected further, " sundry Depopulations, " and pulling down Houses; that for the Repair of St. " *Paul's* above sixty Dwelling Houses had been pulled " down, by *Order of Council*, without any Satisfaction to the Tenants, because they did not accept " of the Committee's Composition. — That he " had obliged a Brewer near the Court not to burn " Sea-Coal, under Penalty of having his Brewhouse " pulled down; and that by a like Order of Council " many Shop-keepers were forcibly turn'd out of their " Houses in *Cheapside*, to make way for *Goldsmiths*, " who were forbid to open Shop in any other Places of " the City. When a Commission was issued under the " Broad Seal to himself to compound with Delinquents " of this kind, Mr. *Talboys* was fined fifty Pounds " for Non-compliance; and when he pleaded the " Statute of the 39th of *Eliz.* the Archbishop replied, *Do you plead Law here? Either abide the Order, " or take your Trial at the Star Chamber.* When Mr. " *Wakern* had one Hundred Pounds allowed him for " the pulling down his House, he was soon after fined " one Hundred Pounds in the *High Commission Court*, " for *Profanation*; of which he paid Thirty."

Abp's Reply.  
Land's Hist. p.  
235, 244,  
246, 256.

This the Archbishop admitted, and replied to the rest, that he humbly and heartily thank'd God, that he was counted worthy to suffer for the Repair of

St.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

St. Paul's, which had cost him, out of his own Purse, above twelve Hundred Pounds. As to the Grievances complain'd of, there was a *Composition* allotted for the *Sufferers*, by a Committee named by the Lords, not by him, which amounted to eight or nine Thousand Pounds, before they could come at the Church to repair it; so that if any Thing was amiss it must be imputed to the Lords of the Council, who are one Body, and whatsoever is done by the major Part is the Act of the Whole; that however, here was some Recompence made them, whereas in King James's Time, when a Commission was issued for demolishing these very Houses, no Care was taken for Satisfaction of any private Man's Interest; and I can't forbear to add (says the Archbishop) that the Bishop and Dean, and Chapter, did ill in giving way to these Buildings, to encrease their Rents by a sacrilegious Revenue; there being no Law to build on consecrated Ground. When it was replied to this, "That the King's Commission was no legal War-rant for pulling down Houses, without Authority of Parliament," he answered, That Houses more remote from the Church of St. Paul's had been pulled down by the King's Commission only in King Edward the Third's Time. As to the *Brew-House*, the Archbishop own'd that he had said to the Proprietor, that he must seal a Bond of two Thousand Pounds to brew no more with Sea-Coal; but it was at the Council Table when he was delivering the Sense of the Board, which Office was usually put upon him if present; so that this or any other Hardship he might suffer ought not to be imputed to him, but to the whole Council; and he was very sure it could not amount to Treason, except it were Treason against a *Brew-House*. The like Answer he made to the Charge about the *Goldsmiths Shops*, namely, That it was the Order of Council, and was thought to be for the Beauty and Grandeur of the City, and he did apprehend the Council had a Right to command



King Charles I. 1644. in Things of Decency, and for the Safety of the Subject, and where there was no Law to the contrary. As to the Words which he spoke to Mr. Talboys, they were not designed to derogate from the Law, but to shew, that we sat not there as Judges of the Law, but to offer his Majesty's Grace, by way of Composition to them that would accept it, and therefore he had his Option, whether he would agree to the Fine we imposed upon him, or take his Trial elsewhere. But the Commons replied with great Reason, That no Commission from the King could justify the pulling down Mens Houses, or oblige them to part with their Estates without Act of Parliament.

Illegal Commitments and Prohibitions in the Spiritual Courts. M. Charge. The Managers objected further to the Archbishop, "several illegal Commitments, and exorbitant Fines and Censures in the Star Chamber, and High Commission Court, as in the Cases of *Prynne, Burton, Bastwick, Huntley*, and others; and that when the Persons aggrieved brought *Prohibitions* he threaten'd to lay them by the Heels, saying, *Does the King grant us Power, and are we then prohibited? Let us go and complain, I will break the Back of Prohibitions, or they shall break mine.* Accordingly several Persons were actually imprison'd for delivering *Prohibitions*, as was testified by many Witnesses; nay, Mr. *Wheeler* swore, that he heard the Archbishop in a Sermon say, *That they which granted Prohibitions to the Disturbance of the Church's Right, God will prohibit their Entrance into the Kingdom of Heaven.*"

Abp's Reply. Laud's Hist. p. 270, 271, 273, 274. The Archbishop replied, That the Fines, Imprisonments, and other Censures complain'd of, were the Acts of the several Courts that directed them, and not his. That the Reason why several Persons were imprisoned for *Prohibitions*, was, because they delivered them into Court in an unmannerly way, throwing them on the Table, or handing them over the Heads of others on a Stick, to the Affront of the Court; notwithstanding which, as many

many *Prohibitions* had been admitted in his Time as in his Predecessors; but after all, he apprehended these *Prohibitions* were a very great Grievance to the Church; nor was there the same Reason for them now, as before the Reformation, for then the Bishops Courts were kept under a foreign Power, whereas now all Power exercised in *Spiritual Courts*, is from the King, as well as in *Temporal*. As to the Words of his Sermon, though he did not remember them, yet he saw no great harm in them. And here the Archbishop put the Lords in mind, that nothing had been done of late in the Star Chamber, or Council Table, but what had been done in King *James* and Queen *Elizabeth's* Times. Nor is there any one Witness that says, what he did was with a Design to overthrow the Laws, or introduce Arbitrary Government; no, that is only the Construction of the Managers, for which, and something else in their Proceedings, I am confident, says he, they shall answer at another Bar.

King  
Charles I.  
1644

The Managers objected further, " The Archbi-  
shop's taking undue Gifts, and among others, his  
receiving two *Buts of Sack*, in a Cause of some Che-  
ster Men, whom it was in his Power to relieve, by  
mitigating the Fine set on them in the High Com-  
mission, and taking several large Sums of Money  
by way of Composition for Fines in the High  
Commission Court, making use of the Method of  
*Commutation*, by virtue of a Patent obtain'd from  
the King, which took away all Opportunity from  
his Majesty of doing Justice, and shewing Mercy  
to his poor Subjects, and invested the Archbishop  
with the final Determination."

Bribery ob-  
jected to  
the Abp.  
M. Charge.

His Grace heard this Part of his Charge with great  
Resentment and Impatience. If I would have had  
any Thing to do in the base, dirty Business of Bribe-  
ry (says he) I needed not be in such Want as I now  
am. As to the *Sack*, he protested, as he should an-  
swer it to God, that he knew nothing of it, and offer-  
ed

Abp's Re-  
ply,  
Laud's  
Hist.  
p. 274,  
276, 300.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

ed to give his Oath, if it might be admitted. He declared, that when his Steward told him of Mr. *Stone's* Design, he absolutely forbid his receiving it, or any Thing from any Man that had Business before him; but Mr. *Stone* watching a Time when his Steward was out of Town, and the Archbishop at Court, brought the *Sack*, telling the Yeoman of the Wine-Cellar, that he had leave to lay it in. Afterwards, when his Steward acquainted him, that the *Sack* was brought in, he commanded it should be carried back, but Mr. *Stone* entreated he might not be so disgrac'd, and protested he did not do it on the Account of the *Chester Business*, though after this he went home and put it on their Account; for which they complain'd to the House of Commons, and produced Mr. *Stone* for their Witness. The Archbishop observes, that Mr. *Browne* in summing up his Charge did him Justice in this Particular, for neither to the Lords nor Commons did he so much as mention it.

Commuta-  
tion of  
Penance.

As to the other Sums of Money which he took by way of *Composition*, or otherwise, for Fines in the High Commission, he said, that he had the *Broad Seal* from the King, for applying them to Repairing the West End of St. *Paul's*, for the Space of ten Years, which *Broad Seal* is now in the Hands of Mr. *Holford*, and is on Record to be seen. Now all Fines in the High Commission belonging to the Crown, his Majesty had a Right to give them to what Use he pleas'd; that as for himself, he thought it his Duty to get as much Money for so good a Work as he could, even by way of *Commutation* for certain Crimes; which Method of pecuniary Commutations is according to Law, and the ancient Custom and Practice of this Kingdom, especially where Men of Quality are Offenders, and is as legal in that Court as any other; but he had applied no Part of it to his own Benefit or Advantage.



It was next objected, " That he had made divers  
 " Alterations in the *King's* Coronation Oath, and *King Charles I.*  
 " introduced several unwarrantable Innovations with *1644.*  
 " relation to that august Ceremony ; as particularly, *Alterations*  
 " that he had inserted those Words into the Oath, *in the Coro-*  
 " agreeable to the *King's* Prerogative, with about *nation*  
 " Twenty other Alterations of less Moment, which *Oath.*  
 " they apprehended to be a Matter of most dange- *M. Charge.*  
 " rous Consequence. That he had revived certain  
 " old Popish Ceremonies, disused since the Reforma-  
 " tion, as the placing a Crucifix on the Altar, the  
 " consecrating the holy Oil, the anointing the King  
 " in form of a Cross, the offering up the *Regalia* on  
 " the Altar, without any Rubrick or Direction for  
 " these Things, and inserting the following Charge,  
 " taken *verbatim* out of the *Roman Pontifical*, " Stand  
 " and hold fast, from henceforth, the Place to which you  
 " have been Heir by the Succession of your Forefathers,  
 " being now delivered to you by the Authority of Almighty  
 " God, and by the Hands of us, and all the Bishops  
 " and Servants of God ; and as you see the Clergy come  
 " nearer the Altar than others, so remember, that in  
 " Place convenient you give them greater Honour, that  
 " the Mediator of God and Man may establish you in the  
 " Kingly Throne, to be the Mediator between the Clergy  
 " and the Laity, and that you may reign for ever with  
 " Jesus Christ, the King of Kings, and Lord of Lords,  
 " who with the Father, and the Holy Ghost, liveth and  
 " reigneth for ever. Amen."

The Archbishop replied, That he did not insert *Abp. Reply,*  
 the Words above-mentioned into the *Coronation Oath*, *Laud's*  
 but that they were first added in *King Edward VI.* or *Hist..*  
 Queen *Elizabeth's* Time, and had no relation to the *p. 318.*  
 Laws of the Kingdom, mentioned before in the be- *Prynne,*  
 ginning of the Oath, but to the Profession of the *p. 475.*  
 Gospel, whereby the King swears to maintain his  
 Prerogative against all foreign Jurisdictions ; but if  
 this be not the Meaning, he avers, that the Clause  
 was in the *Coronation Oath* of *King James.* As to  
 the

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

the other Alterations they are admitted not to be material; but his *Grace* confesses, that when they met in the Committee they were forced to mend many slips of the Pen in some Places, and to make Sense and good *English* in others, and the Book being intrusted with him he did it with his own Hand, openly in the Committee, and with their Approbation. As to the Ceremonies of the Coronation, they are nothing to him, since he did not crown the King, but his Predecessor, therefore he did not anoint him in form of a *Cross*; indeed he supplied the Place of the Dean of *Westminster*, and was therefore obliged to look after the *Regalia*, and he conceives the Offering them at the Altar could be no Offence. He does not remember the Crucifix was brought out [though *Heylin* says it was] and as to the Prayer, it was not taken out of the *Pontifical* by him, for it was used at King *James's* Coronation, and being a good one 'tis no matter whence it was taken. To all which the Managers replied, that it appeared by his own Diary, that he had the chief Direction of all these Innovations.

Attempt to  
set up an  
Independent  
Power  
in the  
Clergy.  
Managers  
Charge.

The Managers went on, and charged the Archbishop, " with endeavouring to set up an Independent Power in the Church, by attempting to exempt the Clergy from the Jurisdiction of the Civil Magistrate; of which they produced several Examples; one was, the Archbishop's forbidding the Lord Mayor of the City of *London* to carry the Sword upright in the Church, and then obtaining an Order of Council for submitting it in Time and Place of Divine Service. Another was taken out of the Archbishop's Diary; Upon making the Bishop of *London* Lord Treasurer, he says, No Churchman had it since Henry VII. and now, if the Church will not hold up themselves, under God, I can do no more. A third was, his saying in the High Commission, that no Constable should meddle with Men in holy Orders. A fourth was, his calling

Laud's  
Hist.  
p. 293.

" some

“ some Justices of Peace into the High Commission,  
 “ for holding the Sessions at *Tewksbury* in the Church-  
 “ Yard, being *consecrated Ground*, though they had  
 “ Licence from the Bishop, and though the Eighty  
 “ eighth *Canon* of the Church of *England* gives  
 “ leave, that temporal Courts or Leets may be kept  
 “ in the Church or Church-Yard. And a fifth was,  
 “ that he had caus’d certain Church-Wardens to be  
 “ prosecuted, for executing the Warrant of a Justice  
 “ of Peace upon an Ale-House-Keeper, contrary to  
 “ the Statutes of *Jacob. 7.* and *Carol. 3.*”

King  
 Charles I.  
 1644.

The Archbishop replied in general, that he never at-  
 tempted to bring the temporal Power under the Clergy,  
 nor to free the Clergy from being under it; but this  
 he confess’d, that he had labour’d to preserve the  
 Clergy from some Lay - Men’s Oppressions, for  
*Vis Laica* has been an old, and a just Complaint;  
 and this I took to be my Duty (says he) assuring my  
 self that God did not raise me to that Place of Emi-  
 nency to sit still, and see his Ministers discountenan-  
 ced and trampled upon. To the first Particular he  
 replied, that it was an Order of Council, and there-  
 fore not his; but it was a reasonable one, for the  
*Sword* was not submitted to any foreign, or home  
 Power, but to God only, and that in the Place, and  
 at the Performance of his holy Worship, at which  
 Time and Place Kings submit themselves, and there-  
 fore can’t insist upon the Emblems of their Power.  
 To the second and third Examples he replied, that  
 he saw no Treason nor Crime in them. To the  
 fourth he replied, that no temporal Courts ought to  
 be kept upon *consecrated Ground*; and that, though  
 some such might upon urgent Occasions be kept in  
 the Church with leave, yet that is no Warrant for a  
 Sessions, where there might be a Trial for Blood;  
 and certainly it can be no Crime to keep off Profana-  
 tion from Churches; but be it never so criminal it  
 was the Act of the High Commission, and not his;  
 nor is there any Thing in it that looks towards Treason.

Abp’s Re-  
 ply.  
 Laud’s  
 Hist. p.  
 287, 292.



*King* son. To the Prosecuting the Church-Wardens he  
*Charles I.* answer'd, that those Statutes concern'd *Ale-House-*  
*1644.* *Keepers* only, and the Reason why they were prosecuted was, because being Church-Officers they did not complain of it to the Chancellor of the Diocese, for certainly standing in such a Relation to the Church they ought to have been as ready to inform the Bishop as to obey the Justice of the Peace.

*Sitting of* *the Convocation after the Parliament M. Charge.* *Article 5.* *Lastly,* The Managers objected to the Archbishop, The Convocation's sitting after the Parliament was dissolved, contrary to Law; their imposing an Oath on the Subject, and their making fundry Canons, which had since been voted by both Houses of Parliament contrary to the King's Prerogative, to the fundamental Laws of the Realm, to the Rights of Parliament, to the Property and Liberty of the Subject, and containing Matters tending to Sedition, and of dangerous Consequence."

*'Abp's Reply,* *Laud's Hist.* *p. 282.* The Archbishop replied; that the Sitting of the Convocation after the Dissolution of the Parliament was, in the Opinion both of Judges and other Lawyers, according to Law; that as they were called to sit in Convocation by a different Writ from that which called them, as Bishops to sit in Parliament, so they could not rise till they had a Writ to discharge them. As for the *Oath* so much complain'd of, it was according to Law, or else they were misled by such Precedents as were never excepted against, for in the Canons made in King *James's* Time, there was an Oath against *Simony*, and an Oath for Licences for Marriages, and an Oath for Judges in Ecclesiastical Courts, and all these established by no other Authority than the late one. As to the Vote of both Houses, which condemn'd the *Canons*, since their Lordships would not suffer him to debate the Justice and Equity of it, he could only reply, that all these Canons were made in open and full Convocations, and are Acts of that Body, and cannot be ascribed to him, though

though President of that Synod, so by me (says the Archbishop) they were not made.

King  
Charles I.  
1644

These were the principal Evidences produced by the Commons in Maintenance of the first Branch of their Charge (*viz.*) his Grace's Endeavours to subvert the Rights of Parliament, and the FUNDAMENTAL TEMPORAL LAWS of the Kingdom. From whence it is easy to observe, that besides the Sharpness of the Archbishop's Temper, there are three capital Mistakes which run through this Part of *his* Defence.

1. A groundless Supposition, that *where the Law is* *Remarks*  
*silent the Prerogative takes place*; and that in all such Cases, a Proclamation, an Order of Council, or a Decree of the Star-Chamber, &c. is binding upon the Subject; and that Disobedience to such Proclamations or Orders might be punished at Discretion. This gave Rise to most of the unwarrantable Orders by which the Subject was insufferably oppress'd in the former Part of this Reign, and to the exorbitant Fines that were levied for Disobedience, in which the Archbishop himself was notoriously active.

2. *The false Conclusions drawn from his being but a single Member of the Council or High Commission (viz.)* that therefore he was not answerable for their Votes or Orders, even though he had set his Hand to them; because *what is carried by a Majority* *Laud's Hist.*  
*is supposed to be the Act of the whole Body, and not of any particular Member.* According to which way of Reasoning the Constitution might be destroy'd, without a Possibility of punishing the Authors. *P. 437.*

3. *His wilful Misconstruction of the Managers Reasonings*; as when he replies with an Air of Satisfaction and Triumph, he hopes this or the other Particular will not be construed Treason, unless it be against a *Brew-House* or an *Alderman*, or the like; though he was told over and over, by the Managers for the Commons, that they did not object these Things to him as so many treasonable Acts, but as

*King Charles I.* Proofs and Evidences of one general Charge, which was, a *traiterous Attempt and Endeavour to subvert the Fundamental Temporal Laws, Government, and Liberties of the Realm*; and how far they have made good this Part of their Charge must be left with the Reader.

*3d general Charge. Subverting Religion.* The Commons proceeded next to the third general Charge, relating to RELIGION, in which our History requires us to be more particular; and here they aver, "That the Archbishop had traiterously endeavoured and practised TO ALTER AND SUBVERT GOD'S TRUE RELIGION BY LAW ESTABLISH'D IN THIS REALM, AND INSTEAD THEREOF TO SET UP POPISH SUPERSTITION AND IDOLATRY, AND TO RECONCILE US TO THE CHURCH OF ROME.

This was divided into two Branches,

*First*, "His introducing and practising certain Popish Innovations, and superstitious Ceremonies, not warranted by Law, nor agreeable to the Practice of the Church of *England* since the Reformation.

*Secondly*, "His countenancing and encouraging sundry doctrinal Errors in favour of *Arminianism* and *Popery*."

The Managers began with POPISH INNOVATIONS and CEREMONIES, in Maintenance of which they insisted on the following Proofs.

*Paintings, and Images, and Crucifixes. M. Charge. Prynn's Cant. Doom, p. 60, &c. 462.* (1.) "His countenancing the Setting up of Images in Churches, Church Windows, and other Places of Religious Worship. That in his own Chapel at *Lambeth* he had repaired the Popish Paintings on the Windows that had been 'destroy'd at the Reformation, and made up the History of Christ crucified between two Thieves; of his rising out of the Grave; of his Ascension into Heaven; of the Holy Ghost descending in form of a Dove; of Christ



“ Christ raising *Lazarus* out of the Grave ; and of  
 “ God himself raining down Manna from Heaven ;  
 “ of God’s giving the Law to *Moses* on Mount *Sinai* ;  
 “ of Fire descending from Heaven at the Prayer of  
 “ *Elisba*, of the Holy Ghost over-shadowing the  
 “ Virgin, &c. all taken from the *Roman Missal*, with  
 “ several superstitious Motto’s and Inscriptions. That  
 “ he had caused divers Crucifixes to be set up in  
 “ Churches over the Communion Table, in his Cha-  
 “ pel at *Lambeth*, at *Whitehall*, and at the Univer-  
 “ sity of *Oxford*, of which he was Chancellor. That  
 “ in the Parish of *St. Mary’s* there was since his Time  
 “ erected a Statue of the *Virgin Mary* cut in Stone,  
 “ with a Child in her Arms, to which divers People  
 “ bow’d and did Reverence as they went along the  
 “ Streets, which could not be done without his Al-  
 “ lowance ; nay, so zealous was this Prelate (say  
 “ the Managers) in defence of Images, that he pro-  
 “ cured Mr. *Sherfield* to be sentenced in the Star  
 “ Chamber, for defacing a Church Window in or  
 “ near *Salisbury*, because there was an Image in it of  
 “ God the Father ; all which is contrary to the Sta-  
 “ tute of the 3d and 4th of *Edward VI.* and the In-  
 “ junctions of Queen *Elizabeth*, which enjoin, *All Pi-  
 “ etures, Paintings, Images, and other Monuments of  
 “ Idolatry and Superstition to be destroy’d, so as that  
 “ there remain no Memory of them in Walls, Glass Win-  
 “ dows, or elsewhere, within any Church or House.*”

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

The Archbishop answer’d in general, that Cruci-  
 fixes and Images in Churches were not simply un-  
 lawful ; that they were in Use in *Constantine’s* Time  
 and long before, and therefore there could be no  
 Popery in them. *Tertullian* says they had the Pi-  
 cture of Christ engraven on their Chalice in form of a  
 Shepherd carrying home a lost Sheep ; and even Mr.  
*Calvin* allows an historical Use of Images, *Instit.* l. i.  
 cap. 11. Sect. 12. *Neque tamen ea Superstitione teneor ut  
 nullas prorsus Imagines ferendas censeam, sed quia sculptu-  
 ra & pictura, Dei dona sunt, purum & legitimum utrius-*

Abp’s An-  
swer.  
Laud’s  
Hist.  
p. 311.  
Prynne,  
p. 462,  
463, 479.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

*que usum requiro.* The Archbishop appeal'd likewise to the Homilies, p. 64, 65. for an historical Use of Images; but if it should be granted (says he) that they are condemn'd by the Homilies, yet certainly one may subscribe to the Homilies as containing a godly and wholesome Doctrine, necessary for those Times, without approving every Passage or Sentence, or supposing it necessary for all Times. I do not approve of Images of God the Father, though some will justify them from *Dan. vii. 22.* but as for the Images of Things visible, they are of use, not only for the beautifying and adorning the Places of divine Worship, but for Admonition and Instruction; and can be an Offence to none but such as would have God served slovenly and meanly, under a Pretence of avoiding Superstition.

Prynne,  
p. 462.

As to the Particulars, the Archbishop allowed his Repairing the Windows of his Chapel at *Lambeth*, and making out the History as well as he could, but not from the *Roman Missal*, since he did not know the Particulars were in it, but from the Fragments of what remained in the Windows since the Reformation; but if they had been originally painted by his Order, as in the Case of the new Chapel at *Westminster*, he knows no Crime in it. The Image of the Virgin *Mary* in *Oxford* was set up by Bishop *Owen*, and there is no Evidence that I countenanced the setting it up, nor that any Complaint was made to me of any Abuse of it.

Laud's  
Hist.  
p. 329.

Ib. p. 434.

As to Mr. *Sherfield's* Case, one of the Witnesses says, it was the Picture of an old Man with a Budget by his Side, pulling out *Adam* and *Eve*, 'tis not therefore certain that it was the Image of God the Father; but if it was, yet Mr. *Sherfield* ought not to have defaced it but by Command of Authority, though it had been an Idol of *Jupiter*; the Orders of the Vestry which Mr. *Sherfield* pleads, being nothing at all without the Bishop of the Diocese. The Statute of *Edward VI.* has nothing to do with Images in Glass Windows, the Words of the Statute are, *Any Images of Stone, Timber,*

*Ala-*

*Alabaster, or Earth, graven, carved, or painted, taken out of any Church, &c. shall be destroyed.* So here is not a Word of Glafs Windows, nor Images in them. King Charles I. 1644.

The Managers for the Commons replied, that it was notoriously false, that the primitive Christians approved of Images, for *Justin Martyr, Clemens Alexandrinus, Irenæus*, and all the ancient Fathers agree, that they had none in their Churches. *La-tantius* says, There can be no Religion in a Place where any Image is. *Epiphanius* rent in Pieces an Image painted on Cloth, which he found in a Church, out of holy Indignation. All the ancient Councils are against Images in Churches; and many godly Emperors cast them out, after they began to be in Use in later Times, as our own Homilies expressly declare, *Peril of Idolatry, Part II. p. 38.* As for *Tertullian*, all that can be proved from him is, that those Hereticks against whom he writ had such a *Chalice*, not that the Orthodox Christians allowed of it. *Calvin* only says, That he is not so superstitious as to think it altogether unlawful to make Images of Men or Beasts for a civil Use, because Painting is the Gift of God. But he affirms in the very next Section, that there were no Images in Churches for five Hundred Years after Christ; and says expressly, that they were not in use till the Christian Religion was corrupted and depraved. He then adds, that he accounts it unlawful and wicked to paint the Image of God, because he has forbid it. But the Homilies are so express, that they wonder the Archbishop can mention them without blushing; as well as his not knowing that the Paintings were according to the Mass-Book, when his own Mass-Book is marked in those Places with his own Hand. The Images in those Windows were broken and demolished at the Reformation, by virtue of our Statutes, Homilies and Injunctions, and remained as Monuments of our Indignation against *Romish* Idolatry, till the Archbishop repaired them. The Managers

*M. Reply to Antiq. of Images in Churches. Prynne, p. 463, 464.*

*Peril of Idol. p. 41, 42, 43.*



King  
Charles I.  
1644.

gers observed further, that the Archbishop had confess'd the Particulars of this part of their Charge, and had only excus'd himself as to the University of *Oxford*, though they conceive it impossible he could be ignorant of those Innovations, being Chancellor and Visitor, and having entertain'd the King, Queen, and Elector *Palatine* there for several Days. As for Mr. *Sherfield's* Case, they apprehend the Authority of the Vestry was sufficient in a Place exempt from the Jurisdiction of the Bishop, as *St. Edmund's Church* was. And the Managers are still of Opinion, that the Statute of *Edward VI.* extends to Images in Glass Windows; and that which confirms them in it is, that the Injunctions of Queen *Elizabeth* made in pursuance of this Law, extend in direct Terms to Images in Glass Windows; and the Practice of those Times in defacing them infallibly proves it.

Consecra-  
tion of  
Churches  
and Altars,  
and Feasts  
of Dedic-  
ation.  
M. Charge.  
Prynne,  
p. 114,  
497.

(2.) Another Popish Innovation charged on the Archbishop, was, "*His superstitious Manner of consecrating Chapels, Churches, and Church-Yards; they in-  
stanced in Creed-Church, of which the Reader has had  
an Account before; and in St. Giles's in the Fields,  
which being fallen to decay, was in part Re-edified  
and finish'd in Bishop Mountaine's Time, Divine  
Service, and Administration of Sacraments having  
been perform'd in it three or four Years before his  
Death; but no sooner was the Archbishop tran-  
slated to the See of London, but he interdicted the  
Church, and shut up the Doors for several Weeks,  
till he had re-consecrated it, after the Manner of  
Creed-Church, to the very great Cost and Charge of  
the Parish, and contrary to the Judgment of Bi-  
shop Parker, and our first Reformers.*"

"They objected further, his consecrating of Altars,  
with all their Furniture, as Pattens, Chalice, Al-  
tar-Cloths, &c. even to the Knife that was to cut  
the sacramental Bread; and his dedicating the  
Churches to certain Saints, together with his pro-  
moting

“ moting annual Revels, or Feasts of Dedication on <sup>King</sup>  
 “ the *Lord's Day* in several Parts of the Country, <sup>Charles I.</sup>  
 “ whereby that *holy Day* was profaned, and the Peo- <sup>1644.</sup>  
 “ ple encouraged in Superstition and Ignorance.”

The Archbishop answered to the *Consecration* of *Abb's An-*  
*Churches*, that the Practice was as ancient as *Moses*, <sup>swer to the</sup>  
 who consecrated the Tabernacle, with all its Vessels, <sup>Conse-</sup>  
 and Ornaments; that the Temple was afterwards <sup>crating</sup>  
 consecrated by King *Solomon*; that as soon as Chri- <sup>Churches.</sup>  
 stian Churches began to be built, in the Reign of <sup>Laud's</sup>  
*Constantine* the Great, they were consecrated, as <sup>Hist.</sup>  
*Eu-* <sup>P. 339,</sup>  
*sebius* testifies concerning the Church of *Tyre*, in his <sup>340.</sup>  
*Ecclesiastical History*, l. 10. cap. 3. and so it has  
 continued down to the present Time. Besides, if <sup>Prynne,</sup>  
 Churches were not consecrated they would not be <sup>P. 115.</sup>  
*holy*; nor does Archbishop *Parker* speak against Con-  
 secrations in general, but against Popish Consecra-  
 tions, which mine were not (says the Archbishop)  
 for I had them from Bishop *Andrews*.

As to the Manner of *consecrating Creed-Church*, St. <sup>To Feasts of</sup>  
*Giles's*, &c. his *Grace* confessed, that when he came <sup>Dedicati-</sup>  
 to the Church Door, that Passage in the Psalms was <sup>on.</sup>  
 read, *Lift up your Heads, O ye Gates, even lift them up,*  
*ye everlasting Doors, that the King of Glory may come in*;  
 that he kneel'd and bow'd at his Entrance into the  
 Church, as *Moses* and *Aaron* did at the Door of the  
 Tabernacle; that he declared the Place *holy*, and  
 made use of a Prayer like one in the *Roman Pontifi-*  
*cal*; that afterwards he pronounced divers Curses on  
 such as should profane it, but denied his throwing  
 Dust into the Air, in which, he said, the Witnesses  
 had forsworn themselves, for the *Roman Pontifical*  
 does not prescribe throwing *Dust* into the Air, but  
*Ashes*; and he conceives there is no harm, much  
 less Treason in it. The Practice of giving the Names  
 of *Angels* and *Saints* to Churches at their Dedication,  
 for Distinction sake, and for the Honour of their  
 Memories (says his *Grace*) has been very ancient, as  
 appears in *St. Austin*, and divers others of the Fa-  
 thers,

thers, but the *Dedication* strictly speaking is only to God; nor is the observing the annual Feasts of Dedication less ancient; the Feast of the Dedication of the Temple was observed in our Saviour's Time, and though, no doubt, it was abused by some among the *Jews*, yet our Saviour honoured it with his Presence. Judge *Richardson*, indeed, had made an Order in his Circuit, for putting down these *Wakes*, but he was obliged to revoke it by Authority, and under Favour (says the Archbishop) I am of Opinion, that the *Feasts* ought not to be put down for some Abuses, any more than all Vines ought to be rooted up because some will be drunk with the Juice of them. The *Feasts* are convenient for keeping up Hospitality and good Neighbourhood; nor can there be a more proper Time for observing them, than on *Sundays* after divine Service is ended.

And as the Consecrating of Churches, and dedicating them to God, has been of ancient Usage, so has the Consecration of Altars, and their Furniture, and such Consecrations are necessary, for else the Lord's Table could not be called *holy*, nor the Vessels belonging to it *holy*, as they usually are; yea, there is an Holiness in the Altar which sanctifies the Gift, which it could not do, except it self was holy; if there be no Dedication of these Things to God, no Separation of them from common Use, then there can be no such Thing as Sacrilege, or difference between an *holy Table*, and a common one. And as to the Form of consecrating these Things, I had them not from the *Roman Pontifical*, but from Bishop *Andrews*.

The Managers for the Commons replied, that if the Temple was consecrated it was by the *King himself*, and not by the *High Priest*; and if the *Tabernacle* was consecrated, it was by *Moses*, the civil Magistrate, and not by *Aaron the High Priest*; but we read of no other consecrating the *Tabernacle* and its Utenfils, but anointing them with Oil, for which *Moses* had an express

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

Laud's  
Hist.  
p. 269.

To conse-  
crating Al-  
tars and  
their Fur-  
niture.

Ib. p. 313.

Managers  
Reply to  
the Anti-  
quity of  
Conse-  
crating  
Churches.  
Prynne,  
p. 115.  
499. &c.



express Command; nor of any other consecrating the Temple, but of *Solomon's* making an excellent Prayer in the *outward Court*, not in the *Temple it self*, and of his hallowing the middle Court by Offerings and Peace-Offerings; and 'tis observable, that the *Cloud* and *Glory* of the Lord filled the Temple, so as the Priests could not stand to minister before *Solomon* made his Prayer, which some call his *Consecration*. But if it should be allowed, that the Temple was consecrated in an extraordinary Manner, we have no mention either in Scripture, or *Jewish* Writers, of the Consecration of their *Synagogues*, to which our Churches properly succeed. And after all, 'tis no conclusive Way of arguing, to derive a Christian Institution from the Practice of the *Jewish* Church, because many of their Ordinances were temporary, ceremonial, and abolished by the Coming of Christ.

From the beginning of Christianity we have no Prynne; credible Authority for consecrating Churches for p. 501. three Hundred Years. *Eusebius*, in the Life of *Constantine the Great*, indeed, mentions his consecrating a Temple that he built over our Saviour's Sepulchre at *Jerusalem*; but how? With Prayers, Disputations, Preaching, and Exposition of Scripture, as he expressly defines it, *cap. 45*. Here were no Processions, no knocking at the Doors by the Bishop, crying, *Open, ye everlasting Doors*; no casting Dust or Ashes into the Air, and pronouncing the Ground *holy*; no reverencing towards the Altar, nor a great many other Inventions of later Ages; no, these were not known in the Christian Church till the very darkest Times of Popery; nay, in those very dark Times, we are told by *Otho*, the Pope's Legate, in his Ecclesiastical Constitutions, that in the Reign of King *Henry III.* there were not only divers Parish Churches, but some Cathedrals in *England*, which had been used for many Years, and yet never consecrated by a Bishop. But it's plain to a Demonstration, that the Archbishop's Method of consecrating Churches is a modern

King Charles I. 1644. modern Popish Invention, for 'tis agreed by *Gratian*, *Platina*, the *Centuriators*, and others, that Pope *Hypoginus*, *Gelasius*, *Silvester*, *Felix* and *Gregory*, were the first Inventers and Promoters of it; and it is no where to be found but in the *Roman Pontifical*, publish'd by command of Pope *Clement VIII.* *De Ecclesiæ Dedicatone*, p. 209, 280. for which Reasons it was exploded and condemned by our first Reformers, and particularly by Bishop *Pilkington*, in his Comment upon *Haggai*, ch. i. ver. 7, 8. and Archbishop *Parker*, who in his *Antiq. Britan.* expressly condemns the Archbishop's Method of Consecration as Popish and Superstitious, p. 85, 86, 87.

Ib. p. 115. But the Archbishop says, if Churches are not consecrated they can't be *holy*, whereas many Places that were never consecrated are stiled *Holy*, as the *most holy Place*, and the *holy City* Jerusalem; and our Homilies say, that the Church is called *Holy*, not of it self, but because God's People resorting thither are *Holy*, and exercise themselves in holy Things; and 'tis evident that *Sanctification*, when applied to Places, is nothing else but a separating them from common Use to a religious and sacred one, which may be done without the superstitious Method mentioned; and though the Archbishop had not his Form of Consecration in the *Roman Pontifical*, he acknowledges, he had it in the *Antiq. Pontifical*, who could have it no where else.

Ib. p. 502. As for consecrating *Altars*, *Pantries*, *Altar-Cloths*, and other Altar Furniture; then is no higher than the *Roman Missal* and *Pontifical*, in both which there are particular Chapters, and set Forms of Prayer for this Purpose; but to imagine that these Vessels may not be reputed *Holy*, though separated to an *holy Use*, unless thus consecrated, is without any Foundation in Reason or Scripture, and contrary to the Practice of the Church of *England*, and the Opinion of our first Reformers.

To consecrating Altars and their Furniture.

Prynne, p. 65, &c. 467, 470.

To the Archbishop's Account of *Feasts of Dedication* we answer as before, that an Example out of the *Jewish* Law is no Rule for the Christian Church. *Ezra* kept a Feast at the Dedication of the Temple, when it was rebuilt, and offered a great many Burnt-Offerings, *Ezra* vi. 16, 17. but it was not made an annual Solemnity; for the *Feast of Dedication* mentioned *John* x. 22. was not of the Dedication of the Temple, but of the *Altars*, instituted by *Judas Macabæus*, to be kept annually by the Space of eight Days, 1 *Mac.* iv. 56, 59. which being of no divine Institution, but kept only by the superstitious *Jews*, not by Christ or his Apostles (who are only said to be at *Jerusalem* at that Time) can be no Precedent for our modern Consecrations.

Pope *Felix* and *Gregory* are the first that decreed the annual Observation of the *Dedication of Churches* since our Saviour's Time, which were observed in *England* under the Names of *Wakes* or *Revels*, but were the Occasion of so much Idleness and Debauchery, that King *Henry VIII.* *Ann.* 1536. restrain'd them all to the first Sunday in *October*, not to be kept on any other Day; and afterwards, by the Statute 5 & 6 *Edward VI.* cap. 3. of holy Days, they were totally abolish'd. But these *Feasts* being revived again, by degrees, in sundry Places of this Realm, and particularly in *Somersetshire*, Judge *Richardson*, when he was on the Circuit, at the Request of the Justices of the Peace for the County, publish'd an Order for suppressing them; but was obliged the next Year as publickly to revoke it, and to declare such Recreations to be lawful; and as a further Punishment on the Judge, the Archbishop obtain'd his Removal from that Circuit. 'Tis very certain, that at these *Revels* there were a great many Disorders; as Drunkenness, Quarrelling, Fornication and Murder, 'tis therefore very unlikely they should answer any good Purpose, and how fit they were to succeed the publick Devotions of the Lord's Day,

King  
Charles I.  
1644.  
To Antiq. of  
Feasts of  
Dedication.  
Prynne,  
p. 128.



King Day, we shall leave to your Lordships Consideration.  
Charles I.

1644.

*Antiq. of  
Altars,  
their Situ-  
ation and  
Railing  
them in.  
M. Charge.  
Prynne, p.  
62, 91, &c.*

(3.) The Managers charged the Archbishop further, with giving Orders to Sir *Nath. Brent*, his Vicar-General, to enjoin the Church-Wardens of all Parish Churches within his Diocese, that *they should remove the Communion Table from the Middle of the Chapel to the upper End, and place it in form of an Altar, close to the Wall, with the Ends North and South, and encompass it with Rails, according to the Model of Cathedrals. They objected likewise to his furnishing the Altar in his own Chapel, and the King's at Whitehall, with Basins, Candlesticks, Tapers, and other Silver Vessels, not used in his Predecessors Time; and to the Credentia or Side-Table, in conformity to the Roman Ceremoniale, on which the Elements were to be placed on a clean Linen Cloth before they were brought to the Altar to be consecrated; and to the hanging over the Altar a Piece of Arras with a large Crucifix.*

*Abp's Answer.  
Laud's Hist.  
p. 310.*

The Archbishop answered, that the placing the Communion Table at the East End of the Chancel was commanded by Queen *Elizabeth's* Injunctions, which say, that the holy Table shall be set in the Place where the Altar stood, which all that are acquainted with Antiquity know, was at the East End of the Chancel, with the Ends North and South, close to the Wall, and thus they were usually placed both in this and other Churches of Christendom; the Innovation therefore was theirs who departed from the Injunctions, and not mine who have kept to them. Besides, *Altars*, both Name and Thing, were in use in the Primitive Churches long before Popery began; yea, they are to be found both in the Old and New Testament, and that there can be no Popery in railing them in, I have proved in my Speech in the Star Chamber. However I aver, that I gave no Orders nor Directi-

ons

ons to Sir *Nath. Brent*, my Vicar-General, neither by Letter, nor otherwise, to remove or rail in Communion Tables in all Parish Churches; and I desire Sir *Nath.* may be called to testify the Truth upon his Oath. Sir *Nath.* being sworn, the Archbishop asked him upon his Oath, Whether he had ever given him such Orders? To which he replied, *My Lords, upon the Oath I have taken, I received an express Direction and Command from the Archbishop himself to do what I did of this kind, otherwise I durst never have done it.* The Archbishop insisting that he never gave him such Orders, and wondering that he should be so unworthy as to affirm it upon Oath, Sir *Nath.* produced the following Letter under the Archbishop's own Hand, directed to himself at *Maidstone*.

King  
Charles I.  
1644  
Prynne,  
p. 89.

S I R,

“ I Require you to command the Communion Table at *Maidstone* to be placed at the East, or upper End of the Chancel, and there railed in, and that the Communicants there come up to the Rail to receive the blessed Sacrament; and the like you are required to do in all Churches, and in all other Places where you visit Metropolitically.”

W. CANT.

To which the Archbishop, being out of Countenance, made no other Reply, but that he had forgot it.

As to the Furniture upon the Altar, he added, that it was no other than was used in the King's Chapel at *Whitehall* before his Time, and was both necessary and decent; as is likewise the *Credentia* or Side-Table, the Form of which he took from Bishop *Andrew's* Model; and the Piece of *Arras* that was hung up over the Altar in Passion Week, he apprehended, was very proper for the Place and Occasion, such Representations being approved by the *Lutherans*, and even by *Calvin* himself, as had been already shown.

King Charles I. 1644. *The Managers replied to the Antiquity of Altars, that though the Name is often mentioned in Scripture, yet 'tis never applied to the Lord's Table; but Altars and Priests are put in Opposition to the Lord's Table, and Ministers of the New Testament, 1 Cor. ix. 13, 14. Christ himself celebrated the Sacrament at a Table, not at an Altar, and he calls it a Supper, not a Sacrifice; nor can it be pretended by any Law, Prynne, p. 480, 481. or Canon of the Church of England, that it is called an Altar more than once, Stat. 1 Edward VI. cap. 1. which Statute was repealed within three Years, and another made, in which the Word Altar is changed into Table. 'Tis evident from the unanimous Suffrage of most of the Fathers that lived within three Hundred Years after Christ; and by our most learned Reformers, that for above two Hundred and fifty Years after Christ there were no Altars in Churches but only Lord's Tables, Pope Sixtus II. being the first that introduced them; and the Canons of the Popish Council of Aix, 1583. being the only ones that can be produced for railing them in; one of which prescribes thus, Unumquodque Altare sepiatur omnino septo ferreo, vel lapideo vel ligneo. Let every Altar be encompassed with a Rail of Iron, Stone or Wood. The Text, Heb. xiii. 10. We have an Altar, whereof they have no right to eat which serve the Tabernacle, is certainly meant of Christ himself, and not of the Altar of Wood or Stone, as our Protestant Writers have proved at large; agreeably to which all Altars in Churches were commanded to be taken away and removed, as Superstitious and Popish, by publick Laws and Injunctions at the Reformation, and Tables were set up in their stead, which continued till the Archbishop was pleas'd to turn them again into Altars.*

*To their Situation. Altars anciently not fixed to the East Wall of the Chancel.* But the Archbishop is pleased to maintain, that the Queen's Injunctions prescribe the Communion Table be set in the Place where the Altar stood, and that it was anciently at the East End of the Choir;

Prynne, p. 482, 484.



affirm, that he is not able to produce one Precedent or Authority in all Antiquity for this Assertion; on the contrary, we are able to demonstrate to your Lordships, that *Altars* and *Lord's Tables* amongst *Jews* and *Christians*, stood anciently in the Midst of their Churches or *Choirs* \*; where the People might sit, stand, and go conveniently round them. So it was certainly in the *Jewish* Church, as every one allows; and it was so in the Christian Church, till the very darkeſt Times of Popery, when private Maſſes were introduced. *Eusebius*, *Dionysius Areopagita*, *Chryſoſtom*, *Albanasius*, *Augustine*, &c. affirm, that the Table of the Lord ſtood in the middle of the Chancel, ſo that they might compaſs it about; nay, *Durandus*, a Popiſh Writer informs us, that when a Biſhop conſecrates a new *Altar*, he muſt go round about it ſeven Times; by which 'tis evident, it could not ſtand againſt a Wall; but our moſt eminent Writers againſt Popery, as *Bucer*, Biſhop *Jewel*, Biſhop *Babington*, Biſhop *Morton*, and Archbiſhop *Williams*, have proved this ſo evidently, that there is no room to call it in queſtion; and we are able to produce ſeveral Authorities from venerable *Bede*, St. *Auſtin* the firſt Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, and others, that they ſtood thus in *England* in their Times.

Nor do Queen *Elizabeth's* Injunctions in the leaſt favour the Archbiſhop's Practice, of fixing the Communion Table to the Eaſt Wall with Rails about it, for they order the Table to be removed when the Sacrament is to be diſtributed, and placed in ſuch Sort within the Chancel, as whereby the Miniſter may be more conveniently heard of the Communicants, and the Communicants may more conveniently, and in greater Numbers, commu-

\* *Choir* or *Chorus* has its Denomination from the Multitude ſtanding round about the Altar [*in modum Coronæ*] in the Form of a Ring or Circle. In the ancient Liturgies they prayed for all thoſe that ſtood round about the Altar. — The Priests and Deacons ſtood round about the Altar when they officiated, and ſo did the Biſhops when they conſecrated it.

*King Charles I.* *1644.* *W**ynne, p.* *467, 481.* *nicate with him.* Now, if it be to be removed at the Time of Communion, 'tis absurd to suppose it to be fix'd to the Wall, and encompass'd with Rails. Besides, the Rubrick of the Common Prayer Book, and the Eighty second Canon of 1603. appoint the Communion Table to be placed in the Body of the Church, where the Chancel is too small, or near the middle of the Chancel, where 'tis large enough; and thus they generally stood in all Churches, Chapels, and in *Lambeth* Chapel it self till the Archbishop's Time, which puts the Matter out of question. And if it be remember'd, that the saying of private Masses brought in this Situation of Altars into the Church of *Rome*, contrary to all Antiquity, the Archbishop's imitating them in this Particular must certainly be a Popish Innovation.

*To their Furniture.*

The Furniture upon the Altar which the Archbishop pleads for, is exactly copied from the *Roman Pontifical* and the Popish Council of *Aix*, and is condemned by our Homilies and Queen *Elizabeth's* Injunctions, which censure, condemn, and abolish as Superstitious, Ethnical, and Popish, all Candlesticks, Trendals, Rolls of Wax, and setting up of Tapers, as tending to Idolatry and Superstition, *Injunct.* 2, 23, 25. Therefore instead of conforming to the Chapel at *Whitehall*, he ought, as Dean of that Chapel, to have reformed it to our Laws, Homilies, and Injunctions.

*Wynne, p.* *63, 468.* The like may be said of the *Credentia* [or Side-Table] which is taken expressly out of the *Roman Ceremonial* and *Pontifical*, and is used amongst the Papists only in their most solemn Masses. It was never heard of in any Protestant Church, nor in the Church of *England*, till the Archbishop's Time; and as for the stale Pretext, of his having it from Bishop *Andrews*; if it be true, we are certain *that Bishop* could have it no where else but from the *Roman Missal*.

*ib. p. 62.* The *Arras* Hangings, with the Picture of Christ at his last Supper, with a Crucifix, are no less Popish than

than the former, being enjoined by the *Roman Cere-*  
*moniale*, Ed. Par. 1633. lib. 1. c. 12. p. 69, 70. in  
 these Words, *Quod si Altare parieti adhæreat, applicari*  
*poterit ipsi parieti supra Altare pannus aliquis cæteris nobi-*  
*lior & speciosior, ubi intextæ sint D.N. Jesu Christi aut glo-*  
*riosæ Virginis, vel sanctorum Imagines.* If the Altar be  
 fix'd to the Wall let there be some Hangings more noble and  
 beautiful than the rest, fasten'd upon the Wall over the Al-  
 tar, in which are wrought the Images of Christ, the blessed  
 Virgin, or the Saints. Besides, these Things being con-  
 demned by our Statutes, Homilies, and Injunctions,  
 as we have already proved, ought not certainly to  
 have been introduced by a Prelate, who challenges  
 all that is between Heaven and Hell, justly to tax him in any  
 one Particular favouring of Popish Superstition or Ido-  
 latry.

King  
 Charles I.  
 1644.

“ Another Innovation charged on the Archbishop, *Antiquity*  
 “ was his introducing divers Superstitions into divine *of Bowing*  
 “ Worship, as bowing towards the Altar, *towards*  
 “ Name of JESUS, enjoining People to do Reverence at *the Altar.*  
 “ their Entrance into Church, reading the second Service *M. Charge.*  
 “ at the Communion Table, standing up at the GLORIA *Pryone,*  
 “ PATRI, and introducing the Use of Copes and Church *P. 72, &c.*  
 “ Musick. They objected further, his repairing old  
 “ Crucifixes, his new Statutes of the University of  
 “ Oxford, among which, some were arbitrary, and  
 “ others very superstitious; of the former Sort, are  
 “ the imposing new Oaths; the Statute of *Banni-*  
 “ tion; referring some Misdemeanors to arbitrary  
 “ Penalties, and obliging Students to go to Prison  
 “ on the Vice-Chancellor's or Proctor's Command.  
 “ Of the latter Sort, are bowing to the Altar, singing  
 “ the Litany, and reading Latin Prayers in Lent; to-  
 “ gether with the above-mention'd Superstitions in  
 “ the Manner of divine Worship.”

The Archbishop answered, that Bowing in divine *Abp's An-*  
 Worship was practised among the Jews, 2 Chron. *swer.*  
 xxix. 29. and the Psalmist says, O come, let us wor- *Laud's*  
 ship, *Hist. p.*



*King Charles I.* *ship, and bow down, let us kneel before the Lord our Ma-*  
*ker,* Psal. xcv. 6. that it was usual in Queen *Elizabeth's* Time; and, that the *Knights of the Garter* were obliged to this Practice by the Orders of their Chapter. Besides, the Altar is the chief Place of God's Residence on Earth, for there it is, *This is my Body*; whereas in the Pulpit 'tis only, *This is my Word*. And shall I bow to Men in each House of Parliament, and not bow to God in his House whither I come to worship him? Surely I must worship God, and bow to him, though neither Altar nor Communion Table be in the Church.

*Bowing at the Name of Jesus.*

Bowing at the Name of *JESUS* is prescribed in direct Terms by Queen *Elizabeth's* Injunctions, N<sup>o</sup> 12. and by the 18th Canon of our Church; and though standing up at the *Gloria Patri* is not prescribed by any Canon of the Church, 'tis, nevertheless, of great Antiquity; nor is the Reading the second Service at the Communion Table an Innovation, it being the constant Practice in Cathedrals, and warranted by the Rubrick.

*Of Copes.*

The Use of Copes is prescribed by the 24th Canon of 1603. which says, *That in all Cathedrals, and Collegiate Churches, the Communion shall be administer'd on principal Feast Days, sometimes by the Bishop if present, sometimes by the Dean, and sometimes by the Canon or Prebendary, the principal Minister using a decent Cope*; so that here is no Innovation, any more than in the Use of *Organs*, which our Church has generally approved, and made use of.

*Laud's Hist.*

P. 304.

As to the Statutes of the University of *Oxford*, 'tis Honour more than enough for me, that I have finished and settled them; nor did I any Thing in them but by the Consent of the Convocation; and as to

*M. Reply to Bowing to the Altar.*

*Prynne,*  
 p. 63, 64,  
 474, 477,  
 487.

the Particulars, there is nothing but what is agreeable to their Charters, and the ancient Custom and Usage of the University.

The Managers replied, that *Bowing to the Altar* is Popish, Superstitious, and Idolatrous, being prescribed

bed only by Popish Canons, and introduced on Purpose to support the Doctrine of Transubstantiation, which the Archbishop's Practice seems very much to countenance; when at his coming up to the Altar to consecrate the Bread, he makes three low Bows, and at his going away three more, giving this Reason for it, *Quia hoc est corpus meum*, because, *This is my Body*; whereas he does not bow to the Pulpit, because a greater Reverence is due to the *Body* than to the *Word of the Lord*. Besides, it has no Foundation in Antiquity, nor has it been approved by any Protestant Writers, except the Archbishop's Creatures, such as Dr. Heylin, Pocklington, &c. but has been condemned by the best Writers as Popish and Superstitious. The black Book of the Knights of the Garter at *Windfor*, is but a sorry Precedent for a Protestant Archbishop to follow, being made in the darkeſt Times of Popery (*viz.*) in the Reign of King Henry V. and if they bow *Deo & Altari*, to God and to his Altar, as the Archbishop in his Speech in the Star Chamber is of Opinion Christians ought to do, we can't but think it both Popish and Idolatrous. His Passages of Scripture are nothing to the Purpose, for *kneeling before the Lord our Maker* has no relation to bowing to the Altar; nor is there any Canon or Injunction of the Church to support the Practice.

The Archbishop confesses, that there is neither Canon nor Injunction for standing up at the *Gloria Patri*, which must therefore be an Innovation, and is of no greater Antiquity than the Office of the Mass, for 'tis derived from the *Ordo Romanus*, as appears from the Works of *Cassander*, p. 98. And though Bowing at the Name of *JESUS* be mention'd in the Canons, yet these Canons are not binding, not being confirm'd by Parliament, especially since the Homilies, the Common-Prayer Book, the Articles of Religion, and the Book of Ordination, which are the only authentick Rules of the Church, make no mention of it; nor was it ever introduced before the Time of

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

To the  
Gloria Pa-  
tri and  
Bowling at  
the Name  
of Jesus.  
Prynne,  
p. 64.

*King Charles I.* Pope Gregory X. who first prescribed it; and from the Councils of *Basil*, *Sennes*, and *Augusta*, it was afterwards inserted into the *Roman Cereemoniale*; besides, our best Protestant Writers have condemned the Practice.

*A. D. 1431.* Reading the second Service at the Altar when there is no Communion, is contrary to the Canons of 1571, and 1603. contrary to the Queen's Injunctions, the Homilies, and Rubrick in the Common-Prayer-Book, and was never practised in Parish Churches till of late, though used in some Cathedrals, where the Rubrick enjoins the Communion to be administer'd every Sunday in the Year, which being omitted, the *second Service* at the Table was left to supply it. The Lord's Table was ordained only to administer the Sacrament, but the Epistle and Gospel, which are the chief Parts of the second Service, are appointed to be read with the two Lessons in the *Reading Pew*.

*To Copes.* As for COPEs, neither the Common-Prayer-Book, nor Book of Ordination, nor Homilies confirmed by Parliament, nor Queen *Elizabeth's* Injunctions in her first Year, make any mention of them, they are evidently derived from the Popish Wardrobe, and the last Common-Prayer-Book of King *Edward VI.* expressly prohibits them. The 24th Canon of 1603. enjoins only the *chief Minister* to wear a Cope at the Administration of the Sacrament, whereas the Archbishop prescribed them to be worn by others besides the chief Minister, and as well when the Sacrament was not administer'd as when it was. But as we observed before, those Canons not being confirmed by Parliament, expired with King *James*, and therefore can be no Warrant for their present Use. Nor is the Use of *Musick in Churches*, or Chaunting of Prayers, of any great Antiquity, being first introduced by Pope *Vitalian*, and encouraged only by Popish Prelates.

*Ib. p. 65.* And though the Archbishop pleads, that the Statutes of *Oxford* are agreeable to ancient Custom and Usage, we affirm they contain sundry Innovations,



not only with regard to the Liberty of the Subject, but with regard to Religion, for *Latin Prayers* were formerly said only on *Asb Wednesdays* before the *Bachelors of Arts*, whereas now, none others are to be said throughout all Lent; the Statute for singing in solemn Processions was made in time of Popery, and renewed in these Statutes to keep up the Practice of such superstitious Perambulations; and though the Archbishop with his wonted Assurance wonders what these Things have to do with Treason, we apprehend, that if they appear so many Proofs of a Design to subvert the established Religion of the Church of England, they will be judged so in the highest degree.

King Charles I.  
1644.  
Prynne,  
p. 478.

Further they charged the Archbishop with advising the King “to publish his Declaration for the Use of Sports on the Lord’s Day, in order to suppress Afternoon Sermons; with obliging the Clergy of his Diocese to read it in their Pulpits, and punishing those that refused.”

Book of Sports.  
M. Charge.  
Prynne,  
p. 128,  
156,  
382.

The Archbishop answered, that he had the King’s Warrant for printing the *Book of Sports*; that there is no Proof that it was by his Procurement, nor that it was done on purpose to take away *Afternoon Sermons*, since these Recreations are not allowed till they are over; besides, the Declaration allows only *lawful Recreations*, which is no more than is practised at *Geneva*, though for his own Part he always observed strictly the Lord’s Day. What he enjoined about the Reading the Declaration was by his Majesty’s Command, and he did not punish above three or four for not reading it.

Abp’s Answer.  
Laud’s Hist. p.  
343, 344.

The Commons replied, that it was evident by the Archbishop’s Letter to the Bishop of Bath and Wells, that the Declaration was printed by his Procurement, the Warrant for printing it being written all with his own Hand, and without Date, and therefore might probably be obtained afterwards; moreover, some of the Recreations mentioned in it are unlawful on the

Managers Reply,  
Prynne,  
p. 505.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

Lord's Day, according to the Opinion of *Fathers, Councils, and Imperial Laws*; and though *Calvin* differs from our Protestant Writers about the Morality of the Sabbath, yet he expressly condemns Dancing and Pastimes on that Day. As for his *Grace's* own strict Observation of the Lord's Day, 'tis an Averment without Truth, for he sat constantly at the Council Table on that Day; and it was his ordinary Practice to go to Bowls in the Summer Time, and use other Recreations upon it; nor is it probable, that the Archbishop would have punished conscientious Ministers for not reading the Book of Sports, if the Thing had been disagreeable to his Practice, especially when there is no Warrant at all in the Declaration that Ministers should publish it, or be punished for refusing it; and that he punished no more was not owing to his Clemency, who gave Command to suspend all that refused, but to the Clergy's Compliance; for so zealous was this Archbishop, and some of his Brethren in this Affair, that it was inserted as an Article of Enquiry in their Visitations, *Whether the King's Declaration for Sports has been read and published by the Minister?* And Defaulters were to be presented upon Oath. Now we appeal to the whole Christian World, Whether ever it has been known, that any who have been called *Fathers of the Church*, have taken so much Pains to have the Lord's Day prophaned, as first to advise the King to publish a Declaration to warrant it, then to enjoin the Clergy to read it in their Pulpits, and to suspend, sequester and deprive, all whose Consciences would not allow them to comply, and this not only contrary to the Laws of God, but to the Laws of the Land.

Remarks.

The Reader will, no doubt, remark upon this part of the Archbishop's Trial, that those Rites and Ceremonies which have bred such ill Blood, and been contended for with so much Fierceness, as to disturb the Peace of the Church, and divide its Communion,

nion, have no Foundation in Scripture, or primitive Antiquity, but had their Rise for the most part, in the darkest and most corrupt Times of the Papacy. I speak not here of those Rites that are established by Law, as the *Cross in Baptism*, and *kneeling at the Communion*, &c. because the Commons could not charge these upon the Archbishop as criminal. But it will be observed further, that when Men claim a Right to invent Ceremonies for Decency of Worship, and impose them upon the People, there is no knowing where to stop. Archbishop *Laud* would, no doubt, by Degrees, have introduced all the Follies of the *Roman Church*; and indeed, if we admit of an Authority to impose Rites and Ceremonies not mentioned in Scripture, 'tis not easy to give a Reason why fifty may not be enjoined as well as five.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

The Managers went on next to the *second Branch* of their Charge, to prove the Archbishop's Design to subvert the Protestant Religion, BY COUNTER-  
NANCING AND ENCOURAGING SUNDRY DOCTRINAL ERRORS IN FAVOUR OF ARMINIANISM AND POPERY.

And here they charged him, *First*, " With being the great Patron of that Part of the Clergy who had declared themselves in favour of these Errors, and with procuring their Advancement to the highest Stations in the Church, even though they were under Censure of Parliament, as Dr. *Manning*, *Montague*, &c. They averr'd, that the best Preferments in his Majesty's Gift, ever since the Archbishop's Administration in 1627. had, by his Advice, been bestow'd on Persons of the same Principles; and that he had advised the King to publish a Declaration, prohibiting the Clergy to preach on the *five controverted Points*, by virtue of which the Mouths of the Orthodox Preachers were stopt, and some that ventur'd to transgress the King's Declaration were punished in the High

Armini-  
anism.  
M. Charge.



King Charles I. 1644. " Commission, when their Adversaries were left at large to spread their Opinions at their Pleasure."

Abp's Answer.

Laud's Hist.

p. 35.

Prynne, p. 529.

The Archbishop answered, that he had not defended any Points of *Arminianism*, though he heartily wished, for the Peace of Christendom, that these Differences were not pursued with such Heat and Animosity. He confessed, that he had been taxed in a Declaration of the House of Commons as a Favourer of *Arminians*, but without Proof, and he took it as a very great Slander. Nor had he, to the best of his Remembrance, advanced any such to Ecclesiastical Livings; if they proved so afterwards it was more than he could foresee; but he had preferr'd divers orthodox Ministers, against whom there was no Exception. He denied that he had any hand in the Preferment of Dr. *Manwaring* or *Montague*, who were under Censure of Parliament, nor is the *Pocket Book* a sufficient Proof of it; he was of Opinion, that *Neale*, *Lindsey*, *Wren*, *Bancroft*, *Curle*, and others mentioned in the Charge, were worthy Men, and every way qualified for their Preferments, though it does not appear he had any hand in bestowing them. As for the King's Declaration, prohibiting the Clergy to preach on the *five Points*, it was his Majesty's own, and not his; and since the publishing of it, he had endeavour'd to carry it with an equal hand, and to punish the Transgressors of it on one side as well as the other.

Prynne, p. 508.

Managers

Reply.

Prynne,

p. 529.

The Commons replied, that they wonder'd at the Archbishop's Assurance in denying his Endeavours to promote *Arminianism* in the Church; that the Remonstrance of the Commons was a sufficient Evidence of his Guilt, being confirm'd by many Proofs, tho' his Answer to it was full of Bitterness and Sawciness, as throwing Scandal on the whole Representative Body of the Nation.

As to the Particulars, they say, that his preferring Mr. *Downham* and *Taylor*, orthodox Men, to some

Bene-

Benefices, was but a Blind to cover his advancing so many popishly affected Clergymen. 'Tis known to all the World that *Montague* and *Manwaring* were his Creatures; the Pocket Book says, that his Majesty's Royal Assent to their Preferment was signified by Order of this Prelate, when only Bishop of *London*, and himself was the Person that consecrated them. It would be too long to go into Particulars, but every body knows, that the Disposal of all, or most of the Bishopricks, Deanries, and most considerable Benefices since the Year 1627, have been under the Direction of this Archbishop; and what Sort of Persons have been preferr'd, is apparent to all Men, by the present distracted Condition of the Church and Universities.

The King's Declaration for prohibiting Preaching on the five controverted Points, was an Artifice of the Archbishop's, to introduce the *Arminian* Errors, by preventing orthodox Ministers from awakening the Minds of People against them. And whereas he avers, that he has carried it with an even Hand, and could bring Witnesses from *Oxford* to prove it, we challenge him to name one Scholar or Minister that was ever imprison'd, deprived, silenced, prosecuted in the High Commission, or cast out of Favour on this Account; there was indeed one *Rainsford*, an *Arminian*, who in the Year 1632. was obliged publicly to confess his Error, in disobeying his Majesty's Declaration, but that was all his Punishment; whereas great Numbers of the other side have been persecuted, so as to be forced to abandon their Native Country, at a Time when the most notorious and declared *Arminians* were advanced to the best Preferments in the Church, as *Montague* made a Bishop, *Harsnet* an Archbishop, *Lindsey* promoted to two Bishopricks; *Potter* to a Deanry, and *Duppa* to a Deanry and a Bishoprick, and made Tutor to the Prince, &c.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

Preaching  
on the five  
Points.  
Prynne,  
p. 172,  
511.

King Charles I. 1644. *Abuse of the Press by prohibiting Books.* M. Charge. Prynne, p. 180, 182, &c.

The Managers objected further to the Archbishop, that having obtained the sole Licensing of the Press, by a Declaration of the Star Chamber in the Year 1637. he had prohibited the reprinting sundry orthodox Books formerly printed, and sold by Authority, as the *Geneva Bible* with Notes, *Gillibrand's Protestant Almanack*, in which the Popish Saints were left out of the Kalendar, and Protestant Martyrs put in their Places; that his Chaplains had refused to licence the *Confession of Faith* of the *Palatine Churches*, *Fox's Book of Martyrs*, *Bishop Jewel's Works*, some part of *Dr. Willet's*, and the *History of the Gun-Powder-Treason*, as was attested by the Clerks of *Stationers Hall*, and this Reason given for the Refusal, That we were not now so angry with the Papists as formerly, and therefore it was not proper to exasperate them, there being a Design on foot to win them with Mildness. That the Archbishop had suppress'd sundry new Books written against *Arminianism* and *Popery*, and had castrated others, expunging such Passages as reflected upon the Superstition and Idolatry of that Church; a large Catalogue of which the Commons produced; many Authors appeared in Maintenance of this part of the Charge, and among others, *Dr. Featly*, *Dr. Clarke*, *Dr. Jones*, *Mr. Ward*, &c. It was said in particular, that he had expunged divers Passages which bore hard upon the Papists out of the Collection of publick Prayers for a general Fast against the Plague; and that in the Prayer-Book appointed by Authority for the 5th of Nov. instead of *Root out that babylonish and antichristian Sect, whose Religion is Rebellion, whose Faith is Faction, and whose Practice is murdering of Soul and Body*; he had altered that Passage, and artfully turn'd it against the Puritans, thus, *Root out the antichristian Sect of them, who turn Religion into Rebellion, and Faith into Faction.*

*By castrating them* Prynne, p. 257, 258, &c.

“ And



“ And as the Archbishop had castrated some <sup>King</sup>  
 “ Books, because they refuted the Doctrines he <sup>Charles I.</sup>  
 “ would countenance; so he gave full Licence to <sup>1644.</sup>  
 “ others, wherein the grossest Points of *Arminianism* <sup>By licen-</sup>  
 “ and *Popery* were openly asserted; as *Cosins’s* <sup>sing Popish</sup>  
 “ Hours of Prayer, *Sales’s* Introduction to a devout <sup>Books.</sup>  
 “ Life, *Christ’s* Epistle to a devout Soul, and others, <sup>Prynne,</sup>  
 “ in which the following Doctrines were maintain’d, <sup>p. 188,</sup>  
 “ (1.) The Necessity of Auricular Confession, and <sup>202.</sup>  
 “ the Power of Priests to forgive Sins. (2.) The  
 “ Lawfulness and Benefit of Popish Penance, as  
 “ wearing Hair-Cloth, and other corporal Punish-  
 “ ments. (3.) Absolute Submission to the Com-  
 “ mands of Priests as Directors of Conscience.  
 “ (4.) That in the Sacrament, the Body and Blood  
 “ of Christ is a true and proper Sacrifice; that the  
 “ natural Body and Blood of Christ is really and sub-  
 “ stantially present in the Eucharist; and that there  
 “ can be no true Sacrament or Consecration of it  
 “ where there is no Altar. (5.) That Crucifixes,  
 “ Images and Pictures, may be lawfully set up in  
 “ Churches, and ought not to be remov’d. (6.) That  
 “ the Pope is not Antichrist. (7.) That there are  
 “ venial Sins. (8.) That there is a Purgatory or  
 “ Limbus Patrum. (9.) That the Reliques of Saints  
 “ are to be preserved and revered. (10.) That  
 “ the Virgin *Mary* and Saints are to be invoked and  
 “ prayed to. (11.) That the Church of *Rome* is the  
 “ Mother Church, and never erred in Fundamen-  
 “ tals. (12.) That there are written Traditions of  
 “ equal Authority with the Word of God.” To  
 “ which were added sundry Articles of *Arminian* Do-  
 “ ctrine, as of Free-Will, total and final Apostasy  
 “ from Grace; Examples of which the Managers pro-  
 “ duced from the several Authors.

And as a further Encouragement to Popery, they <sup>And commi-</sup>  
 objected his Grace’s “ conniving at the Importation <sup>ving at</sup>  
 “ of Popish Books, and restoring them to the Own- <sup>their Im-</sup>  
 “ ers, when seized by the Searchers, contrary to <sup>portation.</sup>  
 “ the <sup>Prynne,</sup>  
 “ the <sup>p. 349.</sup>

King Charles I. 1644. " the Statute of 3 *Jacob. I.* by which means many  
 " Thousands of them were dispers'd over the whole  
 " Kingdom; whereas he gave the strictest Com-  
 " mands to his Officers to seize all imported Bibles  
 " with Notes, and all Books against Arminian and  
 " Popish Innovations. All which put together,  
 " amount to no less than a Demonstration of the  
 " Archbishop's Design to subvert our established  
 " Religion, by introducing Doctrinal Arminianism  
 " and Popery."

Abp's Answer. Laud's Hist. p. 350. The Archbishop answered, that the Decree of the  
 Star Chamber for regulating the Press was the Act  
 of the whole Court, and not his; that the *Stationers*  
 themselves gave him Thanks for it; and he is still of  
 Opinion, that it was both a necessary and useful Act,  
 being design'd to suppress seditious, schismatical, and  
 mutinous Books. As to the Particulars, he replied,  
 that the *Geneva Bible* was only tolerated, not allowed  
 by Authority, and deserved to be suppress'd for the  
 marginal Note on *Exod. i. 17.* which allows Disobe-  
 dience to the King's Command. *Gillibrand's Alma-*  
*nack* had left out all the Saints and Apostles, and put  
 in those named by Mr. *Fox*, and therefore deserved to  
 be censured. As to the Book of Martyrs, it was an  
 Abridgment of that Book, I oppos'd (says his Grace)  
 least the Book it self should be brought into disuse,  
 and least any Thing material should be left out. But  
 the Licensing of Books was left in general to my  
 Chaplains, for an Archbishop had better grind than  
 take that Work into his own Hands; and whereas it  
 has been inferr'd, that what is done by my Chaplain  
 must be taken as my Act, I conceive no Man can  
 by Law be punished criminally for his Servants  
 Fact, unless it be proved that he had a Hand  
 in it.

The like Answer the Archbishop gave to the Ca-  
 strating and Licensing Books, his Chaplains did it;  
 and since it was not proved they did it by his express  
 Command they must answer for it. He admits, that  
 he

he altered the Prayers for the 5th of *Nov.* and for the *King*  
*general Fast*, by his Majesty's Command; and he is of *Charles I.*  
 Opinion, the Expressions were too harsh, and there- *1644.*  
 fore ought to be changed.

He denied that he ever connived at the Importation  
 of Popish Books; and if any such were restored to the  
 Owners, it was by Order of the High Commission,  
 and therefore he is not answerable for it.

The Commons replied, that the Decree for Regu- *Managers*  
 lating the Press was procured by him, with a Design *Reply.*  
 to enlarge his Jurisdiction; and though some Things *Prynne,*  
 in it might deserve the Thanks of the *Stationers*, they *p. 515.*  
 complain'd loudly that Books formerly printed by  
*Authority*, might not be reprinted without a new Li-  
 cence from himself — As to Particulars, they af-  
 firm, that the *Geneva Bible* was printed by Authority  
 of Queen *Elizabeth* and King *James*, *cum Privilegio*;  
 and in the 15th *Jacob.* there was an Impression by the  
 King's own Printer, notwithstanding the Note upon  
*Exodus*, which is warranted both by Fathers and Ca-  
 nonists. *Gillibrand's Almanack* was certainly no Of-  
 fence, and therefore did not deserve that the Author  
 should be tried before the High Commission; and if  
 the Queen and the Papists were offended at it, it was  
 to be liked never the worse by all good Prote-  
 stants. The Archbishop is pleased, indeed, to cast  
 the whole Blame of the Press on his *Chaplains*; but  
 we are of Opinion (say the Managers) that the Arch-  
 bishop is answerable for what his Chaplains do in this  
 Case; the Trust of Licensing Books being ori-  
 ginally invested in him, his Chaplains being his  
 Deputies, he must answer for them at his Peril.  
 When the Archbishop of *York*, in the Reign of *Ed-*  
*ward I.* was question'd in Parliament for excommu-  
 nicating two Servants of the Bishop of *Durham*, em-  
 ployed in the King's Service, the Archbishop threw  
 the Blame on his Commissary, who was the Person  
 that excommunicated them; but it was then resolved  
 in Parliament, that the Commissary's Act was his  
 own,



King  
Charles I.  
1644.

own, and he was fined four Thousand Marks to the King. Now the *Commissary* was an Officer established by Law; but the Archbishop's Chaplains are not Officers by Law, and therefore dare not licence any Thing without his Privy and Command.

Besides, 'tis apparent, these Books were castrated by the Archbishop's Approbation, for otherwise he would have punished the Licencers, Printers, and Publishers, as he always did when Information was given of any new Books published against the late Innovations. His Grace has forgot his refusing to licence the *Palatine Confession of Faith*, which is his peculiar Happiness, when he can make no Answer; and it looks a little undutiful in him to cast the Alteration of the Prayers for Nov. 5. on the King, when every body knows by whom the King's Conscience was directed.

But whereas the Archbishop denies his conniving at the Importation of Popish Books, he does not so much as alledge, that he ordered such Books to be seized, as he ought to have done; he confesses, that such Books as were seized, had been restored, by order of the High Commission, whereas it had been sworn to be done by his own Order; but if it had not, yet he being President of that Court ought to have cross'd those Orders, *that Court* not daring to have made any such Restitutions without his Consent; so that we cannot but be of Opinion, that the whole of this Charge, which shows a manifest Partiality on the side of *Arminianism* and *Popery*, and the strongest and most artificial Attempts to propagate these Errors in the Nation, still remains in its full Strength.

Prosecuting  
Puritans.  
M. Charge.  
Prynne,  
p. 361,  
362, &c.

The Managers went on to charge the Archbishop with his "severe Prosecution of those Clergymen who had dared to preach against the dangerous Increase of *Arminianism* and *Popery*, or the late Innovations; they instanced in Mr. Chancy, Mr. Workman, " Mr.

“ Mr. Davenport, and others ; some of whom were  
 “ punished in the High Commission for not Railing King Charles I.  
 “ in the Communion Table, and for Preaching 1644.  
 “ against Images ; and when Mr. Davenport fled to  
 “ New England, to avoid the Storm, the Archbishop  
 “ said, *His Arm should reach him there.* They ob-  
 “ jected further, *his suppressing Afternoon Sermons on*  
 “ *the Lord's Day*, and the laudable Design of buying  
 “ in Impropriations, which was designed for the  
 “ encouraging such Lecturers.”

The Archbishop answered, that the Censures past Abp's An-  
 on the Ministers abovementioned was the Act of the swer.  
 High Commission, and not his ; but he confesses, Laud's  
 their Sentences appeared to him just and reasonable, Hist. p.  
 in as much as the Passages that occasioned them 332, 348.  
 were against the laudable Ceremonies of the Church,  
 against the King's Declaration, tending to infuse into  
 the Minds of People groundless Fears and Jealousies  
 of Popery, and to cast Aspersions on the Governors  
 of the Church ; that therefore if he did say, *his Arm*  
*should reach Mr. Davenport in New England*, he sees  
 no harm in it, for there is no Reason that the Plan-  
 tations should secure Offenders against the Church of  
 England from the Edge of the Law ; and he meddled  
 with none but such as were *Puritanical, Faction,*  
*Schismatical*, and Enemies to the good Orders of the  
 Church.

As to the *Suppressing Afternoon Sermons*, the Instru-Prynne,  
 ctions for turning them into catechizing was before P. 388.  
 his Time, and he could not but approve of the De-  
 sign, as a proper Expedient for preserving Peace be-  
 tween Ministers and People, the Lecturers being for  
 the most part factious, and the Occasion of great  
 Contentions in the Parishes where they preached.

He confessed, that he overthrew the Design of  
 buying up Impropriations, and thanked God he had  
 destroyed it, because he conceived it a Plot against  
 the Church, for if it had succeeded more Clergymen  
 would have depended on these *Feoffees* than upon the  
 King,

*King* King, and on all the Peers and Bishops of the King-  
*Charles I.* dom beside; but he proceeded against them accord-  
 1644. ing to Law, and if the Sentence was not just it must  
 be the Judges fault, and not his.

*M. Reply.* The Commons replied, that it was notorious to all  
*Prynne,* Men, how cruel he had been towards all Men who had  
 1635, &c. dared to make a Stand against his Proceedings. They  
 put him in mind of *Prynne*, *Burton*, and *Bastwick*, and  
 of great Numbers, whom he had forced into *Holland*,  
 and into the Plantations of *America*, to avoid the  
 Ruin of themselves and Families; yea, so implacable  
 was this Prelate, that he would neither suffer  
 them to live in the Land, nor out of it, an Embargo  
 being laid on all Ministers going to *New England*;  
 and if any such got over clandestinely, he threaten'd  
*his Arm should reach them there.* In vain does he shelter  
 his severe Proceedings under the Authority of the  
 Court, for if this Plea be admitted, no corrupt Judges  
 or Counsellors can be brought to Justice for the most  
 arbitrary Proceedings; but in reality, *the Act of the*  
*Court is the Act of every particular Person that gives his*  
*Vote for it, and every individual Member is account-*  
*able.* Many Instances of this might be produced;  
 but there has been one very lately, in the Case of  
*Ship-Money*, which is fresh in the Memory of all  
 Men; and we do aver, that the Sermons or Books,  
 for which the abovementioned Persons suffered so se-  
 verely, were neither factious nor seditious, but ne-  
 cessary for these Times, wherein the Protestant Reli-  
 gion runs so very low, and Superstition and Popery is  
 coming in like a Flood.

*Prynne,* As to the Instructions for *Suppressing Afternoon Ser-*  
 p. 370. *mons*, whensoever they were drawn up, 'tis evident  
 537, 538. he was the Man that put them in Execution, and le-  
 vell'd them against those conscientious Persons who  
 scrupled reading the Prayers in their *Surplice* and  
*Hood*, or taking a Living with Cure of Souls, all such  
 Persons, how Orthodox soever in Doctrine, or how  
 Diligent soever in their Callings, and Pious in their  
 Lives,



Lives, being reputed factious, schismatical, and unworthy of the least Employment in the Church. King Charles I. 1644.

As to the *Impropriations*, there was no Design in the Feoffees to render the Clergy independent on the Bishops, for none were presented but conformable Men, nor did any preach but such as were licensed by the Bishop; indeed, the Design being to encourage the Preaching of the Word of God, the Feoffees were careful to employ such Persons as would not be idle; and when they perceiv'd the Archbishop was bent on their Ruin, Mr. *White* went to his Grace, and promised to rectify any Thing that was amiss, if the Thing it self might stand. But he was determined to destroy it, and by his mighty Influence obtain'd a Decree, that the Money should be paid into the King's *Exchequer*, by which an End was put to one of the most charitable Designs for the Good of the Church that has been formed these many Years. Prynne, p. 537.

The last Charge of the Managers, was "his Grace's open Attempts to reconcile the Church of Reconciling the Church of England with the Church of Rome, as appears, England First, By the Papal Titles he suffered the Universities to give him in their Letters, as *Sanctitas ve-* Rome, and *stra*, your Holiness; *Sanctissima Pater*, most holy assuming Father; *Spiritus sancti effusissime plenus*, full of the Papal Titles, and Holy Ghost; *Summus Pontifex, optimus maximusque* discouraging *in terris*, &c. Agreeably to this he assumed to give himself the Title of PATRIARCH, or Pope of Great foreign Pro- Britain, *Alterius Orbis Papa*; which gave the Ro- testants. manists such an Opinion of him, that they offered M. Charge. him twice a Cardinal's Hat; though as Things Ibid. then stood, he did not think it prudent to receive it. But Sir *H. Mildmay*, and Sir *N. Brent*, swore, that both at Rome and elsewhere, he was reputed a Papist in his Heart; which Opinion was not a little confirm'd, (1.) By his forbidding the Clergy to pray for the Conversion of the Queen to the Protestant Faith. (2.) By his owning the

VOL. III. Q Church

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

“ Church of *Rome* to be a true Church ; by denying  
“ the Pope to be Antichrist, and wishing a Recon-  
“ ciliation with her ; and affirming, that she never  
“ erred in Fundamentals, no, not in the worst of  
“ Times. (3.) By his sowing Discord between the  
“ Church of *England* and foreign Protestants, not  
“ only by taking away the Privileges and Immuni-  
“ ties of the *French* and *Dutch Churches* in these King-  
“ doms, but by denying their Ministers to be true  
“ Ministers, and their Churches true Churches.  
“ (4.) By maintaining an intimate Correspondence  
“ with the Pope’s Nuncio and with divers Priests and  
“ Jesuits, conniving at the Liberties they took in the  
“ *Clink*, and elsewhere, and threatening those Pur-  
“ suivants who were diligent in apprehending them ;  
“ to all which they added, the Influence the Archbi-  
“ shop had in marrying the King to a Papist, and  
“ his Concealment of a late Plot to reduce these  
“ Kingdoms to Popery and Slavery.”

Prynne,  
p. 539.

Abp’s An-  
swer.  
Laud’s  
Hist. p.  
285, 286,  
325, &c.  
Prynne,  
p. 543.  
Laud’s  
Hist. p.  
418, 419.

To this long Charge the Archbishop answered some Things in general, in satyrical and provoking Language : My Lords (says he) I am charged with an Endeavour to reconcile the Church of *England* to the Church of *Rome* ; I shall recite the Sum of the Evidence, and of the Arguments to prove it, (1.) I have reduced several Persons from Popery, whom I have named in my Speech ; *ergo*, I have endeavoured to bring in Popery. (2.) I have made a Canon against Popery, and an Oath to abjure it ; *ergo*, I have endeavoured to introduce it. (3.) I have been twice offered a Cardinalship and refused it, because I would not be subject to the Pope ; *ergo*, I have endeavoured to subject the Church of *England* to him. (4.) I writ a Book against Popery ; *ergo*, I am inclinable to it. (5.) I have been in danger of my Life from a Popish Plot ; *ergo*, I cherished it, and endeavoured to accomplish it. (6.) I endeavoured to reconcile the *Lutherans* and *Calvinists* ; *ergo*, I laboured to bring in Popery.

To the Particulars he answered thus, that whatever papal Power he had assumed, he assumed it not in his own Right, as the Popes did, but from the King. That the Stile of *Holinejs* was given to St. Augustine, and others, and therefore not peculiar to the Pope; why then should so grave a Man as Mr. Brown (says he) disparage his own Nation, as if it was impossible for an *English* Bishop to deserve as good a Title as another? As for the other Titles, they must be taken as Compliments for my having deserved well of the University; but after all, 'tis one Thing to assume papal Titles, and another to assume papal Power. As to the Title of *Patriarch, or Pope of the other World*; 'tis the Title that *Anselm* says belongs to the Archbishops of *Canterbury*, and not so great an one as St. *Jerom* gave to St. *Augustine*, when he writ to him with this Title, *Beatissimo Papæ Augustino*. I confess I have been offered a Cardinal's Hat, but refused it, saying, *I could not accept it till Rome was otherwise than it now is*. If after this, Others will repute me a Papist I can't help it, I hope I shall not be answerable for their Uncharitableness. Sir *Henry Mildmay* will witness how much I am hated and spoken against at *Rome*. It does not appear that I forbade Ministers praying for the Queen's Conversion; but when I was told the Queen was pray'd for in a factious and seditious Manner I referr'd the Matter to my Visitors, and do acknowledge that Mr. *Jones* was punished in the High Commission on this Account.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

To his as-  
suming  
Papal  
Titles.

Laud's  
Hist.  
p. 383.

To the Objection, of the Church of *Rome's* being a true Church, I confess my self of that Opinion, and do still believe, that she never erred in Fundamentals, for the Foundations of the Christian Religion are in the Articles of the Creed, and she denies none of them; and it would be sad if she should, for 'tis through her that the Bishops of the Church of England, who have the Honour to be capable of deriving their Calling from St. Peter, must deduce their Succession. She is

To the  
Church of  
Rome's be-  
ing a true  
Church.  
lb. p. 392.



*King Charles I.* 1644. therefore a true Church, though not an *orthodox One*; our Religion and theirs is one in Essentials, and People may be saved in either. It has not been proved, that I deny the Pope to be Antichrist, though many learned Men have denied it; nor do I conceive that our Homilies affirm it; and if they did I don't conceive my self bound to believe every Phrase that is in them. I confess, I have often wish'd a Reconciliation between the Churches of *England* and *Rome* in a Just and Christian way, and was in hopes in due Time to effect it; but a Reconciliation without Truth and Piety I never desired.

*Prynne,*  
p. 556.

*To the Un-churching foreign Protestants.* Laud's Hist. p. 374. *Prynne,* p. 540. To the Objection of the foreign Protestant Churches, I deny that I have endeavoured to sow Discord between them, but I have endeavoured to unite the *Calvinists* and *Lutherans*; nor have I absolutely un-churched them. I say indeed, in my Book against *Fisher*, according to St. *Jerom*, *No Bishop, no Church*; and that none but a Bishop can ordain, except in Cases of inevitable Necessity; and whether that be the Case with the foreign Churches the World must judge. The Judgment of the Church of *England* is, that Church Government by Bishops is unalterable, for the Preface to the Book of Ordination says, That from the Apostles Time there have been three Orders of Ministers in the Church, Bishops, Priests, and Deacons; now, if Bishops are the Apostles Successors, and have continued in the Church above sixteen Hundred Years, what Authority have any Christian States to deprive them of that Right which Christ has given them? As to the *French* and *Dutch Churches* in this Kingdom, I did not question them for their ancient Privileges, but for their new Encroachments, for it was not the Design of the Queen [*Elizabeth*] to harbour them, unless they conformed to the *English* Liturgy; now, I insisted on this only with respect to those who were of the second Descent, and born in *England*; and if all such had been obliged to go to their Parish Churches as they ought, they would not have

*Ibid.*  
p. 378.

have done the Church of *England* so much harm as they have since done. King Charles I. 1644.

To the fourth Objection I answer, that I had no intimate Correspondence with Priests or Jesuits, nor entertained them at my Table, knowing them to be such. I never put my Hand to the Releasing any Priest out of Prison, nor have I connived at the Liberties they assumed; the Witnesses that pretend to prove this are either mean Persons, or strongly prejudiced; and to most of the Facts there is but one Witness. As to the *Nuncios* from *Rome*, it was not in my Power to hinder their coming, the King having condescended to it, at the earnest Request of the Queen; nor had I any particular Intimacy with them whilst they were here; nor do I remember my checking the *Pursuivants* in doing their Duty. But if it could be supposed that I said, *I will have nothing to do with any Priest catching Knaves*, I hope the Words are not Treason; nor is it any Offence not to be a Persecutor, or not to give ill Language to Jesuits; and I do affirm, that I never persecuted any orthodox Ministers or *Puritans*, though I may have prosecuted some for their Schisms and Misdemeanors. To his Corresponding with Popish Priests. Laud's Hist. p. 394.

As to the King's Marrying, 'tis not proved that I had any hand in it, though I acknowledge the Duke of *Buckingham* did me the Honour to make me his Confessor. Nor did I conceal the late Plot to bring in Popery, but discovered it to the King as soon as I had Intelligence of it; for the Truth of which I appeal not only to my Letters, but to the Earl of *Northumberland* here present; who stood up, but said, He remember'd no such Thing.

The Commons replied to the Archbishop's general Defence, that he had been fighting with his own Shadow, for they never objected those Things to him for the Purposes which he mentions; they never objected his Reducing any from Popery, but that many were hardened in it by his means. Nor did they object the Canons or Oath to prove him guilty of introducing M. Reply, Prynne, p. 543.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

ducing Popery, but to quite different Purposes. So that the Archbishop in these, and the other Particulars abovementioned, has given us a Specimen of his Sophistry and Jesuitism, transforming his own Defence into our Charge and Evidence, and making our Objections stand as Proofs of a Fact which they were not in the least intended to support.

To his As-  
suming pa-  
pal Titles  
and Ho-  
nours.

To the Particulars they replied, that the Titles he had assumed were peculiar to the Papacy; that they were never assumed by any Protestant Archbishop before himself; nay, that in the Times of Popery there are hardly any Examples of their being given to *English* Bishops, and that it is Blasphemy to give the Title of *Holiness* in the Abstract to any but God himself; the Archbishop therefore ought, in his Answers to the Letters of the University, to have check'd them, whereas he does not so much as mention these Exorbitancies, nor find the least Fault with them. And though there be a Difference between papal Titles and papal Power, yet certainly his claiming the Title of *Alterius Orbis Papa*, Pope of the other World, is a Demonstration that he was grasping at the same Power in *Great Britain* as the Pope had in *Italy*; and though for prudent Reasons he refused the Cardinal's Hat when it was offer'd, yet when he had made his Terms, and accomplished that Reconciliation between the two Churches that he was contriving, no doubt he would have had his Reward. Sir *Henry Mildmay* being summoned, at the Archbishop's Request, to give in Evidence, how much he was hated and spoke against at *Rome*, swore, That when he was at *Rome* some of the Jesuitical Faction spoke against the Archbishop, because they apprehended he aimed at too great an Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction for himself; but the Seculars commended and applauded him, because of the near Approaches he made to their Church; and shewed himself favourable to their Party. The like Evidence was given by Mr. *Cballoner*, and others.

Prynne,  
p. 413.

And



And whereas the Archbishop had said, that it was <sup>King</sup> not proved, that he forbid Ministers to pray for the <sup>Charles I.</sup> Queen's Conversion, the Managers produced Mr. <sup>1644.</sup> *Hugh Ratcliffe* of *St. Martin's Ludgate*, who swore, <sup>To his For-</sup> That *Sir Nath. Brent* his Vicar General, at a Visita- <sup>bidding to</sup> tion at *Bow Church*, gave in Charge to the Clergy <sup>pray for the</sup> in his hearing, these Words, *Whereas divers of you,* <sup>Queen's</sup> *in your Prayers before Sermon, used to pray for the* <sup>Conversion.</sup> *Queen's Conversion, you are to do so no more, for the* <sup>p. 418.</sup> *Queen does not doubt of her Conversion.* And both before and after, the Archbishop himself caused Mr. <sup>1b. p. 444:</sup> *Bernard*, Mr. *Peters*, and Mr. *Jones*, to be prosecuted in the High Commission on this Account. The Archbishop having said, that he never put his Hand to the Releasing any Priest out of Prison, the Managers produced a Warrant under his own Hand, dated *Jan. 31. 1633.* for the Release of *William Walgrave*, deposed to be a dangerous seducing Priest, in these Words:

“ THESE are to will and command you, to  
 “ set at full Liberty, the Person of *William*  
 “ *Walgrave*, formerly committed to your Custody,  
 “ and for your so doing this shall be your sufficient  
 “ Warrant.

*W. Cant,*  
*R. Ebor.*

But the Archbishop's Memory frequently fail'd him on these Occasions.

His Grace confesses the Church of *Rome* to be <sup>Church of</sup> a true Church, whereas we aver her to be a false <sup>Rome no</sup> and antichristian One, for she has no sure Founda- <sup>true</sup> tion, no true Head, no Ordinances, Sacraments nor <sup>Church.</sup> Worship, no true Ministry, nor Government of <sup>Prynne, p.</sup> Christ's Institution; she yields no true Subjection to <sup>552, &c</sup> Christ's Laws, Word, or Spirit, but is overspread with damnable Errors in Doctrine, and Corruptions in Manners and Worship, and is therefore defined by

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

our Homilies to be a *false Church*. Must she not err in Fundamentals, when she affirms the Church to be built on *Peter*, not upon Christ, and resolves our Faith into the Church, and not into the Scriptures? When she deifies the *Virgin Mary*, and other Saints, by giving them divine Worship, and obliges us to adore the consecrated Bread in the Sacrament as the very Body and Blood of Christ; when she denies the Cup to the Laity, obliges People to pray in an unknown Tongue, and sets up a new Head of the Church instead of Christ, with the Keys of the Kingdom of Heaven at his Girdle? What are these, but fundamental Errors, which nullify the Church that maintains them? The Religion of the Church of *Rome* and ours is not one and the same, for theirs is no Christian Religion, but a Heap of Superstition and Idolatry; and his affirming Salvation may be had in that Church, is contrary to the Opinion of our best Protestant Writers, who make her damnable Errors the Foundation of our Separation from her. And though the Archbishop makes light of his not believing the Pope to be *Antichrist*, we do aver, that our Statutes and Homilies do either in direct or equivalent Expressions define him to be *Antichrist*, and particularly in the Subsidy Act, 3 Jac. penn'd by the Convocation.

To his Re-  
conciling  
the Church  
of Eng-  
land to  
Rome.

But can any Thing more fully demonstrate the Archbishop's Design to reconcile the Church of *England* with *Rome* than his own Confession? He says, he has laboured this Matter with a faithful and single Heart, *Reply to Fisher*, p. 388. though not to the Prejudice of Truth and Piety. But it must be observed, that the Archbishop's Design was not to bring over the Church of *Rome* to us, but to carry us over to them; and what large Advances he has made that way appears, by his setting up Altars, Crucifixes, Images, and other Innovations. What Advance has the Church of *Rome* made towards us? Why none at all; nor is it possible she should, till she lays aside her

her Infallibility. The Pretence, therefore, of the Church of *Rome's* meeting us half way, was a meer <sup>King Charles I.</sup> *Blind* to deceive the People of *England*, till he had <sup>1644.</sup> carried them wholly over into her Territories.

The Archbishop has denied his Endeavours to sow Discord among foreign Protestants, and asserted his Endeavours to reconcile the *Lutherans* and *Calvinists*, though he has produced no Evidence of it; but his late Behaviour towards the *Scots*, on the Account of their having no Bishops, and to the foreign Settlements among our selves, is a sufficient Proof of the contrary. The Maxim that he cites from St. *Jerome*, *No Bishop, no Church*, is a plain perverting of his Sense, for his Words are, *Ubi non est sacerdos, non est ecclesia*; but 'tis well known, that according to St. *Jerome*, Bishops and Presbyters are one and the same in Jurisdiction and Office, and Presbyters have the Power of Ordination as well as Bishops; and therefore this is a Conclusion of the Archbishop's framing, which if it be true, must necessarily Unchurch all the foreign reformed Churches, and render all the Ordinations of their Ministers invalid, which is a sufficient Evidence of his Enmity to them.

As to the *French* and *Dutch* Churches, who were settled by Charter in the Reign of King *Edward VI.* Mr. *Bulsteel's* Book, of the manifold Troubles of those Churches by this Archbishop's Prosecutions, evidently proves, that he invaded and diminished their ancient Immunities and Privileges in all Parts; and that he was so far from being their Friend, that they accounted him their greatest Enemy.

To the fourth Objection, relating to the Archbishop's Correspondence with Popish Priests, we reply, that the Archbishop's Intimacy with Sir *Toby Mathew*, the most active Jesuit in the Kingdom, has been fully proved; that he was sometimes with him in his Barge, sometimes in his Coach, sometimes in private with him in his Garden, and frequently at his Table.

The



King  
Charles I.

1644.

The like has been proved of *Sancta Clara*, St. Giles Leander, Smith, and Price, and we can't but wonder at his denying that he knew them to be Priests, when the Evidence of his Knowledge of some of them has been produced under his own Hand; and the Witnesses for the others were no meaner Persons than the Lords of the Council, and the High Commissioners, (amongst which was himself) employed to apprehend Priests and Delinquents; from whence we conclude, that all the Archbishop's Predecessors since the Reformation had not half the Intimacy with Popish Priests and Jesuits as himself, and his harbouring some of them that were native *English* Men, is within the Statutes of 23 *Eliz.* cap. 1. and 27 *Eliz.* cap. 2. 'Tis very certain, that the Liberty the Jesuits have enjoyed in Prison, and elsewhere, was owing to his Connivance; and though the Archbishop is so happy as not to remember his checking the Officers for their Diligence in apprehending Popish Priests, yet his Distinction between not *persecuting* Papists, and *prosecuting* Puritans, besides the Quibble, is an unanswerable Argument of his Affecti-

Prynne, p.  
458, 448.

on to the one beyond the other.

And Dis-  
countenan-  
cing their  
Prosecutors.  
Prynne,  
p. 446.

The Managers produced six or eight Witnesses to prove the Archbishop's Discountenancing, and threatening such as were active in apprehending Priests and Jesuits. And though he would wash his Hands of the Affair of the Pope's Nuncio, residing here in Character, and holding an intimate Correspondence with the Court, because himself did not appear in it, yet 'tis evident, that Secretary *Windebank*, who was the Archbishop's Creature and Confident, held an avowed Correspondence with them. If he had no Concern in this Affair, should he not, out of regard to the Protestant Religion, and Church of *England*, even to the Hazard of his Archbishoprick, have made some open Protestation, when *Gregorio Panzani* resided here in Character two Years; *Gregorio Con a Scot*, for three Years and two Months; and last of all,

Count

Count Rosetti, till driven away by the present Parliament.

King  
Charles I.

1644.

It has been sufficiently proved, that the Archbishop was concern'd in the *Spanish* and *French* Matches, and in the Instructions given to the Prince at his going to *Spain*, to satisfy the Pope's Nuncio about King James's having declared the Pope to be *Antichrist*; for the Duke of *Buckingham* was the Prince's Director, and himself acknowledged that he was the Duke's Confessor.

And as to the late Plots of *Habernfield* we have own'd in our Evidences, that at first he discover'd it to the King, because he imagined it to be a Plot of the *Puritans*, but when he found the Parties engaged in it to be Papists, and among others, Secretary *Windebank* and Sir *Toby Mathew*, his own Creatures, he then concealed his Papers, call'd it a sham Plot, and brow-beat the Informers, whereas he ought at least to have laid it before the Parliament, that they might have sifted it to the Bran. But that it was a real Plot, his own Diary, together with our later Discoveries, fully prove; and his Concealment of it, we conceive to be an high and treasonable Offence, tending to subvert the Protestant Religion, and subject us to the Church of *Rome*.

To his Con-  
cealing  
Habern-  
field's Plot.  
Prynne,  
p. 564, &c.

Thus we humbly conceive, we have made a satisfactory Reply to all the Archbishop's Answers, and have fully made good the whole of our Charge, namely, that *the Archbishop has traiterously endeavoured to destroy our civil Liberties, and to introduce Tyranny and arbitrary Power*; and, *secondly, that He has endeavoured to subvert the Protestant Religion established by Law in these Kingdoms, and to subject us to the Church of Rome*; wherefore we do, in the Name of all the Commons of *England*, pray Judgment against him as a Traytor.

The Mana-  
gers Con-  
clusion.

Before the Archbishop withdrew from the Bar he moved the Lords, that considering the Length of his Trial, and the Distance of Time between the several Days

Abp's  
Speech at  
the Close of  
the Trial.  
Laud's  
Hist. p.  
Days 412, 419.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

Days of hearing, they would allow him a Day that he might set before their Lordships in one View the whole of the Commons Charge, and his Defence; to which they condescended, and appointed *Sept. 2.* which was five Weeks from the last Day of his Trial. When the Archbishop appeared at the Bar he began with a moving Address, beseeching their Lordships to consider his Calling, his Age, his long Imprisonment, his Sufferings, his Patience, and the Sequestration of his Estate. He then complained, (1.) Of the Uncertainty and Generality of the Commons Charge. (2.) Of the short Time that was allowed him for his Answer. (3.) That he had been sifted to the Bran, and had his Papers taken from him. (4.) That the Things he had taken most Pains in, were for the publick Good, and done at his own great Expence, as the Repair of *St. Paul's*, and the Statutes of *Oxford*. (5.) That many of the Witnesses were Sectaries and Schismatics, whereas by the Canon Law, *No Schismatick should be heard against his Bishop*. He complain'd also of the Number of Witnesses produced against him, which were above one Hundred and fifty; whereas the Civil Law says, that the Judges should moderate Things so as no Man should be oppressed with the Multitude of Witnesses. (6.) That he had been charged with passionate and hasty Words, which he hopes their Lordships will pardon as human Frailties. (7.) That other Mens Actions had been laid to his Charge, as those of his Chaplains, and the Actions of the High Commission and Star Chamber, which he insists cannot by any Law be put upon him, it being a known Rule, *Refertur ad universos quod publicè fit per majorem partem*. He then went over the particular Charges abovementioned, and concluded with a Request, that when the Commons had replied to the Facts, his Council might be heard as to Matters of Law. The Commons replied to the Archbishop's Speech *Sept. 11.* and the same Day his Council delivered in these two Queries, (1.) *Whether in all, or*  
any



any of the Articles charged against the Archbishop, there be contained any Treason by the established Laws of this Kingdom. (2.) Whether the Impeachment and Articles did contain such Certainties and Particularities as is required by Law in Cases of Treason. The Lords sent down the Queries to the Commons, who, after they had refer'd them to a Committee of Lawyers, agreed that the Archbishop's Council might be heard to the first Query, but not to the second. Accordingly, October 11. the Archbishop being present at the Bar, Mr. Hearn proposed to argue these two general Questions.

King Charles I.  
1644.

Points of Law debated.

Laud's Hist.  
P. 423.

(1.) "Whether there be at this Day any other Treason than what is enacted by the Statute of 25th Edward III. cap. 2. or enacted by some other subsequent Statute?"

Mr. Hearn's Argument.

(2.) "Whether any of the Matters, in any of the Articles charged against the Archbishop, contain any of the Treasons declared by that Law, or enacted by any subsequent Law?"

And for the clearing of both these he humbly insisted, that an "Endeavour to subvert the Laws, the Protestant Religion, and the Rights of Parliament, which are the Three general Charges to which all the Particulars alledged against the Archbishop may be reduced, is not Treason within the Statute of 25 Edward III. nor any other particular Statute."

Ibid.  
P. 424.  
425.

In Maintenance of this Proposition he observed, First, "That the Particulars alledged against the Archbishop were not within the Letter of the Statute of the 25th Edward III. and then argued, that the Statutes of this Land ought not to be construed by Equity or Inference, because they are declarative Laws, and were designed for the Security of the Subject in his Life, Liberty and Estate; and because since the Time of Henry IV. no Judgment has been given in Parliament for any Treason not expressly contained, or declared in that, or some other Statute, but by Bill; from whence it will follow, that

King Charles I. 1644. " that the Particulars charged against the Archbi-  
shop, being only an *Endeavour to subvert funda-  
mental Laws*, are of so great Latitude and Uncer-  
tainty, that every Action not warranted by Law  
may be extended to Treason, though there is no  
particular Statute to make it so. If it be re-  
plied, that the Statute of 25 *Edward III.* takes no-  
tice of *compassing or imagining*, we answer, it con-  
fines it to the Death of the King; but an *Endea-  
vour to subvert the Laws of the Realm*, is no deter-  
minate Crime by the Laws of *England*, but has  
been esteemed an Aggravation of a Crime, and  
has been usually join'd as the Result of some other  
Offence below Treason."

Laud's  
Hist.  
p. 427.

Ibid. p. 429. " The like may be observed to the second Charge,  
of *Endeavouring to subvert Religion*; 'tis not Trea-  
son by the Letter of any Law established in this  
Kingdom, for the Statute of 1 *Edward VI. cap. 12.*  
makes it but Felony to attempt an Alteration of Reli-  
gion by force, which is the worse kind of Attempt.

" As to the third Charge, of *Endeavouring to sub-  
vert the Rights of Parliament*. We insist on the  
same Reply that was made under the first Head.  
We allow, that by the Statute of 5 *Jac. cap. 4.*  
'tis provided, that if any Man shall put in Practice  
to reconcile any of his Majesty's Subjects to the  
Pope or See of *Rome* it shall be deem'd *Treason*;  
but we conceive this does not reach the Archbi-  
shop, because, (1.) He is charged only with an  
*Endeavour*, whereas in the Statute it is *putting in  
Practice*. (2.) Because the Archbishop is charged  
with reconciling the Church of *England* with the  
Church of *Rome*, whereas in the Statute it is recon-  
ciling any of his Majesty's Subjects to the See of  
*Rome*; now reconciling *with*, may as well be con-  
strued a Reducing *Rome* to *England*, as *England* to  
*Rome*.

Ib. p. 430.

" Thus, says Mr. Hearn, we have endeavoured to  
make it appear, that none of the Matters in any  
" of

“ of the Articles charged are Treason within the Let-  
 “ ter of the Law ; indeed, the Crimes, as they are laid King Charles I.  
 “ in the Charge, are many and great, but their Num- 1644.  
 “ ber cannot make them exceed their Nature ; and  
 “ if they be but Crimes and Misdemeanors apart,  
 “ below Treason, they cannot be made Treason by  
 “ putting them together.”

These Arguments of the Archbishop's Council stagger'd the House of *Lords* ; nor could the Managers for the Commons satisfy them in their Reply ; they had no Doubts about the Truth of the Facts, but *whether any of them were Treason by the Laws of the Land* ? This the *Judges* very much question'd, and therefore the Lords deferr'd giving Judgment till the Commons thought fit to take another Method to obtain it.

Various are the Accounts of the Archbishop's Behaviour on his Trial ; his Friends and Admirers flatter'd him beyond Measure, and said, that he perfectly triumphed over his Accusers ; and his Grace seems to be of the same Mind, when he tells us, that *all Laud's Men magnified his Answer to the House of Commons, but Hist.*  
*he forbore to set down in what Language, because it was P. 441.*  
*high.* Mr. Prynne allows, that “ he made as full, as Prynne;  
 “ gallant and pithy a Defence, and spake as much P. 462.  
 “ for himself as was possible for the Wit of Man  
 “ to invent ; and that with so much Art, Sophi-  
 “ stry, Vivacity, Oratory, Audacity and Confi-  
 “ dence, without the least Blush, or Acknowledg-  
 “ ment of Guilt in any Thing, as argued him ra-  
 “ ther Obstinate than Innocent, Impudent than Pe-  
 “ nitent, and a far better Orator and Sophister than  
 “ Protestant or Christian.” But then he imputes his Boldness to the King's Pardon, which he had in his Pocket.

Bishop Burnet is of Opinion, that “ in most of the *Hist. of his*  
 “ Particulars the Archbishop made but frivolous Ex- *Life, Vol. I.*  
 “ cuses ; as, that he was but *one of many*, who either P. 50.  
 “ in



King  
Charles I.  
1644.

“ in Council, Star Chamber, or High Commission,  
“ voted illegal Things. Now, though this was  
“ true, yet a *chief Minister*, and one in high Favour;  
“ determines the rest so much, that they are little  
“ better than Machines acted by him. On other  
“ Occasions he says, the Thing was proved but by  
“ one Witness. Now, how strong soever this De-  
“ fence may be in Law, it is of no Force in an Ap-  
“ peal to the World; for if a Thing be true, 'tis no  
“ matter how full or defective the Proof is.”

His Cha-  
racter of  
the Wit-  
nesses.

The Archbishop himself has informed us of his great  
Patience under the hard Usage he met with at his Tri-  
al; but his Diary furnishes too many Examples to the  
contrary, for it appears from thence, that he some-  
times gave the Witnesses very rude Language at the  
Bar, insinuating to the Court, that many of them  
were perjur'd; that their Evidence was the Effect of  
Malice, Envy, and a Thirst after his Blood: Some-  
times he threaten'd them with the Judgments of God,  
and once he was going to bind their Sins upon one of  
them not to be forgiven till he asked pardon; but he  
recovered himself. He is pleased sometimes to ob-  
serve, that his Crimes were proved but by *one Wit-  
ness*; and yet, at last, he complains, that he was op-  
pressed with Numbers, no less than one Hundred and  
fifty, and calls them, “ A Pack of such Witnesses

Laud's  
Hist.

p. 237.

Ib. p. 417.

“ as were never produced against any Man of his  
“ Place and Calling; *Pursuivants, Messengers, Pillo-  
“ ry-Men, Bawds*; and such as had shifted their Re-  
“ ligion to and again.” And yet there were among  
them Men of the best Fashion and Quality in the  
Kingdom, as Sir *H. Vane*, sen. Sir *H. Mildmay*, Sir  
*William Balfore*, Sir *Nath. Brent*, Vicar General; sun-  
dry Aldermen of the City of *London*, and many excel-  
lent Divines, as Dr. *Featly*, Dr. *Haywood* the Arch-  
bishop's Chaplain, Mr. *Dell* his Secretary, Mr. *Of-  
baldiston*, and others, of an equal, if not superior

Ib. p. 434. Character. When his *Grace* was check'd at the Bar  
for

for reflecting upon the Witnesses, and put in mind by the Managers, that some of them were Aldermen, some Gentlemen, and some Men of Quality, he replied smartly, "*That is nothing, there is not an active Separatist in England but his Hand is against me; both Gentlemen, Aldermen, and Men of all Conditions, are Separatists from the Church of England, and I would to God some of my Judges were not.*"

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

After this it can hardly be expected, that the Managers for the Commons should escape his Grace's Censure; it must be admitted, that in the Course of their Evidence they made use of some harsh Expressions, which nothing but the Character they sustained could excuse; but it was no Argument of the Archbishop's Patience and Discretion, to fight them at their own Weapons. The Managers were Serjeant Maynard, one of the ablest Lawyers of his Age; he lived to be the Father of his Profession; and when the Prince of

His Cen-  
sure of the  
Managers.

Laud's  
Hist.  
p. 330.

ORANGE [afterwards King WILLIAM III.] complimented him upon his having out-lived all his Brethren of the Law, he made this handsome Reply, that if it had not been for the wonderful REVOLUTION that his Highness had brought about, he should have out-lived the Law it self. He managed the first Part of the Evidence March 13th, 16th, 18th, and 28th. "This Gentleman (says the Archbishop) pleaded, though strongly, yet fairly against me."

Serjeant Wild was the Son of Serjeant George Wild, of Droitwich in Worcestershire; he was afterwards Reader of the Inner Temple, a great Lawyer, and of unblemished Morals. After the Restoration of King Charles II. he was made Lord Chief Baron, and esteemed a grave and venerable Judge. He managed that part of the Evidence which concerned Religion, May 20, 27. June 6, 11, 17, 20, and 27. July 20, and 24. but "this Gentleman, says the Archbishop, tho' he had Language good enough sometimes, he had little or no Sense. I had a Character given me before of him, which I forbear to express, but

Ibid.  
p. 330;  
320.

King Charles I. "by his Proceedings with me I found it exactly true."

1644.

*Samuel Browne*, Esq; was an able and grave Lawyer; In the Reign of King *Charles II.* he was knighted, and made Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas; he summed up the whole Evidence at the Lord's Bar. "His Behaviour towards the Archbishop was decent and civil, but his Pleadings (according to his Grace) very unfair; the Archbishop blames him for not using his own Notes, but copying other Mens. This is most Christian-like in Mr. *Browne* (says he) but it may be he learn'd it out of the Notes his Father-in-law takes at Sermons."

*Robert Nicolas*, Esq; press'd the Archbishop very hard, and therefore no wonder that he was displeased with him. The Archbishop allows, that he had some Sense, but extream virulent and foul Language. He managed the second and fourth Branches of the Evidence April 16. May 4, 16. July 29. This Gentleman happening to call the Archbishop *Pander to the Whore of Babylon*; the Archbishop bids him remember, "That one of his zealous Witnesses against the Whore of *Babylon* got all his Means by being a *Pander* to other lewd Women, and was not long since taken in Bed with one of his Wife's Maids. Good Mr. *Nicolas* (says he) do not dispense with all Whores but the Whore of *Babylon*!"

As for Mr. *Hill*, the other Manager, he is called *Consul Bibulus*, because he said nothing. Upon the whole the Archbishop is of Opinion, that the Managers for the Commons sought his Blood; "and made false Constructions, for which (says he) I am confident they shall answer at another Bar, and for something else in these Proceedings."

Such was the unhappy Spirit of this Prelate, who, though he had seen the violent Effects of his ill Counsels, and had been so long shut up, and so



“ much at leisure to reflect upon what had past in the  
 “ Hurry of Passion, and in the Exaltation of his  
 “ Prosperity, yet (as Bishop *Burnet* observes) he  
 “ does not in any one part of his Diary acknowledge  
 “ his own Errors, nor mix any wise or pious Refle-  
 “ ctions upon the unhappy Steps he had made.” It  
 was, no doubt, a great Mortification to his high Spirit,  
 to be exposed to the People, and to wait sometimes  
 an Hour or two before he was called to the Bar; but  
 as for his Charity and Patience under his Sufferings, I  
 must leave it with the Reader.

King  
 Charles I.  
 1644.

While the Proceedings against the Archbishop were at a stand, by reason of the Lords being dissatisfied, *Petitions for Justice against him.*  
*Whether the Facts proved against him were Treason by Statute Law;* the Citizens of London got together, and presented a Petition to the House of Commons, *Octob. 28th.* sign'd with great Numbers of Hands, praying for speedy Justice against Delinquents, and particularly against the Archbishop; which was, no doubt, an artful Contrivance of his Enemies. The Commons, to prevent all further Delays, determined not to press the Lords for Judgment upon the Trial, but ordered a Bill of Attainder to be brought in; and when it had been twice read, the Archbishop was brought to the Bar of the House of Commons, to hear the Evidence on which it proceeded, and to make what further Defence he thought proper; Mr. *Browne* summ'd up the Charge, *Nov. 2.* and the Archbishop had nine Days given him to prepare his Defence. *Nov. 11.* he spoke for himself some Hours at the Bar of the House of Commons, and Mr. *Browne* replied before the Archbishop withdrew; after which the Bill of Attainder past the House the very same Day with but one dissenting Voice, and that not upon the Matter of the Charge, but upon the Manner of Proceeding. The Bill being sent up to the Lords they made an Order, *Dec. 4.* *That all Books, Writings, &c. concerning the Archbishop's Trial, should be brought in to the Clerk of the Parliament, which*  
 R 2 being

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

Condemn'd  
by Bill of  
Attainder.

being done, they examined over again, all the Heads, and principal Parts of the Evidence, and voted each Particular as they went forward; so tender were they of the Life of this Prelate, and so careful to maintain the Honour and Justice of their Proceedings. When they had gone through the Whole, they voted him guilty of all the Facts charged against him, in three Branches, namely, *Guilty of endeavouring to subvert the Laws;—Of endeavouring to overthrow the Protestant Religion, — And the Rights of Parliaments.* After this they sent a Message to the Commons, to desire them to answer the Argument of the Archbishop's Council, as to the Point of Law, which they accordingly did at a Conference, Jan. 2. when Serjeant *Wild*, Mr. *Browne*, and Mr. *Nicolas*, having given the Reason of the Commons for their Attainder, the Lords were satisfied, and Jan. 4. passed the Bill, whereby it was ordained, that he should suffer Death as in Cases of High Treason. To stop the Consequence of this Attainder the Archbishop produced the King's Pardon under the *Great Seal*, sign'd April 12. 19th Car. but it was over-rul'd by both Houses, 1. Because it was granted before Conviction. And, 2. If it had been subsequent, yet in the present Case of Treason they argued, that the King could not pardon a Judgment of Parliament, especially as the Nation was in a State of War; for, if the King's Pardon was a Protection, not a Defenter, nor a Spy, nor an Incendiary of any kind against the Parliament, would have suffer'd in his Life or Liberty.

Whicl.  
Mem.  
P. 117.

All the Favour therefore the Archbishop could obtain, was, upon his Petition, to have his Sentence altered from hanging to being beheaded on *Tower-Hill*, which was appointed to be on *Friday, Jan. 10.* when the Archbishop, being conducted to the Scaffold, attended by his Chaplain, Dr. *Stern*, and by Mr. *Marshall* and *Palmer*, sent by the Parliament, read his last Speech to the People, which was a Sort of Sermon, from *Heb. xii. 2. Let us run with Patience the Race that is set before us, looking*

His last  
Speech.

unto

unto Jesus, the Author and Finisher of our Faith, who, for the Joy that was set before him, endured the Cross, despising the Shame, and is sat down at the right Hand of the Throne of God. In which he acknowledges himself to have been a great Sinner; but having ransack'd every Corner of his Heart, he thanks God, that he has not found any of his Sins deserving Death by any of the known Laws of the Kingdom, though he does not charge his Judges because they are to proceed according to Evidence — He thanks God that he is as quiet within, as ever he was in his Life, and hopes that his Cause in Heaven will look of another Colour than it does here. It is clamour'd against me (says he) that I designed to bring in Popery, but I pray God, that the Pope does not come in by means of these Sectaries which clamour so much against me. As for the King, he assures the World, that he is as sound a Protestant as any Man in the Kingdom, and would venture as freely for it. He complains of the Citizens for gathering Hands to Petitions, and particularly against himself, whereby they were bringing the Guilt of innocent Blood upon themselves and their City. He laments the Ruins of the Hierarchy, and concludes with declaring himself a true Protestant, according to the Church of England established by Law, and takes it upon his Death, that *he never endeavoured the Subversion of the Laws of the Realm, nor any Change of the Protestant Religion into Popish Superstition; nor was he an Enemy to Parliaments.*

In his last Prayer he desires that God would give him Patience to die for his Honour, for the King's Happiness, and the Church of England. He then prays for the Preservation of the King in his just Rights; for the Parliament in their ancient and just Power; for the Church, that it may be settled in Truth and Peace, and in its Patrimony; and for the People, that they may enjoy their ancient Laws, and other Liberties; and then, ha-  
R 3
And Prays  
ser.  
ving



*King*  
*Charles I.*  
 1644.  
 ving forgiven his Enemies, he concluded with the Lord's Prayer. After which he gave his Paper to Dr. *Sterne*, saying, Doctor, I give you this, to shew your fellow Chaplains, that they may see how I am gone out of the World, and God's Blessing, and his Mercy be upon them. When the Scaffold was cleared, he pulled off his Doublet, and said, *God's Will be done, I am willing to go out of the World; no Man can be more willing to send me out.* Then turning to the Executioner he gave him some Money, and bid him do his Office in Mercy; he then kneeled down, and after a short Prayer, laid his Head on the Block, and said, *Lord Jesus receive my Spirit*; which being the Sign, the Executioner did his Office at one Blow. The Archbishop's Corpse was put into a Coffin, and by the Permission of Parliament buried in *Barkin Church*, with the Service of the Church read over him. The Inscription upon the Coffin was this, *In hac cistula conduntur Exuvie Gulielmi Laud, Archiepiscopi Cantuariensis, qui securi percussus Immortalitatem adiit, die x<sup>o</sup> Januarii, Ætatis suæ 72. Archiepiscopus xii.* But after the Restoration, his Body was removed to *Oxford*, and deposited with great Solemnity in a brick Vault, according to his last Will and Testament, near the Altar of the Chapel of *St. John Baptist College*, July 24. 1663.

*His Character.*

Thus died Dr. WILLIAM LAUD, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, Primate of all *England*, and Metropolitan; some Time Chancellor of the Universities of *Oxford* and *Dublin*, one of the Commissioners of his Majesty's Exchequer, and Privy Counsellor to the King, in the Seventy second Year of his Age, and twelfth of his Archiepiscopal Translation. He was of low Stature, and a ruddy Countenance; his natural Temper was severe and uncourtly, his Spirit active and restless, which push'd him upon the most hazardous Enterprizes. His Conduct was rash and precipitate, for according to Dr. *Heylin*, he attempt-

ed

ed more Alterations in the Church in one Year, than a prudent Man would have done in a great many. His Counsels in *State Affairs* were high and arbitrary, for he was at the Head of all the illegal Projects, of Ship-Money, Loans, Monopolies, Star-Chamber Fines, &c. which were the Ruin of the King and Constitution.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

His Maxims in the *Church* were no less severe, for he sharpen'd the spiritual Sword, and drew it against all Sorts of Offenders, intending (as Lord Clarendon observes) that the Discipline of the Church should be felt as well as spoken of. There had not been such a Crowd of Business in the *High Commission Court* since the Reformation, nor so many large Fines imposed, as under this Prelate's Administration, with little or no Abatement, because they were assigned to the Repair of *St. Paul's*, which gave occasion to an unlucky Proverb, that the *Church was repaired with the Sins of the People*.

As to the Archbishop's Religion, he declared himself, upon the Scaffold, a Protestant, according to the Constitution of the Church of *England*, but with more Charity to the Church of *Rome* than to the foreign Protestants; and though he was an avowed Enemy to Sectaries and Fanaticks of all Sorts, yet he had a great deal of Superstition in his *Make*, as appears from those Passages in his Diary, in which he takes Notice of his Dreams, of the Falling down of Pictures, of the Bleeding of his Nose, of auspicious and inauspicious Days of the Year, and of the Position of the Stars; a Variety of which may be collected out of that Performance.

His Grace must be allowed to have had a considerable Share of Knowledge, and to have been a learned Man, though he was more a Man of Business than of Letters. He was a great Benefactor to the College in which he was educated, enriching it with a Variety of valuable Manuscripts. besides five Hundred Pounds in Money. He gave

Diary,  
p. 56.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

eight Hundred Pounds to the Repair of the Cathedral of *St. Paul*, and sundry other Legacies of the like Nature. But with all his Accomplishments he was a cruel Persecutor, as long as he was in Power, and the chief Incendiary in the War between the King and Parliament, the Calamities of which are in a great Measure chargeable upon him. "That which gave me the strongest Prejudices against him (says Bishop *Burnet*) is that, in his Diary, after he had seen the ill Effects of his violent Counsels, and had been so long shut up, and so long at leisure to reflect on what had passed in the Hurry of Passion, in the Exaltation of his Prosperity, he does not in any one part of that great Work acknowledge his own Errors, nor mix any wise or serious Reflections on the ill Usage he met with, or the unhappy Steps he had made." The Bishop adds withal, "That he was a learned, sincere, and zealous Man, regular in his own Life, and humble in his private Deportment, but hot and indiscreet, eagerly pursuing such Matters as were either very inconsiderable or mischievous; such as settling the Communion Table by the East Wall of the Church, bowing to it, and calling it an *Altar*, suppressing the *Walloon* Privileges, breaking of Lectures, and encouraging of Sports on the Lord's Day, &c. His Severity in the Star Chamber, and in the High Commission Court; but above all his violent, and indeed inexcusable Injustice, in the Prosecution of Bishop *Williams*, were such visible Blemishes, that nothing but the putting him to Death in so unjust a Manner could have raised his Character. His Diary represents him as an abject Fawner upon the Duke of *Buckingham*, and as a superstitious Regarder of Dreams; his Defence of himself, writ with so much Care when he was in the *Tower*, is a very mean Performance; and his Friends have really lessen'd him; *Heylin* by writing his Life, and *Wharton* by publishing his Vindication of himself."

Hist. of his  
Life,  
Vol. I.  
p. 49, 50.



“ self.” Mr. *Rapin* adds, “ Let the Archbishop’s <sup>King</sup>  
 “ Favourers say what they please, he was one of the <sup>Charles I.</sup>  
 “ chief Authors of the Troubles that afflicted Eng- <sup>1644.</sup>  
 “ land, First, By supporting with all his Might the <sup>Rapin,</sup>  
 “ Principles of that arbitrary Power which the Court Vol. XII  
 “ strove for several Years to establish. Secondly, By <sup>p. 254.</sup>  
 “ using too much Strictness and Rigidity in the Ob-  
 “ servance of Trifles in divine Service, and in com-  
 “ pelling every body to conform themselves there-  
 “ to.” To which I would beg leave to add, that  
 since nothing relating to the Doctrine or Discipline  
 of the Church of *England* establish’d by Law was  
 objected to him at his Trial, but only certain  
 Innovations in the Church, without or contrary  
 to Law, I cannot conceive with what Propriety of  
 Language his Friends and Admirers have canoniz-  
 ed him as the *blessed Martyr of the Church of Eng-*  
*land.*

The last, and most memorable Transaction of this <sup>Treaty of</sup>  
 Year, was the Treaty of *Uxbridge*. His Majesty had <sup>Uxbridge.</sup>  
 sent the two Houses sundry Propositions for Peace <sup>1644.</sup>  
 last Summer, which took them up a great deal of  
 Time to form into Propositions for his Majesty’s As-  
 sent. The Commissioners were two Lords, four Com-  
 moners, and those of the *Scots* Commissioners; they  
 arrived at *Oxford* Nov. 26. but though the King had  
 given them a safe Conduct, Mr. *Whitlock* observes,  
 they met with very rude Treatment from the Popu-  
 lace, who saluted them as they passed along the  
 Streets with the Names of *Traytors, Rogues, and Re-*  
*bels*, throwing Stones and Dirt into their Coaches;  
 when they came to their Inn they were insulted by the  
 Soldiers, so that they were obliged to shut up the  
 Doors till the King ordered them a Guard. When they <sup>Whitlock,</sup>  
 delivered their Propositions, his Majesty received <sup>p. 114.</sup>  
 them but coldly; and because they were only to re-  
 ceive his Answer, told them, *a Letter Carrier might*  
*have done as well.* Next Day his Majesty gave them  
 his

King his Answer in writing sealed up; and when they de-  
 Charles I. fired to see it, he replied with a Frown, *What is it to*  
 1644. *you, who are but to carry what I send; if I will send the*  
*Song of Robin Hood, or Little John, you must carry*  
*it.* But at length they obtained a Copy, which was  
 only to desire a safe Conduct for the Duke of *Lenox*  
 and Earl of *Southampton* to come to *London* with his  
 Majesty's Answer; but the Letter not being directed  
 to the *Parliament of England*, the Houses would not  
 consent but upon that Condition. The King's Coun-  
 cil advised him to yield, but could not prevail, till  
 his Majesty had found out an Evasion, and enter'd it  
 upon Record in the Council Books, as appears by his  
 Letter to the Queen, dated *Jan. 2.* in which he says,

King's Ca- " That his calling them a Parliament did not imply  
 binet open- " his acknowledging them as such; upon which Con-  
 ed. " struction, and no other (says he) I called them,  
 Whitlock, " as it is register'd in the Councils-Books, and if  
 p. 277. " there had been but two of my Opinion (says the  
 " King) I would not have done it." In another in-  
 tercepted Letter to the Queen he tells her, " He  
 " could not prevail with his Parliament at *Oxford* to  
 " vote those at *Westminster* no Parliament, but as-  
 " sures her, he would not make Peace without her  
 " *Approbation*, nor go one Jot beyond the Pa-  
 " per she sent him." In another the King in-  
 forms his Queen, " That the Parliament were send-  
 " ing him Propositions for Peace, which I F SHE  
 " LIKES, he thinks may be the best way for  
 " Settlement as Things stand;" so that the Fate  
 of *England* was to be determin'd by the Queen and  
 her Popish Council. Besides, his Majesty was un-  
 happily elevated at this Time by the Divisions at  
*Westminster*, which produced the new Modeling the  
 Army; and with a false and romantick Account of  
 the Successes of the Marquis of *Montross* in *Scotland*,  
 which were so magnified, that it was expected the  
*Scots* must immediately march back into their own  
 Country; whereas, in reality, they were not so con-  
 siderable,

siderable, as to oblige them to draw off a single Regiment.

King  
Charles I.  
1643.

In this Situation of Affairs it was agreed, according to the Proposals of the King's Commissioners, that there should be a Treaty of Peace at *Uxbridge*, to commence *Jan. 30. 1643.* and to continue twenty Days.

There were sixteen Commissioners for the King, *The Commissioners.* nine Lords, six Commoners, and one Divine; twelve for the Parliament, and ten for the *Scots*, and one Divine, (*viz.*) Mr. *Henderson*; the King's Divine was Dr. *Steward*, who was assisted by Dr. *Sheldon*, *Laney*, *Fern*, *Potter*, and *Hammond*. Assistant Divines for the Parliament were Mr. *Vines*, *Marshall*, *Cheyne*, and *Chiefly*. These with their Retinue, to the Number of one Hundred and eight Persons, were included in the safe Conduct.


The Propositions to be treated of were *Religion*, the *Militia*, and *Ireland*; each of which were to be debated three Days successively, till the twenty Days were expired.

The Treaty was preceeded by a Day of Fasting and Prayer on both Sides for a Blessing, but was interrupted the very first Day, by a Sermon preached occasionally in the Church of *Uxbridge* by Mr. *Love*, then Preacher to the Garrison of *Windſor*, wherein he had said, that they [his Majesty's Commissioners] *came thither with Hearts full of Blood, and that there was as great a Distance between this Treaty and Peace, as between Heaven and Hell.* The Commissioners having complained of him next Day, the Parliament Commissioners laid it before the two Houses, who sent for him to *London*, where he gave this Account of the Affair; that the People being under a Disappointment at their Lecture, he was desired unexpectedly to give them a Sermon; which was the same he had preached at *Windſor* the Day before. He admits that he cautioned the People not to have too great a Dependance upon the Treaty, because, " whilst our Enemies  
" (says

Mr. Love's  
Sermon.

Dugdale's  
Treaty of  
Uxbridge,  
p. 764.



King Charles I. 1647.  “ (says he) go on in their wicked Practices, and we keep to our Principles, we may as soon make Fire and Water to agree; and I had almost said, reconcile Heaven and Hell, as their Spirits and ours. They must grow better, or we must grow worse, before 'tis possible for us to agree.” He added further, “That there was a Generation of Men that carried Blood and Revenge in their Hearts against the well affected in the Nation, who hated not only their Bodies but their Souls, and in their Cups would drink an Health to their Damnation.” Though there might be some Truth in what the Preacher said, yet these Expressions were unbecoming a private Person in so nice a Conjunction; he was therefore confined to his House during the Treaty, and then discharged.

Rapin,  
p. 278.

It was too evident, that neither Party come to the Treaty with a healing Spirit; the King's Commissioners were under such Restraints, that little good was to be expected from them, and the Parliament Commissioners would place no manner of Confidence in his Majesty's Promises, nor abate any Thing of a full Security for themselves and the Constitution. The King therefore, in his Letter to the Queen of Jan. 22. assures her of the utter Improbability that this present Treaty should produce a Peace, “Considering the great, and strange Difference, if not contrariety of Grounds that were between the Rebels Propositions and his; and that I cannot alter mine, nor will they ever theirs, but by force.”

Of the Militia.

We shall but just mention the Propositions relating to the Militia and Ireland, our principal View being to Religion. The King's Commissioners proposed to put the Militia into the Hands of TRUSTEES for three Years, half to be named by the King, and half by the Parliament, and then to revert absolutely to the Crown on pain of High Treason. But the Parliament Commissioners replied, that by the King's naming half the Commissioners the Militia would be render'd unactive, and that

that after three Years they should be in a worse Condition than before the War; they therefore proposed, that *the Parliament should name the Commissioners for seven Years, and then to be settled as the King and Parliament should agree, or else to limit their Nomination to three Years after the King and Parliament should declare the Kingdom to be in a settled Peace.* It had been easy to form this Proposition, so as both Parties might have complied with Honour and Safety, if they had been in earnest for an Accommodation; but his Majesty's Commissioners could yield no further.

King  
Charles I.  
1643.  
Rapin,  
p. 287.

As to *Ireland*, the King's Commissioners justified his Majesty's Proceedings in the Cessation, and in sending for the Rebels over to fill up his Armies; and when the Commissioners on the other side put them in mind of his Majesty's solemn Promises to leave that Affair to the Parliament, and to have those Rebels punished according to Law; the others replied, "They wished it was in his Majesty's Power to punish all Rebellion according as it deserved; but since it was otherwise, he must condescend to Treaties, and to all other Expedients necessary to reduce his rebellious Subjects to their Duty and Obedience." Admirable Arguments to induce the Parliament to put the Sword into the King's Hands!

The Article of *Religion* was, in the Opinion of Lord *Clarendon*, of less Consequence with many in the Parliament House, for if they could have obtained a *Security for their Lives and Fortunes*, he apprehends this might have been accommodated, tho', considering the Influence of the *Scots*, and the growing Strength of the Presbyterian and Independant Parties, 'tis very much to be doubted. However, this being the first Thing debated in the Treaty, and a Church Controversy, it will be proper to represent the Instructions on both Sides. While this was upon the Carpet Dr. *Steward*, Clerk of the Closet, and a Commissioner for the King, sat covered without the Bar, behind the Commissioners;

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

King's In-  
structions  
to his Com-  
missioners.  
Rushw.  
Vol. V.  
p. 887.

missioners; as did Mr. *Henderson* behind those of the Parliament. The Assistant Divines were present in Places appointed for them, opposite to each other.

His Majesty's Instructions to his Commissioners on the Head of Religion were these: "Here (says the King) the Government of the Church will be the chief Question, wherein two Things are to be considered, *Conscience* and *Policy*; for the *First*, I must declare, that I can't yield to the Change of the Government by Bishops, not only because I fully concur with the most general Opinion of Christians in all Ages, in Episcopacy's being the best Government, but likewise I hold my self particularly bound by the Oath I took at my Coronation, not to alter the Government of this Church from what I found it; and as for the Church Patrimony, I can't suffer any Diminution or Alienation of it, it being, without peradventure, Sacrilege, and likewise contrary to my Coronation Oath; but whatsoever shall be offered for rectifying Abuses, if any have crept in, or for the Ease of tender Consciences, (provided the Foundation be not damaged) I am content to hear, and willing to return a gracious Answer. Touching the *Second*, That is the Point of *Policy*, as it is the King's Duty to protect the Church, so the Church is reciprocally bound to assist the King in the Maintenance of his just Authority. Upon these Views my Predecessors have been always careful (especially since the Reformation) to keep the Dependence of the Clergy entirely upon the Crown, without which it will scarce set fast on the King's Head, therefore you must do nothing to change or lessen this natural Dependence."

Parliament's In-  
structions.  
Dugdale,  
p. 766.

The Commissioners from the two Houses of Parliament at *Westminster*, instead of being instructed to treat about a Reformation of the Hierarchy, were ordered to demand the passing of a Bill for abolishing and taking away Episcopal Government; for confirming



firming the Ordinance for the Calling and Sitting of the Assembly of Divines; that the Directory for publick Worship, and the Propositions concerning Church Government, hereunto annexed, be confirmed as a Part of Reformation of Religion and Uniformity; that his Majesty take the *Solemn League and Covenant*, and that an Act of Parliament be passed, enjoining the taking it by all the Subjects of the three Kingdoms.

*King Charles I.*  
1644.

The Propositions annex'd to these Demands were these (*viz.*) " That the ordinary Way of dividing Christians into distinct Congregations, as most expedient for Edification, be by the respective Bounds of their Dwellings.

" That the Ministers, and other Church-Officers in each particular Congregation, shall join in the Government of the Church in such manner as shall be established by Parliament.

" That many Congregations shall be under one Presbyterial Government.

" That the Church be governed by Congregational, Classical, and Synodical Assemblies, in such manner as shall be established by Parliament.

" That Synodical Assemblies shall consist both of Provincial and National Assemblies."

One may easily observe the Distance between the Instructions of the two Parties; one being determined to maintain Episcopacy, and the other no less resolute for establishing Presbytery. After several Papers had past between the Commissioners, about the Bill for taking away Episcopacy, it was debated by the Divines for two Days together.

Mr. *Henderson*, in a labour'd Speech, endeavour'd to shew the Necessity of changing the Government of the Church for the Preservation of the State. — " That now the Question was not, whether the Government of the Church by Bishops was lawful, but whether it was so necessary that Christianity

*Mr Henderson's Speech against Bps.*  
Clar.

Vol. II.

P. 524.

King Charles I. 1644. “ stianity could not subsist without it? — That this latter Position could not be maintain’d in the Affirmative, without condemning all other reformed Churches in *Europe*. — That the Parliament of *England* had found Episcopacy a very inconvenient and corrupt Government — That the Hierarchy had been a publick Grievance from the Reformation downwards — That the Bishops had always abetted Popery, had retained many superstitious Rites and Customs in their Worship and Government; and over and above had lately brought in a great many Novelties into the Church, and made a nearer Approach to the *Roman* Communion, to the great Scandal of the Protestant Churches of *Germany, France, Scotland, and Holland*. That the Prelates had embroil’d the *British* Island, and made the two Nations of *England* and *Scotland* fall foul upon each other. — That the Rebellion in *Ireland*, and the Civil War in *England*, may be charged upon them — That for these Reasons the Parliament had resolved to change this inconvenient, mischievous Government, and set up another in the Room of it, more naturally form’d for the Advancement of Piety — That this Alteration was the best Expedient to unite all Protestant Churches, and extinguish the Remains of Popery — He hoped therefore the King would concur in so commendable and godly an Undertaking; and conceived his Majesty’s Conscience could not be urged against such a Compliance, because he had already done it in *Scotland*; nor could he believe that Episcopacy was absolutely necessary to the Support of the Christian Religion.”

Dr. Steward, Clerk of the King’s Closet, addressing himself to the Commissioners, replied, “ He knew their Lordships were too well acquainted with the Constitution of the Church of *England*, and the Basis upon which it stood, to imagine it

“ could

" could be shaken by the Force of Mr. *Henderson's*  
 " Rhetorick — That he was firmly of Opinion,  
 " that a Government, which from the first Planting  
 " of Christianity in *England* had continued without  
 " Interruption; that a Government under which  
 " Christianity had spread and flourished to a remark-  
 " able Degree, could have nothing Vicious or Anti-  
 " christian in its Frame; that he expected, that  
 " those who had sworn themselves to an Abolition  
 " of this primitive Constitution, and came hither to  
 " persuade their Lordships and his Majesty to a  
 " Concurrence, would have endeavoured to prove  
 " the Unlawfulness of that Government they pressed  
 " so strongly to remove — But though in their Ser-  
 " mons and Prints they gave Episcopacy an An-  
 " christian Addition, Mr. *Henderson* had prudently  
 " declined charging so deep, and only argued from  
 " the Inconveniencies of that Government, and the  
 " Advantages which would be consequent on an Al-  
 " teration — Forasmuch as an Union with the Pro-  
 " testant Churches abroad was the chief Reason for  
 " this Change, the Doctor desired to know what fo-  
 " reign Church they designed for a Pattern — That  
 " he was sure the Model in the *Directory* had no great  
 " Resemblance to any foreign reform'd Church —  
 " And though he would not enter upon a Censure of  
 " those Communion, yet it was well known that  
 " the most learned Men of those Churches had la-  
 " mented a Defect in their Reformation; and that  
 " the want of Episcopacy was an unhappy Circum-  
 " stance — That they had always paid a particular  
 " Reverence to the Church of *England*, and look'd  
 " on it as the most perfect Constitution, upon the  
 " Score of its having retained all that was venerable  
 " in Antiquity — From hence he proceeded to en-  
 " large upon the Apostolical Institution of Episco-  
 " pacy, and endeavoured to prove, that without  
 " Bishops the sacerdotal Character could not be con-

King  
 Charles I.  
 1647.



King Charles I. 1644. "veyed, nor the Sacraments administred to any Significancy.

"As to his Majesty's consenting to put down Episcopacy in *Scotland* he would say nothing, though he knew his Majesty's present Thoughts upon that Subject. But he observed that the King was further obliged in this Kingdom than in the other; that in *England* he was tied by his Coronation Oath to maintain the Rights of the Church, and that this single Engagement was a Restraint upon his Majesty's Conscience, not to consent to the Abolition of Episcopacy, or the Alienation of Church Lands."

Rushw.  
p. 848.

Mr. Henderson and Mr. Marshal declared it to be false in fact, and a downright Imposition upon the Commissioners, that the foreign Protestants lamented the Want of Episcopacy, and esteemed our Constitution more perfect than their own. They then ran out into a high Commendation of Presbyterian Government, as that which had the only claim to a divine Right. Upon which the Marquis of Hertford spoke to this Effect,

My Lords,

"HERE is much said concerning Church Government in the general; the Reverend Doctors on the King's Part affirm, that Episcopacy is *Jure Divino*; the Reverend Ministers on the other Part affirm, that Presbytery is *Jure Divino*; for my Part, I think neither the one nor the other, nor any Government whatsoever to be *Jure Divino*; and I desire we may leave this Argument, and proceed to debate on the particular Propositions."

Dr. Steward desired they might dispute *Syllogistically*, as became Scholars, to which Mr. Henderson readily agreed; In that Way they proceeded about two Days; the Points urged by the King's Doctors were strongly

strongly opposed by Mr. *Henderson*, Mr. *Marshall*, <sup>King</sup> and Mr. *Vines*, and very learnedly replied to by his <sup>Charles I.</sup> Majesty's Divines, who severally declared their Judgments upon the Apostolical Institution of Episcopacy; but neither Party were convinced or satisfied. <sup>1647.</sup>

When the Debate concerning Religion came on a second Time, his Majesty's Commissioners delivered in their Answer to the Parliament's Demands in writing, with their Reasons why they could not consent to the Bill for abolishing Episcopacy, and establishing the Directory in the Room of the Common Prayer, nor advise his Majesty to take the Covenant: But for the uniting and reconciling all Differences in Matters of Religion, and procuring a blessed Peace, they were willing to consent,

(1.) " That Freedom be left to all Persons, of what <sup>King's</sup> Opinion soever, in Matters of Ceremony, and <sup>Concessions:</sup> that all the Penalties of the Laws and Customs <sup>Rushw.</sup> which enjoin those Ceremonies be suspended. <sup>p. 872, 818.</sup>

(2.) " That the Bishop shall exercise no Act of <sup>Dugdale;</sup> Jurisdiction or Ordination, without the Consent <sup>P. 780.</sup> and Counsel of the Presbyters, who shall be chosen by the Clergy of each Diocese, out of the most learned and grave Ministers of the Diocese.

(3.) " That the Bishop keep his constant Residence in his Diocese, except when he shall be required by his Majesty to attend him on any Occasion, and that (if he be not hinder'd by the Infirmities of old Age, or Sicknefs) he preach every Sunday in some Church within his Diocese.

(4.) " That the Ordination of Ministers shall be always in a publick and solemn Manner, and very strict Rules observed concerning the Sufficiency, and other Qualifications of those Men who shall be received into holy Orders, and the Bishops shall not receive any into holy Orders, without the Approbation and Consent of the Presbyters, or the major Part of them.

King  
Charles I.  
1644.

(5.) " That a competent Maintenance and Provision be established by Act of Parliament, to such Vicarages as belong to Bishops, Deans, and Chapters, out of the Improvements, and according to the Value of those Improvements of the several Parishes.

(6.) " That for Time to come no Man shall be capable of two Parsonages or Vicarages, with Cure of Souls.

(7.) " That towards settling the publick Peace, one hundred Thousand Pounds shall be raised by Act of Parliament, out of the Estates of Bishops, Deans, and Chapters, in such manner as shall be thought fit by the King and two Houses of Parliament, without the Alienation of any of the said Lands.

(8.) " That the Jurisdiction in Causes Testamentary, Decimal, Matrimonial, be settled in such manner as shall seem most convenient by the King and two Houses of Parliament.

(9.) " That one or more Acts of Parliament be passed for regulating of Visitations, and against immoderate Fees in Ecclesiastical Courts, and Abuses by frivolous Excommunications, and all other Abuses in the Exercise of Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction, in such manner as shall be agreed upon by the King and both Houses of Parliament.

" And if your Lordships shall insist upon any other Thing, which your Lordships shall think necessary for Reformation, we shall very willingly apply our selves to the Consideration thereof." But they absolutely refused their Consent to the main Points (*viz.*) the abolishing Episcopacy, establishing the Directory, confirming the Assembly of Divines, and taking the Covenant.

Remarks.

Mr. Rapin observes upon the first of these Concessions, that since the penal Laws were not to be abolished,



lished, but only suspended, it would be in the King's Power to take off the Suspension whensoever he pleased. Upon the third, fourth, and fifth, that they were so reasonable and necessary, that it was not for the King's Honour to let them be considered as a Condescension to promote the Peace; and the Remainder, depending upon the joint Consent of King and Parliament, after a Peace, it would always be in the King's Breast to give or with-hold his Assent, as he thought fit.

King  
Charles I.  
1647.

The Commissioners for the Parliament replied to these Concessions, that they were so many new Propositions, wholly different from what they had propos'd, that they contained little or nothing, but what they were already in Possession of by the Laws of the Land; that they were no way satisfactory to their Desires, nor *consisting with that Reformation to which both Nations are obliged by the Solemn League and Covenant*; therefore they can give no other Answer to them, but must insist to desire their Lordships, that the Bill may be pass'd, and their other Demands concerning Religion granted. The Parliament Commissioners, in their last Papers, say, that all Objections in favour of the *present Hierarchy*, arising from Conscience, Law, or Reason, being fully answered, they must now press for a determinate Answer to their Proposition concerning Religion.

Parliament's  
Reply.  
Dugdale,  
p. 883.

The King's Commissioners deny, that their Objections against passing the Bill for abolishing Episcopacy have been answer'd, or that they had received any Satisfaction in those Particulars, and therefore cannot consent to it.

The Parliament Commissioners add, that after so many Days Debate, and their making it appear, how great a Hindrance Episcopal Government is, and has been to a perfect Reformation, and to the Growth of Religion; and how prejudicial it has been to the *State*, they hoped their Lordships would have been ready to answer their Expectations.

King  
Charles I.  
1647.

The King's Commissioners replied, " 'tis evident, and we conceive consented to on all Sides, that Episcopacy has continued from the Apostles Time, by a continued Succession, in the Church of Christ, without Intermission or Interruption, and is therefore *Jure Divino*."

Dugdale,  
p. 788.

The Parliament Commissioners answer, " So far were we from consenting that Episcopacy has continued from the Apostles Time, by a continued Succession, that the contrary was made evident to your Lordships, and the *Unlawfulness* of it fully prov'd."

ib. p. 790,  
878.

The King's Commissioners replied, that they conceived the Succession of Episcopacy from the Apostles was consented to on all Sides, and did not remember that the Unlawfulness of it had been asserted and proved. However, they apprehend all the Inconveniences of that Government are remedied by the Alterations which they had offer'd. Nor had the Parliament Commissioners given them a View in particular of the Government they would substitute in place of the present; if therefore the Alterations proposed do not satisfy, they desire the Matter may be suspended till after the Disbanding the Armies, and both King and Parliament can agree in calling a National Synod.

Remarks  
upon them.

The abovementioned Concessions would surely have been a sufficient Foundation for Peace, if they had been made twelve Months sooner, before the Scots had been call'd in with their *Solemn League and Covenant*, and sufficient Security had been given for their Performance; but the Commissioners Hands were now tied; the Parliament apprehending themselves obliged by the *Covenant* to abolish the Hierarchy; and yet if the Commissioners could have agreed about the *Militia*, and the Punishment of evil Counsellors, the Affair of Religion would not, in the Opinion of Lord Clarendon, have hinder'd the Success of the Treaty; his Words are these, " The Parliament

Clar.  
p. 581.

" took

“ took none of the Points of Controversy less to  
 “ heart, or were less united in any Thing than in <sup>King</sup>  
 “ what concern’d the Church; the *Scots* would have <sup>Charles I.</sup>  
 “ given up every Thing into the Hands of the King <sup>1643.</sup>  
 “ for their beloved Presbytery; but many of the <sup>Clar.</sup>  
 “ Parliament were for Peace, provided *they might*  
 “ *have Indemnity for what was past, and Security for*  
 “ *Time to come.*” And were not these reasonable  
 Requests? Why then did not the Commissioners pre-  
 vail with the King to give them Security, and divide  
 the Parliament, or put an End to the War.

The last Day of the Treaty the Parliament conti- <sup>Treaty</sup>  
 nued sitting till nine of the Clock at Night, in hopes <sup>breaks 14th.</sup>  
 of hearing something from their Commissioners that  
 might encourage them to prolong the Treaty; but  
 when an Express brought Word, that the King’s  
 Commissioners would not yield to one of their Propo-  
 sitions they broke up without doing any Thing in the  
 Business. Each Party laid the Blame upon the other;  
 the King’s Commissioners complain’d, that the Par-  
 liament would not consent to prolong the Treaty;  
 and the others, that after twenty Days Conference  
 not one Proposition had been yielded. All sober  
 Men, and even some of the King’s Commissioners,  
 were troubled at the Event; but considering the State  
 of the King’s Affairs, and his servile Attachment to  
 the Counsels of a *Popish Queen*, it was easy to foresee  
 it could not be otherwise.

Bishop *Burnet* in the History of his Life and Times, <sup>Reasons of</sup>  
 says, that Lord *Hollis*, who was one of the Commis- <sup>it.</sup>  
 sioners, told him, “ That the King’s Affairs were  
 “ now at a Crisis, for the Treaty of *Uxbridge* gave  
 “ him an Opportunity of making Peace with the  
 “ Parliament, but all was undone by the unhappy  
 “ Success of the Marquis of *Montross* at this Time in  
 “ *Scotland*, which being magnified to the King far  
 “ beyond what it really was, prevailed with his Ma-  
 “ jesty to put such Limitations on his Commissioners  
 “ as made the whole Design miscarry.”



King  
Charles I.  
1643.

Most of the King's Commissioners who were not excepted out of the Article of Indemnity, were for accommodating Matters before they left *Uxbridge*. The Earl of *Southampton* rid Post from *Uxbridge* to *Oxford*, to press the King to yield something to the Necessity of the Times; several of his Council press'd him to it on their Knees; and 'tis said his Majesty was at length prevail'd with, and appointed next Morning to sign a Warrant to that Purpose, but that *Montross's* romantick Letter, of his Conquest in *Scotland*, coming in the mean Time, made the unhappy King alter his Resolution.

Remarks.

But there was something more in the Affair than this: Lord *Clarendon* is of Opinion, that if the King had yielded some Things to the Demands of the Parliament, relating to *Religion*, the *Militia*, and *Ireland*, there were still other Articles in reserve that would have broke off the Treaty; in which I cannot but agree with his Lordship; for not to mention the giving up *Delinquents* to the Justice of Parliament, of which himself was one, there had been, as yet, no Debate about the *Roman Catholicks*, whom the Parliament would not tolerate, and the King was determined not to give up, as appears from the Correspondence between himself and the Queen at this Time. In the Queen's Letter, *Jan. 6. 1643*. she desires his Majesty "to have a Care of his Honour, and not to abandon those who had served him — for if you agree upon Strictness against *Roman Catholicks* it will discourage them from serving you; nor can you expect Relief from any *Roman Catholick Prince* —" In her Letter of *Jan. 27*. she adds, "Above all have a Care not to abandon those who have served you, as well the Bishops as the *poor Catholicks*." In answer to which the King writes *Jan. 30*. "I desire thee to be confident, that I shall never make Peace by abandoning my Friends." And *Feb. 15*. "Be confident, that in making Peace I shall ever shew my Confidence in  
" ad.

Rapin,  
p. 275.

“ adhering to the Bishops, and all our Friends — ” <sup>King</sup>  
*March 5.* “ I give thee Power in my Name, to de- <sup>Charles I.</sup>  
 “ clare to whom thou thinkest fit, that I will take <sup>1647.</sup>  
 “ away all the penal Laws against the *Roman Ca-* <sup>Rushw.</sup>  
 “ *tholicks* in *England*, as soon as God shall make <sup>Vol. V.</sup>  
 “ me able to do it, so as by their Means, <sup>p. 942,</sup>  
 “ may have so powerful Assistance as may deserve <sup>944, 946;</sup>  
 “ so great a Favour, and enable me to do it — ” <sup>947.</sup>

As for *Ireland*, his Majesty had already commanded the Duke of *Ormond*, by his Letter of *Feb. 27.* to make Peace with the Papists, cost what it would. “ If the suspending *Poynings’s* Act will do it (says he) “ and taking away the penal Laws, I shall not think “ it a hard Bargain — When the *Irish* give me that <sup>Ib. p. 712;</sup> “ Assistance they have promised I will consent to the <sup>978.</sup> “ Repeal by Law.”

It appears from hence, that the Peace which the King seemed so much to desire was but an empty Sound. The Queen was afraid he might be prevailed with to yield something; but his Majesty bids her be confident of the contrary, for *his Commissioners would not be disputed from their Ground, which was according to the Note she remembers, and which he would not alter.* When the Treaty was ended he writes thus to the Queen, *March 13.* “ Now is come to pass what I foresaw, the “ fruitless End of this Treaty — Now if I do any <sup>Rapin,</sup> “ Thing unhandsome to my self or my Friends it will <sup>p. 283.</sup> “ be my own fault — I was afraid of being pressed “ to make some mean Overtures to renew the Trea- “ ty, but now if it be renewed it shall be to my Ho- “ nour and Advantage.” Such was the Queen’s <sup>Claren:</sup> Ascendant over the King, and his Majesty’s servile <sup>Vol. III.</sup> Attachment to her imperious Dictates; the Fate of <sup>p. 364.</sup> three Kingdoms was at her Disposal; no Place at Court or in the Army must be disposed of without her Allowance; no Peace must be made but upon her Terms; the *Oxford mungrel Parliament* (as his Majesty calls it) must be dismissed with Disgrace, because they voted for Peace; the *Irish* Protestants must be destroyed

King Charles I. 1643.  
 destroyed and given up, and the *English* must go on to destroy each other with Fire and Sword, to make way for the Toleration or Establishment of a Popish Religion and an arbitrary Government.

E. of Glamorgan's Treaty with the Irish. Rushw. Vol. VI. p. 239, &c. Rapin, p. 330. Hist. Stuarts, p. 305.  
 As a farther Demonstration of this melancholy Remark, his Majesty authorized the Earl of *Glamorgan*, by a Warrant under his Royal Signet, dated *March* 12. 1644. to conclude privately a Peace with the *Irish* Papists upon the best Terms he could, though they were such as his Lieutenant the Duke of *Ormond* might not well be seen in, nor his Majesty himself think fit to own publicly at present, engaging on the Word of a King and a Christian, to ratify and perform whatsoever he should grant under his Hand and Seal, on Condition they would send over into *England* a Body of ten Thousand Men, under the Command of the said Earl. The Date of this Warrant is remarkable, for it was at a Time when his Majesty's Affairs were far from being desperate; when he thought the Divisions in the Parliament-House would quickly be their Ruin, and that he had little else to do but to sit still and be restored upon his own Terms, for which Reason he would yield very little at the Treaty of *Uxbridge*; and yet the Earl, by his Majesty's Commission, yielded every Thing to the *Irish*, even to the establishing the *Roman Catholick* Religion, and putting it on a Level with the Protestant; he gave them all the Churches and Revenues they were possessed of since the Rebellion, and not only exempted them from the Jurisdiction of the Protestant Clergy, but allowed them their own Jurisdiction over their several Flocks, so that the Reformed Religion in that Kingdom was in a manner sold for ten Thousand *Irish* Papists to be transported into *England*, and maintained for three Years. Let the Reader now judge, what Prospect there could be of a well grounded Peace by the Treaty of *Uxbridge*! What Security there was for the Protestant Religion! How little Ground there was to rely upon the King's Promises! and consequently,



quently, to whose Account the Calamities of the War, and the Confusions that followed after this Time ought to be placed.

The Day before the Commencement of the Treaty of *Uxbridge* the Members of the House of Commons attended the Funeral of Mr. *John White*, Chairman of the Grand Committee of Religion, and Publisher of the Century of Scandalous Ministers; he was a grave Lawyer (says Lord *Clarendon*) and made a considerable Figure in his Profession. He had been one of the *Feoffees* for buying in Improvements, for which he was censured in the Star Chamber. He served in Parliament for the Borough of *Southwark*; having been a Puritan from his Youth, and in the Opinion of Mr. *Whitlock*, an honest, learned, and faithful Servant of the Publick, though somewhat severe at the Committee for plunder'd Ministers. He died *Jan. 29.* and was buried in the *Temple Church* with great Funeral Solemnity.

King  
Charles I;  
1645.

Death of  
Mr.

White.

Mem.  
p. 122.



## C H A P. VI.

*The Progress of the War. Debates in the Assembly about Ordination. The Power of the Keys. The divine Right of Presbyterian Government. Committees for Comprehension and Toleration of the Independants.*

King  
Charles I.  
1645.  
Clarend.  
p. 595.

THE King's Commissioners had been told at the Treaty of *Uxbridge*, that the Fate of the *English* Monarchy depended upon its Success; that if the Treaty was broken off abruptly there were a Set of Men in the House who would remove the Earl of *Essex*, and constitute such an *Army* as might force the Parliament and King to consent to every Thing they demanded, or change the Government into a Commonwealth; whereas, if the King would yield to the Necessity of the Times, they might preserve the GENERAL, and not only disappoint the Designs of the Enemies to *Monarchy*, but soon be in Circumstances to enable his Majesty to recover all he should part with. However, the Commissioners look'd upon this as the Language of Despair, and made his Majesty believe the Divisions at *Westminster* would soon replace the Scepter in his own Hands.

E. of Essex  
removed,  
and the Ar-  
my new  
modell'd.

The House of Commons had been dissatisfied with the Conduct of the Earls of *Essex* and *Manchester* last Summer, as tending to lengthen out the War, least one Party should establish it self upon the Ruins of the other; but the warmer Spirits in the House seeing no Period of their Calamities this way, apprehended a decisive Battle ought to be fought as soon as possible, for which Purpose, after a solemn Fast, it was moved that all the present Officers should be discharged, and the Army intrusted in such Hands as they could confide in. Dec. 9. it was resolved, That no Member of either House should execute any Office  
Civil

Civil or Military, during the present War; accordingly the Ordinance commonly called the SELF DENYING ORDINANCE was brought in, and past the Commons ten Days after, but was laid aside by the Lords till after the Treaty of *Uxbridge*, when it was revived and carried, with some little Opposition. The Earls of *Essex*, *Manchester*, *Warwick*, and *Denbigh*, the Lord *Roberts*, *Willoughby*, and others, were dismissed by this Ordinance, and all Members of the House of Commons, except Lieutenant General *Cromwell*, who after a few Months was dispensed with, at the Request of the new General. All the Regiments were disbanded, and such only listed under the new Commanders as were determined to conquer or die. Sir *Tho. Fairfax* was appointed General, and *Oliver Cromwell*, after some Time, Lieutenant General; the Clause for *Preservation of the King's Person* was left out of Sir *Thomas's* Commission; nor did it run in the Name of the *King and Parliament*, but of the *Parliament only*. The Army consisted of twenty one Thousand resolute Soldiers, and was called in Contempt by the Royalists the *new modell'd Army*; but their Courage quickly revenged the Contempt.

SIR THOMAS FAIRFAX was a Gentleman of no quick Parts or Elocution; but religious, faithful, valiant, and of a grave, sober, resolved Disposition; neither too great, nor too cunning to be directed by the Parliament. But OLIVER CROMWELL was more bold and aspiring; and being a Soldier of undaunted, Courage and Intrepidity, proved at length too powerful for his Masters. The Army was more at his Disposal than at *Fairfax's*, and the Wonders they wrought sprung chiefly from his Counsels.

When the old Regiments were broken the Chaplains being discharged of Course, returned to their Cures; and as new ones were formed, the Officers applied to the Parliament and Assembly for a fresh Recruit; but the Presbyterian Ministers being pos-

King  
Charles I.  
1645.

Character  
of the Ge-  
nerals.  
Baxter's  
Life,  
p. 49.

Rise of En-  
thusiasm  
in the  
Army.



King Charles I. 1645. fessed of warm Benefices, were unwilling to undergo the Fatigues of another Campaign, or it may be, to serve with Men of such desperate Measures. This fatal Accident proved the Ruin of the Cause, in which the Parliament were engaged; for the Army being destitute of Chaplains, who might have restrained the Irregularities of their Zeal, the Officers set up for Preachers in their several Regiments, depending upon a kind of miraculous Assistance of the divine Spirit, without any Study or Preparation; and when their Imaginations were heated, they gave vent to the most crude and undigested Absurdities; nor did the Evil rest there, for from preaching at the Head of their Regiments, they took Possession of the Country Pulpits where they were quartered, till at length they spread the Infection over the whole Nation, and brought the regular Ministry into Contempt. Most of the common Soldiers were religious and orderly, and when released from Duty spent their Time in Prayer and religious Conferences, like Men who carried their Lives in their Hands; but for want of prudent and regular Instruction, were swallowed up in the Depths of Enthusiasm. Mr. Baxter therefore observes very justly, "It was the Ministers that lost all by forsaking the Army, and be-  
 " taking themselves to an easier and quieter way of  
 " Life. When the Earl of Essex's Army went out  
 " each Regiment had an able Chaplain, but after  
 " Edge-Hill Fight most of them went home, and left  
 " the Army to their own Conduct." But even after the decisive Battle of Naseby he admits, great Numbers of the Officers and Soldiers were sober and orthodox; and from the little Good which he did whilst among them, concludes, that if they had but had Ministers, who would have followed his Measures, the King, the Parliament, and Religion, might have been saved.

Baxter's  
Life,  
p. 51, 56.

Their strict Discipline. The new modell'd Troops were kept under the severest Discipline, Commissioners being appointed to take

take Care that the Country was not oppressed ; that no Soldiers were quarter'd in any Place but by Appointment of the Quarter-Master ; that ready Money be paid for all Provisions and Ammunition ; every Soldier had six Pence a Day for his Diet, and every Trooper eight Pence. No Inhabitants were compell'd to furnish more Provisions than they were able and willing to spare, under the severest Penalties ; whereas the Royal Army having no regular Pay, lived upon the Plunder of those Places that had the Misfortune to receive them.

May 30. the King took the Town of Leicester by Storm, with a very great Treasure, which the Country People had brought thither for Security, but his Soldiers divided the Spoil and treated the Inhabitants in a most cruel and unmerciful Manner ; After this Conquest, his Majesty writ to the Queen, that his Affairs were never in so hopeful a Posture since the Rebellion. The Parliament Army were preparing to lay Siege to the City of Oxford, but upon News of this Disaster had Orders to follow the King, and hazard a Battle at all Events ; whereupon Sir Thomas Fairfax petitioned the two Houses to dispense with their Self Denying Ordinance with respect to Lieutenant General Cromwell, whose Courage and Counsels would be of great Service in the present Crisis ; Cromwell was accordingly dispensed with during Pleasure, and having joined the Army with six Hundred Horse and Dragoons they overtook the King, and gave him Battle June 14. at Naseby, about three Miles from Harborough in Leicestershire.

The Battle began about ten in the Morning, and ended about three or four in the Afternoon, in an absolute Defeat of the King's Forces, which was owing, in a great Measure, to the wise Conduct, and Resolution of Lieutenant General Cromwell, on one hand, and to the indiscreet Fury and Violence of Prince Rupert on the other. The Armies were pretty equal in Number, about twelve or four-

King  
Charles I.  
1645.

Progress of  
the King's  
Forces.

Whiel.  
Mem.

P. 140.  
144.

Battle at  
Naseby.

King  
Charles I.  
1645.

Whitl.  
p. 145.  
Clarend.  
Vol. II.  
p. 658.

Rapin,  
p. 310.

fourteen Thousand on a Side, but the Parliament Soldiers were better disciplin'd, and fought with all the Bravery and Magnanimity that an enthusiastick Zeal could inspire. General *Fairfax* having his Helmet beat off rode up and down the Field bare-headed; Major General *Skippon* received a Wound in the Beginning of the Fight, upon which being desired to go off, he answered, *He would not stir as long as a Man would stand.* Ireton was run through the Thigh with a Pike, had his Horse killed under him, and was made a Prisoner, but found means to escape upon the Turn of the Battle. The King shewed himself a courageous General, but his Soldiers were struck with such a Panick, that when they were once disordered they would never rally, whereas if the others were beaten from their Ground they presently returned, and kept their Ranks till they received new Instructions. When Prince *Rupert* had routed *Ireton's* left Wing he lost his Advantage; *First*, By following the Chase almost three Miles, and *then* by trying to become Master of the Train of Artillery, before he knew the Success of the main Body; whereas when *Cromwell* had broke the right Wing of the Enemy he pursued them but a Quarter of a Mile, and leaving a small Party of Horse to prevent their Rallying, returned immediately to the Battel, and with his victorious Troops charged the Royal Infantry in Flank, and drove them entirely out of the Field. The Parliament Army took above five Thousand Prisoners; all the King's Train of Artillery, Bag and Baggage, with his Cabinet of Letters, some of which were afterwards published to the World; but not above six or seven Hundred of his Men were killed, with about one Hundred and fifty Officers. The King, with a Party of Horse, fled into *Wales*, and Prince *Rupert* to *Bristol*; but the Parliament Forces pursued their Victory with such Eagerness, and marched with that rapid Swiftness over the whole West of *England*, to the very Land's End, that in a few Months all the Royal For-

ces



ces were dispersed, and his Majesty's Garrisons surren-  
der'd almost before they were summon'd. The Ci-  
ty of *Bristol*, into which Prince *Rupert* had thrown  
himself, capitulated before the Besiegers approach'd  
the Walls, which provoked the King to that degree,  
that he commanded him by Letter to depart the  
Land; as did also the Prince of *Wales*, for the Secu-  
rity of his Person; so that by the End of the Cam-  
paign the unhappy King was expos'd to the Mercy of  
his Enemies, and shut up all the Winter little better  
than a Prisoner in his Garrison of *Oxford*.

King  
Charles I.  
1645.

To return to the Affairs of the Church. When it  
is recollected what great Numbers of Clergymen had  
deserted to the King, or were otherwise dissatisfied  
with the new Terms of Conformity, we must con-  
clude it very difficult to supply the vacant Pulpits  
in the Country with a learned and regular Clergy:  
One of the Universities was entirely useless, and the  
young Students that adher'd to the Parliament could  
not obtain Ordination in a legal Way, because all  
the Bishops were in the Opposition, and would ordain  
none but those of their own Principles, which was  
another Cause of the Increase of unqualified Preachers.  
To put some stop to the Clamours of the Royalists,  
and to the Mischiefs of Lay-Predaching, which be-  
gan to appear in the Army, the Parliament ordain-  
ed, *April 26*. " That no Person shall be permitted  
" to preach who is not ordained a Minister in this or  
" some other reformed Church, except such as intend  
" the Ministry who shall be allowed for the Trial of  
" their Gifts, by those that shall be appointed there-  
" unto by both Houses of Parliament; and it is ear-  
" nestly desired, that Sir *Theo. Fairfax* take care, that  
" this Ordinance be put in Execution in the Army.  
" It is further ordered to be sent to the Lord Mayor,  
" and Committee of the Militia in *London*; to the  
" Governors and Commanders of all Forts, Garri-  
" sons, Forces, Cities and Towns, with the like In-  
" junction; and the Mayor, Sheriffs, and Justices  
VOL. III. T " of

Parlia-  
ment's  
Care for a  
regular  
Clergy.

Husb. Col.  
P. 645.

King Charles I. 1645. “ of the Peace, are to commit all Offenders to safe Custody, and give Notice to the Parliament, who will take a speedy Course for their Punishment.”

Directory for Ordination of Ministers. At the same Time the Lords sent to the Assembly, to prepare a new *Directory* for the *Ordination of Ministers in the Church of England*, without the Presence of a Diocesan Bishop. This took them up a great deal of Time, by reason of the Opposition it met with from the *Erastians* and *Independants*, but was at last accomplished, and passed into an Ordinance, bearing Date Nov. 8. 1645. and was to continue in force by way of Trial for twelve Months; after which, on the 28th of *August* following, it was prolonged for three Years, at the Expiration of which it was made perpetual.

Rushw. Part IV. Vol. I. p. 212. The Ordinance sets forth, “ That whereas the Words *Presbyter* and *Bishop* do in Scripture signify the same Function, though the Title of *Bishop* has been, by corrupt Custom, appropriated to one, who has assumed to himself, in the Matter of Ordination, that which was not meet; which Ordination, notwithstanding, being performed by him, we hold for Substance to be valid, and not to be disclaimed by any that have received it; and whereas it is manifest, that ORDINATION, that is, *An outward, solemn setting Apart of Persons for the Office of the Ministry in the Church by preaching Presbyters*, is an Institution of Christ, it is therefore ordained by the Lords and Commons, with the Advice of the Assembly of Divines at *Westminster*, that the several and respective Classical Presbyters within their respective Bounds may examine, approve, and ordain Presbyters, according to the following Directory,” which I have placed in the Appendix, and is in Substance as follows:

Appendix, No III. *First*, “ The Person to be ordained must apply to the Presbytery, with a Testimonial of his taking the Covenant, of his Proficiency in his Studies,” &c.

*Second-*

Secondly, “ He is then to pass under an Examination as to his Religion and Learning, and Call to the Ministry. King Charles I. 1645.

“ Then follow Rules for Examination, as in the *Appendix*.

“ After Examination he shall receive a publick Testimonial from his Examiners, which shall be read publickly before the People, and then fix’d to the Door of the Church where he preaches for Approbation, with Liberty to any Person or Persons to make Exceptions.

“ Upon the Day of Ordination a solemn Fast shall be kept by the Congregation, in which, after a Sermon, the Person to be ordained shall make a publick Confession of his Faith, and declare his Resolutions to be diligent and constant in the Discharge of his pastoral Duty. After which he shall be separated, or set apart to the Pastoral Office with a short Prayer, and the Laying on of the Hands of the Ministers present. After the Ordination there is to be an Exhortation to Minister and People, and the whole Solemnity to conclude with a *Psalm* and a *Prayer*.

It is further ordained, “ That all Ordinations, according to the former Usage of the Church of *England*, as well as those of *Scotland*, and other reformed Churches, shall be esteemed valid. Former Ordinations valid.

“ A Register is to be kept by every Presbytery of the Names of the Persons ordained by them, of the Ministers concerned, and of the Time and Place where they were settled. No Money or Gift whatsoever shall be received from the Person ordained, or from any on his Behalf, for his Ordination, or any Thing relating to it, except for the Instruments or Testimonials, which shall not exceed ten Shillings.

Lastly, It is ordained, “ That all Persons ordained according to this *Directory*, shall be for ever reputed and taken, to all Intents and Purposes, for lawfully, and sufficiently authorized Ministers of the Church of *England*, and as capable of any ministerial



King  
Charles I.  
1645.

Debates  
upon it.

Lightf.  
Rem. Pref.

With the  
Independ-  
dants.

Grand  
Debate,  
p. 185.

“ Employment in the Church, as any other Presbyter already ordained, or hereafter to be ordained.”

To give a short Specimen of the Debates upon this Ordinance; when the Passage in *Timothy*, of *Laying on of the Hands of the Presbytery* was voted a full Proof for Presbyters ordaining without a Bishop, Mr. *Selden*, *Lightfoot*, and some others, enter'd their Dissent, declaring, That the Imposition of Hands there spoken of was only for Admission to be an Elder; and though Elders might ordain Elders, it did not necessarily follow they might ordain a Bishop.

The *Independants* argued for the Right of every particular Congregation to ordain its own Officers; this was debated ten Days; the Arguments on both Sides were afterwards published by Consent of the several Parties, in a Book, entitled, *The grand Debate between Presbytery and Independency*. At length the Question being put, *That it is requisite no single Congregation that can conveniently associate with others, should assume to it self the sole Right of Ordination*, it was carried in the Affirmative, but the following Independent Ministers enter'd their Dissent.

*Tho. Goodwin,*  
*Phil. Nye,*  
*Jer. Burroughs,*  
*Sidrach Simpson,*

*William Bridge,*  
*William Greenhill,*  
*William Carter.*

MS. penes  
me.

It was next debated, whether Ordination might precede Election to a particular Charge; Dr. *Temple*, Mr. *Herle*, *Vines*, *Palmer*, *Whitaker*, and *Calamy*, argued for the Affirmative, 1. From the Ordination of *Timothy*, *Titus* and *Apollos*, without any particular Charge. 2. Because 'tis a different Thing to ordain to an Office, and to appropriate the Exercise of that Office to any particular Place. 3. If Election must precede Ordination, then there must be a new Ordination upon every new Election. 4. It would then follow, that a Minister was no Minister out of his own Church or Congregation. And,  
5. Then

5. Then a Minister could not gather or plant Churches, or baptize new Converts, because, according to the *Independants*, there must first be a Church before there can be a Minister.

*King  
Charles I.  
1645.*

Mr. Goodwin, Nye, Bridge, and the rest of the *Independants*, replied to the foregoing Reasons, That *Timothy* and *Titus* were extraordinary Officers — That it appeared to them absurd, to ordain an Officer without a Province to exercise the Office in — That they saw no great Inconvenience in *Re-ordinations*, though they did not admit the Consequence, that a Person regularly ordained to one Church, must be re-ordained upon every Removal; but they affirmed, that a Pastor of one particular Church might preserve his Character in all Places; and if there was extraordinary Service to be done in planting new Churches, or baptizing new Converts, the Churches might send out their Officers, or create new for that purpose. The grand Difficulty with the *Independants* lay here, that Ordination without Election to a particular Charge seemed to imply a Conveyance of Office-Power, which, in their Opinion, was attended with all the Difficulties of a lineal Succession. The Debates upon this Article continued several Days, and issued at last in a Com-promise in these Words; *It is agreeable to the Word of God, and very expedient, that those who are to be ordained Ministers, be designed to some particular Church, or other ministerial Charge.* And with regard to the Ceremony of *Imposition of Hands*, the *Independants* admitted it, provided it was attended with an open Declaration, *That it was not intended as a Conveyance of Office-Power.*

It might seem absurd to begin the Reformation of the Church, with an Ordinance appointing *Classical Presbyters* to ordain Ministers within their several Bounds, when there was not as yet one *classical Presbytery* in all England; but the Urgency of Affairs required it; the Scarcity of Ministers would not suffer a Delay till the whole Fabrick of Presbytery was erected.

*power of  
Ordination  
given to  
the Assem-  
bly pro  
tempore.  
Vide App.  
Nº III.  
p. ult.*

King  
Charles I.  
1645.

ed; therefore, to supply this Defect for the present, the whole Business was committed to the *Assembly*, who voted *December 24.* that a Committee for Examination of Ministers should sit every *Tuesday* and *Thursday* in the Afternoon at Two of the Clock, and the Members of the Assembly are to attend in their Turns, as they shall be nominated and appointed by the Scribe, according to the Order of their Names in the Register Book, five at a Time, and each to attend a Week.

The Divine  
Right of  
Presbytery.  
Vide App.  
N<sup>o</sup> III.  
Chapter of  
Ch. Govern-  
ment.

While the Affair of *Ordination* was depending in the Assembly, Committees were chosen to prepare Materials for a new Form of Discipline and Church Government; a Point of the greater Consequence, because the old Form was dissolved, and no other as yet established in its room. Here the Independants agreed with the Presbyterians, that *there was a certain Form of Church Government laid down in the New Testament, which was of Divine Institution*; but when they came to the Question, *What that Government was? and, Whether it was binding in all Ages of the Church?* Both the *Erastians* and Independants divided against them. The Proposition was this, *That the Scripture holds forth, that many particular Congregations may, and by DIVINE INSTITUTION ought, to be under one Presbyterial Government.* The Debate lasted thirty Days; the *Erastians* did not except against the Presbyterial Government as a *political Institution*, proper to be established by the Civil Magistrate, but they were against the Claim of a *DIVINE RIGHT*. Upon this Occasion *Bulstrode Whitlock*, Esq; one of the Lay-Commissioners, stood up, and made the following Speech.

*Mr. Prolocutor,*

Objections  
of the E-  
raians.  
Whit.  
Mem.  
p. 95.

“ I Might blush to speak in this Reverend Assem-  
“ bly, upon the Question now in Debate before  
“ you, had I not, by the Honour of being one of  
“ your Members, seen your Candor to others, and  
“ ob-



King  
Charles I.  
1645.

“ observed you to be most capable to give Satisfaction to any Scruple here, and to enable such as I am to satisfy Objections abroad, whereof I have met with some, your Question not being under Secrecy.

“ By *Government* all Men understand the prudent and well ordering of Persons and Affairs, that Men may live well and happily; and by the *Government of the Church*, the ordering and ruling of Persons and Matters having Relation to the Worship of God in spiritual Matters.

“ The Word *Presbyter* was in great Honour among the *Jews*, being given to the Members of their great Sanhedrim, and therefore is not now so properly to be attributed to the Rulers of every small Congregation. I am none of those, Mr. *Prolocutor*, who except against the Presbyterian Government; I think it has a good Foundation, and has done much good in the Church of Christ.

“ But, Sir, whether this Form of Government be *Jure Divino*, or not, may admit of some Dispute? and, Whether it be now requisite for you to declare, that it is so?

“ If the Meaning be, that it is *Jure Divino Ecclesiastico*, then the Question will be raised, of the Magistrates imposing Forms upon Mens Consciences, for then they will be only the Magistrates Imposition. But if the Meaning be *Jure Divino absolute*, it must then be the Precept of God, and they are in a sad Condition who are not under this Government.

“ But it is objected, that no Form of Government is *Jure Divino*, but that in general, all Things must be done Decently, and in Order. A Government is certainly *Jure Divino*, but whether Presbytery, Episcopacy, Independency, or any other Form of Government be *Jure Divino*, or not; that is, whether there be a *Præscript*, Rule or Command of Scripture, for any of those Forms, will not be admitted by many as a clear Thing.

King  
Charles I.  
1645.

“ It may therefore not be unworthy your Consideration, Whether it be not more prudent at this Time to forbear to declare your Judgments in this Point? the Truth will nevertheless continue the same.

“ If this Government be not *Jure Divino*, no Opinion of any Council can make it so; and if it be *Jure Divino* it continues so still, though you do not declare it to be so.

“ I therefore humbly submit it to your Judgments, Whether it be not better at this Time to avoid giving Occasion to Disputes of this Nature, and only to present your Judgment to the Parliament, *That the Government of the Church by Presbyteries is most agreeable to the Word of God, and most fit to be settled in this Kingdom?* or, in what other Expressions you may think fit to cloth your Question?  
“ And I hope you may soon have a desired Issue.”

Mr. *Selden* and St. *John* were of this Mind; and the Reverend Mr. *Colman* was so zealous upon this Head, that he declaimed against the *Divine Right*, not only in the Assembly, but in the Pulpit, apprehending Presbytery would prove as Arbitrary and Tyrannical as Prelacy, if it came in with a *Divine Claim*. He therefore proposed, that the Civil Magistrate should have the sole Power of the Keys by way of *Interim*, till the Nation was at Peace.

And of the  
Independants.

But the *Independants* opposed the Proposition of the *Divine Right of Presbytery*, by advancing a counter *Divine Right* of their own Scheme; fifteen Days they took the Part of Opponents, and fifteen Days they were upon the Defensive. To give a short Specimen of their Debates.

Grand  
Debate,  
p. 13, &c.

The chief Enquiries were, about the Constitution and Form of the first Church of *Jerusalem*; the Subordination of Synods, and of Lay-Elders. Upon the first Question the Independants maintained, *That the first Church at Jerusalem was not larger than could meet in*

one

*one Place.* In support of which they produced several Passages in the new Testament; as, *Acts* i. 15. The whole Number of Disciples being about one Hundred and twenty met together with one Accord. And *Acts* ii. 1. They were all with one Accord in one Place. When they were multiplied to three Thousand 'tis still said, they met together with one Accord, and in one Place, *Acts* ii. 46. When they were further increased, Multitudes being added to them, both Men and Women, they still met together with one Accord, and in one Place, *Acts* v. 12, 14. When the Number of Disciples was yet further multiplied, so that it became necessary to choose Deacons to take care of the Poor, the whole Multitude were called together, and chose out seven Men from among themselves, and set them before the Apostles, *Acts* vi. 2, 5. And even after the general Dispersion of the Disciples, mentioned *Acts* viii. 'tis recorded, that those who remained met together in one Place as a Church, *Acts* xv. 4, 22. Then pleased it the Apostles and Elders, with the WHOLE CHURCH, to send chosen Men of their own Company to *Antioch*. They allowed, that there was mention of a Presbytery in Scripture, but that it was no other than the Presbytery or Elders of one particular Church or Congregation, for it is nowhere written, that God has set in the Church, distinct Sorts of Presbyteries, such as *Consistories*, *Classes*, *Provincial Synods*, and *General Assemblies*, one above another. They objected also to the high Powers claimed by the Presbyteries, as the Right of Admission and Exclusion from the Christian Church with Pains and Penalties, which, as they have no Foundation in Scripture, are not very consistent with the Powers of the Civil Magistrate.

To remove these Difficulties the Presbyterians maintained, *That the Church of Jerusalem was made up of more Congregations than one*, as appeared from the Multitude of Disciples mentioned in divers Places; — from the many Apostles and Teachers in the Church

King  
Charles I.

1645.

Presby-  
terians  
Reply.  
Grind

Debate,  
p. 41.

Church



King  
Charles I.  
1645.

Church of *Jerusalem*, who could not exercise their Gifts in one Assembly ; — and from the Diversity of Languages mentioned *Acts* ii. and *Acts* vi. Now it being granted, that the Disciples were too numerous to assemble in one Place, it must follow, that they were under one Presbyterial Government, because they are still called but one Church, *Acts* viii. 1. the Elders of which are often mentioned in the same Book. The most learned Criticks in the Assembly were divided upon this Head, as Dr. *Temple*, *Lightfoot*, *Selden*, *Colman*, *Vines*, and others ; but it was carried for the Presbyterians.

Subordina-  
tion of  
Synods.  
Grand  
Debate,  
p. 115,  
128, &c.

It was argued in favour of the SUBORDINATION OF SYNODS, that the Scripture speaks of an Appeal from one or two Brethren to the whole Church, *Matth.* xviii. 15. and of the Appeal of the Church at *Antioch* to the Apostles and Elders at *Jerusalem*, *Acts* xv. 2. But the *Independants* affirmed, that a Synod of Presbyters is no where called a Church ; and that the Appeal of the Church of *Antioch* was only for Advice, not for a judicial Determination : But supposing the Assembly of the Apostles at *Jerusalem* to be a Synod, it could neither be Provincial nor National to the Church at *Antioch*, and consequently no Proof of a Subordination. The Masters of *Jewish* Antiquities displayed all their Learning upon this Debate, for the *Jewish Sanhedrim* being designed as the Model of their *Christian Presbytery*, it was necessary to enquire, what were the Powers of the Ecclesiastical and Civil Courts under the Law. *Moses* having appointed, that he that would not hearken to the *Priest*, or the Judge, should die, *Deut.* xvii. 12. it was argued in favour of Church Power, that the *Priest* held one Court, and the *Civil Magistrate* another ; but Mr. *Selden* observed, that the vulgar *Latin* till within these forty Years reads thus, *Qui non obedi- verit sacerdoti ex decreto judicis morietur*. He that will not obey the *Priest* shall die by the Sentence of the Judge ; and Mr. *Lightfoot* added, that when the Judges

Lighf.  
Rem.  
p. 17.

of inferior Courts went up to *Jerusalem* by way of Appeals it was only for Advice and Consultation; but when the Question was put, *Dec. 12.* for a Subordination of Synods with LAY-ELDERS, as so many Courts of Judicature, with Power to dispense Church Censures, it was carried in the Affirmative, and inserted in their humble Advice, with this Addition; “ So  
 “ Christ has furnished some in his Church (besides  
 “ Ministers of the Word) with Gifts for Government,  
 “ and with Commission to execute the same, when  
 “ called thereunto, who are to join with the Minister  
 “ in the Government of the Church, which Officers  
 “ the reformed Churches generally call ELDERS.”

King  
Charles I.  
1645.

Vide App.  
N<sup>o</sup> III.  
Chapter of  
Ch. Govern-  
ment.

Thus the main Pillars of the Presbyterial Govern-  
 ment were voted of DIVINE APPOINTMENT by a  
 very great Majority; but the Independants enter’d  
 their Dissent in writing, and complained to the World  
 “ of the unkind Usage they met with in the Assem-  
 “ bly; that the Papers they offered were not read;  
 “ that they were not allowed to state their own Que-  
 “ stions, but were told they set themselves industri-  
 “ ously to puzzle the Cause, and render the clearest  
 “ Propositions obscure, rather than argue the Truth  
 “ or Falseness of them — That it was not worth  
 “ the Assembly’s while to spend so much Time in  
 “ debating with so inconsiderable a Number of Men;  
 “ they also declared, that the Assembly refused to  
 “ debate their main Proposition, (*viz.*) *Whether a*  
 “ *divine Right of Church Government did not remain*  
 “ *with every particular Congregation —*” To all  
 which it was replied, that the Assembly were not  
 conscious they had done them any Injustice, and as  
 for the rest, they were the most proper Judges of  
 their own Method of Proceeding.

Complaints  
of the In-  
depend-  
dants.

The *Erastians* seeing how Things were managed  
 in the Assembly, reserved themselves for the House  
 of Commons, where they were sure to be joined by  
 all the Patrons of the Independants. The *English* and  
*Scots* Commissioners being no less solicitous about the  
 Event,

Conduct of  
the Era-  
stians.

*King* Event, gave their Friends Notice to be early in  
*Charles I.* their Places, hoping to carry the Question before  
 1645. the House should be full; but Mr. *Glyn* perceiving  
 their Intention, spoke an Hour to the Point of *Jus*  
*Whitl.* *DIVINUM*; and after him Mr. *Whitlock* stood up and en-  
*Mem.* larged upon the same Argument, till the House was full,  
*P. 106.* when the Question being put, it was carried in the Ne-  
*The Clause* gative; and that the Proposition of the Assembly  
*of Divine* should stand thus, *That it is LAWFUL AND AGREEABLE*  
*Right lost* *TO THE WORD OF GOD, that the Church be governed*  
*in the H. of* *by Congregational, Classsical and Synodical Assemblies.*  
*Commons.*

*Several* The Disappointment of the *Scots* Commissioners and  
*Petitions to* their Friends in the Assembly at the Loss of this Quest-  
*Parlia-* ion is not to be expressed; they alarmed the Citizens  
*ment to* with the Danger of the Church, and prevailed with the  
*admit it.* *Common Council* to petition the Parliament [Nov. 15.]  
 that *the Presbyterian Discipline might be established, AS*  
*THE DISCIPLINE OF JESUS CHRIST*; but the Commons  
 answered with a Frown, *That the Citizens must have*  
*been misinformed of the Proceedings of the House, or else*  
*they would not have precipitated the Judgment of Parlia-*  
*ment*; Not discouraged at this Rebuke they prevailed  
 with the *City Ministers* to petition, but when they  
 came to the House the Speaker told them, *They need*  
*not wait for an Answer, but go home and look to the*  
*Charges of their several Congregations*; and immedi-  
 ately appointed a Committee to enquire into the Rise of  
 these Petitions.

The Presbyterian *Ministers* despairing of Success with  
 the Commons, instead of yielding to the Times, resol-  
 ved to apply to the House of Lords, who received them  
 civilly, and promised to take their Request into Consi-  
 deration; but no Advances being made in two Months  
 they were out of all Patience, and determined to re-  
 new their Application; and to give it the greater  
 Weight, prevail'd with the *Lord Mayor and Court of*  
*Alderman* to go at their Head, Jan. 16. with an Ad-

Vol. Pamp. dress, “ For a speedy Settlement of Church-Govern-  
 N<sup>o</sup> 34. “ ment, according to the Covenant, and that no  
 P. 3. “ Tole-



“ Toleration might be given to Popery, Prelacy,  
 “ Superstition, Heresy, Profaneness, or any Thing  
 “ contrary to sound Doctrine, and that all private As-  
 “ semblies might be restrain’d.” The Lords thank’d  
 them for their Zeal, and recommended it to the City  
 to suppress all such unlawful Assemblies; but the  
 Houses were not to be moved as yet by such forcible  
 Methods; however, this laid the Foundation of those  
 Jealousies and Misunderstandings between the City  
 and Parliament, which proved the Ruin of the Pres-  
 byterian Cause.

King  
Charles I.  
1645.

But the fiercest Contention between the Assembly  
 and Parliament arose upon the *Power of the Keys*, which  
 the former had voted to be in the Eldership or Pres-  
 bytery, in these Words, “ The Keys of the King-  
 “ dom of Heaven were committed to the Officers of  
 “ the Church, by virtue whereof they have Power  
 “ respectively to retain and remit Sins, to shut the  
 “ Kingdom of Heaven against the Impenitent both  
 “ by the Word and Censures, and to open it to the  
 “ Penitent by Absolution, and to prevent the Profa-  
 “ nation of the Holy Sacrament by notorious and ob-  
 “ stinate Offenders, the said Officers are to proceed  
 “ by Admonition, Suspension from the Sacrament  
 “ of the Lord’s Supper for a Season, and by Excom-  
 “ munication from the Church, according to the  
 “ Nature of the Crime and Demerit of the Person ;”  
 all which Power they claimed, not by the Laws of  
 the Land, but JURE DIVINO, or by divine Appoint-  
 ment.

*Of the Power of the Keys in Excommu-  
 Vid. App.  
 N° III.  
 Chapter of Cong. As-  
 sembly.*

The *Independants* claimed a like Power for the Brother-  
 hood of every particular Congregation, but without any  
 civil Sanctions or Penalties annexed; the *Eraftians* were  
 for laying the Communion open, and referring all Crimes  
 to the Civil Magistrate. When the Question therefore  
 came into Debate in the House of Commons, the Learn-  
 ed Mr. *Selden* delivered his Opinion against all Suspendi-  
 ons and Excommunications to this Effect, “ That for four  
 “ Thousand Years there was no Law to suspend Per-

*The Inde-  
 pendants  
 Opinion.  
 And  
 Selden’s  
 Rushw.  
 p. 203.*

“ sons

King Charles I. 1645. *sons from religious Exercifes. Strangers, indeed, were kept from the Paffover, but they were Pagans, and not of the Jewifh Religion. The Queftion is not now for keeping away Pagans in Times of Christianity, but Proteftants from Proteftant Worfhip. No Divine can fhew, that there is any fuch Command as this to fufpend from the Sacrament. No Man is kept from the Sacrament eo nomine, becaufe he is guilty of any Sin, by the Constitution of the Reformed Churches, or becaufe he has not made Satisfaction. Every Man is a Sinner; the Difference is only, that one is in private, and the other in publick. Dic Ecclefia in St. Matthew were the Courts of Law which then fat at Jerufalem. No Man can fhew any Excommunication till the Popes Victor and Zephorinus (two Hundred Years after Chrift) firft began to ufe them upon private Quarrels, whereby it appears, that Excommunication is an human Invention, taken from the Heathens."*

And Whit. p. 203. *Mr. Whitlock fpake on the fame Side of the Queftion, and faid, " The Affembly of Divines have petitioned and advifed this Houfe, that in every Prefbytery, or Prefbyterian Congregation, the Pastors and ruling Elders may have the Power of Excommunication, and of Suspending fuch as they fhall judge ignorant or fcandalous. By Pastors, I fuppofe, they mean themfelves, and others who are or may be Preachers, and would be Bifhops or Overfeers of their Congregations. By ruling Elders they mean a felect Number of fuch in every Congregation as fhall be chofen for the Execution of Government and Difcipline therein. A Pastor is one who is to feed his Sheep; and if fo, how improper muft it be for fuch to defire to excommunicate any, or keep them from Food; to forbid any to eat, or whomfoever they fhall judge unworthy, when Chrift has faid, Take, eat, and drink ye All of it, tho' Judas was one of them. But fome have faid,*

" 'tis

“ ’tis the Duty of a Shepherd, when he sees a Sheep  
 “ feeding upon that which will do him hurt, to chase <sup>King</sup>  
 “ him away from that Pasture, and they apply this <sup>Charles I.</sup>  
 “ to suspending those from the Sacrament whom they <sup>1645.</sup>  
 “ fear, by eating and drinking unworthily, may eat  
 “ and drink their own Damnation. But it ought to  
 “ be observed, that it is not receiving the Sacrament,  
 “ but the Unworthiness of the Receiver that brings  
 “ Destruction, and this cannot be within the Judg-  
 “ ment of any but the Person himself, who alone  
 “ can examine his own Heart ; nor can any one pro-  
 “ duce a Commission for another to be Judge there-  
 “ of. But it is said, that Ruling Elders are to be  
 “ joined with the Pastors ; now, in some Country  
 “ Villages and Congregations, perhaps, they may  
 “ not be very learned, and yet the Authority given  
 “ them is very great: The Word *Elders*, amongst  
 “ the *Hebrews*, signified Men of the greatest Power  
 “ and Dignity ; so it was among the *Romans*, whose  
 “ Senate was so called, from *Senes*, Elders. The  
 “ highest Title among the *French*, *Spaniards*, and  
 “ *Italians*, *Seigneur*, and *Seigniori*, is but a Cor-  
 “ ruption of the *Latin* Word *Senior*, Elder. The  
 “ same may be observed in our *English* Corporations,  
 “ where the best and most substantial Persons are  
 “ called Aldermen or Eldermen. Thus the Title of  
 “ Elders may be given to the chief Men of every  
 “ Presbytery, but if the Power of Excommunica-  
 “ tion be given them they may challenge the Title  
 “ of Elders in the highest Signification.

“ Power is desired to be given to suspend from the  
 “ Sacrament two Sorts of Persons, the Ignorant and  
 “ Scandalous ; now ’tis possible, that they who are  
 “ judged to be Competent in one Place may be deem-  
 “ ed Ignorant in another ; however, to keep them  
 “ from the Ordinances is no way to improve their  
 “ Knowledge. Scandalous Persons are likewise to  
 “ be suspended, and this is to be left to the Discre-  
 “ tion of the Pastors and Ruling Elders ; but where  
 “ have



King  
Charles I.  
1645.

“ have they such a Commission? Scandalous Sinners  
“ should be admonished to forsake their evil Ways,  
“ and amend their Lives; and how can this be done  
“ better, than by allowing them to hear good Ser-  
“ mons, and partake of the holy Ordinances. A  
“ Man may be a good Physician though he never  
“ cuts off a Member from his Patient; and a Church  
“ may be a good Church, though no Member of  
“ of it has ever been cut off. I have heard many  
“ Complaints of the Jurisdiction of the Prelates, who  
“ were but few; now in this Ordinance there will be  
“ a great Multiplication of spiritual Men in Govern-  
“ ment, but I am of Opinion, that where the tem-  
“ poral Sword is sufficient for Punishment of Offen-  
“ ces there will be no need of this new Discipline.”

Though the Parliament did not think it prudent wholly to reject the Ordinance for Excommunication, because it had been the popular Complaint in the late Times, *That Pastors of Churches had not Power to keep unworthy Communicants from the Lord's Table*; yet the Speeches of these learned Gentlemen made such an Impression, that they resolved to render it ineffectual to all the Purposes of Church Power; accordingly, they sent to the Assembly, to specify in writing, *What Degrees of Knowledge in the Christian Religion were necessary to qualify Persons for the Communion?* and, *What Sorts of Scandal deserved Suspension or Excommunication?* Which, after much Controversy, they presented to the Houses, who inserted them in the Body of their Ordinance for *Suspension from the Lord's Supper*, dated Octob. 20. 1645. together with certain Provisos of their own.

Ordinance  
for Suspension  
and  
Excommu-  
nication.  
Rushw.  
Part IV.  
Vol. I.  
p. 211.

The Ordinance sets forth, That the several Elderships within their respective Limits, shall have Power to suspend from the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, all ignorant and scandalous Persons, within the Rules and Directions hereafter mentioned, and no others.

RULES

RULES for Suspending from the Sacrament in Case of  
IGNORANCE.

King  
Charles I.  
1645.  


1. " All that do not know and believe the Being  
" of a God, and the Holy Trinity.
2. " They that are not acquainted with Original  
" Sin, and the Fall of Man.
3. They that don't believe Christ to be God and  
" Man, and our only Mediator and Redeemer.
4. — " That Christ and his Benefits are applied  
" only by Faith ; which Faith is the Gift of God,  
" and implies a Trusting in him, for the Remission  
" of Sins, and Life everlasting.
5. — " The Necessity of sincere Repentance, and  
" a holy Life, in order to Salvation.
6. — " The Nature and Importance of the two  
" Sacraments, especially of the Lord's Supper.
7. — " That the Souls of the Faithful do imme-  
" diately live with Christ after Death ; and the Souls  
" of the Wicked immediately go to Hell.
8. — " The Resurrection of the Body, and a final  
" Judgment."

RULES for Suspension in Case of SCANDAL.

- " The Elderships shall have Power to suspend  
" from the Sacrament all *scandalous Persons* hereafter  
" mentioned, and no others, being duly convicted  
" by the Oaths of two Witnesses, or their own Con-  
" fession ; that is to say,
1. " All Blasphemers against God, his holy Word  
" or Sacraments.
  2. " Incestuous Persons.
  3. " Adulterers.
  4. " Fornicators.
  5. " Drunkards.
  6. " Profane Swearers and Cursers.
  7. " Murderers.

King  
Charles I.

1645.

8. " Worshippers of Images, Crosses, Crucifixes, or Relicks.
9. " All that make Images of the Trinity, or of any Person thereof.
10. " All religious Worshippers of Saints, Angels, or any meer Creature.
11. " Such as declare themselves not to be in Charity with their Neighbours.
12. " Such as challenge others to a Duel, or that shall accept such Challenge.
13. " Such as knowingly shall carry a Challenge either by Word, Message, or Writing.
14. " Such as profane the Lord's Day by Dancing, playing at Cards or Dice, or any other Game; or that shall on the Lord's Day use Masking, Wakes, Shooting, Bowling, playing at Foot-Ball, or Stool-Ball, Wrestling; or that shall resort to Plays, Interludes, Fencing, Bull-Baiting, or Bear-Baiting; or, that shall use Hawking, Hunting, Coursing, Fishing, or Fowling; or, that shall publicly expose any Wares to sale, otherwise than is provided by the Ordinance of April 6. 1644. or, that shall travel on the Lord's Day without reasonable Cause.
15. " Such as keep known Stews, or Brothel-Houses; or, that shall solicit the Chastity of any Person for himself, or another.
16. " Such Parents as give their Consent to marry their Children to Papists; and such as do themselves marry a Papist.
17. " Such as consult for Advice, Witches, Wizards, or Fortune-Tellers.
18. " Such as assault their Parents, or any Magistrate, Minister, or Elder, in the Execution of his Office.
19. " Such as shall be legally attainted of Barrentry, Forgery, Extortion, or Bribery."

" And



King  
Charles I.  
1645.

“ And the severall Eldershops shall have Power  
“ to suspend all MINISTERS who shall be duly con-  
“ victed of any of the Crimes abovementioned from  
“ giving or receiving the Lord’s Supper.

“ Persons suspended by one Congregation shall  
“ not be admitted to the Sacrament by another,  
“ without Certificate from that Congregation of which  
“ he was a Member. But in all Cases of Suspen-  
“ sion, if the Party suspended shall manifest his Re-  
“ pentance before the Eldership by whom he was  
“ suspended, he shall be re-admitted to the Lord’s  
“ Supper, and the Suspension taken off.”

But then follow the Proviso’s, which stripp’d  
the Presbyteries of that *Power of the Keys* which they  
were reaching at.

Provided always, “ That if any Person find him-  
“ self aggrieved with the Proceedings of the Presby-  
“ tery to which he belongs, he may appeal to the  
“ Classial Eldership; from them to the Provincial  
“ Assembly; from them to the National; and from  
“ them TO THE PARLIAMENT. *Parlia-  
ment’s  
Proviso’s.*

’Tis further provided, “ That the Cognizance and  
“ Examination of all capital Offences shall be refer-  
“ ved entire to the Magistrate appointed by the  
“ Laws of the Kingdom, who, upon his commit-  
“ ting the Party to Prison, shall make a Certificate  
“ to the Eldership of the Congregation to which  
“ they belong’d, who may thereupon suspend them  
“ from the Sacrament.

“ The Presbytery or Eldership shall not have  
“ Cognizance of any Thing relating to Contracts,  
“ Payments, or Demands; or of any Matter of  
“ Conveyance, Title, Interest, or Property, in  
“ Lands or Goods.

“ No Use shall be made of any Confession, or  
“ Proof made before an Eldership, at any Trial at  
“ Law of any Person for any Offence.

King  
Charles I.  
1645.

“ And ’tis further ordained, That those Members of Parliament who are Members of the Assembly of Divines, or any seven of them, shall be a standing Committee, to consider of such other Offences or Scandals not mentioned in this Ordinance, which may be conceived to be a sufficient Cause of Suspension from the Sacrament, and shall lay them before the Parliament.”

By an Ordinance of *June 5. 1646.* a discretionary Power was lodged in a Committee of Lords and Commons, not less than nine, to adjudge and determine scandalous Offences, not formerly enumerated, and report them to the two Houses, that if they concurred with the Committee they might be added to the Catalogue.

Presbyterians dissatisfied.

By these Proviso's 'tis evident the Parliament were determined not to part with the *Spiritual Sword*, or subject their civil Properties to the Power of the Church, which gave great Offence to the *Scots Commissioners*, and to most of the *English Presbyterians*, who declaimed against the Ordinance, as built upon *Erastian Principles*, and depriving the Church of that which it claimed by a *DIVINE INSTITUTION*. They allowed of Appeals from one spiritual Court to another, but declared openly from the Pulpit and Press, that Appeals to the Parliament or Civil Magistrate, as the *dernier Resort*, were insufferable. The Parliament observing their Ambition, of making the Church independent on the State, girt the Laws closer about them, and subjected their Determinations more immediately to the Civil Magistrate, by an Ordinance dated *March 14. 174½.* which enacts,  
“ That an Appeal shall lie from the Decisions of every Classis to the Commissioners chosen by Parliament out of every Province, and from them to the Parliament it self. That if any Person commit any scandalous Offences not mentioned in the Ordinance, the Minister may forbear to administer  
“ ster

“ After the Sacrament to him for that Time ; but then  
 “ he shall, within eight Days, certify the same to <sup>King</sup> Charles I.  
 “ the Commissioners, who shall send up the Case, <sup>1645.</sup>  
 “ with their Opinions, to the Parliament, by whose  
 “ Determination the Eldership shall abide.”

This Ordinance of Suspension from the Sacrament was extorted from the two Houses before the Time, by the importunate Solicitations of the City Clergy, for as yet there were no Classes or Presbyteries in any Part of *England*, which ought to have been before they had determined their Powers. The Houses had voted, that there should be a Choice of *Lay-Elders* throughout *England* and *Wales*, and had laid down some Rules for this Purpose, *Aug.* 19. 1645. but it was the 14th of *March* following, before it passed into a Law.

It was then ordained, 1. “ That there be forth- <sup>Ordinance</sup>  
 “ with a Choice of [Ruling] Elders throughout the <sup>for erect-</sup>  
 “ Kingdom of *England* and Dominion of *Wales*. <sup>ing Pres-</sup>  
 “ <sup>byteries.</sup>

2. “ That publick Notice be given of such Ele- <sup>Rushw.</sup>  
 “ ction in every Parish, by the Minister of the <sup>Vol. V.</sup>  
 “ Church, a Fortnight before ; and that on the <sup>p. 226.</sup>  
 “ Lord’s Day on which the Choice is to be made a

“ Sermon be preached suitable to the Occasion.

3. “ Elections shall be made by the Congrega-  
 “ tion, or the major Part of them then assembled,  
 “ being Heads of Families, and such as have taken  
 “ the Covenant.

4. “ That certain Persons be appointed TRIERS  
 “ in every Classis, *viz.* six Ministers and three Lay-  
 “ men, whereof seven to be a Quorum, to deter-  
 “ mine the Validity of Elections. All Members of  
 “ Parliament, and Peers of the Realm to be Triers  
 “ in the Parishes wherein they live.

5. “ No Man to be a Ruling *Elder* but for one  
 “ Congregation, and that in the Parish where he  
 “ lives.

6. “ The Qualifications of a *Ruling Elder* are,  
 “ that he be of good Understanding in Religion,



King  
Charles I.  
1645.

“ found in the Faith, prudent, discreet, grave, of  
“ unblameable Conversation, willing to undergo the  
“ Office, and in Communion with the Church.

7. “ All Parishes, Privilege Places, exempt Ju-  
“ risdctions, and all other Places whatsoever, shall  
“ be brought under the Exercise of Congregational,  
“ Classcal, Provincial, and National Assemblies,  
“ except Chapels within any of the King’s Houses,  
“ or the Houses of Peers, which shall continue free  
“ for the Exercises of Religion, according to the *Di-*  
“ *rectory*, but not otherwise.

8. “ The Province of *London* shall be divided into  
“ twelve Classcal Eldershops, each to contain about  
“ twelve Parishes of the City, and Parts adjacent,  
“ and these to be the Boundaries of the Province of  
“ *London*.

9. “ The several Counties of *England* and *Wales*  
“ shall be divided into Classcal Presbyteries by Per-  
“ sons to be appointed by Parliament for this Pur-  
“ pose, who shall settle the Boundaries of each Clas-  
“ sis, and certify the same to the Parliament for  
“ their Approbation.

10. “ The *Presbytery* or *Eldership* of every *Parish*,  
“ shall meet once a Week ; the *Classcal Assemblies* of  
“ each Province once a Month, by Adjournment, in  
“ such Places as may be most convenient ; *Provin-*  
“ *cial Assemblies* shall meet twice a Year ; *National*  
“ *Assemblies* as often as they shall be summoned by  
“ Parliament, and shall continue sitting as long as  
“ the Parliament shall direct and appoint, and not  
“ otherwise.

11. “ Every Congregational or Parochial Elder-  
“ ship, shall send *two Elders*, or more, not exceed-  
“ ing *four*, and one Minister, to the Classcal Assem-  
“ bly ; every Classcal Assembly within the Pro-  
“ vince shall send two Ministers, and four Ruling  
“ Elders at least, but not to exceed Nine, to the  
“ Provincial Assembly. Every Provincial Assem-  
“ bly shall appoint two Ministers, and four Ruling  
“ Elders,

“ Elders, which shall constitute a National Assem-  
 bly, when such an one shall be summoned by Par-  
 liament.

King  
 Charles I.  
 1645.

When this Ordinance had passed the *Commons* it stuck a considerable Time with the Lords, insomuch that the Presbyterian Clergy thought it necessary to quicken them by a Petition, *May 29.* under the Hands of three Hundred Ministers of *Suffolk* and *Essex*, lamenting the Decay of Religion, and the Want of Church Discipline, and beseeching their Lordships to put the finishing Hand to the Bill so long depending; which they did accordingly, *June 6. 1646.*

Thus the Presbyterian Form of Church Government became the National Establishment, by way of *Probation*, as far as an Ordinance of Parliament could make it, for the Preamble sets forth, “ That if upon Trial it was not found acceptable it should be reversed or amended. It declares further, That the two Houses found it very difficult to make their new Settlement agree with the Laws and Government of the Kingdom, that therefore it could not be expected that a present Rule in every Particular should be settled at once, but that there will be need of Supplements and Additions, and perhaps Alterations, as Experience shall bring to light the Necessity thereof.”

The Parliament apprehended they had now established the Fundamentals of the Presbyterian Discipline, though it proved not to the Satisfaction of any one Party of Christians; so hard is it to make a good Settlement when Men dig up old Foundations all at once. The *Presbyterian Government* was as narrow as the *Prelatical*; and as it did not allow a Liberty of Conscience, but claimed a Civil, as well as Ecclesiastical Authority over Men’s Persons and Properties, was equally, if not more insufferable. Bishop *Kennet* observes, that the Settling Presbytery was supported by the Fear and Love of the *Scots Army*, and that when *They* were gone home it was bet-

Remarks.

*King Charles I.* 1645. ter managed by the *English* Army, who were for Independancy, and a better Principle of Toleration; but as Things stood nobody was pleased; the Episcopals and Independants were excluded; and because the Parliament would not give the several Presbyteries an absolute Power over their Communicants, but reserved the last Appeal to themselves, neither the *Scots* nor *English* Presbyterians would accept it.

When the Scheme was laid before the *Scots* Parliament, and General Assembly, as a Plan for Uniformity between the two Nations, they insisted upon the following Amendments.

*Exceptions of the Scots to the New Discipline.*  
Rushw.  
p. 255.

(1.) " That no godly Minister may be excluded from being a Member of Classical, Provincial, or National Assemblies.

(2.) " That the ordinary Time for the Meeting of the National Assembly may be fixed; with a Reserve of Power to the Parliament to convene them when they please, and a Liberty to the Church to meet oftner on necessary Occasions.

(3.) " That the Congregational Eldership may have Power to judge in Cases of Scandal not expressed. This they conceive can't be construed lodging an arbitrary Power in the Church; whereas on the other hand, the appointing such *Provincial Commissioners* as are settled in the Ordinance will occasion Disputes, create a Disconformity between this and other Churches, and is a Mixture in Church Government altogether without Precedent. This Business therefore they conceive may be better managed by Assemblies of Ministers and Ruling Elders.

(4.) " That the Ordinance for Ordination of Ministers may be perpetual.

(5.) " The Manner of subjecting Church Assemblies to the Controul and Decision of Parliament, being very liable to Mistakes; the Exemption likewise of Persons of Distinction from Ecclesiastical



“ cal Censures; and the Administring the Sacra-  
 “ ment to some Persons, against the Conscience of  
 “ the Ministry and Elderships; these, and some  
 “ other Particulars, being more than they can admit,  
 “ they desire may be alter’d to general Satisfaction.

*King  
 Charles I.  
 1645.*

(6.) “ As to the Articles, relating to the perpe-  
 “ tual Officers of the Church, with their respective  
 “ Functions; the Order and Power of Church-As-  
 “ semblies; the Directions for publick Repentance  
 “ or Penance; the Rules for Excommunication and  
 “ Absolution;” all these they desire may be fixed and  
 settled, pursuant to the *Covenant*, and with the joint Ad-  
 vice of the Divines of both Kingdoms [*i. e.* the Assem-  
 bly at *Westminster*] long since offered to both Houses.

After the Delivery of these Papers by the *Scots* Com-  
 missioners, and before the Houses had returned an  
 Answer, they were published in print with a Preface,  
 by a private Hand, which provoked the Houses to  
 such a Degree, that *April* 14. they voted it to be  
 burnt by the Hands of the Common Hangman,  
 which was done accordingly. *April* 17. the Com-  
 mons published their Answer to the Commissioners  
 Papers, in which they declare to the World, “ That  
 “ their real Intentions are to settle Religion accord-  
 “ ing to the *Covenant*, and to maintain the ancient  
 “ and fundamental Government of this Kingdom.  
 “ They think it strange that any sober and modest  
 “ Men should imagine, they are unwilling to settle  
 “ any Government in the Church, after they have  
 “ declared so fully for the Presbyterian; have taken so  
 “ much Pains for the Settling it; have passed most of  
 “ the Particulars brought to them by the Assembly of  
 “ Divines, without any material Alteration, save in  
 “ the Point of Commissioners; and have published  
 “ so many Ordinances for putting the same in Execu-  
 “ tion, *only because they cannot consent to the granting an*  
 “ *arbitrary and unlimited Power and Jurisdiction to near*  
 “ *ten Thousand Judicatories to be erected within this*  
 “ *Kingdom, and this demanded in such a way as is not*  
 “ con-

*Parlia-  
 ment's  
 Reply.*

King Charles I. 1645. *“ consistent with the fundamental Laws and Government of the same, and by necessary Consequence excluding the Parliament of England from the Exercise of all Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction. This, say they, has been the great Cause that Church Government has not been long since settled; and we have the more Reason not to part with this Power out of the Hands of the Civil Magistrate, since the Experience of all Ages will manifest, that the Reformation and Purity of Religion, and the Preservation and Protection of the People of God in this Kingdom, has, under God, been owing to the Parliament’s Exercise of this Power. If then the Minds of any are disturbed for want of the present Settling of Church Government, let them apply to those [Ministers] who having sufficient Power and Direction from the Houses on that behalf, have not, as yet, put the same in Execution.”*

English Presbyterians petition against the Ordinance.  
MS.  
penes me,  
Self. 608.

The *English* Presbyterians having resolved to stand and fall with the *Scots*, refused peremptorily to comply with the Ordinance, relying upon the Assistance and Support of that Nation. Mr. *Marshall* stood up in the Assembly, *March* 20. and said, That since an Ordinance of Parliament for Church Government was now published, and speedily to be put in Execution; and since there were some Things in that Ordinance which lay very hard upon his Conscience, and upon the Consciences of many of his Brethren (though he blessed God for the Zeal of the two Houses in Settling the Government of the Church thus far) yet being much pressed in Spirit with some Things contained in the Ordinance, he moved, that a Committee might be appointed to examine what Things in the Ordinance were contrary to their Consciences, and to prepare a Petition to present them to the two Houses — A Petition was accordingly drawn up, and presented *March* 23. by the whole Assembly, with Mr. *Marshall* at their Head. In this Petition they

they assert the DIVINE RIGHT of the Presbyterian Government, and complain of a Clause in the late Ordinance, which establishes an *Appeal from the Censures of the Church to a Committee of Parliament*. It was a bold and daring Attempt of these Divines, who were called together only for their Advice, to examine and censure the Ordinances of Parliament, and dispute in this manner with their Superiors; the Commons, alarm'd at this Petition, appointed a Committee to take into Consideration the Matter and Manner of it, who after some Time reported it as their Opinion, that the Assembly of Divines in their late Petition had broken the Privileges of Parliament, and were guilty of a PRAEMUNIRE; and whereas they insisted so peremptorily on the Jus DIVINUM of the Presbyterian Government, the Committee had drawn up certain Queries, which they desired the Assembly might resolve for their Satisfaction; the House agreed to the Report of the Committee, and on the 30th of April sent Sir John Evelin, Mr. Nathaniel Fiennes, and Mr. Browne, to the Assembly, to acquaint them with their Resolutions. These Gentlemen set before them their rash and imprudent Conduct, and in several Speeches shewed wherein they had exceeded their Province, which was, *to advise the Houses in such Points as they should lay before them, but not to dictate to those to whom they owed their being an Assembly*. Then they read the Votes abovementioned, and delivered in the following Questions, with the Orders of the House thereupon.

King  
Charles I.  
1645.

They are  
threaten'd  
with a  
Praemu-  
nive.

*Questions propounded to the Assembly of Divines by the House of Commons, touching the Point of Jus Divinum in the Matters of Church Government.*

Questions  
sent to the  
Assembly  
relating to  
the Jus Di-

1. " Whether the Congregational and Presbyterian  
" al Elderships appointed by Ordinance of Parlia-  
" ment, or any other Congregational or Presbyte-  
" rial Elderships are *Jure Divino*, and by the Will  
" and

vinum.  
Rushw.  
p. 260.



King  
Charles I.  
1645.

“ and Appointment of Jesus Christ? and, Whether  
“ any particular Church Government be *Jure Divino*?

“ and, What that Government is?

2. “ Whether all the Members of the said Elder-  
“ ships, as Members thereof, or which of them,  
“ are *Jure Divino*, and by the Will and Appoint-  
“ ment of Jesus Christ?

3. “ Whether the Classcal, Provincial, and Na-  
“ tional Assemblies, all, or any of them, and which  
“ of them are *Jure Divino*, and by the Will and  
“ Appointment of Jesus Christ?

4. “ Whether Appeals from Congregational Elder-  
“ ships to Classcal, Provincial, and National Assem-  
“ blies, or any of them, and to which of them, are  
“ *Jure Divino*, and by the Will and Appointment  
“ of Jesus Christ? and, Whether their POWERS up-  
“ on such Appeals are *Jure Divino*, and by the Will  
“ and Appointment of Jesus Christ?

5. “ Whether Oecumenical Assemblies are *Jure*  
“ *Divino*? and, Whether there be Appeals from  
“ any of the former Assemblies to the said Oecume-  
“ nical *Jure Divino*, and by the Will and Appoint-  
“ ment of Jesus Christ?

6. “ Whether by the Word of God, the Power  
“ of judging and declaring what are such notorious  
“ and scandalous Offences, for which Persons guilty  
“ thereof are to be kept from the Sacrament of the  
“ Lord’s Supper, and of convening before them,  
“ trying, and actually suspending from the Sacra-  
“ ment of the Lord’s Supper such Offenders, is  
“ either in the Congregational Eldership, Presbyte-  
“ ry, or in any other Eldership, Congregation, or  
“ Persons? and, Whether such Powers are in them  
“ only, or any of them, and in which of them *Jure*  
“ *Divino*, and by the Will and Appointment of Je-  
“ sus Christ?

7. “ Whether there be any certain and particular  
“ Rules expressed in the Word of God to direct the  
“ Elderships, or Presbyteries, Congregations, or  
“ Per-

“ Persons, or any of them, in the Exercise and  
 “ Execution of the Powers aforesaid, and what are  
 “ those Rules? King  
Charles I.  
1645.

8. “ Is there any Thing contained in the Word of  
 “ God, that the supreme Magistracy in a Christian  
 “ State may not judge and determine what are the  
 “ aforesaid notorious and scandalous Offences, and  
 “ the Manner of Suspension for the same; and in  
 “ what Particulars concerning the Premises is the  
 “ said supreme Magistracy by the Word of God  
 “ excluded?

9. “ Whether the Provision of Commissioners to  
 “ judge of Scandals not enumerated (as they are au-  
 “ thorized by the Ordinance of Parliament) be con-  
 “ trary to that way of Government which Christ  
 “ has appointed in his Church? and, Wherein are  
 “ they so contrary? ”

In the Assembly's Answer to these Particulars the House of Commons ordered, the Proofs from Scripture to be set down, with the several Texts at large, in the express Words of the same; and that every Minister of the Assembly that should be present at the Debate of any of these Questions should subscribe his respective Name in the Affirmative or Negative, according as he gave his Vote: And that those who dissented from the major Part should set down their positive Opinions, with the express Texts of Scripture upon which their Opinions are grounded.

'Tis easy to discover the Hand of Mr. *Selden* and *Whillock* in these Questions; which were sent to the Assembly not with any Prospect of a satisfactory Answer, but to employ, and, it may be, to divide them, till they saw how they were like to settle with the King. The Houses were afraid of being fetter'd with the *Scots* Discipline, and yet the *Scots* were not to be disgusted, because they had an Army in the North, to whom the King had committed the Custody of his royal Person. Remarks.

As

King  
Charles I.  
1645.

They are  
terrified,  
and ap-  
point a  
Fast.

As soon as the Assembly had heard the Resolutions of the House of Commons abovementioned, and the Questions read, first by Sir *J. Evelin*, and then by their Scribe, they adjourned in a very great Fright till next Morning, in order to consult their Brethren in the City; and then appointed a Day of Fasting and Humiliation for themselves, in reference to their present Circumstances, and sent Letters to all the Members to give their Attendance. The Fast was observed within their own Walls on *Wednesday May 6.* from nine in the Morning till four in the Afternoon; and Committees were appointed to consider of an Answer to the Questions, whose Report we shall hear under the next Year.

Committee  
of Accom-  
modation.  
Papers for  
Accommo-  
dation,  
p. 1.

In the mean Time, we must go back a little, to take a View of the Attempts that were made to comprehend the *Independants*, or dissenting Brethren in the Assembly within the new Establishment, or at least to obtain a Toleration for them; the Parliament had ordered, *September 13. 1644.* that the  
 “ Committee of Lords and Commons appointed to  
 “ treat with the *Scots* Commissioners, and the Com-  
 “ mittee of Divines, do take into Consideration the  
 “ Differences of the Opinions of the Members of the  
 “ Assembly in point of Church Government, and  
 “ endeavour *an Union if possible*; and if that cannot  
 “ be accomplished, endeavour to find out some  
 “ Way how far tender Consciences, who cannot in all  
 “ Things submit to the same Rule, may be born with, ac-  
 “ cording to the Word of God, and consistent with the pub-  
 “ lick Peace.” This was called the GRAND COMMITTEE OF ACCOMMODATION, which met the first Time, *Sept. 20.* and chose a Sub-Committee of six Divines of the Assembly, to consider the Points of Difference, and to prepare Materials for the Consideration of the *Grand Committee*; the Names of the Divines were the Reverend Mr. *Marshall*, Mr. *Herle*, Mr. *Vines*, Dr. *Temple*, Mr. *Goodwin*, and Mr. *Nye*, who after several Consultations among themselves, delivered to the  
 Com-



Committee certain Propositions [*Octob. 15. 1644.*] <sup>King</sup> which were read by Mr. *Vines*, their Chairman: <sup>Charles I.</sup> The Independants would have stated the Difference <sup>1645.</sup> between the two Parties, and endeavoured a Compromise while the Discipline of the Church was depending; but the Presbyterians insisted, That the new Form of Government should first pass into a Law as a Standard, and then the Exceptions of the Independants be consider'd; upon which they were adjourned by Order of the House of Commons, till the Affair should be determined in the Assembly, who agreed, *April 4. 1645.* that the Brethren who had enter'd their Remonstr. Dissent against the Presbyterian Government should be a P. 3. Committee to bring in the whole Frame of their Government in a Body, with their Grounds and Reasons. The Independants desired liberty to bring it in by Parts, as the Presbyterians had done their Advices; but this not being admitted, they desired Time to perfect their Plan before any other Scheme passed into a Law; but the Presbyterians, without any Regard to the Compromise, by the Assistance of their Scots Friends, pushed the Affair to a Conclusion in Parliament; upon which the Independants laid aside their Model, and published a Remonstrance, complaining of the artful Conduct of the Assembly, and that the Discipline of the Church being fixed, it was too late to think any more of a Comprehension. But the House of Commons having seen their Mistake took the Affair in hand, and revived the Committee of Accommodation by an Order of *Nov. 6. 1645.* which, besides the Scots Commissioners, consisted of the following Peers, viz.

|                          |                   |
|--------------------------|-------------------|
| Earl of Northumberland,  | Lord Wharton, and |
| Earl of Manchester,      | Lord Howard.      |
| Lord Vic. Say and Seale, |                   |

These were to be met by the following Members of the Assembly, viz.

King  
Charles I.  
1645.

Dr. Burges,  
Mr. Marshal,  
Mr. Herle,  
Mr. Reynolds,  
Dr. Hoyle,  
Mr. White,

Mr. Vines,  
Mr. Hill,  
Dr. Temple,  
Mr. Palmer,  
Mr. Tuckney,

Mr. Arrowsmith,  
Dr. Smith,  
Mr. Seaman,  
Mr. Newcomen,  
Mr. Young.

with the dissenting Brethren of the Assembly.

Mr. Tho. Goodwin, Mr. Nye, Mr. Bridge,  
Mr. Simpson, Mr. Burroughs, Mr. Dury.

The Com-  
mittees  
revived.  
Papers for  
Accommo-  
dation.  
p. 14, 24.

The Committee met in the *Jerusalem Chamber* Nov. 17. and would have enter'd upon a Scheme for Comprehension, but the *Independants* moved only for an *Indulgence* or *Toleration*, for they said they had already moved in the Assembly, and elsewhere, that their Scheme of Government might be debated before the *Presbyterian* had passed into a Law, and for this Purpose had offered to prepare a compleat Model, if they might have been indulg'd but a few Days; but this being over-ruled, and another Form of Government settled, they apprehended themselves shut out from the Establishment, and precluded from any further Attempts towards an Union or Comprehension; but still, they were willing to enter upon the second Part of the Parliament's Order, which was to consider, *How far tender Consciences, who cannot in all Things submit to the establish'd Rule, may be indulged, consistent with the Word of God and the publick Peace.* Accordingly in their next Meeting, Dec. 4. they offer'd the following Proposals.

Taking for granted that both Sides shall agree in one Confession of Faith, they humbly crave,

Proposals  
of the In-  
depend-  
ants.

1. That their Congregations may have the Power of Ordination within themselves.

2. That they may not be brought under the Power of Classes, nor forced to communicate in those Parish Churches

Churches wherein they dwell, but that they may have Liberty to join with such Congregations as they choose, which Congregations shall have Power of all Church Censures within themselves, subject only to Parliament; and be as so many *exempt, or privileged Places*.

King  
Charles I.  
1645.

To the Preamble the *Presbyterians* replied, that none but such as agreed to their Confession of Faith and Directory should have the Benefit of the Forbearance to be agreed on, with whom the Committee agreed; but the Independants would admit only of the Affirmative, *That such as agreed with them should be tolerated*; and would not consent to the Negative, so as to set Bounds or Limits of Forbearance to tender Consciences, nor make such an Agreement a necessary Qualification for receiving the Sacrament.

Reply of  
the Pres-  
byterians.  
Papers of  
Accommo-  
dation.

p. 18, 19,  
26, 27.

To the Desire of the *Independants*, of being exempted from the Jurisdiction of their Classes, and having a Liberty of erecting separate Congregations, the *Presbyterians* replied,

1. That this implied a total Separation from the established Rule.

Ib. p. 20,  
21.

2. The Lawfulness of gathering Churches out of other true Churches.

3. That the Parliament would then destroy what they had set up.

4. That Members of Independant Churches would then have greater Privilege than those of the Establishment.

5. That this would countenance a perpetual Schism. And,

6. Introduce all Manner of Confusion in Families.

They therefore offered, That such as after Conference with their Parish Minister were not satisfied with the Establishment, should not be compell'd to communicate in the Lord's Supper, nor be liable to Censures from Classes or Synods, provided they join'd with the Parish Congregation where they lived, and were under the Government of it in other respects.



*King*  
*Charles I.*  
 1645.  
*Answer of the Independants.*  
*Papers for Accommodation.*  
 p. 29, 30.

The *Independants* replied, That they did not intend a total Separation, but should agree with their Brethren in the most essential Points; as in worshipping according to the Directory, in choosing the same Officers, Pastors, Teachers, Ruling Elders, with the same Qualifications as in the *Rule*. That they should require the same Qualifications in their Members as the Assembly had advised, that is, *visible Saints, professing Faith in Christ, and Obedience to him, according to the Rules of Faith and Life taught by Christ and his Apostles*; that they should practise the same Church Censures, being accountable for their Conduct to their civil Superiors. They would also hold occasional Communion with the Presbyterian Churches, in Baptism and the Lord's Supper, communicating occasionally with them, and receiving their Members to Communion as occasion required. Their Ministers should preach for each other, and in Cases of Difficulty they would call in their Assistance and Advice; and when an *Ordination* falls out, they would desire the Presence and Approbation of their Ministers with their own. Now surely, say they, this does not imply a total Separation; but if in some Things Men cannot comply with the *established Rule* without Sin, we think such Persons ought not to live without communicating in the Lord's Supper all their Days, rather than gather into Churches where they may enjoy all Ordinances without Offence to their Consciences — Nor ought such Separation to be accounted *Schism*, which is a Name of Reproach we desire not to be branded with, when we are willing to maintain Christian Love and Communion with our Neighbours, as far as our Consciences will permit — They add further, that if the *State* is pleased to grant them this Liberty, they will refer themselves to the Wisdom of the Legislature to consider of limiting their Congregations to a certain Number, to be as so many Receptacles for pious Persons of tender Consciences.

Ib. p. 35,  
 36.

Ib. p. 40.

The *Presbyterians* in their next Reply, Dec. 23. after having blamed the *Independants* for not going upon a Comprehension, argue against the Lawfulness of a Separation after this Manner: "That if a Pre-  
 "tence of Conscience be a sufficient Ground of Se-  
 "paration, Men may gather impure and corrupt  
 "Churches out of purer, because upon the Dictate of  
 "an erring Conscience they may disallow that which  
 "is pure, and set up that which is agreeable to their  
 "erring Consciences; and we very much doubt (say  
 "they) whether Tenderneſs of Conscience in doubt-  
 "ful Points will juſtify a Separation; it may oblige  
 "Men to forbear Communion, but not to ſet up a  
 "contrary Practice. If a Church impoſe any  
 "Thing that is ſinful we muſt forbear to comply,  
 "yet without Separation, as was the Practice of the  
 "Puritans in the late Times —" They then  
 argue from the Conceſſions of the *Independants*, that  
 becauſe they agree with them in ſo many material  
 Points, therefore they ſhould not ſeparate. "If,  
 "ſay they, you can communicate with our Church  
 "occasionally, once, or a ſecond and third Time  
 "without Sin, we know no Reaſon why you may  
 "not do it conſtantly, and then Separation will be  
 "needleſs — As for ſuch a Toleration as our Bre-  
 "thren deſire, we apprehend it will open a Door to  
 "all Sects; and though the *Independants* now plead  
 "for it, their Brethren in *New England* don't al-  
 "low it."

As to the Charge of *Schiſm* they admit, that Diffe-  
 rence in Judgment in ſome particular Points is not  
*Schiſm*; nor does an Inconformity to ſome Things  
 enjoin'd deſerve that Name; but our Brethren deſire  
 further to ſet up *ſeparate Communion*s, which is a ma-  
 niſeſt Rupture of our Societies into others, and is  
 therefore a *Schiſm* in the Body. This is ſetting up  
 Altar againſt Altar, allowing our Churches (as the  
*Independants* do) to be true Churches; for St. *Auſtin*  
 ſays, *Schiſmaticos facit non diverſa Fides, ſed communi-*

King  
Charles I.  
1645.

The Pref-  
byterians  
Reply.  
Papers for  
Accommo-  
dation.  
p. 51.

lb. p. 16.

Ibid.  
p. 65, 133  
74

*King Charles I.* *1645.* *onis disrupta Societas.* And we conceive, it is the Cause of the Separation that makes Schism, and not the Separation itself; if then the Cause of our Brethrens Separation be not sufficient, by what other Name can it be called? To all which they add, that this Indulgence, if granted, will be the Mother of all Contentions, Strifes, Heresies, and Confusions in the Church; and contrary to their Covenant, which obliges them to endeavour to their utmost an **UNIFORMITY.**

*Answer of the Independants. Papers for Accommodation. p. 86.* When the Committee met the next Time, *Feb. 2. 1645.* the *Independants* replied chiefly to the Point of *Uniformity*, and argued, that it was not necessary to the Peace of the Churches; and ought not to extend beyond Peoples Light, according to the Apostolical Canon, *As far as we have attained let us walk by the same Rule*, Phil. iii. 15. As for a mere Exemption from the Censures of the Classes, they declared frankly they could not acquiesce in it, because it would deprive them of the Enjoyment of the Lord's Supper; and that it was very hard to urge, that because they came so near their Brethren, therefore they should be obliged to a total and constant Conformity.

*Conclusion of the Presbyterians.* The Committee met the last Time, *March 9.* when the Sub-Committee of Presbyterian Divines answered the last Paper of the *Independants*, maintaining all their former Positions in the best Manner they could, and concluding in this strange and wonderful Manner: "That whereas their Brethren say, that  
 " Uniformity ought to be urged no further than is  
 " agreeable to all Mens Consciences, and to their Edi-  
 " fication; it seems to them, as if their Brethren not  
 " only desired Liberty of Conscience for themselves,  
 " but for all Men, and would have us think, that  
 " we are bound by our Covenant to bring the  
 " Churches in the three Kingdoms to no nearer a  
 " Conjunction and Uniformity than is consistent  
 " with the Liberty of all Mens Consciences; which  
 " whe-

*Ib. p. 123.*



“ whether it be the Sense of the Covenant, we leave  
 “ with the honourable Committee.”

*King*  
 Charles I.

1645.

Upon which the Reverend Mr. *Jer. Burroughs*, a  
 Divine of great Candor and Moderation, declared in  
 the Name of the *Independants*, “ That if their Con-  
 “ gregations might not be exempted from that coer-  
 “ cive Power of the Classes ; if they might not have  
 “ Liberty to govern themselves in their own Way,  
 “ as long as they behaved peaceably towards the Ci-  
 “ vil Magistrate, they were resolved to suffer, or go  
 “ to some other Place of the World, where they  
 “ might enjoy their Liberty. But while Men think  
 “ there is no Way of Peace but by forcing all to be  
 “ of the same Mind (says he) while they think the  
 “ civil Sword is an Ordinance of God to determine  
 “ all Controversies of Divinity, and that it must  
 “ needs be attended with Fines and Imprisonment  
 “ to the Disobedient ; while they apprehend there is  
 “ no Medium between a strict Uniformity, and a  
 “ general Confusion of all Things ; while these  
 “ Sentiments prevail there must be a base Subjection  
 “ of Mens Consciences to Slavery, a Suppression of  
 “ much Truth, and great Disturbances in the Chri-  
 “ stian World.”

Thus ended the last Committee of Lords and *Remarks.*  
 Commons, and Assembly of Divines, for *Accommoda-*  
*tion*, which adjourned to a certain Day, but being then  
 diverted by other Affairs met no more. Little did  
 the Presbyterian Divines think, that in less than  
 twenty Years all their Artillery would be turned  
 against themselves ; that they should be excluded  
 the Establishment by an Act of Prelatical Uniform-  
 ity ; that they should be reduced to the Necessity  
 of pleading for that Indulgence which they now de-  
 nied their Brethren ; and think it their Duty to ga-  
 ther Churches for separate Worship out of others,  
 which they allowed to be true ones. If the leading  
 Presbyterians in the Assembly and City had come to

King Charles I. 1645. a Temper with the *Independants*, on the Foot of a limited Toleration, they had, in all likelihood, prevented the Disputes between the Army and Parliament, which were the Ruin of both; They might then have saved the Constitution, and made their own Terms with the King, who was now their Prisoner; but they were enchanted with the Beauties of *Covenant Uniformity*, and the DIVINE RIGHT of their Presbytery, which, after all, the Parliament would not admit in its full Extent. Mr. *Baxter*, who was no Friend of the *Independants*, says, "That the  
 Baxter's Life, p. 103. "Presbyterian Ministers were so little sensible of  
 "their own Infirmities, that they would not agree to  
 "tolerate those who were not only tolerable, but  
 "worthy Instruments and Members in the Churches,  
 "Prudent Men were for *Union in Things necessary*, for  
 "Liberty in Things unnecessary, and for Charity in all;  
 "but they could not be heard."

Debates about Toleration and Liberty of Conscience. Great was the Resort of the City Divines to *Sion College* at this Time, where there was a kind of Synod every Monday, to consult proper Methods to propagate Religion, and support the Assembly at *Westminster* in their Opposition to the Toleration of Sectaries; for this Purpose they writ them a Letter, dated Jan. 15. 1648. in which they recite the Arguments of the Committee, and beseech them to oppose with all their Might the great *Diana* of the *Independants*, and not suffer their new Establishment to be strangled in the Birth by a lawless Toleration.

The whole Scots Nation was also commanded into the Service; the Parliament of that Kingdom writ to the two Houses at *Westminster*, Feb. 3. telling them, that "it was expected the Honourable Houses  
 Rushw. p. 234. "would add the civil Sanction to what the pious and  
 "learned Assembly have advised; and I am commanded  
 "by the Parliament of this Kingdom (says the President)  
 "to demand it, and I do in their Names demand it.  
 "And the Parliament of this Kingdom is perswaded,  
 "that the Piety and Wisdom of the Honourable  
 "Houses

“ Houses will never admit Toleration of any Sects  
 “ or Schisms contrary to our solemn League and Co-  
 “ venant.” At the same Time they appeal’d to the  
 People, and publish’d a Declaration *against Toleration* King Charles I. 1645.  
*of Sectaries and Liberty of Conscience*; in which, after Scots Declaration  
 having taken Notice of their great Services, they ob- against Toleration.  
 serve, that there is a Party in *England* who are endea-  
 vouring to supplant the true Religion by pleading for  
*Liberty of Conscience*, which (say they) is the Nou-  
 risher of all Heresies and Schisms. They then de-  
 clare against all such Notions as are inconsistent with  
 the Truth of Religion, and opening a Door to Licenti-  
 nousness, which, to the utmost of their Power, they  
 will endeavour to oppose; and as they have all enter’d  
 into one Covenant, so to the last Man in the  
 Kingdom they will go on in the Preservation of it.  
 And however the Parliament of *England* may deter-  
 mine in point of *Toleration and Liberty of Conscience*,  
 they are resolved not to make the least Start, but to  
 live and die, for the Glory of God, in the entire Pre-  
 servation of the Truth.

Most of the Sermons before the House of Com-  
 mons, at their monthly Fasts, spoke the Language  
 of *Severity*, and call’d upon the Magistrate to draw his  
 Sword against the *Sectaries*. The Press abounded  
 with Pamphlets of the same Nature; Mr. *Prynne*  
 against *J. Goodwin* says, that if the Parliament and  
 Synod establish Presbytery, the *Independants*, and all  
 others, are bound to submit, under Pain of Obsti-  
 nacy. Another writes, that to let Men serve God  
 according to the Perswasion of their own Consciences,  
 is to cast out one Devil that seven worse may  
 enter.

But the Cause of Liberty was not destitute of Ad-  
 vocates at this Time; the *Independants* pleaded for a  
 Toleration so far, as to include themselves and the so-  
 ber Anabaptists, but did not put the Controversy on  
 a general Foot; they were for tolerating all that  
 agreed in the Fundamentals of Christianity, but when



King  
Charles I.  
1645.

they came to enumerate Fundamentals they were sadly intangled, as all those must be who do not keep the Religious and Civil Rights of Mankind on a separate Basis: A Man may be an orthodox Believer, but deserve Death as a Traytor to his King and Country; and on the other hand, a Heretick or Non-Conformist to the established Religion may be a most loyal and dutiful Subject, and deserve the highest Preferment his Prince can bestow.

Answer to  
the Rea-  
sons of the  
London  
Clergy.  
Vol. Pamph.  
N<sup>o</sup> 52.

The Letter of the City Divines to the Assembly received a quick Reply from a Writer of more generous Principles, who complains, " That the Presbyterians not content with their own Freedom and Liberty, nor with having their Form of Government made the National Establishment, were grasping at as much Power as the *Prelates* before them had usurped; for this Purpose they had obtained the Privilege of Licensing the Press, that nothing might be writ against them but what they should please to approve; they were continually soliciting the Parliament to establish their Church Government, which they called the Government of Christ, with a *coercive Power*; they were always busy in framing Petitions, and engaging the Magistrates of the City to present them to the Houses; and not content with this, they were now moving the Assembly of Divines, of whom themselves are a considerable Part, to become the Patrons of Oppression." Our Author maintains, that "*Liberty of Conscience is the natural Right of every Man*, though of all Parties of Men those deserve least the Countenance of the State, who would persecute others if it were in their Power, because they are Enemies of the Society in which they live. He that will look back on past Times, and examine into the true Causes of the Subversion and Devastation of States and Countries, will find it owing to the Tyranny of Princes, and the Persecution of Priests. All Governments therefore which

" under-

King  
Charles I.  
1645.

“ understand their true Interests, will endeavour to  
 “ suppress in every Sect, or Division of Men, whe-  
 “ ther Papist, Episcopal, Presbyterian, Independ-  
 “ tant, or Anabaptist, the Spirit of Dominion and  
 “ Persecution, which is the Disturber of Mankind,  
 “ and the Off-spring of the Devil. But the Ministers  
 “ say, if we tolerate one Sect we must tolerate all ;  
 “ which our Author admits, and adds, that they  
 “ have as good a Right to the Liberty of their Con-  
 “ sciences as to their Clothes or Estates ; *no Opinions*  
 “ *or Sentiments of Religion being cognizable by the Magi-*  
 “ *strate, any further than they are inconsistent with the*  
 “ *Peace of the Civil Government.* The Way to put  
 “ an End to Diversity of Opinions is not by Fines  
 “ and Imprisonments ; can *Bedlam*, or the *Fleet*,  
 “ open Mens Understandings, and reduce them  
 “ from Error? No certainly, nothing but sound  
 “ Reason and Argument can do it, which, ’tis to be  
 “ feared, they are not furnished with, who have Re-  
 “ course to any other Weapons. *Schism* and *Heresy* are  
 “ to be rooted out, not by Oppression, but by Reason  
 “ and Debate ; by the Sword of the *Spirit*, not of the  
 “ *Flesh* ; by Argument, not by Blows, to which  
 “ Men have recourse when they are beat out of the  
 “ other. *Schism* and *Heresy* are Words of Terror  
 “ thrown upon the Adversary by all Parties of Men ;  
 “ and perhaps, there may need an infallible Judge to  
 “ determine where the *Schism* lies, before we venture  
 “ upon extraordinary Methods to extirpate it.” He  
 adds, “ That *Persecution* will breed more Confusion  
 “ and Disturbance than *Toleration* ; and that their  
 “ solemn League and Covenant ought to bind them  
 “ no farther than it is consistent with the Word of  
 “ God. Now, that *Toleration*, or Liberty of Con-  
 “ science, is the Doctrine of *Scripture*, is evident,  
 “ 1. From the Parable of the Tares and Wheat  
 “ growing together till the Harvest. 2. From the  
 “ Apostle’s Direction, *Let every Man be perswaded in*  
 “ *his*

King " his own Mind. 3. That *whatsoever* is not of Faith is  
 Charles I. " Sin. 4. From our Saviour's golden Rule, *What-*  
 1645. " *soever ye would that Men should do to you, that do ye to*  
 " *them* — "

This Pamphlet was answered by another, called *Anti-Toleration*, in which the Author endeavours to vindicate the most unbounded Lengths of Persecution; but neither the Assembly, nor the City Divines, nor the whole Scots Nation, could prevail with the Parliament to deliver the Sword into their Hands. The high Behaviour of the Presbyterians lost them the Affections of great Numbers of People, who began to discover that the Contention between them and the *Prelates* was not for Liberty but Power, and that all the spiritual Advantage they were like to get by the War was to shift Hands, and instead of Episcopal Government to submit to the Yoke of Presbyterian Uniformity.

*The King  
 fomented  
 their Di-  
 visions.*  
 Vol. II.  
 p. 746.

Lord *Clarendon* admits, that the King endeavoured to make his Advantage of these Divisions, by courting the *Independants*, and promising some of them very valuable Compensations for any Services they should do him; intimating, that it was impossible for them to expect Relief in their Scruples from Persons who pretended they were erecting the *Kingdom of Christ*; but though the *Independants* were Enemies to the Presbyterian Discipline, they durst not trust the King's Promises. Mr. *Whitlock* agrees with the noble Historian, that the King was watchful to make his Advantage of these Divisions, and commanded one *Ogle* to write to Mr. *Tho. Goodwin*, and *Phil. Nye*, two of the *Independant* Ministers, and make them large Overtures, if they would oppose the Presbyterian Government intended to be imposed upon *England* by the *Scots*; but these two Gentlemen very honestly acquainted their Friends with it, which put an end to the Correspondence; all which might have convinced the Presbyterians of the Necessity of coming

p. 176.



to some Terms with Dissenters; but the King's Affairs were so low, that they were under no Apprehensions of Disturbance from that Quarter at present.

King Charles I.  
1645.

The Assembly perfected nothing further this Year; but complaint being made of the obsolete Version of the Psalms by *Sternhold* and *Hopkins*, the Parliament desir'd them to recommend some other to be used in Churches; accordingly they read over Mr.

New Version of the Psalms in Metre appointed.

*Rouse's* Version, and after several Amendments sent it up to the House Nov. 14. 1645. with the following Recommendation: "Whereas the honourable House

of Commons, by an Order bearing Date Nov. 20. 1643. have recommended the Psalms published

by Mr. *Rouse* to the Consideration of the Assembly of Divines, the Assembly has caused them to

be carefully perused, and as they are now alter'd

and amended do approve them, and humbly con-

ceive they may be useful and profitable to the

Church, if they be permitted to be publicly sung;"

accordingly they were authorized by the two Houses, Parl. Chr. The like Care was taken to prevent the Importation of incorrect Bibles printed in *Holland*.

To return to the Proceedings of Parliament; the Committee for plunder'd Ministers having reported to the House of Commons, Jan. 28. 1645. certain Blasphemies of *Paul Best*, who denied the Holy Tri-

Censures of Paul Best. Whitlock, p. 176.

nity; the House order'd an Ordinance to be brought in [March 28.] to punish him with Death; but several Divines being appointed to confer with him, in order to convince him of his Error, he confessed his Belief of that Doctrine in general Terms before he was brought to his Trial, and that he hoped to be saved thereby, but denied the Personality, as being a Jesuitical Tenet; upon this Confession his Trial was put off, and he was at length dismissed.

The Government of the Church being now changed into a Presbyterian Form, and the War almost at an end, the Parliament resolved to apply the Revenues of the Cathedrals to other publick Uses, and accord-

ingly

King Charles I. 1645. Ordinance to seize the Revenues of Cathedrals. Husb. Col. p. 758. ingly Nov. 18. it was ordained, “ That whereas the present Dean and Prebendaries of *Westminster* had deserted their Charge, and were become Delinquents to the Parliament, they did therefore ordain, that the Earl of *Northumberland*, with about ten other Lords, and twenty two Commoners, should be a Committee; and that any Person, or more of them, should have Authority to order, direct, and dispose of the Rents, Issues, and Profits, belonging to the College or Collegiate Church, and to do and execute all other Acts that did any way concern either of them.” They ordained further, “ That the Dean, Prebendaries, and all other Officers belonging either to the College or Church, who had absented themselves, and were become Delinquents, or had not taken the Covenant, should be suspended from their several Offices and Places, and from all manner of Benefit and Profit arising from them, or from the Arrears of them, Mr. *Osbaldston* only excepted.

When the Cathedral of *Hereford* fell into the Parliament’s Hands the Dignitaries of that Church were dispossessed, and their Lands and Revenues seized into the Hands of the Committee of that County. The Dignitaries of the Cathedral Churches of *Winchester* and *Carlisle* were served in the same manner the latter End of this Year, when the whole Frame of the Hierarchy was dissolved.

Revenues of the University of Cambridge preserved. The Parliament, at the Request of the *Assembly of Divines*, gave some Marks of their Favour to the University of *Cambridge*, which was reduced to such necessitous Circumstances, by reason of the Failure of their College Rents, that they could not support their Students; it was therefore ordained, April 11. 1645. “ That nothing contained in any Ordinance of Parliament concerning levying or paying of Taxes should extend to the University of *Cambridge*, or any of the Colleges or Halls within the said University, nor to any of  
“ the

“ the Rents or Revenues belonging to the said University or Colleges, or any of them, nor to charge any Master, Fellow, or Scholar of any of the said Colleges, nor any Reader, Officer, or Minister of the said University or Colleges, for any Stipend, Wages, or Profit arising, or growing due to them, in respect of their Places and Employments in the said University.” They likewise confirm’d all their ancient Rights and Privileges, and ordered the Differences between the *University* and *Town* to be determin’d according to Law. On the same Day the Ordinance for Regulating the University, and removing scandalous Ministers in the associated Counties by the Earl of *Manchester*, mention’d in the beginning of the last Year, was revived and continued.

On the 17th of *April* this Year died Dr. *Dan. Featly*; he was born at *Charlton* in *Oxfordshire* 1581. and educated at *Corpus Christi* College, of which he was Fellow; upon his leaving the University he went Chaplain to Sir *Tho. Symmonds*, the King’s Ambassador to the *French* Court, where he gained Reputation by his Sermons and Disputations with the Papists. When he returned Home he became domestick Chaplain to Archbishop *Abbot*, and was presented by him to the Rectory of *Lambeth*, and in the Year 1627. to *Acton*. In 1643. he was nominated of the Assembly of Divines, and sat among them till his Correspondence with the Court was discovered, by an intercepted Letter to Archbishop *Usher* relating to their Proceedings; upon which he was committed to Lord *Peter’s* House for a Spy, both his Livings were sequester’d, and himself expell’d the Assembly. The Doctor was a thorough *Calvinist*, but very zealous for the Hierarchy of the Church; when in Prison he published the following Challenge;

Death of  
Dr. Featly.

“ WHERE-



King  
Charles I.  
1645.

“ WHEREAS I am certainly informed, that  
“ divers Lecturers and Preachers in *London*  
“ do in their Pulpits, in a most insolent Manner, de-  
“ mand where they are now, that dare stand up in  
“ Defence of the Church Hierarchy, or Book of  
“ Common Prayer, or any ways oppose or impugn  
“ the new intended Reformation both in Doctrine  
“ and Discipline of the Church of *England*; I do, and  
“ will maintain, by Disputation or Writing, against  
“ any of them, these three Conclusions.

1. “ That the Articles of Religion agreed upon in  
“ the Year 1562. by both Houses of Convocation,  
“ and ratified by Queen *Elizabeth*, need no Altera-  
“ tion at all, but only an orthodox Explication of  
“ some ambiguous Phrases, and a Vindication  
“ against false Aspersions.

2. “ That the Discipline of the Church of *England*,  
“ established by many Laws, and Acts of Parlia-  
“ ment, that is, the Government by Bishops (remo-  
“ ving all Innovations and Abuses in the Execution  
“ thereof) is agreeable to God’s Word, and a truly  
“ ancient and apostolical Institution.

3. “ That there ought to be a set Form of pub-  
“ lick Prayer; and that the Book of Common Pray-  
“ er (the Kalendar being reformed in point of Apo-  
“ cryphal Saints and Chapters, some Rubricks ex-  
“ plained, and some Expressions revised, and the  
“ Whole correctly printed with the Psalms, Chap-  
“ ters, and Allegations out of the Old and New Te-  
“ stament, according to the last Translation) is the  
“ most compleat, perfect, and exact Liturgy now  
“ extant in the Christian World.”

The Doctor was a little Man, of warm Passions,  
and exceedingly inflamed against the Parliament for  
his Imprisonment, as appears by his last Prayer a  
few

few Hours before his Death, which happened at *Chel-*  
*sea*, where he was removed for the Benefit of the Air, King Charles I. 1645.  
 in the Sixty fifth Year of his Age. His Prayer had  
 these Words in it, — “ Lord, strike through the  
 “ Reins of them that rise against the Church and Fearly's Life,  
 “ King, and let them be as Chaff before the Wind, p. 78.  
 “ and as Stubble before the Fire; let them be scat-  
 “ ter'd as Partridges on the Mountains, and let the  
 “ Breath of the Lord consume them, but upon our  
 “ gracious Sovereign and his Posterity let the Crown  
 “ flourish——” A Prayer not very agreeable to  
 that of *St. Stephen*, or our blessed Saviour upon the  
 Cross.

The Writer of the Life of Archbishop *Usher* says,  
 the Doctor was both Orthodox and Loyal; but  
 Lord *Clarendon* and Dr. *Heylin* can't forgive his sitting  
 in the Assembly, and being a Witness against Arch-  
 bishop *Laud* at his Trial. “ Whether he sat in the Hist. Pres.  
 “ Assembly (says *Heylin*) to shew his Parts, or to p. 464.  
 “ head a Party, or out of his old Love to *Calvi-*  
 “ *nism*, may best be gathered from some Speeches  
 “ which he made and printed; but he was there in  
 “ Heart before, and therefore might afford them his  
 “ Body now, though possibly he might be excused  
 “ from taking the Covenant as others did.”

Soon after died famous old Mr. *John Dod*, whose Death of  
 pious and remarkable Sayings are remember'd to this Mr. Dod.  
 Day; he was born at *Shotlidge* in *Cheshire* in the Clark's  
 Year 1550. and educated in *Jesus College Cambridge*, Martyrol.  
 of which he was Fellow. At Thirty Years of Age  
 he removed to *Hanwell* in *Oxfordshire*, where he con-  
 tinued preaching twice on the Lord's Day, and  
 once on the week Days for above twenty Years; at  
 the End of which he was suspended for Non-Confor-  
 mity by Dr. *Bridges*, Bishop of the Diocese. Being  
 driven from *Hanwell* he removed to *Canons Ashby* in  
*Northamptonshire*, and lived quietly several Years,  
 but upon Complaint made by Bishop *Neal* to King  
*James* he commanded Archbishop *Abbot* to silence  
 “ him.

*King* him. After the Death of King *James* Mr. *Dod* was  
*Charles I.* allowed to preach publickly again, and settled at  
 1645. *Faustly* in the same County, where he continued till  
 his Death. He was a most humble, pious, and de-  
 vout Man, and universally beloved; an excellent  
*Hebrician*, a plain, practical, fervent Preacher, a  
 noted Casuist, and charitable almost to a Fault; his  
 Conversation was heavenly; but being a noted Pu-  
 ritan, though he never meddled with State Affairs,  
 he was severely used by the King's Cavaliers, who  
 plunder'd his House, and would have taken away his  
 very Sheets, if the good old Man, hardly able to  
 rise out of his Chair, had not put them under him for  
 a Cushion; all which he took patiently, calling to  
 mind one of his old Maxims, *Sanctified Afflictions are*  
*spiritual Promotions*. He died of the Strangury in the  
 Ninety sixth Year of his Age, and lies buried in his  
 Parish Church at *Faustly*.

Fuller's  
 Ch. Hist.  
 p. 220.





## C H A P. VII.

*The Conclusion of the first Civil War, by the King's surrendring his Royal Person to the Scots. Petitions of the Assembly and City Divines against TOLERATION, and for the DIVINE RIGHT of the Presbyterial Government, which is erected in London. Debates between the King, Mr. Henderson, and the Scots Commissioners. His Majesty is removed from Newcastle to Holmby House. Further Account of the Sectaries.*

THE King being returned to Oxford, Nov. 6. after a most unfortunate Campaign, in which all his Armies were beaten out of the Field, and dispersed, had no other Remedy left but to make Peace upon the best Terms he could get, which his Friends in London encouraged him to expect with Advantage, from the growing Divisions among the Members, the Majority of whom were enclined to an Accommodation, if the King would consent to abolish Episcopacy, and propose proper Assurances of governing for the Future according to Law; but though his Majesty was willing to yield a little to the Times, with regard to the Security of his future Government, nothing could prevail with him to give up the Church. Besides, as the King's Circumstances obliged him to recede, the Parliament, as Conquerors, advanced in their Demands. In the Month of December his Majesty sent several Messages to the Parliament, to obtain a personal Treaty at London, upon the publick Faith for himself, and a certain Number of his Friends residing there with Safety and Honour forty Days; but the Parliament would by no means trust their Enemies within their own Bowels, and

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

King's  
melancholy  
Condition  
at Oxford.  
Ravin,  
p. 320.

*King* therefore insisted peremptorily upon his signing the  
*Charles I.* Bills they were preparing to send him as a Preliminary  
 1646. to a well grounded Settlement.

*Rushw.* The King made some Proposals on his Part, relating  
 Vol. I. to the *Militia* and *Liberty of Conscience*, but very  
 p. 215, far short of the Demands of the two Houses, who  
 216. were so perswaded of his Art and Ability in the  
 Choice of ambiguous Expressions, capable of a different  
 Sense from what appeared at first sight, that they durst not venture to make use of them as the  
 Basis of a Treaty. Thus the Winter was wasted in  
 fruitless Messages between *London* and *Oxford*, while  
 the unhappy King spent his Time over his Papers in a  
 most disconsolate Manner, forsaken by some of his best  
 Friends, and rudely treated by others. Mr. *Locke*  
 says, the Usage the King met with from his Followers  
 at *Oxford* made it an hard, but almost an even  
 Choice, to be the *Parliament's* Prisoner or *their* Slave.  
 In his Majesty's Letter to the Queen he writes, "If  
 " thou knew what a Life I lead in point of Conversa-  
 " tion, I dare say thou wouldst pity me." The chief  
 Officers quarrell'd, and became insupportably Insolent  
 in the Royal Presence; nor was the King himself  
 without Blame; for being deprived of his Oracle  
 the QUEEN, he was like a Ship in a Storm without  
 Sails or Rudder. Lord *Clarendon* therefore draws a  
 Vail over his Majesty's Conduct, in these Words:

Vol. IV. " It is not possible to discourse of Particulars with  
 p. 626. " the Clearness that is necessary to subject them to  
 " common Understandings, without opening a Door  
 " for such Reflections upon the King himself, as  
 " seem to call both his Wisdom and Steadiness in  
 " question; as if he wanted the *one* to apprehend and  
 " discover, and the *other* to prevent the Mischiefs  
 " that were evident and impending." And yet nothing  
 could prevail with him to submit to the Times,  
 or deal frankly with those who alone were capable of  
 doing him Service.

The King having neither Money nor Forces, and the Queen's Supplies from abroad failing, his Majesty could not take the Field in the Spring, which gave the Parliament Army an easy Conquest over his remaining Forts and Garrisons. All the *West* was reduced by the victorious Army of Sir *Tho. Fairfax* before Midsummer; the City of *Exeter* surrender'd April 9. in which one of the King's Daughters, Princess *Henrietta*, was made Prisoner, but her Governess, the Countess of *Dalkeith*, found means afterwards to convey her privately into *France*. *Dennington Castle* surrender'd April 1, *Barnstaple* the 12th, and *Woodstock* the 26th; upon which it was resolved to strike the finishing Blow, by besieging the King in his Head Quarters at *Oxford*; upon the News of which, like a Man in a Fright, he left the City by Night, April 27. and travelled as a Servant to Dr. *Hudson* and Mr. *Ashburnham*, with his Hair cut round to his Ears, and a Cloke Bag behind him, to the Scots Army before *Newark*: His Majesty surrender'd himself to General *Leven* May 5. who received him with Respect, but sent Word immediately to the two Houses, who were displeased at his Majesty's Conduct, apprehending it a Design to prolong the War, and make a Difference between the two Nations; which was certainly intended, as appears by the King's Letter to the Duke of *Ormond* from *Oxford*, in which he says, he had good Security, that he and all his Adherents should be safe in their Persons, Honours and Consciences in the Scots Army, and that they would join with him, and employ their Forces to obtain a happy and well grounded Peace; whereas the Scots Commissioners, in their Letter to the House of Peers aver, " They had given no Assurance, nor " made any Capitulation for joining Forces with the " King, or combining against the two Houses, or " any other private or publick Agreement whatsoever, between the King on one part, and the " Kingdom of Scotland, their Army, or any in their

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

King sur-  
renders his  
Person to  
the Scots.

Rapin,  
p. 337,  
338. and  
Rushw.  
Vol. IV.  
p. 268,  
273, 274,  
303, 304.



King Charles I. 1646. “ Names, and having Power from them, on the other Part ;” and they call the contrary Assertion a *damnable Untruth* ; and add, “ That they never expect a Blessing from God any longer than they continue faithful to their *Covenant*.” So that this must be the Artifice of *Montrevil*, the *French* Ambassador, who undertook to negotiate between the two Parties, and drew the credulous and distressed King into the Snare out of which he could never escape.

Conclusion of the first Civil War. His Majesty’s surrendring his Person to the *Scots*, and sending Orders to the Governors of *Newark*, *Oxford*, and all his other Garrisons and Forces to surrender and disband, concluded the first Civil War ; upon which most of the Officers, with Prince *Rupert* and *Maurice*, retired beyond Sea ; so that by the middle of *August* all the King’s Forts and Castles were in the Parliament’s Hands ; *Ragland Castle* being the last ; which was four Years wanting three Days from the setting up the Royal Standard at *Nottingham*.

Some Time before the King left *Oxford* he had commission’d the Marquis of *Ormond* to conclude a Peace with the *Irish* Papists, in hopes of receiving Succours from thence, which gave great Offence to the Parliament ; but though his Majesty upon surrendering himself to the *Scots* writ to the Marquis, *June 11*. not to proceed ; he ventur’d to put the finishing Hand to the Treaty, *July 28*. 1646. upon the following scandalous Articles, which surely he durst not have consented to, without some private Commission from the King or Queen.

Articles of Peace with the Irish Papists. Rulew. Part IV. Vol. I. p. 402. 1. “ That the *Roman* Catholicks of that Kingdom shall be discharged from taking the Oath of Supremacy.  
2. “ That all Acts of Parliament made against them shall be repealed ; That they be allowed the Freedom of their Religion, and not be debarred from any of his Majesty’s Graces or Favours.

3. “ That

3. " That all Acts reflecting on the Honour of  
" the *Roman* Catholick Religion since Aug. 7. 1641. <sup>King Charles I.</sup>  
" be repealed. 1646.

4. " That all Indictments, Attainders, Out-Law-  
" ries, &c. against them, or any of them, be vacated  
" and made void.

5. " That all Impediments that may hinder their  
" Sitting in Parliament, or being chosen Burgeffes,  
" or Knights of the Shire, be removed.

6. " That all Incapacities imposed upon the Na-  
" tion be taken away, and that they have Power to  
" erect one or more Inns of Court in or near the City  
" of *Dublin*; and that all Catholicks educated there,  
" be capable of taking their Degrees without the  
" Oath of Supremacy.

7. " That the *Roman* Catholicks shall be em-  
" powered to erect one or more Universities, and  
" keep Free-Schools for the Education of their  
" Youth, any Law or Statute to the contrary not-  
" withstanding.

8. " That Places of Command, Honour, Profit  
" and Trust, shall be conferr'd on the *Roman* Ca-  
" tholicks, without making any Difference between  
" them and Protestants, both in the Army and in  
" the Civil Government.

9. " That an Act of Oblivion shall be past in the  
" next Parliament, to extend to all the *Roman* Ca-  
" tholicks and their Heirs, absolving them of all  
" Treasons and Offences whatsoever, and particular-  
" ly of the Massacre of 1641. so that no Persons shall  
" be impeached, troubled, or molested, for any  
" Thing done on one Side or the other.

10. " That the *Roman* Catholicks shall continue  
" in Possession of all those Cities, Forts, Garrisons  
" and Towns, that they are possessed of, till Things  
" are come to a full Settlement."

Was this the Way to establish a good Understand-  
ing between the King and his two Houses? Or not?

*King Charles I.* 1646. *Parliament's Commissioners protest against it.* they believe, that his Majesty meant the Security of the Protestant Religion, and the Extirpation of Popery in *England*, when his General consented to such a Peace in *Ireland*, without being reproached or disgraced for it? Nay, when after a long Treaty with the Parliament Commissioners he refused to deliver up the Forts and Garrisons into their Hands, inso-much that after six Weeks Attendance they were obliged to return to their Ships, and carry back the Supplies they had brought for the Garrisons, having only published a Declaration, that the Parliament of *England* would take all the Protestants of *Ireland* into their Protection, and send over an Army to carry on the War against the Papists with Vigor.

*Presbyterians petition against Sectaries.* Vol. Pamp. N<sup>o</sup> 34. The King being now in the Hands of the *Scots*, the *English* Presbyterians at *London* resumed their Courage, concluding they could not fail of a full Establishment of their Discipline, and of bringing the Parliament at *Westminster* to their Terms of Uniformity; for this Purpose they framed a bold Remonstrance in the Name of the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Council, and presented it to the House May 26. complaining, “ That the Reins of Discipline were let loose; that particular Congregations “ were allowed to take up what Form of Divine Service they pleased, and that Sectaries began to swarm “ by virtue of a *Toleration* granted to tender Consciences. They put the Parliament in mind of their “ *Covenant*, which obliged them to endeavour the “ Extirpation of Popery, Prelacy, Superstition, “ Heresy, Schism, Profaneness, and whatsoever else “ was found contrary to sound Doctrine; and at the “ same Time to preserve and defend the Person and “ Authority of the King; they therefore desired, “ since the whole Kingdom was now in a manner reduced to the Obedience of the Parliament, that all “ separate Congregations may be suppressed; that all such “ Separatists who conform not to the publick Discipline “ may be declared against, that no Person disaffected to the

“ Presby-



“ *Presbyterial Government set forth by Parliament, may* King Charles I. 1646.  
 “ *be employed in any Place of publick Trust; that the*  
 “ *House will endeavour to remove all Jealousies be-*  
 “ *tween them and the Scots, and hasten their Propo-*  
 “ *sitions to the King, for a safe and well-grounded*  
 “ *Peace.*”

This Remonstrance was supported by the whole *And are se-*  
*conded by*  
*the Scots.*  
*Ruslow.*  
*p. 3-6.*  
*Scots Nation*, who acted in Concert with their *English* Brethren, as appears by a Letter of Thanks to the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Council, from the General Assembly, dated June 10. 1646. within a Month after the Delivery of the Remonstrance: The Letter commends their couragious Appearance against Sects and Sectaries; their firm Adherence to the Covenant, and their maintaining the Presbyterial Government to be the *Government of Jesus Christ*. It beseeches them to go on boldly in the Work they had begun, till the three Kingdoms were united in one Faith and Worship. At the same Time they directed Letters to the Parliament, beseeching them also, in the Bowels of Jesus Christ, To give to him the Glory that is due to his Name, by an immediate establishing of all his Ordinances in their full Integrity and Power according to the Covenant. Nor did they forget to encourage the *Assembly at Westminster* to proceed in their Zeal against Sectaries, and to stand boldly for the Scepter of Jesus Christ against the Encroachments of earthly Powers. These Letters were printed and dispersed over the whole Kingdom.

The wise Parliament received the Lord Mayor and *parlia-*  
 his Brethren with Marks of great Respect and Civi-  
 lity; for neither the *Scots* nor *English* Presbyterians *ment's An-*  
 were to be disgusted, while the *Prize* for which they *swer.*  
 had been fighting was in their Hands, but the Major-  
 ity of the Commons were displeased both with the  
 Remonstrance and the high Manner of enforcing it,  
 as aiming, by an united Force, to establish a sove-

King Charles I. 1646. reign, arbitrary Power in the Church, with an Uniformity, to which themselves, and many of their Friends were unwilling to submit; however they dismiss'd the Petitioners with a Promise to take the Particulars into Consideration.

Independants oppose it.

But the *Independants* and *Sectarians* in the Army being alarmed at the impending Storm, procured a counter Petition from the City with great Numbers of Hands, "applauding the Labours and Successes of the Parliament in the Cause of *Liberty*, and "praying them to go on with managing the Affairs of the Kingdom according to their Wisdoms, and "not suffer the Free-born People of *England* to be "enslaved upon any Pretence whatsoever; nor to "suffer any Set of People to prescribe to them in Matters of Government or Conscience, and the Petitioners will "stand by them with their Lives and Fortunes."

Hist. Stuarts, p. 308.

Mr. *Whitlock* says, the Hands of the Royalists were in this Affair, who being beaten out of the Field resolved now to attempt the Ruin of the Parliament, by sowing Divisions among their Friends.

Assembly's Sentiments of the *Jus Divinum*.

The Houses were embarrassed between the Contenders for *Liberty* and *Uniformity*, and endeavoured to avoid a Decision, till they saw the Effect of their Treaty with the King. They kept the Presbyterians in hand, by pressing the Assembly for their Answer to the Questions relating to the *Jus Divinum* of Presbytery already mentioned, insinuating that they themselves were the Obstacles to a full Settlement; and assuring them, when this Point was agreed, they would concur in such an Ordinance as they desired. Upon this the Assembly went to work, and appointed three Committees to take the Questions into Consideration; but the *Independants* took this Opportunity to leave them, refusing absolutely to be concerned in the Affair.

The first Committee was appointed to determine, Whether any particular Church Government was *JURE DIVINO*, and to bring their Proofs from Scripture.

But

But here they stumbled at the very Threshold, for the *Erastians* divided them, and enter'd their Dissent, so that when the Answer was laid before the Assembly, it was not called the Answer of the Committee, but of some Brethren of the Committee; and when the Question was put, they withdrew from the Assembly, and left the *high Presbyterians* to themselves, who agreed, with but one dissenting Voice, That *Jesus Christ, as King of the Church, hath himself appointed a Church Government distinct from the Civil Magistrate.* The Names of those that subscribed this Proposition were,

*King*  
Charles I.  
1646.

*The Rev.* Mr. White,  
Mr. Palmer,  
Dr. Wincop,  
Mr. Ley,  
Dr. Gouge,  
Mr. Walker,  
Mr. Sedgwick,  
Mr. Marshall,  
Mr. Whitaker,  
Mr. Newcomen,  
Mr. Spurstow,  
Mr. Delmy,  
Mr. Calamy,  
Mr. Proffet,  
Mr. Perne,  
Mr. Scudder,  
Mr. Carter, *sen.*  
Mr. Caryl,  
Mr. Woodcocke,  
Mr. Carter, *jun.*  
Mr. Goodwin,  
Mr. Nye,  
Mr. Greenhill,  
Mr. Valentine,  
Mr. Price,  
Dr. Smith,

*The Rev.* Dr. Staunton,  
Dr. Hoyle,  
Mr. Bayly,  
Mr. Taylor,  
Mr. Young,  
Mr. Cawdrey,  
Mr. Ash,  
Mr. Gibson,  
Mr. Good,  
Mr. Vines,  
Mr. Seaman,  
Mr. Chambers,  
Mr. Corbet,  
Mr. Dury,  
Mr. Salway,  
Mr. Hardwicke,  
Mr. Langley,  
Mr. Simpson,  
Mr. Conant,  
Mr. De la March,  
Mr. Byfield,  
Mr. Herle,  
Mr. De la Place,  
Mr. Wilson,  
Mr. Reyner,  
Mr. Gower.

*MS.*  
*Sell. 672.*



*King* The Divine that enter'd his Dissent was Mr. *Light-*  
*Charles I.* foot, with whom Mr. *Colman* would have join'd if he  
 1646. had not fallen sick at this juncture and died.

*Sentiments* The remaining Questions took up the Assembly  
*of the Lon-* from May till the latter End of July, and even then  
*don Mini-* they thought it not safe to present their Determina-  
*sters.* tions to Parliament for fear of a *PRAEMUNIRE*; upon which the City Divines at *Sion College* took up the Controversy, in a Treatise entitled, *The Divine Right of Church Government, by the LONDON MINISTERS*. Wherein they give a distinct Answer to the several Queries of the House of Commons, and undertake to prove every Branch of the Presbyterian Discipline to be *Jure Divino*, and that the Civil Magistrate had no right to intermeddle with the Censures of the Church.

And to shew the Parliament they were in earnest, they agreed to stand by each other, and not comply with the present Establishment, till it was delivered from the Yoke of the Civil Magistrate; for which Purpose they drew up a *Paper of Reasons*, and presented it to the Lord Mayor, who, having advised with the Common Council, sent a Deputation to *Sion College*, offering to join with them in a Petition for Redress, which they did accordingly, but without Effect; for the Parliament taking Notice of the Combination of the *City Ministers*, published an Order June 9. requiring those of the Province of *London* to put the Ordinance relating to Church Government in Execution, enjoining the Members for the City to send Copies of the Ordinance to their several Parishes, and to take effectual Care that they were immediately put in Execution. Upon this the Ministers of *London* and *Westminster* met again at *Sion College*, June 19. and being a little more submissive, published certain *Considerations and Cautions according to which they agree to put the Presbyterian Government in Practice, according to the present Establishment*. Here they declare, " That the Power of Church Censures ought  
 " to be in Church Officers, by the Will and Appoint-

*Their Pa-*  
*per of*  
*Considera-*  
*tions and*  
*Cautions.*

" ment

“ment of *Jesus Christ*, but then they are pleased to  
 “admit, that the *Magistracy* ought to be satisfied in  
 “the Truth of the Government they authorize; and  
 “though it be not right in every *Particular*, yet  
 “Church Officers may act under that Rule, provided they do not acknowledge the Rule to be right  
 “in all Points. Therefore though they conceive  
 “the Ordinances of Parliament already published,  
 “are not a compleat Rule, nor in all Points satisfactory  
 “to their *Consciences*, yet because in many Things  
 “they are so, and Provision being made to enable  
 “the Elderships, by their Authority, to keep away  
 “from the Lord’s Supper all ignorant and scandalous  
 “Persons; and a further Declaration being made,  
 “that there shall be an Addition to the scandalous  
 “Offences formerly enumerated, therefore they  
 “conceive it their Duty to put in Practice the present Settlement, as far as they conceive it  
 “spondent with the Word of God; hoping that the  
 “Parliament will in due Time, supply what is  
 “lacking, to make the Government entire, and rectify what shall appear to be amiss.” Thus hardly did these Gentlemen stoop to their Superiors!

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

The Kingdom of *England*, instead of so many *Classical*  
 Dioceses, was now divided into a certain Number of *Division of*  
*Provinces*, made up of Representatives from the several *the Province of*  
*Classes* within their Boundaries; Every Parish had *London*.  
 a Congregational, or Parochial Presbytery for the  
 Affairs of the Parish; the Parochial Presbyteries  
 were combined into *Classes*; these chose Representatives for the  
*Provincial Assembly*, as the *Provincial* did for the *National*;  
 for Example, the Province of *London* being made up of twelve  
 Classes, according to the following Division, each Class chose two  
 Ministers, and four Lay-Elders, to represent them in a  
*Provincial Assembly*, which received Appeals from the  
 Parochial, and Classical Presbyteries, as the *National*  
*Assembly* did from the *Provincial*.

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

# The Division of the Province of London.

*The first Classis to contain the following Parishes.*

- |                          |                         |
|--------------------------|-------------------------|
| 1 Allhallows Bread-      | 10 St. Austin's Parish, |
| street,                  | 11 St. Mary Aldermary,  |
| 2 Andrews Wardrope,      | 12 St. Mary le Bow,     |
| 3 Bennet Paul's Wharf,   | 13 St. Mathew Friday-   |
| 4 Faith's,               | street,                 |
| 5 St. Gregory,           | 14 Mildred Breadstreet, |
| 6 St. John Evangelist,   | St. Paul's,             |
| 7 Margaret Moses,        | 15 St. Peter's Paul's   |
| 8 St. Martin Ludgate,    | Wharf.                  |
| 9 St. Anne Black Friars, |                         |

*The second Classis.*

- |                       |                         |
|-----------------------|-------------------------|
| 1 St. Antholine,      | 9 St. Michael Queen-    |
| 2 Bennet Sheerhog,    | hithe,                  |
| 3 St. James Garlick-  | 10 St. Michael Royal,   |
| hithe,                | 11 St. Nicholas Old     |
| 4 St. John Baptist,   | Abby,                   |
| 5 Martin the Vintry,  | 12 St. Nicholas Olives, |
| 6 St. Mary Magdalene, | 13 Pancras Sopers Lane, |
| Old Fishstreet,       | 14 St. Thomas Apostles, |
| 7 St. Mary Somerset,  | 15 Trinity Parish.      |
| 8 St. Mary Mounthaw,  |                         |

*The third Classis.*

- |                           |                        |
|---------------------------|------------------------|
| 1 Allhallows the Greater, | 7 St. Mary Bothaw,     |
| 2 Allhallows the Less,    | 8 St. Mary Woolchurch, |
| 3 Allhallows Lombard-     | 9 St. Mary Woolnoth,   |
| street,                   | 10 St. Nicholas Aaron, |
| 4 St. Edmund Lom-         | 11 St. Stephen's Wall- |
| bard-street,              | brooke,                |
| 5 Lawrence Pountney,      | 12 St. Swithin's.      |
| 6 St. Mary Abchurch,      |                        |

*The*



*The fourth Classis.*

- |                                 |                                 |
|---------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| 1 <i>St. Andrews</i> Hubbert,   | 7 <i>St. Leonard</i> East-      |
| 2 <i>St. Bennet</i> Grace-      | cheap,                          |
| 3 <i>St. Buttolph</i> Billingf- | 8 <i>St. Magnus</i> ,           |
| gate,                           | 9 <i>St. Margaret</i> New       |
| 4 <i>St. Clement</i> East-      | Fishstreet,                     |
| cheap,                          | 10 <i>St. Martin</i> Orgars,    |
| 5 <i>St. Dionis</i> Back-       | 11 <i>St. Mary</i> Hill,        |
| church,                         | 12 <i>St. Michael</i> Crooked-  |
| 6 <i>St. George</i> Buttolph-   | lane,                           |
| lane,                           | 13 <i>St. Michael</i> Cornhill, |
|                                 | 14 <i>St. Peter</i> Cornhill.   |

*The fifth Classis.*

- |                               |                                   |
|-------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| 1 <i>St. Anne</i> Aldersgate, | 8 <i>St. Mary</i> Staynings,      |
| 2 <i>St. Buttolph</i> Alders- | 9 <i>St. Michael</i> in the       |
| gate,                         | Corn, <i>vulgò</i> in the         |
| 3 <i>St. Brides</i> ,         | Querne,                           |
| 4 <i>Bridewell</i> ,          | 10 <i>St. Olave</i> Silverstreet, |
| 5 <i>Christ Church</i> ,      | 11 <i>St. Peter</i> Cheap,        |
| 6 <i>St. John</i> Zachary,    | 12 <i>St. Foster</i> alias Ve-    |
| 7 <i>St. Leonard</i> Foster-  | dast.                             |
| lane,                         |                                   |

*The sixth Classis.*

- |                                |                                |
|--------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| 1 <i>St. Alban</i> Woodstreet, | 8 <i>St. Mary</i> Alderman-    |
| 2 <i>Allhallows</i> Honey-     | bury,                          |
| lane,                          | 9 <i>St. Mary</i> Magdalen     |
| 3 <i>St. Alphage</i> ,         | Milkstreet,                    |
| 4 <i>St. Giles's</i> Cripple-  | 10 <i>St. Mary</i> Colechurch, |
| gate,                          | 11 <i>St. Michael</i> Wood-    |
| 5 <i>St. James's</i> Chapel,   | street,                        |
| 6 <i>St. Lawrence</i> Jewry,   | 12 <i>St. Mildred</i> Poultry, |
| 7 <i>St. Martin</i> Ironmon-   | 13 <i>St. Olave</i> Jewry.     |
| ger-lane,                      |                                |

*The seventh Classis.*

- |                                  |                          |
|----------------------------------|--------------------------|
| 1 Allhallows <i>in the</i> Wall, | 6 St. Margaret Loth-     |
| 2 St. Bartholomew Ex-            | bury,                    |
| change,                          | 7 St. Michael Bassishaw, |
| 3 St. Bennet Finck,              | 8 St. Peter Poor,        |
| 4 St. Buttolph Bishopf-          | 9 St. Stephen Colman-    |
| gate,                            | street.                  |
| 5 St. Christopher's,             |                          |

*The eighth Classis.*

- |                         |                        |
|-------------------------|------------------------|
| 1 St. Andrew Under-     | 7 St. Katherine Cree-  |
| shaft,                  | church,                |
| 2 St. Buttolph Aldgate, | 8 St. Leonard Shore-   |
| 3 St. Ethelburga,       | ditch,                 |
| 4 St. John Hackney,     | 9 St. Martin Outwich,  |
| 5 St. Hellens,          | 10 St. Mary Stoke New- |
| 6 St. James Duke Place, | ington,                |

*The ninth Classis.*

- |                                   |                                  |
|-----------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1 Allhallows Barkin,              | 7 St. Margaret Pattoons,         |
| 2 Allhallows Steyning,            | 8 St. Olave Hartstreet,          |
| 3 St. Dunstan <i>in the</i> East, | 9 St. Peter <i>in the</i> Tower, |
| 4 St. Gabriel Fenchurch,          | 10 Stepney,                      |
| 5 St. Katherine Cole-             | 11 Trinity Minories,             |
| man,                              | 12 Wapping,                      |
| 6 St. Katherine Tower,            | 13 Whitechapel.                  |

*The tenth Classis.*

- |                         |                          |
|-------------------------|--------------------------|
| 1 St. George Southwark, | 6 St. Olave Southwark,   |
| 2 Lambeth,              | 7 Rotherhithe,           |
| 3 St. Mary Magdalen     | 8 St. Thomas's Hospital, |
| Bermondsey,             | 9 St. Thomas's South-    |
| 4 St. Mary Overies,     | wark.                    |
| 5 Newington Buts,       |                          |

*The eleventh Classis.*

- |                              |                             |
|------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 1 St. Clement Danes,         | 5 St. Martin in the Fields, |
| 2 St. Giles's in the Fields, | 6 New Church,               |
| 3 Knightbridge,              | 7 St. Peter Westminster,    |
| 4 St. Margaret Westminster,  | 8 St. Paul Covent Garden.   |

*The twelfth Classis.*

- |                                |                            |
|--------------------------------|----------------------------|
| 1 St. Andrew Holborn,          | 5 St. Dunstan in the West, |
| 2 St. Bartholomew the Greater, | 6 St. James's Clerkenwell, |
| 3 St. Bartholomew the Less,    | 7 St. Mary Islington,      |
| 4 Charter-house,               | 8 St. Sepulchres.          |

Thus the Presbyterian Church Government began *Remarks:* to rise and appear in its proper Form ; but new Obstructions being raised by the Ministers to the Choice of Representatives, the Provincial Assembly did not meet till next Year, nor did it ever obtain but in *London and Lancashire.* The Parliament never came heartily into it, and the Interest that supported it being quickly disabled, Mr. *Eachard* says, the Presbyterians never saw their dear Presbytery settled in any one Part of *England.* But Mr. *Baxter*, who is a much better Authority, says the Ordinance was executed in *London and Lancashire*, but remained unexecuted in almost all other Parts. However, the Presbyterian Ministers had their voluntary Associations for Church Affairs in most Counties, though without any authoritative Jurisdiction.

To return to the King, who marched with the *Scots Be-*  
*Scots Army from Newark to Newcastle,* where he con- *tinued about eight Months, being treated with some*  
*Respect, but not with all the Duty of Subjects to a*  
*Sovereign.* The first Sermon that was preached be-  
fore



King  
Charles I.  
1646.

fore him gave hopes, that they would be Mediators between him and the Parliament ; it was from 2 Sam. xix. 41, 42, 43. *And behold, all the Men of Israel came to the King, and said to the King, Why have the Men of Judah stolen thee away ? — And all the Men of Judah answered the Men of Israel, because the King is near of kin to us ; wherefore then be ye angry for this Matter, Have we eaten at all of the King's Cost ? or, Hath he given us any Gift ? — And the Men of Israel answered the Men of Judah and said, we have ten Parts in the King ; and we have also more right in David than ye ; why then did ye despise us, that our Advice should not be first had, in bringing back our King ? And the Words of the Men of Judah were fiercer than the Words of the Men of Israel.* But it quickly appeared, that nothing would be done but upon Condition of the King's taking the Covenant, and establishing the Presbyterial Government in both Kingdoms. When the King was pressed upon these Heads he pleaded *his Conscience*, and declared, that though he was content the *Scots* should have their own Discipline, he apprehended his Honour and Conscience were concerned to support *Episcopacy in England*, because it had been established from the Reformation, and that he was bound to uphold it by his Coronation Oath ; however, he was willing to enter into a Conference with any Person whom they should appoint, protesting, he was not ashamed to change his Judgment, or alter his Resolution, provided they could satisfy him in two Points.

*First*, That the Episcopacy he contended for was not of *Divine Institution*.

*Secondly*, That his Coronation Oath did not bind him to support and defend the Church of *England* as it was then established.

Conference  
between  
the King  
and Mr.  
Hender-  
son.

To satisfy the King in these Points the *Scots* sent for Mr. *Alexander Henderson* from *Edinburgh*, Pastor of a Church in that City, Rector of the University, and one of the King's Chaplains, a Divine of great Learning and Abilities, as well as Discretion and

Pru-

Prudence. Mr. *Rushworth* says, That he had more Moderation than most of his Way. And *Collier* adds, That he was a Person of Learning, Elocution and Judgment, and seems to have been the Top of his Party. The Debate was carried on in Writing. The King drew up his own Papers, and gave them Sir *Robert Murray* to transcribe, and deliver to Mr. *Henderson*; and Mr. *Henderson's* Hand not being so legible as his, Sir *Robert*, by the King's Appointment, transcribed Mr. *Henderson's* Papers for his Majesty's Use.

*King*  
*Charles I.*  
1646.

*Collier,*

p. 848.

*Hamil. M.*

p. 227.

The KING, in his first Paper of May 29. declares his Esteem for the *English* Reformation, because it was effected without Tumult; and was directed by those who ought to have the Conduct of such an Affair. He apprehends they kept close to apostolical Appointment, and the universal Custom of the primitive Church; that therefore the adhering to Episcopacy must be of the last Importance, as without it the Priesthood must sink, and the Sacraments be administer'd without effect; for these Reasons he conceives Episcopacy necessary to the Being of a Church, and also, that he is bound to support it by his Coronation Oath. Lastly, His Majesty desires to know of Mr. *Henderson*, what Warrant there is in the Word of God for Subjects to endeavour to force their King's Conscience, or to make him alter Laws against his Will?

*King's first*  
*Paper.*

*Bibl. Reg.*  
p. 296.

Mr. HENDERSON, in his first Paper of June 3. after an Introduction of Modesty and Respect, wishes, when Occasion requires, that Religion might always be reformed by the Civil Magistrate, and not left either to the Prelates or the People; but when Princes or Magistrates are negligent of their Duty, God may stir up the Subject to perform this Work. He observes, that the Reformation of King *Henry VIII.* was very defective in the Essentials of Doctrine, Worship, and Government, that it proceeded with a *Laodicean* Lukewarmness; that the Supremacy was transferr'd from one wrong Head to another, and

*Mr. Hen-*  
*derson's*  
*first Reply.*  
*Bib. Reg.*  
p. 312, &c.

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

the Limbs of the Antichristian Hierarchy were visible in the Body. He adds, that the Imperfection of the *English* Reformation had been the Complaint of many religious and godly Persons ; that it had occasioned more Schism and Separation than had been heard of elsewhere, and been Matter of unspeakable Grief to other Churches. As to the King's Argument, that the Validity of the Priesthood, and the Efficacy of the Sacraments depended upon Episcopacy, he replies, that Episcopacy cannot make out its Claim to *apostolical Appointment* ; that when the Apostles were living there was no Difference between a Bishop and a Presbyter ; no Inequality in Power or Degree, but an exact Parity in every Branch of their Character : That there is no mention in Scripture of a Pastor or Bishop superior to other Pastors. There is a beautiful Subordination in the Ministry of the New Testament ; one kind of Ministers being placed in Degree and Dignity above another, as first Apostles, then Evangelists, then Pastors and Teachers, but in Offices of the same Rank and Kind we don't find any Preference ; no Apostle is constituted superior to other Apostles ; no Evangelist is raised above other Evangelists ; nor has any Pastor or Deacon a Superiority above others of their Order.

Farther, Mr. HENDERSON humbly desires his Majesty to take Notice, that arguing from the Practice of the primitive Church, and the Consent of the Fathers, is fallacious and uncertain, and that *the Law and Testimony of the Word of God* is the only Rule. The Practice of the primitive Church, in many Things, cannot certainly be known, as *Eusebius* confesses ; that even in the Apostle's Time *Diotrephes* moved for the Pre-eminence, and the *Mystery of Iniquity* began to work ; and that afterwards Ambition and Weakness quickly made way for a Change in Church Government.

Mr. HENDERSON hopes his Majesty will not deny the Lawfulness of the Ministry, and due Administration of the Sacraments, in those reformed Churches  
where



King  
Charles I.  
1646.

where there are no Dioceſan Biſhops; that it is evident from Scripture, and confeſſed by many Champions for Episcopacy, that *Presbyters* may ordain *Presbyters*; and to diſengage his Maſteſty from his Coronation Oath, as far as relates to the Church, he conceives, when the formal Reaſon of an Oath ceaſes the Obligation is diſcharged: When an Oath has a ſpecial Regard to the Benefit of thoſe to whom the Engagement is made, if the Parties intereſted relax upon the Point, diſpenſe with the Promise, and give up their Advantage, the Obligation is at an end. Thus when the Parliaments of both Kingdoms have agreed to the Repealing of a Law, the King's Conſcience is not tied againſt ſigning the Bill, for then the altering any Law would be impracticable — He concludes with obſerving, that King *James* never admitted Episcopacy upon Divine Right; and that, could *his Ghoſt* now ſpeak, he would not adviſe your Maſteſty to run ſuch Hazards, for Men [Prelates] who would pull down your Throne with their own, rather than that they periſh alone.

The KING, in his ſecond Paper of June 6. avers, *King's ſecond Paper.* no Reformation is lawful, unleſs under the Conduct of the Royal Authority; that King *Henry* the Eighth's Reformation being imperfect is no Proof of Defects in that of King *Edward VI.* and Queen *Elizabeth*; that Mr. *Henderſon* can never prove, *Bib Reg. p. 320, 322, &c.* God has given the Multitude leave to reform the Negligence of *Princes*; that his comparing our Reformation to the *Laudſeean* Lukewarmneſs was an unhandſome Way of begging the Queſtion, for he ſhould firſt have made out, that thoſe Men [the Puritans] had Reaſon to complain, and that the Schiſm was chargeable upon the Conformiſts. His Maſteſty is ſo far from allowing the Presbyterian Government to be practiſed in the primitive Times, that he aſſirms, it was never ſet up before *Calvin*; and admits, that it was his Province to ſhew the Lawfulneſs, and uninterrupted Succeſſion; and by Conſequence, the Neceſſity of Episcopacy.

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

*copacy*, but that he had not then the Convenience of Books, nor the Assistance of such learned Men as he could trust, and therefore proposes a Conference with his Divines. And whereas Mr. *Henderson* excepts to his Reasoning from the primitive Church, and Consent of the Fathers; his Majesty conceives his Exception indefensible, for if the Sense of a doubtful Place of Scripture is not to be governed by such an Authority, the Interpretation of the inspired Writings must be left to the Direction of every private Spirit, which is contrary to St. *Peter's* Doctrine, 2 *Pet.* i. 20. *No Prophecy of Scripture is of private Interpretation*; it is likewise the Source of all Sects, and without Prevention will bring these Kingdoms into Confusion. His Majesty adds, that it is Mr. *Henderson's* Part to prove, that Presbyters without a Bishop may ordain other Presbyters. As to the Administration of the Sacraments Mr. *Henderson* himself will not deny, a *lawfully ordained Presbyter's* being necessary to that Office; so that the Determination of this latter Question will depend in some measure on the former. With regard to Oaths, his Majesty allows Mr. *Henderson's* general Rule, but thinks he is mistaken in the Application; for the Clause touching Religion in the *Coronation Oath* was made only for the Benefit of the Church of *England*; that therefore it is not in the Power of the two Houses of Parliament to discharge the Obligation of this Oath without their Consent. That *this Church never made any Submission to the two Houses, nor owned her self subordinate to them*; that the Reformation was managed by the King and Clergy, and the Parliament assisted only in giving a civil Sanction to the Ecclesiastical Establishment. These Points being clear to his Majesty, it follows by necessary Consequence, that 'tis only the Church of *England*, in whose Favour he took this Oath, that can release him from it, and that therefore, when the Church of *England*, lawfully assembled, shall declare his Majesty discharged,

he

he shall then, and not till then, reckon himself at liberty.

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

Mr. HENDERSON, in his Reply to this second Paper, of *June 17.* agrees with the King, that the prime re-forming Power is in Kings and Princes, but adds, that in case they fail of their Duty this Authority devolves upon the inferior Magistrate, and upon their Failure to the Body of the People, upon Supposition that a Reformation is necessary, and that Peoples Superiors will by no means give way to it; he allows, that such a Reformation is more imperfect with respect to the Manner, but commonly more perfect and refined in the Product and Issue. He adds, that the Government of the Church of *England* is not supposed to be built on the Foundation of Christ and his Apostles, by those who confess that Church Government is mutable and ambulatory, as was formerly the Opinion of most of the *English* Bishops; that the *Divine Right* was not pleaded till of late by some few; that the *English* Reformation has not perfectly purged out the *Roman* Leaven, but rather depraved the Discipline of the Church by conforming to the civil Polity, and adding many supplemental Officers to those instituted by the Son of God. To his Majesty's Objection, that the Presbyterian Government was never practised before *Calvin's* Time, he answers, that it is to be found in Scripture; and the Assembly of Divines at *Westminster* had made it evident, that the primitive Church at *Jerusalem* was governed by a Presbytery; that the Church at *Jerusalem* consisted of more Congregations than one; that all these Congregations were combined under one Presbyterial Government, and made but one Church; that this Church was governed by Elders of the same Body, and met together for Functions of Authority, and that the Apostles acted not in quality of Apostles, but only as Elders, *Acts xv.* that the same Government was settled in the Churches of *Ephesus*, *Corinth*, *Thessalonica*, and continued many Years after; and at last,

Mr Hen-  
derson's  
second Re-  
ply.  
Bib. Reg.  
p. 325.



King  
Charles I.  
1646.

last, when one of the Presbytery presided over the rest with the Stile of *Bishop*, even then, as *St. Jerom* says, Churches were governed with the joint Consent of the Presbytery, and it was *Custom* rather than *Divine Appointment* which raised a Bishop above a Presbyter. To his Majesty's Argument, that where the Meaning of Scripture is doubtful, we must have Recourse to the Fathers, *Mr. Henderson* replies, that notwithstanding the Decrees of Councils, and the Resolutions of the Fathers, a Liberty must be left for a Judgment of Discretion, as had been sufficiently shown by Bishop *Davenant* and others. To prove Presbyters may ordain other Presbyters without a Bishop, he cites *St. Paul's* Advice to *Timothy*, 1 *Tim.* iv. 14. not to neglect the Gift that was given him by the *Laying on of the Hands of the Presbytery*; but granting Bishops and Presbyters to be distinct Functions, it will not follow, that the Authority and Force of the Presbyters Character was derived from the Bishop; for though the Evangelists and seventy Disciples were inferior to the Apostles, they received not their Commission from the Apostles, but from Christ himself.

Concerning the King's Coronation Oath, *Mr. Henderson* apprehends nothing need be added. As to the Supremacy, he thinks such an Headship as the Kings of *England* claim, or such an one as the two Houses of Parliament now insist on, that is, an Authority to receive Appeals from the supream Ecclesiastical Judicatures, in Things purely spiritual, is not to be justified; nor does he apprehend the Consent of the Clergy to be absolutely necessary to Church Reformation, for if so, what Reformation can be expected in *France*, in *Spain*, or in *Rome* it self; 'tis not to be imagined, that the Pope or Prelates will consent to their own Ruin. His Majesty had said, that if his Father King *James* had been consulted upon the Question of *Resistance*, he would have answered, That Prayers and Tears are the Church's Weapons. To  
which

which Mr. *Henderson* replies, *That he could never bear a good Reason to prove a necessary defensive War, a War against unjust Violence, unlawful; and that Bishop Jewel and Bilson were of this Mind.* To the Question, What Warrant there was in Scripture for Subjects to endeavour to force their King's Conscience? He replies, *That when a Man's Conscience is mistaken it lies under a Necessity of doing amiss; the Way therefore to disentangle himself is to get his Conscience better informed, and not to move till he has struck a Light and made further Discoveries.*

The KING, in his Answer of June 22. to Mr. *Henderson's* second Paper, still insists, that *inferior Magistrates and People have no Authority to reform Religion.* If this Point can be proved by Scripture his Majesty is ready to submit; but the sacred History, in the Book of *Numbers*, Chap. 16. is an Evidence of God's disapproving such Methods. Private Mens Opinions disjoined from the general Consent of the Church signify little, *for Rebels*, says his Majesty, *never want Writers to maintain their Revolt.* Though his Majesty has a Regard for Bishop *Jewel's* and *Bilson's* Memories, he never thought them infallible; as for Episcopal Government, he is ready to prove it an APOSTOLICAL INSTITUTION, and that it has been handed down through all Ages and Countries till Calvin's Time, as soon as he is furnished with Books, or such Divines as he shall make choice of; he does not think that Mr. *Henderson's* Arguments to prove the Church of *England* not built on the Foundation of Christ and his Apostles are valid, nor will he admit that most of the Prelates about the Time of the Reformation did not insult upon the DIVINE RIGHT. The King adds, Mr. *Henderson* would do well to show, where our Saviour has prohibited the Addition of more Church-Officers than those named by him, and yet the Church of *England* has not so much as offer'd at this, for an Archbishop is not a new Officer, but only a Distinction in the Order of Government, like the

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

Moderator of Assemblies in *Scotland*. His Majesty denies that Bishops and Presbyters always import the same Thing in Scripture, and when they do, it only respects the Apostles Times, for it may be proved, that the Order of Bishops succeeded that of the Apostles, and that the Title was alter'd in regard to those who were immediately chosen by our Saviour. As for the several Congregations in *Jerusalem* united in one Church his Majesty replies, are there not many Parishes in one Diocese? And do not the Deans and Chapters, and sometimes the inferior Clergy assist the Bishop? So that unless some positive and direct Proof can be brought of an Equality between the Apostles and other Presbyters, all Arguments are with him inconclusive. The King confesses, that in case he cannot prove from Antiquity that *Ordination and Jurisdiction are peculiar Branches of Authority belonging to Bishops*, he shall begin to suspect the Truth of his Principles. As for Bishop *Davenant's* Testimony, he refuses to be govern'd by that; nor will he admit of Mr. *Henderson's* Exception against the *Fathers*, till he can find out a better Rule of interpreting Scripture. And whereas Mr. *Henderson* urged the Precedent of foreign reformed Churches in favour of Presbytery, his Majesty does not undertake to censure them, but supposes *Necessity* may excuse many Things which would otherwise be unlawful; the Church of *England*, in his Majesty's Judgment, has this Advantage, that it comes nearest the primitive Doctrine and Discipline; and, that Mr. *Henderson* has fail'd in proving Presbyters may ordain without a Bishop, for 'tis evident St. *Paul* had a Share in *Timothy's* Ordination, 2 *Tim.* i. 6. As to the Obligation of the *Coronation Oath*, the King is still of Opinion, none but the Representative Body of the Clergy can absolve him; and as for the Impracticableness of Reformation upon the King's Principles, he can't answer for that, but thinks it sufficient to let him know, that *Incommodum non solvit Argumentum*. His Majesty then declares,



declares, that as it is a great Sin for a Prince to oppress the Church; so on the other hand, *He holds it absolutely unlawful for Subjects to make War (though defensively) against their lawful Sovereign, upon any Pretence whatsoever.*

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

MR. HENDERSON, in his third Paper of July 2. considers chiefly the Rules his Majesty had laid down for determining the Controversy of Church Government, which are the Practice of the primitive Church, and the universal Consent of the Fathers, and affirms, there is no such primitive Testimony, no such universal Consent in favour of *modern Episcopacy*; the Fathers very often contradicting one another, or at least not agreeing in their Testimony. But to shew the Uncertainty of his Majesty's Rule for determining Controversies of Faith Mr. *Henderson* observes,

Mr. Henderson's  
third  
Reply.

1. That some Criticks join *the Word of God and Antiquity together*; others make *Scripture the only Rule, and Antiquity the authentick Interpreter*. Now he thinks the latter a greater Mistake than the former, for the Papists bring Tradition no farther than to an Equality of Regard with the inspired Writings, but the others make Antiquity the very Ground of their Belief of the Sense of Scripture, and by that means exalt it above the Scripture; for the Interpretation of the Fathers is made the very formal Reason why I believe the Scripture interpretable in such a Sense; and thus, contrary to the Apostle's Doctrine, *Our Faith must stand in the Wisdom of Man, and not in the Power of God.*

2. He observes, that Scripture can only be authentickly interpreted by Scripture it self. Thus the *Levites* had Recourse only to one part of Scripture for the interpreting another, *Neb. viii. 8.* So likewise our Saviour interprets the old Testament, by comparing Scripture with Scripture, and not having recourse to the *Rabbies*. This was likewise the Apostles Method. Besides, when Persons insist so much upon

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

upon the Necessity of the Fathers, they are in danger of charging the Scriptures with Obscurity or Imperfection.

3. The Fathers themselves say, that Scripture is not to be interpreted but by Scripture.

4. Many Errors have past under the Shelter of Antiquity and Tradition: Mr. *Henderson* cites a great many Examples under this Head.

And, *Lastly*, He insists, that the universal Consent and Practice of the primitive Church is impossible to be known; that many of the Fathers were no Authors; that many of their Tracts are lost; that many Performances which go under their Names are spurious, especially upon the Subject of Episcopacy, and that therefore they are an uncertain Rule.

King's last  
Papers.  
Bibl. Reg.  
F. 351,  
353.

The KING, in his Papers of *July* 3d and 16th says, no Man can reverence Scripture more than himself; but when Mr. *Henderson* and he differ about the Interpretation of a Text, there must be some Judge or Umpire, otherwise the Dispute can never be ended; and when there are no parallel Texts the surest Guide must be the *Fathers*. In answer to Mr. *Henderson's* Particulars his Majesty answers, that if some People over-value Tradition, that can be no Argument against the Serviceableness of it; but to charge the primitive Church with Error, and to call the Customs and Practices of it unlawful, unless the Charge can be supported from Scripture, is an unpardonable Presumption. Those who object to the ancient Rites and Usages of the Church must prove them *unlawful*, otherwise the Practice of the Church is sufficient to warrant them. His Majesty denies 'tis impossible to discover the universal Consent, and understand the Practice of the primitive Church; and concludes with this Maxim, that though he never esteemed any Authority equal to the Scriptures, yet he believes the unanimous Consent of the Fathers, and the universal Practice of the primitive Church, the best and most authentick Interpreters, and by Consequence

the best qualified Judges between himself and Mr. *Henderfon*.

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

Remarks.

One may learn from this Controversy, some of the Principles in which King *Charles I.* was instructed; as,

- (1.) The Divine Right of Diocesane Episcopacy.
- (2.) The uninterrupted Succession of Bishops, rightly ordained, from the Time of the Apostles; upon which the whole Validity of the Administration of the Christian Sacraments depends.
- (3.) The Necessity of a Judge of Controversies, which his Majesty lodges with the Fathers of the Christian Church, and by that means leaves little or no room for private Judgment.
- (4.) The Independency of the Church upon the State.
- (5.) That no Reformation of Religion is lawful but what arises from the Prince or Legislature; and this only in Cases of Necessity, when a general Council cannot be obtained.
- (6.) That the Multitude or common People may not in any Case take upon them to reform the Negligence of Princes. Neither,
- (7.) May they take up Arms against him, even for Self-Defence, in cases of extream Necessity.

How far these Principles are defensible in themselves, or consistent with the *English* Constitution, I leave with the Reader; but 'tis very surprizing that his Majesty should be so much intangled with that part of his *Coronation Oath* which relates to the *Church*, when for fifteen Years together he broke through all the Bounds of it with relation to the *Civil Liberties of his Subjects* without the least Remorse.

Upon the Close of this Debate, and the Death of Mr. *Henderfon*, which followed within six Weeks; the King's Friends gave out, that his Majesty had broke his Adversary's Heart. Bishop *Kennet* and Mr. *Eachard* have published the following formal Recantation,



King Charles I. cantation, which they would have the World believe  
 1646. *this Divine* dictated, or signed upon his Death-bed.


Mr. Henderson's  
 pretended  
 Recantation.

Compl.  
 Hist.  
 p. 190.  
 Bennet's  
 Def. of  
 Mem.  
 p. 130.

“ I Do declare before God and the World, that  
 “ since I had the Honour and Happiness to con-  
 “ verse and confer with his Majesty with all sorts of  
 “ Freedom, especially in Matters of Religion, whe-  
 “ ther in relation to the Kirk or State, that I found  
 “ him the most intelligent Man that ever I spoke  
 “ with, as far beyond my Expression as Expecta-  
 “ tion. I profess, that I was oftentimes astonished  
 “ with the Solidity and Quickness of his Reasons,  
 “ and Replies; and wonder'd, how he, spending his  
 “ Time so much in Sports and Recreations, could  
 “ have attained to so great Knowledge; and must  
 “ confess ingenuously, that I was convinced in Con-  
 “ science, and knew not how to give him any rea-  
 “ sonable Satisfaction; yet the Sweetness of his Dis-  
 “ position is such, that whatsoever I said was well  
 “ taken. I must say, I never met with any Dispu-  
 “ tant of that mild and calm Temper, which con-  
 “ vinc'd me the more, and made me think, that  
 “ such Wisdom and Moderation could not be, with-  
 “ out an extraordinary Measure of Divine Grace. I  
 “ had heard much of his Carriage towards the Priests  
 “ in *Spain*, and that King *James* told the Duke of  
 “ *Buckingham* upon his going thither, that he durst  
 “ venture his Son *Charles* with all the Jesuits in the  
 “ World, he knew him to be so well grounded in  
 “ the Protestant Religion, but could never believe  
 “ it before. I observed all his Actions, more parti-  
 “ cularly those of Devotion, which I must truly say  
 “ are more than ordinary — If I should speak of  
 “ his Justice, Magnanimity, Charity, Sobriety,  
 “ Chastity, Patience, Humility, and of all his other  
 “ Christian and Moral Virtues, I should run my self  
 “ into a Panegyrick; no Man can say there is con-  
 “ spicuously any predominant Vice in him; never  
 “ Man saw him passionately Angry; never Man  
 “ heard

“ heard him Curse, or given to Swearing; or  
 “ heard him complain in the greatest Durance of  
 “ War, or Confinement — But I should seem to  
 “ flatter him, to such as do not know him, if the pre-  
 “ sent Condition that I lie in, did not exempt me from  
 “ any Suspicion of worldly Ends, when I expect eve-  
 “ ry Hour to be called from all transitory Vanities to  
 “ eternal Felicity, and the Discharging of my Con-  
 “ science before God and Man, did not oblige me to  
 “ declare the Truth simply and nakedly, in satisfac-  
 “ tion of that which I have done ignorantly, though  
 “ not altogether innocently.” The Declaration adds,  
 that he was heartily sorry for the Share he had had in  
 the War; that the Parliament and Synod of *England*  
 had been abused with false Aspersions of his Majesty,  
 and that they ought to restore him to his just Rights,  
 and his Royal Throne and Dignity, least an indelible  
 Character of Ingratitude lie upon them.

Mr. *Eachard* confesses he had been informed, that  
 this Declaration was spurious, but could find no Au-  
 thority sufficient to support such an Assertion. It will  
 be proper therefore to trace the History of this Impos-  
 ture, and set it in a clear and convincing Light, from  
 a Memorial sent me from one of the principal Divines  
 of *Edinburgh*. The Story was first invented by one of  
 the *Scots* Episcopal Writers, who had fled to *London*,  
 and was first published in the beginning of the Year  
 1648. in a small Pamphlet in Quarto about two Years  
 after Mr. *Henderson's* Death. From this Pamphlet Dr.  
*Heylin* published it as a *credible Report*. Between Thirty  
 and Forty Years after (*viz.*) 1693. Dr. *Hollingworth*,  
 in his Character of King *Charles I.* published the Pa-  
 per abovementioned, entitled, the Declaration of Mr.  
*Alexander Henderson*, principal Minister of the Word  
 of God at *Edinburgh*, and chief Commissioner of the Kirk  
 of Scotland to the Parliament and Synod of *England*;  
 which Paper the Doctor says he had from Mr. *Lamp-  
 lugh*, Son to the late Archbishop of *York* of that  
 Name, from whom the Historians above-mentioned,

King  
Charles I.  
1646.  


The False-  
ness of it.

King and some others, have copied it; but (says my Memorial) upon publishing the aforesaid Story to the World the Assembly of the Kirk of Scotland appointed a Committee to examine into the Affair, who after a full Enquiry, by their Act of *August 7. 1648.* declared the whole to be a Forgery, as may be seen in the printed Acts of the General Assembly for that Year, Quarto, page 420, &c. in which they signify their Satisfaction and Assurance, that Mr. *Henderson* persisted in his former Sentiments to his Death; that when he left the King at *Newcastle* he was greatly decayed in his natural Strength; that he came from thence by Sea in a languishing Condition, and died within eight Days after his Arrival at *Edinburgh*; that he was not able to frame such a Declaration as is palmed upon him; and, that all he spoke upon his Death-bed shewed his Judgment was the same as before about Church Reformation. This was attested before the Assembly by several Ministers who visited him upon his Death-bed, and particularly by two that constantly attended him from the Time he came home till the Time he expired. After this, and a great deal more to the same Purpose, “they declare “the above-mentioned Paper, entitled, *A Declaration of Mr. Alexander Henderson’s, &c. to be “forged, scandalous, and false, and the Author and “Contriver of the same to be void of Charity and a “good Conscience; a gross Lyar and Calumniator, “and led by the Spirit of the Accuser of the Bre- “thren.”*

Vide  
Bennet’s  
Def. of his  
Mem.  
p. 134.

Parlia-  
ment’s Pro-  
positions to  
the King  
at New-  
castle.

Rushw.  
Vol. VI.  
p. 309,  
311.  
Rapin,  
p. 543, &c.

While the King was debating the Cause of Episcopacy the Parliament were preparing their Propositions for a Peace, which were ready for the Royal Assent by the 11th of *July*. The *Scots* Commissioners demurred to them for some Time, as not coming up fully to their Standard, but being at length content they were engrossed, and carried to the King by the Earl of *Pembroke* and *Montgomery*, and the Earl of *Suffolk*, of the House of Peers; and by Sir *Walter Erle*,



*Erle, Sir John Hipisly, Robert Goodwin, and Luke Robinson, Esq;* of the House of Commons; the Earls of *Argyle and Loudon* were Commissioners for *Scotland*, and the Reverend Mr. *Marshall* was ordered to attend as their Chaplain. The Commissioners arrived at *Newcastle* July 23. next Day they waited upon his Majesty, and having kissed his Hand, Mr. *Goodwin* read the Propositions.

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

Those relating to the Civil Government were,

(1.) That the King should call in all his Declarations against the Parliament.

(2.) That he should put the Militia into their Hands for Twenty Years, with a Power to raise Money for their Maintenance.

(3.) That all Peerages since *May 21. 1642.* should be made void.

(4.) That the Delinquents therein mentioned should undergo the Penalties assigned in the Bill. And,

(5.) That the Cessation with the *Irish* be disannulled, and the Management of the War left to the Parliament.

The Propositions relating to Religion were,

1. " That his Majesty, according to the laudable  
" Example of his Father, would be pleased to swear  
" and sign the late *Solemn League and Covenant*, and  
" give his Consent to an Act of Parliament, enjoin-  
" ing the taking it throughout the three Kingdoms,  
" under certain Penalties, to be agreed upon in Par-  
" liament.

2. " That a Bill be passed for the utter Abolish-  
" ing, and taking away all Archbishops, Bishops,  
" their Chancellors, Commissaries, Deans, Sub-  
" deans, Deans and Chapters, Archdeacons, Ca-  
" nons and Prebendaries, and all Chaunters, Chan-  
" cellors, Treasurers, Sub-Treasurers, Succentors,  
" Sacristis; and all Vicars and Choristers, old Vi-  
" cars and new Vicars of any Cathedral or Colle-  
" giate Church, and all other under Officers, out of  
" the

- King Charles I. 1646, “ the Church of *England*, and out of the Church of  
 “ *Ireland*, with such Alterations as shall agree with the  
 “ Articles of the late Treaty of *Edinburgh*, Nov. 29.  
 “ 1643. and the joint Declaration of both Kingdoms.  
 3. “ That the Ordinance for the Calling and Sit-  
 “ ting of the Assembly of Divines be confirmed.  
 4. “ That Reformation of Religion according to  
 “ the *Covenant*, be settled by Act of Parliament in  
 “ such Manner as both Houses have agreed, or shall  
 “ agree, after Consultation with the Assembly of  
 “ Divines.  
 5. “ For as much as both Kingdoms are obliged  
 “ by Covenant to endeavour such an Uniformity of  
 “ Religion as shall be agreed upon by both Houses  
 “ of Parliament in *England*, and by the Church and  
 “ Kingdom of *Scotland*, after Consultation had with  
 “ the Divines of both Kingdoms assembled, that  
 “ this be confirmed by Acts of Parliament of both  
 “ Kingdoms respectively.  
 6. “ That for the more effectual Disabling Je-  
 “ suits, Priests, Papists, and Popish Recusants, from  
 “ disturbing the State, and eluding the Laws, an  
 “ Oath be established by Act of Parliament, where-  
 “ in they shall abjure and renounce the Pope’s Su-  
 “ premacy, the Doctrine of Transubstantiation,  
 “ Purgatory, Worshipping of the consecrated Host,  
 “ Crucifixes and Images, and all other Popish Su-  
 “ perstitions and Errors; and the Refusal of the said  
 “ Oath, legally tender’d, shall be a sufficient Con-  
 “ viction of Recusancy.  
 7. “ That an Act of Parliament be passed, for  
 “ educating of the Children of Papists by Prote-  
 “ stants, in the Protestant Religion.  
 8. “ That an Act be passed for the better levy-  
 “ ing the Penalties against Papists; and another for  
 “ the better preventing their Plotting against the  
 “ State; and that a stricter Course may be taken to  
 “ prevent Saying, or Hearing of Mass in the Court,  
 “ or any other Part of the Kingdom: The like for  
 “ *Scot-*

“ *Scotland*, if the Parliament of that Kingdom shall think fit.

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

9. “ That his Majesty give his Royal Assent to  
“ an Act for the due Observation of the Lord’s Day ;  
“ to the Bill for the Suppression of Innovations in  
“ Churches and Chapels in and about the Worship  
“ of God ; to an Act for the better Advancement of  
“ the Preaching of God’s holy Word in all Parts of  
“ the Kingdom ; to the Bill against Pluralities of  
“ Benefices and Non-Residency ; and, to an Act to  
“ be framed for the Reforming and Regulating both  
“ Universities, and the Colleges of *Westminster*, *Win-*  
“ *chester*, and *Eaton*.”

About Sixty Persons were by Name excepted from the general Pardon ; besides, Rushw:  
p. 315.

(1.) All Papists that had been in the Army.

(2.) All Persons that had been concerned in the *Irish* Rebellion.

(3.) Such as had deserted the two Houses at *Westminster* and went to *Oxford*.

(4.) Such Members of Parliament as had deserted their Places, and bore Arms against the two Houses. And,

(5.) Such Bishops or Clergymen, Masters or Fellows of Colleges, or Masters of Schools or Hospitals, or any Ecclesiastical Living, who had deserted the Parliament, and adher’d to the Enemies thereof, were declared incapable of any Preferment or Employment in Church or Commonwealth, all their Places, Preferments and Promotions, were to be utterly void, as if they were naturally dead ; nor might they be permitted to use their Function of the Ministry, without Advice and Consent of both Houses of Parliament ; provided that no Lapse shall incur by this Vacancy till six Months after Notice thereof.

When Mr. *Goodwin* had done, the King asked the Commissioners if they had Power to treat, to which they replied, that they were only to receive his Majesty’s Answer ; then said the King, *saving the Honour*



*King of the Business, a Trumpeter might have done as well ;*  
 Charles I. the very same Language as at the Treaty of Oxford ;  
 1646. but the Earl of Pembroke told his Majesty, they must  
 receive his peremptory Answer in ten Days, or return without it.

*Great Intercession is made with the King to comply.* Great Intercessions were made with the King to comply with these Proposals, particularly in the Point of Religion, for without full Satisfaction in that, nothing would please the *Scots* Nation, nor the City of *London*, by whom alone his Majesty could hope to be preserved ; but if this was yielded they would interpose for the moderating other Demands ; the *Scots General*, at the Head of one Hundred Officers, presented a Petition upon their Knees, beseeching his Majesty to give them Satisfaction in the Point of Religion, and to take the Covenant. Duke *Hamilton*, and the rest of the *Scots* Commissioners press'd his Majesty in the most earnest Manner to make Use of the present Opportunity for Peace. The Lord Chancellor of that Kingdom spoke to this Effect : “ The  
 “ Differences between your Majesty and your Parlia-  
 “ ment are grown to such an Height, that after ma-  
 “ ny bloody Battles they have your Majesty, with  
 “ all your Garrisons and strong Holds in their Hands,  
 “ and the whole Kingdom at their Disposal, they  
 “ are now in a Capacity to do what they will in  
 “ Church and State ; and some are so afraid, and  
 “ others so unwilling to submit to your Majesty’s  
 “ Government, that they desire not you, nor any  
 “ of your Race longer to reign over them ; but they  
 “ are unwilling to proceed to Extremities, till they  
 “ know your Majesty’s last Resolutions — Now,  
 “ Sir, if your Majesty shall refuse to assent to the  
 “ Propositions you will lose all your Friends in the  
 “ Houses, and in the City, and all *England* will join  
 “ against you as one Man ; they will depose you and  
 “ set up another Government ; they will charge us to  
 “ deliver your Majesty to them, and remove our  
 “ Armies out of *England*, and upon your Refusal we  
 “ shall

“ shall be constrained to settle Religion and Peace  
 “ without you, which will ruin your Majesty and  
 “ your Posterity. We own the Propositions are  
 “ higher in some Things than we approve of, but  
 “ the only Way to establish your Majesty’s Throne  
 “ is to consent to them at present, and your Majesty  
 “ may recover in a Time of Peace all that you have  
 “ lost in this Time of Tempest and Trouble.”

King  
 Charles I.  
 1646.

This was Plain-Dealing: The King’s best Friends  
 prayed his Majesty to consider his present Circum-  
 stances, and not hazard his Crown for a Form of  
 Church Government; or, if he had no Regard to  
 himself, to consider his Royal Posterity; but the  
 King replied, *His Conscience was dearer to him than his  
 Crown*; that till he had received better Satisfaction  
 about the *Divine Right of Episcopacy*, and the *Obliga-  
 tion of his Coronation Oath*, no Considerations should  
 prevail with him; he told the Officers of the Army,  
 he neither could nor would take the Covenant *till he  
 had heard from the Queen*. Which was only an Excuse  
 to gain Time to divide his Enemies, for the King  
 had heard from his Queen by Monsieur *Bellievre*, the  
*French Ambassador*, who waited upon him with posi-  
 tive Instructions, to press his Majesty, as the Advice  
 of the King of *France*, of the Queen, and of his own  
 Party, to give the Presbyterians Satisfaction about  
 the Church. *Bellievre* not being able to prevail, sent  
 over an Express to *France*, with a Desire, that some  
 Body of more Credit with the King might be sent.  
 Upon which Sir *William Davenant* came over with a  
 Letter of Credit from the Queen, beseeching him to  
 part with the Church for his Peace and Security.  
 When Sir *William* had delivered the Letter he ven-  
 tur’d to support it with some Arguments of his own,  
 and told his Majesty, in a most humble Manner, that  
 it was the Advice of Lord *Culpeper*, *Jermyn*, and of  
 all his Friends; upon which the King was so tran-  
 sported with Indignation, that he forbid him his Pre-  
 sence. When therefore the ten Days for consider-

But he  
 refuses.  
 Ham.  
 Mem.  
 p. 2184

Clarend:  
 Vol. III.  
 p. 29, 31,  
 32.  
 Rapin,  
 p. 344.

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

ing the Propositions were expired, instead of consenting, his Majesty gave the Commissioners his Answer in a Paper, directed to the Speaker of the House of Peers, to this Effect, " That the Propositions  
" contained so great Alterations both in Church and  
" State, that his Majesty could not give a particular  
" and positive Answer to them," but after some few Concessions hereafter to be mentioned, " he proposes to come to *London*, or any of his Houses thereabouts, and enter upon a personal Treaty with  
" both Houses; and he conjures them, as Christians and Subjects, and as Men that desire to  
" leave a good Name behind them, to accept of  
" this Proposal, that the unhappy Distractions of the  
" Nation may be peaceably settled."

His Conference with  
the Scots  
Commissioners.

Ham.  
Mem.  
p. 286.

When this Answer was reported to the House, Aug. 12. it was resolved, to settle Accounts with the Scots, and to receive the King into their own Custody; but in the mean Time his Majesty attempted to bring that Nation over to his Interest, by playing the *Independants* against them, and telling them, the only Way to destroy the Sectarians was to join with the Episcopalians, and admit of the Establishment of both Religions. " I do by no means perswade you  
" (says the King) to do any Thing contrary to your  
" Covenant, but I desire you to consider whether it  
" be not a great Step towards your Reformation  
" (which I take to be the chief End of your Covenant) that the Presbyterian Government be legally  
" settled. 'Tis true, I desire that the Liberty of  
" my own Conscience, and of those who are of the  
" same Opinion with my self may be preserved,  
" which, I confess, does not as yet totally take away  
" Episcopal Government. But then consider withal,  
" That this will take away all the superstitious Sects and  
" Heresies of the Papists and Independants, to which you  
" are no less obliged by your Covenant, than to the taking  
" away of Episcopacy. And this that I demand is  
" likely to be but Temporary; for if it be so clear  
" as



“ as you believe, that Episcopacy is unlawful, I  
 “ doubt not but God will so enlighten my Eyes that  
 “ I shall soon perceive it, and then I promise to con-  
 “ cur with you fully in Matters of Religion; but I  
 “ am sure you cannot imagine, that *there is any Hopes*  
 “ *of converting or silencing the Independant Party, which*  
 “ *undoubtedly will get a Toleration in Religion from the*  
 “ *Parliament of England, unless you join with me in*  
 “ *that Way that I have proposed for the establisbing of*  
 “ *my Crown*; or at least, that you do not press me  
 “ to do this (which is yet against my Conscience)  
 “ till I may do it without sinning, which, as I am  
 “ confident, none of you will perswade me to do, so  
 “ I hope you have so much Charity, as not to put  
 “ Things to such a desperate Issue as to hazard the  
 “ Loss of all, because for the present you cannot  
 “ have full Satisfaction from me in Point of Religion,  
 “ not considering, that besides the other Mischiefs  
 “ that may happen, *it will infallibly set up the innume-*  
 “ *rable Sects of the Independants, nothing being more*  
 “ *against your Covenant than the suffering those Schisms*  
 “ *to encrease.*” His Majesty then added, “ That he  
 “ should be content to restrain Episcopal Govern-  
 “ ment to the Dioces of Oxford, Winchester, Bath and  
 “ Wells, and Exeter, leaving all the rest of England  
 “ fully to the Presbyterial Discipline, *with the strictest*  
 “ *Clauses that could be thought of in an Act of Parliament*  
 “ *against the Papists and Independants.*” But the Scots  
 would abate nothing in the Article of Religion; even  
 for the Overthrow of the Sectaries. Duke Hamilton  
 left no Methods unattempted to perswade his Majesty  
 to comply, but without Effect.

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

Rushw.  
328.

Ham.  
Mem.  
P. 348.

When the King could not gain the Commissioners, Scots Kirk  
 he applied by his Friends to the Kirk, who laid his  
 Proposals before the General Assembly, with his Of-  
 fer to make any Declaration they should desire against  
 the Independants, AND THAT REALLY, WITHOUT  
 ANY RESERVE OR EQUIVOCATION; but the Kirk  
 were as peremptory as the Commissioners; they said

will not  
trust the  
King.  
Ham.  
Mem.  
p. 298.

Rushw.  
p. 380.

*King Charles I.* the King's Heart was not with them, nor could they depend upon his Promises any longer than it was not in his Power to set them aside.  
1646.

*Their solemn Warning and Declaration.*

In the mean Time the *English* Parliament were debating with the *Scots* Commissioners at *London* the Right of disposing of the King's Person, the latter claiming an equal Right to him with the former ; but the Parliament voted that *the Kingdom of Scotland had no joint Right to dispose of the Person of the King in the Kingdom of England.* To which the *Scots* would hardly have submitted but for fear of engaging in a new War, and of losing all their Arrears. His Majesty would willingly have retired into *Scotland*, but the Clergy of that Nation would not receive him, as appears by *their solemn Warning to all Estates and Degrees of Persons throughout the Land*, dated Dec. 17. 1646. in which they say, “ So long as his Majesty does not approve in his Heart, and Seal with his Hand, “ the *League and Covenant*, we cannot but apprehend, that according to his former Principles he “ will walk contrary to it, and study to draw us into “ the Violation of it. Besides, our receiving his “ Majesty into *Scotland* at this Time will confirm the “ Suspicion of the *English* Nation, of our under- “ hand Dealing with him before he came into our “ Army. Nor do we see how it is consistent with “ our Covenant and Treaties, but on the contrary, “ it would involve us in the Guilt of Perjury, and “ expose us to the Hazard of a bloody War. We “ are bound by our *Covenant* to defend the King's “ Person and Authority in the Defence and Preservation of the true Religion, and the Liberties of “ the Kingdom, and so far as his Majesty is *for these* we will be for him ; but if his Majesty will “ not satisfy the just Desires of his People, both Nations are engaged to pursue the Ends thereof “ against all Lets and Impediments ; we therefore “ desire, that those who are intrusted with the publick Affairs of this Kingdom would still insist upon “ his

“ his Majesty’s settling Religion according to the <sup>King</sup>  
 “ Covenant, as the only Means of preserving him- <sup>Charles I.</sup>  
 “ self, his Crown, and Posterity.” Upon reading this <sup>1646.</sup>  
 Admonition of the *Kirk* the *Scots* Parliament resolved, <sup>Proceed-</sup>  
 that his Majesty be desired to grant the whole Propo- <sup>ings of the</sup>  
 sitions; that in case of Refusal, the Kingdom should <sup>Scots Parl.</sup>  
 be secured without him. They declared further, that <sup>relating to</sup>  
 the Kingdom of *Scotland* could not lawfully engage <sup>the King,</sup>  
 for the King as long as he refused to take the *Covenant*, <sup>Rushw.</sup>  
 and give them Satisfaction in point of Religion. Nor <sup>p. 392.</sup>  
 would they admit him to come into *Scotland* unless he  
 gave a satisfactory Answer to the Propositions lately  
 presented to him in the Name of both Kingdoms.

The Resolutions abovementioned were not com- <sup>They deli-</sup>  
 municated in form to the King till the beginning of <sup>ver him up</sup>  
*January*, when the *Scots* Commissioners pres’d him <sup>and pub-</sup>  
 again in the most humble and importunate Manner to <sup>lish their</sup>  
 give them Satisfaction, at least, in the Point of Reli- <sup>Reasons.</sup>  
 gion, but his Majesty was immoveable; which being  
 reported back to *Edinburgh*, the Question was put in  
 that Parliament, *Whether they should leave the King in*  
*England, to his two Houses of Parliament?* And it was  
 carried in the Affirmative. *Jan. 16.* a Declaration  
 was published in the Name of the whole Kingdom of  
*Scotland*, wherein they say, “ That when his Majesty <sup>Rushw.</sup>  
 “ came to their Army before *Newark* he professed <sup>p. 396.</sup>  
 “ that he was absolutely resolved to comply with his  
 “ Parliaments in every Thing for settling of Truth  
 “ and Peace; in confidence whereof the Committees  
 “ of the Kingdom of *Scotland* declared to himself, and  
 “ to the Kingdom of *England*, that they received  
 “ him into their Protection only upon these Terms,  
 “ since which Time Propositions of Peace have been  
 “ presented to his Majesty for the Royal Assent,  
 “ with earnest Supplications to the same Purpose,  
 “ but without effect. The Parliament of *Scotland*  
 “ therefore being now to recal their Army out of *Eng-*  
 “ land, considering that his Majesty in several Messages  
 “ has desired to be near his two Houses of Parliament,



King Charles I. 1646. "and that the Parliament has appointed his Majesty to reside at Holmby House with Safety to his Royal Person; and in regard of his Majesty's not giving a satisfactory Answer to the Propositions for Peace; and from a Desire to preserve a right Understanding between the two Kingdoms, and for preventing new Troubles, the States of Parliament of the Kingdom of Scotland do declare their Concurrence for the King's Majesty's going to Holmby House, to remain there till he give Satisfaction about the Propositions for Peace, and that in the mean Time there be no Harm, Prejudice, Injury or Violence done to his Royal Person; that there be no Change of Government; and, that his Posterity be no way prejudiced in their lawful Succession to the Crown and Government of these Kingdoms."

English Commissioners receive the King, and convey him to Holmby. While the Parliament and Kirk of Scotland were debating the King's Proposals, his Majesty writ to the Parliament of England in the most pressing Terms, for a personal Treaty at London, "'Tis your King (says he in his Letter of Dec. 10.) that desires to be heard, the which, if refused to a Subject by a King he would be thought a Tyrant, wherefore I conjure you, as you would shew your selves really what you profess, good Christians and good Subjects, that you accept this Offer." But the Houses were afraid to trust his Majesty in London, and therefore appointed Commissioners to receive him from the Scots and convoy him to Holmby House in Northamptonshire, where he arrived Feb. 6. 1646. But the Sum of two Hundred Thousand Pounds, being half the Arrears due to the Scots Army, having been paid them by Agreement before they march'd out of Newcastle, it has been commonly said, *They sold their King*. An unjust and malicious Aspersion! It ought to be consider'd, that the Money was their due before the King delivered himself into their Hands; for that in settling the Accounts between the two Nations his Majesty's Name was not mentioned; that it was impossible to detain him without a War with England, and

Vide  
Rapin,  
p. 347.

that the Officers of the Army durst not carry the King to *Edinburgh*, because both Parliament and Kirk had declared against receiving him.

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

But how surprizing was his Majesty's Conduct! How many cross and inconsistent Proposals did he make at this Time! While he was treating with the *Scots*, and offering to concur in the severest Measures against the *Independants*, he was listening to the Offers of those very *Independants* to set him upon the Throne without taking the Covenant, or renouncing the Liturgy of the Church, provided they might have a Toleration for themselves. This agreeing with the King's Inclinations had too great a Hearing from him (says Bishop *Burnet*) till *Lauderdale* writ from *London*,

Remarks.

"That he was infallibly sure, they designed the Ham:

"Destruction of Monarchy, and the Ruin of the Mem.

"King and his Posterity; but that if he would con- P. 288.

"sent to the Propositions all would be well in spite

"of the Devil and the *Independants* too." But if his

Majesty had in good Earnest fallen in with the Pro-

posals of the Army at this Time, I am of Opinion

they would have set him upon the Throne without

the Shackles of the *Scots* Covenant.

While the King was at *Holmby House* he was at- King at

tended with great Respect, and suffered to divert him- Holmby

self at Bowls with Gentlemen in the neighbouring House.

Villages, under a proper Guard. The Parliament

appointed two of their Clergy (*viz.*) Mr. *Caryl* and

Mr. *Marshall*, to preach in the Chapel Mornings and

Afternoons on the Lord's Day, and perform the De-

votions of the Chapel on Week Days, but his Maje-

sty never gave his Attendance. He spent his Sun-

days in private; and though they waited at Table he

would not so much as admit them to ask a Blessing.

Before the King removed from *Newcastle* the Par. Ordinance

liament put the finishing Hand to the Destruction of for abolish-

the Hierarchy, by abolishing the very Names and ing Abps

Titles of Archbishops, Bishops, &c. and alienating and Bps,

their Revenues for Payment of the publick Debts. &c.

This

King  
Charles I.  
1646.  
Husb. Col.  
p. 922.

This was done by two Ordinances, bearing Date Octob. 9. and Nov. 16. 1646. entitled, *Ordinances for abolishing Archbishops and Bishops, and providing for the Payment of the just and necessary Debts of the Kingdom, into which the same has been drawn by a War, mainly promoted by, and in favour of the said Archbishops, Bishops, and other their Adherents and Dependants.* The Ordinance appoints, “ That the Name, Title, Stile “ and Dignity of *Archbishop of Canterbury, Arch- “ bishop of York, Bishop of Winchester, Bishop of “ Durham, and all other Bishops of any Bishopricks “ within the Kingdom of England and Dominion “ of Wales, be, from and after September 5. 1646. “ wholly abolished and taken away; and all and “ every Person and Persons are to be thenceforth dis- “ abled to hold the Place, Function, Stile of Arch- “ bishop, or Bishop of any Church, See, or Dio- “ cese now established or erected, or hereafter to be “ established or erected within the Kingdom of Eng- “ land, Dominion of Wales, or Town of Berwick on “ Tweed; or to use, or put in use any Archiepiscopal, “ or Episcopal Jurisdiction or Authority by force of “ any Letters Patents from the Crown, made, or to “ be made, or by any other Authority whatsoever, “ any Law, Statute, Usage or Custom to the con- “ trary notwithstanding.”*

And for  
Sale of  
their  
Lands.  
Rushw.  
p. 377.

By the Ordinance of Nov. 16. it is further ordain- ed, “ That all Counties Palatine, Honours, Ma- “ nors, Lordships, Stiles, Circuits, Precincts, Ca- “ stles, Granges, Messuages, Mills, Lands, Tene- “ ments, Meadows, Pastures, Parsonages, appro- “ priate Tithes, Oblations, Obventions, Pensions, “ Portions of Tithes, Vicarages, Churches, Chapels, “ Advowsons, Donations, Nominations, Rights of “ Patronage and Presentations, Parks, Woods, “ Rents, Reversions, Services, Annuities, Fran- “ chises, Liberties, Privileges, Immunities, Rights “ of Action, and of Entry, Interests, Titles of En- “ try, Conditions, Commons, Court-Leets, and “ Court-.



King  
Charles I.  
1646.

“ Court-Barons, and all other Possessions and Here-  
 “ ditaments whatsoever, which now are, or within  
 “ ten Years before the beginning of the present Par-  
 “ liament, were belonging to the said Archbishops  
 “ and Bishops, Archbishopsricks or Bishopricks, or  
 “ any of them, together with all Chattels, Deeds,  
 “ Books, Accompts, Rolls, and other Writings and  
 “ Evidences whatsoever, concerning the Premises,  
 “ which did belong to any the said Archbishops,  
 “ Bishops, &c. are vested and settled, adjudged and  
 “ deemed to be in the real and actual Possession and  
 “ Seizing of the Twenty four Trustees mentioned in  
 “ the Ordinance, their Heirs and Assigns upon  
 “ Trust, that they shall dispose of the same, and the  
 “ Rents and Profits thereof, as both Houses of Par-  
 “ liament shall order and appoint, *i. e.* for Pay-  
 “ ment of the publick Debts, and other necessary  
 “ Charges occasioned by the War, promoted chief-  
 “ ly by, and in favour of the said Hierarchy, saving  
 “ and excepting all Tithes appropriate, Oblations,  
 “ Obventions, and Portions of Tithes, &c. belong-  
 “ ing to the said Archbishops, Bishops, and others  
 “ of the said Hierarchy; all which, together with  
 “ thirty Thousand Pounds yearly Rent belonging to  
 “ the Crown, they reserve for the Maintenance of  
 “ preaching Ministers. The Trustees are not to  
 “ avoid any Lease made for three Lives, or Twen-  
 “ ty one Years, provided the said Lease or Leases  
 “ were not obtained since the Month of *December*,  
 “ 1641. They are empowered to appoint proper <sup>Scobel,</sup>  
 “ Officers to survey, and take a particular Estimate <sup>P. 40.</sup>  
 “ of all Bishops Lands, to receive the Rents and  
 “ Profits of them, and to make a sufficient Title to  
 “ such as shall purchase them, by Order of Parlia-  
 “ ment.” By virtue of this Ordinance the Trustees  
 were empowered to pay, or cause to be paid to  
*the Assembly of Divines* their constant Salary allowed  
 them by former Order of Parliament, with all their  
 Arrears, out of the Rents, Revenues, and Profits  
 belong-

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

belonging to the late Archbishop of *Canterbury*, till such Time as the said Lands and Revenues shall happen to be sold. These Church Lands were at first mortgaged as a Security for several large Sums of Money which the Parliament borrowed at eight ~~per~~ Cent. Interest. Several Members of Parliament, and Officers of the Army, afterwards purchased them at low Rates, but the Bargain proved dear enough in the End. And surely it was wrong to set them to Sale, for the Lands being given for the Service of Religion, ought to have been continued for that Use, tho' in a different Channel; but herein they followed the ill Examples of the Kings and Queens of *England* at the Reformation.

Presbyteri-  
ans petiti-  
on against  
Secularies.

The *Presbyterians* were now in the Height of their Power, the Hierarchy being destroyed, the King their Prisoner, and the best, if not all the Livings in the Kingdom distributed among them; but still they were dissatisfied for want of the *Top-stone* to their new Building, which was *Church Power*; the Pulpits, and Conversation of the City, were filled with Invectives against the *Men in Power*, because they would not leave the Church independant on the State; the Presbyterian Ministers were very troublesome, the Parliament being teased every Week with Church Grievances of one kind or another; Dec. 19. the Lord Mayor and his Brethren went up to *Westminster* with a Representation of some of them, and a Petition for Redress. The Grievances were,

1. " The Contempt that began to be put upon the  
" Covenant, some refusing to take it, and others de-  
" claiming loudly against it; they therefore pray,  
" that it may be imposed upon the whole Nation,  
" under such Penalties as the Houses shall think fit;  
" and that such as refuse it be disqualified from all  
" Places of Profit and Trust.

2. " The Growth of *Heresy and Schism*; the Pul-  
" pits being often usurped by preaching Soldiers,  
" who infected all Places where they came with dan-  
" gerous Errors; they therefore pray, that all such

" Per-

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

“ Persons may be forbid to preach as have not taken  
“ the Covenant, and been regularly ordained, and  
“ that all separate Congregations, the very Nurse-  
“ ries of damnable Hereticks, may be suppressed;  
“ that an Ordinance be made for the exemplary Pu-  
“ nishment of Hereticks and Schismaticks, and that  
“ all godly and orthodox Ministers may have a com-  
“ petent Maintenance, many Pulpits being vacant  
“ of a settled Minister for want of it; and here (say  
“ they) we would lay the Stress of our Desires, and  
“ the Urgency of our Affections.” They complain  
further, of the “ *undue Practices of Country Committees,*  
“ *of the threatening Power of the Army, and of some*  
“ *Breaches in the Constitution;* all which they desire  
“ may be redressed, and that his Majesty’s Royal  
“ Person and Authority may be preserved and de-  
“ fended, together with the Liberties of the King-  
“ dom, according to the *Covenant.*”

To satisfy the Petitioners the House of Commons *Proceed-*  
published a Declaration Dec. 31. “ wherein they ex- *ings of*  
“ press their Dislike of *Lay-Preachers*, and their Re- *Parlia-*  
“ solutions to proceed against all such as shall take *ment upon*  
“ upon them to preach, or expound the Scriptures *it.*  
“ in any Church or Chapel, or any other publick  
“ Place, except they be ordained either here, or in  
“ some other reformed Churches; likewise against  
“ all such Ministers, and others, as shall publish,  
“ or maintain by preaching, writing, printing, or  
“ any other way, any Thing against, or in Deroga-  
“ tion of the Church Government which is now esta-  
“ blished by Authority of Parliament; and also,  
“ against all and every Person or Persons who shall  
“ willingly or purposely interrupt or disturb a  
“ Preacher in the publick Exercise of his Function;  
“ and they command all Officers of the Peace, and  
“ Officers of the Army, to take Notice of this De-  
“ claration, and by all lawful Means to prevent Of-  
“ fences of this kind, and to apprehend Offenders,  
“ that a Course may be speedily taken for a due Pu-  
“ nishment



King  
Charles I.  
1646.

“ nishment to be inflicted upon them.” The House of Lords published an Order, bearing Date *Dec. 22.* requiring the Headboroughs and Constables, in the several Parishes of *England* and *Wales*, to arrest the Bodies of such Persons as shall disturb any Minister in holy Orders, in the Exercise of his publick Calling, by Speech or Action, and carry them before some Justice of Peace, who is required to put the Laws in Execution against them. *Feb. 4.* they published an Ordinance to prevent the Growth, and Spreading of Errors, Heresies, and Blasphemies; but these Orders not coming up to their *Covenant Uniformity*, the *Lord Mayor* and *Common Council* presented another Petition to the Houses *March 17.* and appointed a Committee to attend the Parliament from Day to Day, till their Grievances were redressed, of which we shall hear more under the next Year.

Further Account of the  
Sectaries,

We have already accounted for the unhappy Rise of these *Sectarians* in the Army when it was new Modell'd, who were now grown so extravagant as to call for some proper Restraint, the Mischiefe being spread not only over the whole Country, but into the very City of *London* it self; it was first pleaded in excuse for this Practice, that a *gifted Brother* had better preach and pray to the People than nobody; but now Learning, good Sense, and the rational Interpretation of Scripture, began to be cried down, and every bold Pretender to Inspiration was preferr'd to the most grave and sober Divines of the Age; some advanced themselves into the Rank of Prophets, and others uttered all such crude and undigested Absurdities as came first into their Minds, calling them the Dictates of the *Spirit* within them; by which the publick Peace was frequently disturbed, and great Numbers of ignorant People led into the Belief of the most dangerous Errors. The Assembly of Divines did what they could to stand in the Gap, by writing against them, and publishing a *Detestation of the Errors of the Times*. The Parliament also appointed a Fast on that Account, *Feb. 4. 1646.* and many Books were published against the

the *Antinomians*, *Anabaptists*, *Seekers*, &c. not forgetting the *Independants*, whose insisting upon a Toleration was reckon'd the Inlet to all the rest.

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

The most furious Writer against the Sectaries was Mr. *Thomas Edwards*, Minister of *Christ Church*, London, a zealous Presbyterian, who became remarkable

Edwards's  
Gangræna.

by a Book entitled, *Gangræna*, or, a Catalogue of many of the Errors, Heresies, Blasphemies, and pernicious Practices of this Time: In the Epistle Dedicatory he calls upon the *higher Powers* to rain down all their Vengeance upon these deluded People, in the following Language; " You have done worthily  
" against Papists, Prelates, and scandalous Ministers, in casting down Images, Altars, Crucifixes,  
" throwing out Ceremonies, &c. but what have you  
" done (says he) against Heresy, Schism, Disorder,  
" against *Seekers*, *Anabaptists*, *Antinomians*, *Brownists*,  
" *Libertines*, and other Sects; you have made a  
" Reformation, but with the Reformation have we  
" not worse Things come upon us than we had before,  
" as denying the Scriptures, pleading for Toleration of all Religions and Worship; yea, for  
" Blasphemy, and denying there is a God. You  
" have put down the *Common Prayer*, and there are  
" many among us that are for putting down the  
" *Scriptures*. You have broke down the Images of  
" the Trinity, and we have those who oppose the  
" Trinity. You have cast out Bishops and their Officers,  
" and we have many that cast down to the Ground all Ministers. You have cast out Ceremonies in the Sacraments, as the *Cross*, *Kneeling at*  
" the Lord's Supper, and many cast out the Sacraments themselves. You have put down *Saints*  
" *Days*, and many make nothing of the *Lord's Day*.  
" You have taken away the superfluous Maintenance  
" of Bishops, and Deans, and we have many that cry  
" down the necessary Maintenance of Ministers. In  
" the Bishops Days we had singing of Psalms taken  
" away in some Places, conceived Prayer, Preaching,

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

“ ing, and in their room Anthems, stinted Forms,  
 “ and Reading brought in, and now *singing of Psalms is*  
 “ *spoken against, publick Prayer question’d, and all mi-*  
 “ *nisterial Preaching denied.* In the Bishops Time  
 “ Popish Innovations were introduced, as Bowing at  
 “ Altars, &c. and now we have Anointing the Sick  
 “ with Oil; then we had bishoping of Children,  
 “ now we have bishoping of Men and Women, by  
 “ laying on of Hands. In the Bishops Days we had  
 “ the Fourth Commandment taken away, and now  
 “ *all Ten are taken away by the Antinomians.* The  
 “ worst of the Prelates held many sound Doctrines,  
 “ and had many commendable Practices, but many  
 “ of our Sectaries deny all Principles of Religion,  
 “ are Enemies to all holy Duties, Order, Learning,  
 “ overthrowing all, being whirligig Spirits, and the  
 “ *great Opinion of an universal Toleration tends to the*  
 “ *Laying all waste, and Dissolution of all Religion, and*  
 “ *good Manners.* Now (says our Author) a Conni-  
 “ vance, and suffering without Punishment, such  
 “ false Doctrines and Disorders, provokes God to  
 “ send Judgments. *A Toleration* doth eclipse the  
 “ Glory of the most excellent Reformation, and  
 “ makes these Sins to be the Sins of the Legislature  
 “ that countenances them. *A Magistrate should use*  
 “ *coercive Power to punish and suppress Evils,* as ap-  
 “ pears from the Example of *Ely.* Now, right Ho-  
 “ nourable, though you don’t own these Heresies,  
 “ but have put out several Orders against them, yet  
 “ there is a strange unheard of suffering of them,  
 “ such an one as there hardly ever was the like, un-  
 “ der any orthodox Christian Magistrate and State.  
 “ Many Sectaries are countenanced, and employed  
 “ in Places of Trust; there has not been any Exem-  
 “ plary Restraint of the Sectaries, by virtue of any  
 “ of your Ordinances, but they are slighted and  
 “ scorned; Preaching of Lay-Men was never more  
 “ in request than since your Ordinance against it;  
 “ Presbyterian Government never more preached and

“ printed



“ printed againſt than ſince it was eſtabliſhed. Our  
 “ dear Brethren of *Scotland* ſtand amazed, and are  
 “ aſtoniſhed at theſe Things; the orthodox Miniſters  
 “ and People both in City and Country are grieved  
 “ and diſcouraged, and the common Enemy ſcorns  
 “ and blaſphemes; it is high Time therefore for  
 “ your Honours to ſuffer no longer theſe Sects and  
 “ Schiſms, but to do ſomething worthy of a Parlia-  
 “ ment againſt them, and God will be with you.”

King  
 Charles I.  
 1646.

After this Dedication there are one Hundred and ſeventy ſix erroneous Paſſages collected from ſundry Pamphlets printed about this Time, and from the Reports of Friends in all Parts of the Kingdom, to whom he ſent for Materials to fill up his Book; however, the Heresies are at length reduced under ſixteen general Heads.

- |                         |                              |
|-------------------------|------------------------------|
| 1. <i>Independants,</i> | 9. <i>Enthuſiaſts,</i>       |
| 2. <i>Browniſts,</i>    | 10. <i>Seekers,</i>          |
| 3. <i>Millenaries,</i>  | 11. <i>Perſectiſts,</i>      |
| 4. <i>Antinomians,</i>  | 12. <i>Socinians,</i>        |
| 5. <i>Anabaptiſts,</i>  | 13. <i>Arians,</i>           |
| 6. <i>Arminians,</i>    | 14. <i>Antitrinitarians,</i> |
| 7. <i>Libertines,</i>   | 15. <i>Antiſcripturiſts,</i> |
| 8. <i>Familiſts,</i>    | 16. <i>Scepticks.</i>        |

The induſtrious Writer might have enlarged his Catalogue with *Papiſts* and *Prelates*, *Deiſts*, *Ranters*, *Beheminiſts*, &c. &c. or, if he had pleaſed, a leſs Number might have ſerved his Turn, for very few of theſe Sectaries were collected into Societies; but his Buſineſs was to blacken the Adverſaries of Preſbyte-rian Uniformity, that the Parliament might cruſh them by ſanguinary Methods. Among his Heresies there are ſome that do not deſerve that Name; and among his Errors, ſome that never grew into a Sect, but fell occaſionally from the Pen or Lips of ſome wild Enthuſiaſt, and died with the Author. The In-

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

p. 40.

Appeal,  
p. 48.

Mr. Baxter's Account of them.

*dependants* are put at the Head of the *Seſtaries*, be-  
 cause they were for *Toleration* of all *Chriſtians* who  
 agreed in the *Fundamentals* of Religion; to prove this,  
 which they never denied, he has collected ſeveral  
 Paſſages out of their publick Prayers; one *Indepen-*  
*dant* Miniſter (ſays he) prayed that Preſbytery might  
 be removed, and the Kingdom of Chriſt ſet up; ano-  
 ther prayed two or three Times, *That the Parliament*  
*might give Liberty to tender Conſciences*; another thank-  
 ed God for the *Liberty of Conſcience* granted in Ame-  
 rica; and ſaid, *Why, Lord, not in England?* Ano-  
 ther prayed, *ſince God had delivered both Preſbyteri-*  
*ans and Independants from Prelatical Bondage*, that the  
 former might not be guilty of bringing their Brethren into  
 Bondage. The Reader will judge of the Spirit of this  
 Writer, by the foregoing Specimen of his Perform-  
 ance, which I ſhould not have thought worth re-  
 membering, if our Church-Writers had not reported  
 the State of Religion from his Writings. “ I knew  
 “ Mr. Edwards very well (ſays Fuller) my Cotem-  
 “ porary in Queen’s College, who often was transport-  
 “ ed beyond due Bounds with the Keenneſs and  
 “ Eagerneſs of his Spirit, and therefore I have juſt  
 “ Cause in ſome Things to ſuſpect him.” He adds far-  
 ther, “ I am moſt credibly informed by ſuch, who  
 “ I am confident will not abuſe me and Poſterity  
 “ therein, that Mr. Herbert Palmer (an *Anti-Inde-*  
 “ *pendant* to the Height) being convinced that Mr.  
 “ Edwards had printed ſome Falſhoods in one Sheet  
 “ of his *Gangræna*, proffer’d to have the Sheet reprint-  
 “ ed at his own Charge, but ſome Accident ob-  
 “ ſtructed it.” However, our Author went on pub-  
 liſhing a ſecond and third *Gangræna*, full of moſt  
 bitter Inveſtives and Reproaches, till his own Friends  
 were nauſeated with his Performances.

The Reverend Mr. Baxter, who attended the Con-  
 quering Army, mentions the *Independants*, *Anabap-*  
*tiſts* and *Antinomians*, as the chief Separatiſts, to whom  
 he

he adds some other Names, as *Seekers, Ranters, Be-*  
*hemenists, Vanists*, all which died in their Infancy, or  
 cemented in the People afterwards known by the  
 Name of QUAKERS; but when he went into the

King  
 Charles I.  
 1646.

Army he found “almost one half of the religious  
 “Party among them Orthodox, or but very lightly  
 “touch’d with the above-mentioned Mistakes, and  
 “almost another half honest Men, that had stepp’d  
 “further into the contending Way than they ought,  
 “but with a little Help might be recovered; a few  
 “fiery, self-conceited Men among them, kindled the rest,  
 “and made all the Noise and Bustle; for the greatest  
 “Part of the common Soldiers were ignorant Men,  
 “and of little Religion; these would do any Thing  
 “to please their Officers, and were Instruments for  
 “the *Seducers* in their great Work, which was to  
 “cry down the *Covenant*, to vilify Parish Ministers,  
 “and especially the *Scots* and the *Presbyterians*.”

Mr. Baxter observes, that “these fiery hot Men were  
 “hatch’d among the *old Separatists*; that they were  
 “fierce with Pride and Conceit, and Uncharitable-  
 “ness, but many of the honest Soldiers, who were  
 “only tainted with some Doubts about *Liberty of*  
 “*Conscience*, and *Independency*, would discourse of the  
 “Points of Sanctification and Christian Experience  
 “very favourily; the *Seducers* above-mentioned  
 “were great Preachers, and fierce Disputants, but  
 “of no settled Principles of Religion; some were  
 “of levelling Principles as to the State, but all  
 “were agreed, that the *Civil Magistrate* had nothing  
 “to do in Matters of Religion, any further than to keep  
 “the Peace, and protect the Churches Liberties.” The  
 same Writer adds, “To speak impartially, some of  
 “the Presbyterian Ministers frighten’d the Sectaries  
 “into this Fury, by the Unpeaceableness and Im-  
 “patience of their Minds; they ran from Liberti-  
 “nism into the other Extream, and were so little  
 “sensible of their own Infirmary, that they would



King Charles I. 1646. Lord Clarendon's. "not have them tolerated, who were not only tolerable, but worthy Instruments and Members in the Churches." Lord *Clarendon* says, that *Cromwell* and his Officers preached and prayed publickly to their Troops, and admitted few or no Chaplains in the Army but such as bitterly inveighed against the Presbyterian Government as more Tyrannical than Episcopacy; and that the common Soldiers as well as the Officers, did not only pray and preach among themselves, but went up into the Pulpits in all Churches, and preached to the People, who quickly became inspired with the same Spirit; Women as well as Men taking upon them to pray and preach; which made as great a Noise and Confusion in all Opinions concerning Religion, as there was in the Civil Government of the State.

Bp. Bramhal of the Papiſts. Par's Life of Uſher, p. 611. Life, p. 78. Bishop *Bramhal*, in one of his Letters to Archbishop *Uſher* writes, that "the Papiſts took Advantage of theſe Confuſions, and ſent over above one Hundred of their Clergy, that had been educated in *France, Italy and Spain*, by Order from *Rome*. In theſe Nurseries the Scholars were taught ſeveral Handicraft Trades and Callings, according to their Ingenuities, beſides their Functions in the Church; they have many yet at *Paris* (ſays the Biſhop) fitting up to be ſent over, who twice in the Week oppoſe one the other; one pretending Preſbytery, the other Independency, ſome Anabaptiſm, and others contrary Tenets. The Hundred that went over this Year (according to the Biſhop) were moſt of them Soldiers in the Parliament Army." But Mr. *Baxter*, after a moſt diligent Enquiry declares, that he could not find them out; which renders the Biſhop's Account ſuſpected. The moſt that I could ſuſpect for Papiſts among *Cromwell's* Soldiers (ſays he) were but a few that began as Strangers among the common Soldiers, and by degrees roſe up to ſome inferior Officers,

“ Officers, but none of the superior Officers seemed  
 “ such.” The Body of the Army had a vast Aver-  
 sion to the Papists, and the Parliament took all Oc-  
 casion of treating them with Rigor; for *June 30.*  
*Morgan* a Priest was drawn, hanged and quartered,  
 for going out of the Kingdom to receive Orders from  
*Rome*, and then returning again. But without all  
 question, both Church and State were in the utmost  
 Disorder and Confusion at the Close of this Year.

King  
 Charles I.  
 1646.

Among the great Men of the Parliament's Side that died about this Time, was *Robert D'Evereux*,  
 Earl of *Essex*, Son of the famous Favourite of Queen  
*Elizabeth*; he was educated to Arms in the *Netherlands*,  
 and afterwards served the King and Queen of *Bohemia*  
 for the Recovery of the *Palatinate*. King *Charles I.*  
 made him Lieutenant of his Army in his Expedition  
 against the *Scots*, and Lord Chamberlain of the House-  
 hold; but the Earl being unwilling to go into the ar-  
 bitrary Measures of the Court in favour of Popery  
 and Slavery took part with the Parliament, and ac-  
 cepted of the Commission of Captain General of their  
 Forces, for which the King proclaimed him a Tray-  
 tor. He was a Person of great Honour, and served  
 the Parliament with Fidelity; but being of Opinion,  
 that the War should be ended rather by Treaty than  
 Conquest, did not always push his Successes as far as  
 he might. Upon the new Modelling the Army the  
 cautious General was dismissed with an honourable  
 Pension for his past Services; after which he retired  
 to his House at *Eltham* in *Kent*, where he died of a  
 Lethargy, occasioned by over-heating himself in the  
 Chace of a Stag in *Windsor Forest*, *Sept. 14. 1646.*  
 in the Fifty fifth Year of his Age: He was bu-  
 ried with great Funeral Solemnity in *Westminster*  
*Abbey*, *Octob. 22.* at the publick Expence, both  
 Houses of Parliament attending the Procession. His  
 Effigies was afterwards erected in *Westminster Hall*,

Death of  
 E. of Essex.

Ludlow,  
 p. 186.

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

but some of the King's Party found Means in the Night to cut off the Head, and break the Sword, Arms and Escutcheons. Mr. *Vines* preached his Funeral Sermon, and gave him a very high Encomium, but Lord *Clarendon* has stained his Character for taking Part with the Parliament, which, he says, was owing to his Pride and Vanity. The Earl's Countenance appeared stern and solemn, but to his familiar Acquaintance his Behaviour was mild and affable. Upon the Whole, he was a truly great and excellent Person; his Death was an unspeakable Loss to the King, for he was the only Nobleman, perhaps, in the Kingdom, who had Interest enough with both Parties to have put an End to the Civil War at the very Time when Providence called him out of the World.

Death of  
Mr. Col-  
man.

Among the remarkable Divines may be reckoned the Reverend and Learned Mr. *Thomas Colman*, Rector of St. *Peter's* Church in *Cornhill*; he was born at *Oxford*, and enter'd in *Magdalen College* in the Seventeenth Year of his Age; he afterwards became so perfect a Master of the *Hebrew* Language, that he was commonly called *Rabby Colman*. In the Beginning of the Civil War he left his Rectory of *Blyton* in *Lincolnshire*, being persecuted from thence by the Cavaliers. Upon his coming to *London* he was prefer'd to the Rectory of St. *Peter's Cornhill*, and made one of the Assembly of Divines. Mr. *Wood* says, he behaved modestly and learnedly in the Assembly; and Mr. *Fuller* gives him the Character of a Modest and Learned Divine; he was equally an Enemy to Presbytery and Prelacy, being of *Erastian* Principles; he fell sick when the Assembly was debating the *Jus Divinum* of Presbytery; and when they sent some of their Members to visit him, he desired they would not come to an absolute Determination till they heard what he had to offer upon the Question; but his Dis-  
temper



stemper encreasing he died in a few Days, and the whole Assembly did him the Honour to attend his Funeral in a Body *March 30. 1646.*

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

About the Middle of *July* died the Learned Doctor *William Twisse*, Vicar of *Newbury*, and Prolocutor of the Assembly of Divines; he was born at *Speenham Land*, near *Newbury* in *Berkshire*; his Father was a substantial Clothier in that Town, and educated his Son at *Winchester School*, from whence he was translated to *New College* in *Oxford*, of which he was *Fellow*: Here he applied himself to the Study of Divinity with the closest Application, for Sixteen Years together. In the Year 1604. he proceeded *Master of Arts*; about the same Time he enter'd into holy Orders, and became a diligent and frequent Preacher; he was admired by the University for his subtle Wit, exact Judgment, exemplary Life and Conversation, and all other valuable Qualities that became a Man of his Function. In the Year 1614. he proceeded Doctor of Divinity, after which he travell'd into *Germany*, and became Chaplain to the Princess *Palatine*, Daughter of King *James I.* After his Return to *England* he was made Vicar of *Newbury*, where he gained a vast Reputation by his useful Preaching and exemplary Life. His most learned Adversaries have confessed, that there was nothing then extant, more exact, accurate and full, touching the *Arminian* Controversy, than what he published; nor have any written upon this Argument since the publishing *Dr. Twisse's Works*, but have made an honourable Mention of him. The Doctor was offered the Prebend of *Winchester*, and several Preferments in the Church of *England*; the States of *Friesland* invited him to the Professorship of Divinity in their University of *Francker*, but he refused all. In the Beginning of the Civil War he was forced from his Living at *Newbury* by the Cavaliers, and upon calling together the Assembly of Divines, was appointed by Par-

Death of  
Dr. Twisse.  
Athen.  
Oxon.

King  
Charles I.  
1646.

liament their *Prolocutor*, in which Place he continued to his Death, which happen'd after a lingering Indisposition, about the 20th of *July*, 1646. in the Seventy first Year of his Age. He died in very necessitous Circumstances, having lost all that he had by the King's Soldiers, insomuch, that when some of the Assembly were deputed to visit him in his Sickness, they reported, that *he was very Sick, and in great Straits*. He was allowed to be a Person of prodigious Knowledge in School Divinity; a subtle Disputant, and withal, a modest, humble, and religious Person. He was buried, at the Request of the Assembly, in the Collegiate Church of *St. Peter's Westminster*, near the upper End of the poor Folks Table, next the Vestry, *July* 24. and was attended by the whole Assembly in a Body: There his Body rested till the Restoration of King *Charles II.* when his Bones were dug up by Order of Council, *Sept.* 14. 1661. and thrown, with several others, into a Hole in the Church-Yard of *St. Margaret's*, before the Back-Door of the Lodgings of one of the Prebendaries.

Death of  
Mr. Jer.  
Bur-  
roughs.

Towards the End of the Year died the Reverend and Pious Mr. *Jeremiah Burroughs*; he was educated in *Cambridge*, but obliged to quit the University and Kingdom for Non-Conformity in the late Times. Upon his leaving *England* he became Minister of an *English* Congregation at *Rotterdam*, with which he continued till the Year 1642. when he returned to *England*, and became Preacher to two of the largest and most numerous Congregations about *London* (*viz.*) *Stepney* and *Cripplegate*. He was one of the Dissenting Brethren in the Assembly, but was a Divine of great Candor, Modesty and Charity. He never gathered a separate Congregation, nor accepted of a Parochial Living, but wore out his Strength in continual Preaching, and other Services of the Church. He was an excellent Scholar, a good Expositor, and most popular Preacher; he writ several

veral Treatises while he lived, and his Friends have published a great many others since his Death, which have met with a general Acceptance. It was said, the Divisions of the Times broke his Heart, because one of the last Subjects he preached upon, and printed, was his *Irenicum*, or Attempt to heal Divisions among Christians. Mr. *Baxter* used to say, If all the Presbyterians had been like Mr. *Marshall*, and the Independants like Mr. *Burroughs*, their Differences might easily have been compromised. He died of a consumptive Illness Nov. 14. 1646. about the Forty seventh Year of his Age.

King  
Charles I.

1646.





## C H A P. VIII.

*Proceedings of the Assembly upon their Confession of Faith and Catechisms. Provincial Assemblies of London. The King taken out of the Parliament's Custody and conveyed to the Army. Controversy between the Parliament and Army. His Majesty's Conduct. He escapes from Hampton-Court and is confined in the Isle of Wight.*

King  
Charles I.

1647.

*Proceed-  
ings of the  
Assembly  
upon their  
Confession  
of Faith.*

THE Reverend Mr. Charles Herle took Possession of the Prolocutor's Chair by Order of Parliament July 22. 1646. in the Room of the late Dr. Twisse, when the Discipline of the Church being pretty well settled, it was moved to finish their *Confession of Faith*. The *English* Divines would have been content with revising and explaining the Thirty nine Articles of the Church of *England*, but the *Scots* insisted on a System of their own; a Committee was therefore appointed to prepare Materials for this Purpose May 9. 1645; their Names were Dr. Gouge, Dr. Hoyle, Mr. Herle, Gataker, Tuckney, Reynolds, and Vines, with the *Scots* Divines, who having first settled the *Titles* of the several Chapters, as they now stand, in their *Confession of Faith*, in Number Thirty two, distributed them for greater Expedition, among several *Sub-Committees*, which sat two Days every Week, and then reported what they had finished to the *Committee*, and so to the Assembly, where it was debated Paragraph by Paragraph. The Disputes about *Discipline* occasioned so many Interruptions that it was a Year and Half before this Work was finished, for Nov. 26. 1646. the *Prolocutor* returned Thanks to the several Committees, in the Name of the Assembly, for their great Pains in perfecting the Work committed to them. At the same Time Dr. Burges was appointed to get it transcribed,

in

in order to its being presented to Parliament, which <sup>King</sup> was done *Dec. 11.* by the whole Assembly in a Body, <sup>Charles I.</sup> under the Title of, *The humble Advice of the Assembly* <sup>1647.</sup> *of Divines, and others, now, by Authority of Parliament,* <sup>They pre-</sup> *sitting at Westminster, concerning a CONFESSION OF* <sup>sent it to</sup> FAITH. The House of Commons having voted the <sup>the Parlia-</sup> Assembly Thanks, desired them to insert the *Proofs* <sup>ment.</sup> of the several Articles in their proper Places, and <sup>MS. penes</sup> then to print six Hundred Copies, and no more, for <sup>me.</sup> the Perusal of the Houses. The Reverend Mr. *Wilson*, Mr. *Byfield*, and Mr. *Gower*, were appointed, *Jan. 6.* to be a Committee to collect the Scriptures for Confirmation of the several Articles; all which being examined by the Assembly were inserted in the Margin. After this the whole *Confession* was committed once more to a Review of the three Committees, who made Report to the Assembly of such further Amendments as they thought necessary; which being agreed to by the House it was sent to the Press. *May 11. 1647.* Mr. *Byfield*, by Appointment of the House of Commons, delivered to the Members the printed Copies of *their Confession of Faith* <sup>Rushw. Part IV. Vol. I. p. 482.</sup> with *Scripture Notes*, signed

CHARLES HERLE, *Prolocutor*,  
 CORN. BURGESS, }  
 HERBERT PALMER, } *Assessors*,  
 HENRY ROBOROUGH, }  
 ADONIRAM BYFIELD, } *Scribes.*

And because no more were to be given out at present, every Member subscribed his Name to the Receipt thereof.

The House of Commons began their Examination <sup>Debates of</sup> of this Confession *May 19.* when they passed through <sup>the Com-</sup> the whole first Chapter Article by Article, but the <sup>mons upon</sup> Disturbances that arose between the Parliament and <sup>it.</sup> Army interrupted their Progress for the whole Summer; but when these were quieted they returned to their

King their Work, and *October* 2. ordered a Chapter of the  
 Charles I. Confession of Faith at least to be debated every *Wed-*  
 1647. *nesday* till the whole was finished, by which Means  
 they got through the whole before the End of *March*  
 following; for at a Conference with the House of  
 Rushw. Lords *March* 22. 1648. the Commons presented them  
 p. 1035. with the *Confession of Faith* as passed by their House,  
 with some Alterations: They agreed with the Assem-  
 bly in the Doctrinal Part of the Confession, and or-  
 dered it to be published, *June* 20, 1648. for the Sa-  
 tisfaction of the foreign Churches, under the Title of,  
*Articles of Religion approved and passed by both Houses of*  
*Parliament, after Advice had with an Assembly of Di-*  
*Articles of vines called together by them for that Purpose.* The Par-  
 Discipline liament not thinking it proper to call it a *Confession of*  
 rejected. *Faith*, because the Sections did not begin with the  
 Savoy Words *I confess*; nor to annex Matters of Church Go-  
 Conf. Pref. vernment, about which they were not agreed, to Do-  
 p. 18, 19. *ctrinal Articles*; those Chapters therefore, which relate  
 to Discipline, as they now stand in the Assembly's Con-  
 fession, were not printed by Order of the House, but  
 re-committed, and at last laid aside, as the whole  
 Thirtieth Chapter, *Of Church Censures, and of the*  
*Power of the Keys.* The Thirty first Chapter, *Of*  
*Synods and Councils, by whom to be called, and of what*  
*Force in their Decrees and Determinations.* A great  
 Part of the Twenty fourth Chapter, *Of Marriage*  
*and Divorce*, which they referr'd to the Laws of the  
 Land. And the fourth Paragraph of the Twen-  
 tieth Chapter, which determines *what Opinions and*  
*Parties disturb the Peace of the Church, and how such*  
*Disturbers ought to be proceeded against by the Censures of*  
*the Church, and punish'd by the Civil Magistrate.* These  
 Propositions, in which the very Life and Soul of Pres-  
 bytery consists, never pass'd the *English* Parliament,  
 nor had the Sanction of a Law in this Country: But  
 the whole Confession, as it came from the Assembly,  
 being sent into *Scotland*, was immediately approv'd  
 by the General Assembly and Parliament of that  
 King.

But the  
 whole re-  
 ceived by  
 the Scots  
 Assembly  
 and Par-  
 liament.

Savoy  
 Conf. Pref.  
 p. 20.



Kingdom, as the established Doctrine and Discipline of their Kirk; and thus it has been published to the World ever since, though the Chapters above-mentioned, relating to *Discipline* (as has been observed) never had the Sanction of either House of the *English* Parliament; nevertheless, as they were agreed to by an Assembly of *English* Divines, I have given them a Place in the *Appendix*.

King  
Charles I.  
1647.

Appendix;  
No II.

Nor is it to be supposed, that the *Confession of Faith it self*, which determines so many abstruse Points of Divinity, should have the unanimous Assent of the whole Assembly or Parliament; for though all the Divines were in the *Anti-Arminian* Scheme, yet some had a greater Latitude than others. I find in my *MS.* the Dissent of several Members against some Expressions relating to *Reprobation, to the Imputation of the active as well as passive Obedience of Christ*, and to several Passages in the Chapters of *Liberty of Conscience and Church Discipline*; but the *Confession*, as far as it related to *Articles of Faith*, past the Assembly and Parliament by a very great Majority.

Various Censures have been passed by learned Men upon this labour'd Performance; some have loaded it with undeserved Reproaches; and others, perhaps, have advanced its Reputation a little too high. Mr. *Collier* condemns it, for determining in favour of the Morality of the Sabbath; for pronouncing the Pope to be Antichrist; and, for maintaining the *Calvinian* Rigs of *absolute Predestination, irresistible Grace, and the Impotency of Man's Will*; Doctrines, in his Opinion, inconsistent with Christianity. But then he observes, very justly, that it falls very short of the *Scots* Claim in Points of Discipline; it yields the Magistrate a Power of convening Church Assemblies, and of superintending their Proceedings; it is silent as to the Independency of the Church, and the DIVINE RIGHT of Presbytery, &c. But upon the whole, the Assembly's Confession, with all its Faults, has been ranked by very good Judges among the most perfect Systems of Divinity,

Censures  
of it.

E. Hist.  
p. 842.

King Divinity, that have been published upon the *Calvi-*  
 Charles I. *nistick* or *Anti-Arminian* Principles in the last Age.

1647.

While the *Confession* was carrying through the As-  
 sembly's ssembly, Committees were appointed to reduce it in-  
 Larger and to the Form of Catechisms; *one larger*, for the Ser-  
 Shorter Ca-vice of a publick Exposition in the Pulpit, according  
 techisms. to the Custom of foreign Churches; the *other smaller*,

Ruthw.

p. 888,

1060.

for the Instruction of Children; in both which the  
*Articles relating to Church Discipline* are omitted. The  
 larger Catechism is a comprehensive System of Divi-  
 nity, and the smaller, a very accurate Summary,  
 though it has been thought by some a little too long,  
 and in some Things too abstruse for the Capacities of  
 Children. The *Shorter Catechism* was presented to  
 the House of Commons, Nov. 5. but the *Larger*, by  
 reason of the marginal Proofs from Scripture, which  
 the Houses desired might be inserted, was not ready  
 till the 14th of April, 1648. when the House ordered  
 six Hundred Copies to be printed for the Service of  
 the Members; and having examined and approved  
 it, they allowed it to be printed by *Authority*, for pub-  
 lick Use, September 15. 1648. The King, after ma-  
 ny Solicitations, at the Treaty of the *Isle of Wight*, of-  
 fer'd to license the shorter Catechism, with a proper  
 Preface; but that Treaty proving unsuccessful it was  
 not accomplished.

Ruthw.

p. 1326.

Scots Com-

missioners

take leave

of the As-

sembly.

The chief Affairs committed to the Assembly be-  
 ing thus finished, Mr. *Rutherford*, one of the *Scots*  
 Divines, moved, *October* 24. 1647. that it might be  
 recorded in the *Scribes Books*, that the Assembly had  
 enjoyed the Assistance of the Honourable, Reverend  
 and Learned Commissioners of the Church of *Scot-*  
*land*, during all the Time they had been debating and  
 perfecting these Four Things mentioned in the *Cove-*  
*nant* (viz.) *Their composing a Directory for publick Wor-*  
*ship. An uniform Confession of Faith. A Form of Church*  
*Government and Discipline. And a publick Catechism;*  
 Some of their Number having been present during  
 the whole of these Transactions; which being done,  
 about

about a Week after, he and the rest of the Commissioners took their Leave and returned home; upon which Occasion Mr. *Herle* the Prolocutor rose up, and in the Name of the Assembly, “thank’d the Honourable and Reverend Commissioners, for their Assistance; he excused in the best Manner he could, the *Directory*’s not being so well observed as it ought; and lamented, that the *Assembly* had not Power to call Offenders to an Account; he confesses, that their Affairs were very much embarrassed, and that they were still in a Chaos of Confusion; [the King being now taken out of the Hands of the Parliament, and in Custody of the Army] he takes Notice what Distresses the Parliament were in, while the common Enemy was high and strong; and adds, that their extraordinary Successes hitherto were owing to the Prayers of their Brethren of *Scotland*, and other Protestants abroad, as well as to their own. He then mentions with Concern some other Restraints the Assembly lay under, but that this was not a proper Time for Redress.”

The Commissioners went home under a very great Concern for the Storm that was gathering in *England*, and for the Hardships the *Presbyterians* lay under with respect to their Discipline; and having obtained the Establishment of the *Directory*, the *Confession of Faith and Catechisms*, the *Presbyterian Discipline*, and *Rouse’s Psalms in Metre*, for the Service of their Kirk, they appointed a general Fast, to lament their own Defection from the *Solemn League and Covenant*, and the distressed Condition of their Brethren in *England*, who were zealous for carrying on the Work of God, but were now oppressed, under Pre-*they ap-*  
*point a*  
*Fast for the*  
*Distractions of Eng-*  
*land.*  
tence of *Liberty*, when no less was aimed at than Tyranny and arbitrary Power.

If the Parliament had dissolved the Assembly at this Time, as they ought to have done, they had gone home with Honour and Reputation, for after this



King  
Charles I.  
1647.

this they did little but examine Candidates for the Ministry, and dispute upon the Questions of the *Jus Divinum* of Presbytery; the grand Consultations about publick Affairs, and practising upon the new Establishment, being translated to the Provincial Assemblies, and Weekly Meetings of the *London* Clergy at *Sion College* \*.

Rapin,  
p. 311.

\* That the Reader may form a Judgment of what was intended to be established in *England*, it may not be improper to set before him in one View, the Discipline that was then settled in the Kirk of *Scotland*, and subsists at this Time. "In *Scotland* there are eight Hundred and ninety Parishes, each of which is divided, in Proportion to its Extent, into particular Districts, and every District has its own Ruling Elders and Deacons; the Ruling Elders are Men of the principal Quality and Interest in the Parish; and the Deacons are Persons of a good Character for Manners and Understanding. A Consistory of Ministers, Elders, and Deacons, is called a Kirk Session, the lowest Ecclesiastical Judicatory, which meets one a Week, to consider the Affairs of the Parish. The Minister is always Moderator, but without a Negative; Appeals lie from hence to their own Presbyteries, which are the next higher Judicatories. *Scotland* is divided into Sixty nine Presbyteries, each consisting of from Twelve to Twenty four contiguous Parishes. The Ministers of these Parishes, with One Ruling Elder, chosen Half Yearly out of every Kirk Session, compose a Presbytery. They meet in the *Head Town* and chuse their Moderator, who must be a Minister, Half Yearly; from hence Appeals lie to Provincial Synods, which are composed of several adjacent Presbyteries, Two, Three, Four to Eight; there are Fifteen in all. The Members are a Minister and a Ruling Elder out of every Parish. These Synods meet twice a Year, at the principal Town of its Bounds. They chuse a Moderator, who is their Prelocutor. The Acts of the Synods are subject to the Review of the General Assembly, the dernier Resort of the Kirk of *Scotland*. It consists of Commissioners from Presbyteries, Royal Burghs, and Universities. A Presbytery of Twelve Ministers sends two Ministers and One Ruling Elder; a Presbytery of between Twelve and Eighteen sends Three, and One Ruling Elder; of between Eighteen and Twenty four sends Four, and Two Ruling Elders; of Twenty Four sends Five, and Two Elders; every Royal Burgh sends One Elder, and *Edinburgh* Two; every University sends One Commissioner, usually a Minister. The General Assembly meets once a Year, in the Month of *May*, and is opened and adjourned by the King's Royal Commissioner appointed for that Purpose."

Though

Though the City and Suburbs of *London* had been formed into a *Province*, and divided into twelve Claſſical Preſbyteries (as has been remember'd) the laſt Year, new Complaints were ſtill made to the Parliament of certain Obſtructions in their Way; upon which the Houſes published their Reſolutions of

King  
Charles I.  
1647.

Vol Pamp.  
N<sup>o</sup> 4.

*April 22. 1647. entitled, Remedies for Removing ſome Obſtructions in Church Government; in which they order Letters to be ſent from the Speakers of both Houſes to the ſeveral Counties of England, immediately to divide themſelves into diſtinct Preſbyteries, and Claſſes; " They then appoint the Elders and " Miniſters of the ſeveral Claſſes of the Province of " London, to hold their Provincial Aſſembly in the " Convocation Houſe of St. Paul's in London, upon " the firſt Monday in May next enſuing, and to adjourn their Meetings de Die in Diem, and conclude " them with Adjournment to the next Opportunity, " according to the Ordinance of Parliament; but " that no Act ſhall paſs or be valid in the ſaid Province of London, except it be done by the Number " of Thirty ſix preſent, or the major Part of them, " whereof Twelve to be Miniſters, and Twenty four " Ruling Elders. That in the Claſſical Meetings " that which ſhall be done by the major Part preſent " ſhall be eſteemed the Act of the whole; but no " Act done by any Claſſes ſhall be valid unleſs it be " done by the Number of Fifteen preſent, or the " major Part of them, whereof Five to be Miniſters, " and Ten Ruling Elders." So that the Number of Lay-Elders in theſe Aſſemblies was double to the Number of Miniſters.*

According to this Appointment the firſt Provincial Aſſembly met at the Convocation Houſe of St. Paul's May 3. conſiſting of Three Miniſters and Six Ruling Elders from the ſeveral Claſſes, in all about one Hundred and eight Perſons; at their firſt Seſſion they choſe the Reverend Dr. Gouge Prolocutor, who opened the Aſſembly with a Sermon at his own Church in Black-  
Vol. III. C c friars,

*King* *friars*, the Reverend Mr. *Thomas Manton*, Mr. *Ralph*  
*Charles I.* *Robinson*, and Mr. *Cardel*, being appointed Scribes.  
 1647. After their Return to the *Convocation-House* a Com-  
 mittee of Seven Ministers and Fourteen Ruling El-  
 ders, were chosen to consider of the Business of the  
 Province.

*The* MINISTERS *were*,

|                               |  |                              |
|-------------------------------|--|------------------------------|
| <i>The Rev.</i> Mr. Whitaker, |  | <i>The Rev.</i> Mr. Tuckney, |
| Dr. Seaman,                   |  | Mr. Proffet,                 |
| Mr. Ed. Calamy,               |  | Mr. Jackson.                 |
| Mr. Spurflow,                 |  |                              |

*The* RULING ELDERS *were*,

|                  |  |                   |
|------------------|--|-------------------|
| Sir Edw. Popham, |  | Mr. Houghton,     |
| Dr. Clarke,      |  | Mr. Eyres,        |
| Dr. Baftwicke,   |  | Mr. Vaughan,      |
| Dr. Brinley,     |  | Mr. Webbe,        |
| Mr. Bence,       |  | Mr. English,      |
| Mr. Ruffel,      |  | Col. Sowtonstall. |
| Mr. Bains,       |  | Mr. —————         |

Any Six to be a Quorum, provided there be Two Ministers, and Four Ruling Elders. Their next Meeting to be at *Sion College*, May 6. at Two in the Afternoon.

At the Second Sessions it was moved, that Application be made to Parliament, for liberty to remove the Assembly from the *Convocation-House* to some other Place ; and accordingly they were allowed to adjourn to any Place within the City of *London*, or the Liberties ; upon which they agreed upon *Sion College*, where they continued to meet Twice a Week to the End of the Year 1659. as appears by a Manuscript of the late Mr. *Grange*, now in *Sion College* Library.



But before their Adjournment from the *Convocation-House* at *St. Paul's*, they came to the following Resolutions ; *resolved*,  
King Charles I. 1647.

1. That the Provincial Assembly shall meet Twice every Week, *Mondays* and *Thursdays*. *Gen. Rules for the Provincial Assembly.*
2. That the Moderator for the Time being shall begin and end every Session with Prayer.
3. When a new Moderator is to be chosen the senior Minister shall preside.
4. The Moderator shall be subject to the Censure of the Majority of the Assembly, in case of Complaint, and shall leave the Chair while the Complaint is debating, and the senior Minister shall preside.
5. Every one that speaks shall direct his Speech to the Moderator, and be uncovered.
6. No Man shall speak above Three Times to the same Question at one Sessions.
7. When any Business is before the Assembly relating to any particular Member, he shall withdraw, if desired by the Majority.
8. After the Assembly is set no Member shall withdraw without leave.
9. The Names of the Members present shall be recorded by the Scribes.

Every *Provincial Assembly* was dissolved in Course at the End of Six Months, when Notice was given to the several Classes to choose new Representatives ; but it was an ill Omen upon them, that their Meetings were interrupted almost all this Summer, by reason of the Distraction of the Times.

The Second *Provincial Assembly* met Nov. 8. Dr. *2d Provincial Assembly.* *Seaman* Moderator, and presented a Petition to the Parliament in a Body, Jan. 11. in which they humbly pray,

1. " That the Number of Delegates to the *Provincial Assembly* may be enlarged, because they
- Their Petition to Parliament.*  
*MS.*  
*found in Coll.*

King Charles I. “ found it difficult sometimes to make up the Number of Thirty six.

1647.

2. “ That the Houses would quicken the Settlement of those Classes [in *London*] that were not yet formed, which they say were Four.

3. “ That some more effectual Encouragement may be provided for a learned Ministry.

4. “ That effectual Provision may be made against clandestine Marriages, for the Punishment of Fornication, Adultery, and such Uncleanneſs as is not fit to be named.

5. “ That Church Censures may be so established, that scandalous Persons may be effectually excluded from Church Communion.”

The Parliament received them with Respect, and promised to take the Particulars into Consideration, which was all that was done in the Affair.

London  
Ministers  
Testimony  
to Truth,  
and against  
Error.

But besides the *Provincial Assembly*, it has been remember'd, that the *London Clergy* had their weekly Meetings at *Sion College*, to consult about Church Affairs, in one of which they agreed, *since they could do no more*, to bear their publick Testimony against the Errors of the Times; and accordingly they published a Treatise, entitled, *A Testimony to the Truth of Jesus Christ, and to our Solemn League and Covenant; as also, against the Errors, Heresies, and Blasphemies of these Times, and the Toleration of them; to which is added, a Catalogue of the said Errors, &c.* dated from *Sion College*, Dec. 14. 1647. and subscribed by Fifty eight of the most eminent Pastors in *London*, of whom Seventeen were of the Assembly of Divines. Some Time after the Ministers of *Gloucestershire* published their Concurrence with the *London Ministers*, subscribed by Sixty four Names. The Ministers of the Province of *Lancaster* by Eighty four. The *Devonshire* Ministers by Eighty three; and the *Somerset* Ministers by Seventy one.

The *London Ministers*, in their first Article, “ touching Matters of Doctrine, declare their Assent  
“ to the *Westminster Assembly's* Confession of Faith,  
“ and

“ and heartily desire it may receive the Sanction of  
 “ Authority, as the joint Confession of Faith of the <sup>King</sup>  
 “ three Kingdoms, in pursuance of the Covenant.” <sup>Charles I.</sup>  
 1647.

Touching Heresies and Errors, they declare their  
 Detestation and Abhorrence of these following, among  
 others,

1. “ That the holy Scriptures are not of Divine <sup>L. Clark-</sup>  
 “ Authority, and the only Rule of Faith. <sup>son.</sup>
2. “ That God hath a bodily Shape ; that *God* is <sup>Biddle.</sup>  
 “ the Name of a Person ; and, that God is the Au- <sup>p 6.</sup>  
 “ thor of Sin, having a greater Hand in it than Men <sup>Crisp,</sup>  
 “ themselves. <sup>Eaton,</sup>  
<sup>Saltmarsh.</sup>
3. “ That there is not a Trinity of Persons in the <sup>Paul Best.</sup>  
 “ Godhead ; that the Son is not Co-equal with the <sup>Biddle.</sup>  
 “ Father ; and, that the Holy Ghost is only a mini- <sup>p 8.</sup>  
 “ string Spirit.
4. “ That God has not elected some to Salvation <sup>Fulness of</sup>  
 “ from Eternity, and rejected or reprobated others ; <sup>God's Love</sup>  
 “ and, that no Man shall perish in Hell for *Adam's* <sup>to Man-</sup>  
 “ Sin. <sup>kind by</sup>  
<sup>L. S.</sup>
5. “ That Christ died for the Sins of all Mankind ; Ham-  
 “ that the Benefits of his Death were intended for <sup>mond's</sup>  
 “ all ; and, that natural Men may do such Things <sup>Pract Cat.</sup>  
 “ as whereunto God has by way of Promise annexed <sup>J. Good-</sup>  
 “ Grace and Acceptation. <sup>win.</sup>  
<sup>p 149.</sup>
6. “ That Man hath a Free-Will and Power in <sup>J. Good-</sup>  
 “ himself to repent, to believe, to obey the Gospel, <sup>win.</sup>  
 “ and do every Thing that God requires to Salvation.
7. “ That Faith is not a supernatural Grace, <sup>Ham.</sup>  
 “ and that faithful Actions are the only Things by  
 “ which a Man is justified.
8. “ That the Moral Law is not the Rule of Life ; <sup>Randal,</sup>  
 “ that Believers are as clean from Sin as Christ him- <sup>John</sup>  
 “ self ; that such have no occasion to pray for Par- <sup>Simpson.</sup>  
 “ don of Sin ; that God sees no Sin in his People,  
 “ nor does he ever chastise them for it.
9. “ That there is no Church nor Sacraments, nor <sup>p 17.</sup>  
 “ Sabbath ; the Opinions of the *Seekers*, now called <sup>Saltmarsh.</sup>  
 “ QUAKERS. <sup>Smoak in</sup>  
<sup>the Tem-</sup>  
<sup>ple.</sup>



King Charles I. 1647. *Tombes, Saltmarsh, Ham.* 10. " That the Children of Believers ought not to be baptized, nor Baptism continued among Christians; that the Meaning of the Third Commandment is, *Thou shalt not Forswear thy self.*

11. " That Persons of the next Kindred may Marry; and, that Indisposition, Unfitness, or Contrariety of Mind arising from natural Causes, are a just Reason of Divorce.

p. 20. Man's Mortality, by R. O. 12. " That the Soul of Man is mortal; that it sleeps with the Body; and, that there is neither Heaven nor Hell till the Day of Judgment.

*Bloody Tenet.* The last Error they witness against, and in which all agree, is called the "ERROR OF TOLERATION, patronizing and promoting all other Errors, Heresies and Blasphemies whatsoever, under the grossly abused Notion of LIBERTY OF CONSCIENCE;" and here they complain, as a very great Grievance, " That Men should have liberty to worship God in that Way and Manner as shall appear to them most agreeable to the Word of God; and no Man be punished or discountenanced by Authority for the same; and, that an enforced Uniformity of Religion throughout a Nation or State confounds the Civil and Religious, and denies the very Principles of Christianity and Civility."

They then bear their Testimony to the *Covenant*, and to the *Divine Right of Presbytery*. They lament the imperfect Settlement of their Discipline by the Parliament, and lay the Foundation of all their Calamities in the Countenancing of a publick and general Toleration, and conclude thus; " Upon all these Considerations, we the Ministers of Jesus Christ do hereby testify to our Flocks, to all the Kingdom, and to the Reformed World, our great Dislike of *Prelacy, Erastianism, Brownism, and Independency*; and our utter Abhorrency of *Antiscripturism, Popery, Arianism, Socinianism, Arminianism, Antinomianism, Anabaptism, Libertinism, and Familism*; and that we detest the fore-mentioned Toleration, so much pursued and endeavoured in

" this

“ this Kingdom, accounting it unlawful and pernicious.” What sad Work would these Divines have made if they had had the *Sword* of the Magistrate at their Disposal !

King  
Charles I.  
1647.

The principal Authors from whom these Errors were collected, are mentioned in the Margin ; Two of whom determined to vindicate the Citations out of their Books : Dr. *Hammond* published a Vindication of three Passages in his Practical Catechism from the Censures of the *London* Ministers ; in which he very justly complains of the hard Names with which the Ministers load the Opinions they reject, as *abominable* p. 4. *Errors, damnable Heresies, horrid Blasphemies, many of which are destructive of the Fundamentals of Christianity, and all of them repugnant to the holy Scriptures, the Scandal and Offence of the Reformed Churches abroad, and the unparallel'd Reproach of this Church and Nation ; and, in a Word, the Dregs and Spawn of those old cursed Heresies which have been already condemned.* The Doctor then recites his three Passages ; the First concerning *Universal Redemption* ; the Second concerning *Faith's being the Condition of our Justification* ; and the Third concerning the *Interpretation of the Third Commandment* ; and avers them all to be true, and agreeable to the Doctrine of the Church of *England*. In Conclusion the Doctor desires this Favour, that either the first Subscriber, Mr. *J. Downham*, who licensed his *Catechism* for the Press, or else Dr. *Gouge* or Mr. *Gataker*, who are foremost in the Second Rank, or some other Persons of Learning, Christianity, and Temper, would afford him their Patience, personally, and by fair Discourse, or any other Christian Way, to debate the Truth of these Assertions, for which he will wait their Leisure. Dated from *Oxford Jan. 24. 1648*. but no body thought fit to accept the Challenge.

Mr. *John Goodwin* was a learned Divine, and a quick Disputant, but of a peculiar Mould, being a Republican, an Independant, and a thorough *Armynian* ; he had been Vicar of *Coleman Street*, but was

And Mr.  
John  
Goodwin's.

King  
Charles I.  
1647.

ejected in the Year 1645. by the Committee for plunder'd Ministers, because he refused to baptize the Children of his Parishioners promiscuously, and to administer the Sacrament to his whole Parish. He had published several large and learned Books; as, *The Divine Authority of the Scriptures. Redemption redeemed. A Treatise of Justification.* And, *An Exposition on the Ninth Chapter to the Romans*; out of which the above-mentioned Exceptions were taken. This Divine taking it amiss to be marked for a Heretick challenged any of the London Clergy to a Disputation, as thinking it a very unrighteous Method to condemn Opinions before they had been confuted. Mr. *William Jenkins*, at that Time a warm and zealous Presbyterian, but afterwards soften'd into more Catholick Principles, enter'd the Lists with our Author, in a Pamphlet entitled, *The Busy Bishop.* To which the other replied, in a Book entitled, *The Novice Presbyterian instructed.* By some Passages in which one may discover the angry Spirit of the Times.

Mr. J.  
Goodwin's Reply to the Rev. Mr. Jenkins.

Mr. *Jenkins* had complained, that the orthodox Clergy had but short Commons, and were under the Cross, whereas the Sectaries met with the greatest Encouragement. To which Mr. *Goodwin* replies, " If by *orthodox Ministers* he means those of the adored Order of Presbytery, with what Face can he say they are under the Cross? Is not the whole *English* Element of Church Livings offered up by the State to their Service? Are not all the Benefices of the Kingdom appropriated to their Order? And all others thrust out of Doors to make room for them? Must they feed with *Hecatombs* every Day, or else complain of short Commons? Or, is Mr. *Jenkins* of *M. Crassus's* Mind, who would have no one accounted Rich unless he could maintain an Army with his Revenue? In what Sense can he affirm the *Presbyterian Clergy* to be under the Cross? Are they under the Cross who are scarce under the Crown? Who are carried by Authority upon  
" Eagles



“ Eagles Wings: Over whom the Parliament it  
 “ self rejoices to do good; heaping Ordinance upon  
 “ Ordinance to advance both them and their Livings  
 “ together. But certainly there is something that  
 “ Mr. *Jenkins* calls a *Cross* which few Men know by  
 “ that Name, but those who are baptized into the  
 “ Spirit of high Presbytery, for the *Cross* he speaks  
 “ of is no other than this, that *his orthodox Brethren*  
 “ *have not the Power to do all the Evil that is in their*  
 “ *Hearts against a quiet, peaceable, harmless Generation*  
 “ *of Men, of whom they are jealous, least they*  
 “ should take their Kingdom from them. How can  
 “ this Writer say, that the Independant Preachers  
 “ meet with Encouragement, and are under worldly  
 “ Glory? Does he account it Matter of worldly  
 “ Glory, to be discountenanced by the State, to be  
 “ declared incapable of those Favours and Privile-  
 “ ges which other Ministers in the Land enjoy; to  
 “ be sequester’d from their Livings, and to be thrust  
 “ into Holes and Corners; to be represented both to  
 “ the Magistrate and People, as Sectaries, Schisma-  
 “ ticks, Erroneous, Heretical, Factious, Trouble-  
 “ some, Dangerous to the State, and what not? If  
 “ this be worldly Glory, then may the Preachers,  
 “ against whom Mr. *Jenkins* writes, be truly said to  
 “ be under worldly Glory.” Old Mr. *Vicars*, and  
 some others, carried on the Controversy, but their  
 Writings are not worth remembring; especially since  
 the *English* Presbyterians of the present Age have  
 openly renounced and disavowed their Principles.

To return to more publick Affairs; hitherto the *Views of*  
 Army had acted in perfect Subordination to the *the diffe-*  
 Parliament, but the War being over, and the King *rent Par-*  
 a Prisoner, the great Difficulty was to settle the Na- *ties con-*  
 tion upon such a Foot as might content the several *cerned in*  
 Parties, or bring them at least to acquiesce; this was  
 the Rock upon which they split, and which, in the  
 End, proved the Ruin of their Cause. To give  
 Light

*King* Light to this Affair it will be proper to consider the  
*Charles I.* separate Views of the King, the Parliament, and the  
 1647. Army.

*Of the*  
*King.*

The Royal Party being broken, and the King a Prisoner, his Majesty had no Prospect of recovering his Throne but by dividing his Enemies, or making the best Terms with them he could; the *Presbyterians* being in League with the *Scots* Nation were most numerous and powerful; but that which render'd their Agreement with the King impracticable, was his Majesty's Belief, that *Episcopal Government was essential to Christianity*, and that he was bound by his *Coronation Oath* to maintain it; whereas the others held themselves equally bound by their *Solemn League and Covenant* to abolish Episcopacy, and establish Presbytery in its room. Both Parties were immovable, and upon this Rock they split. His Majesty's Agreement with the *Army* was more open and practicable, because they would have set aside the *Covenant*, and obliged the Parliament to tolerate Episcopal Government as well as the *Sectaries*; but the King could never forgive those Officers who had destroyed his Armies, and beat him out of the Field; Though he dreaded their military Valour he had a very mean Opinion of their Politicks, and therefore affected to play them against the Parliament, hoping to take Advantage of their Divisions, and establish himself upon the Ruins of both; for it was his Majesty's Maxim, which he did not scruple to avow, that *neither Party could subsist without him, and that those must be ruined whom he abandoned*. By which unhappy Conduct he lost his Interest, both in the Parliament and Army, and (as Bishop Kennet observes) laid the Foundation of his Ruin.

*Of the Par-*  
*liament*  
*and Pres-*  
*byterians.*

The *Presbyterians* were no less Unhappy, for the Majority of the House of Commons, with the City of *London*, and the whole *Scots* Nation, being firmly in their Interest, they imagined nothing could stand before them, and therefore would abate nothing of  
 their

their Demands, nor hearken to any other Terms of Accommodation with the King, than those of the *Covenant*, which were *the entire Abolishing of Prelacy, and the establishing Presbyterian Uniformity throughout both Kingdoms, with an absolute Extirpation of all Sectaries whatsoever.* This embarrassed them not only with the King (as has been observed) but awakened the Jealousy of the Army, who were thoroughly convinced, that when the *Presbyterians* were in the legal Possession of their Demands, they would exercise equal Tyranny over the Consciences of Men with the Bishops; and indeed, nothing less was to be expected, considering their steady Adherence to the *Covenant* in all their Treaties with the King; their Efforts in Parliament to get the *Power of the Keys* into their Hands, their frequent Addresses for the Suppressing all Sectaries by the Civil Authority, and their Declamations both from the Pulpit and Press, against Toleration and Liberty of Conscience. In all their Treaties with the King, even to that in the *Isle of Wight* (except when the Army was in Possession of the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*) this was one Article of Peace, *That an effectual Course be taken by Act of Parliament, and all other Ways needful or expedient for Suppressing the Opinions of the Independants, and all other Sectaries.* To which his Majesty had agreed in his private Treaty with the *Scots* in the *Isle of Wight*, sign'd December 27. so that the Army was left to shift for it self.

Though there were some few Presbyterians in the Army, the greatest Part consisted of *Independants*, *Anabaptists*, and Men of *unsettled Principles* in Religion, who for want of regular Chaplains to their Regiments, had used their own Talents among themselves in religious Exercises. The *Scots Treaty* of the *Isle of Wight* says the Army was made up of *Anti-Trinitarians, Arians, Socinians, Anti-Scripturists, Anabaptists, Antinomians, Arminians, Familists, Brownists, Separatists, Independants, Libertines, Seekers, &c.*

But

King  
Charles I.  
1647.



King  
Charles I.  
1647.

But Mr. *Rapin*, contrary to the Testimony of all other Writers, calls them all *Independants*, and represents the Controversy between the Parliament and them as a Dispute, *Whether Presbytery or Independency should be uppermost*; whereas the grand Controversy was, *Presbytery with a Toleration or without one*. The Army consented, that Presbytery should be the National Religion, but insisted upon a *Toleration of all Christians* in the Enjoyment of all their Civil and Religious Rights. This (says Lord *Clarendon*) was their *great Charter*, and till they had obtain'd it by a legal Settlement they agreed not to lay down their Arms: They had fought the Parliament's Battles, and therefore thought it unreasonable to be told openly, if they would not comply with the Presbyterian Settlement they must expect to be punished as *Sectaries*, and driven out of the Land. To avoid this they treated separately with the King, both before and after they had him in their Hands; and when they apprehended he did not deal sincerely with them, they made Proposals to the Parliament to establish the Presbyterian Discipline with a Toleration to all Protestants without him; but when they found the Presbyterians, even in their last Treaty with the King, in the Year 1648. insisting upon Presbyterian Uniformity, without making the least Provision for that Liberty of Conscience they had been contending for, they grew Outragious; they seized his Majesty's Person a second Time, and having purged the House of Commons, in an arbitrary Manner, of all that were not in their own desperate Measures, they blew up the whole Constitution, and buried both King and Parliament, and Presbytery, in its Ruins. This was not in their original View, nor the Result of any peculiar Set of Religious Principles (as *Rapin* insinuates) but was driven on by a Series of Disappointments, on the Part of the Army; and a Train of unhappy and unforeseen Events, arising from the mistaken Conduct of the Loyalists and Presbyterians.

We

We left the King the Beginning of the Spring at his House at *Holmby*, where he continued under an easy Restraint from the 16th of *Feb.* to the 4th of *June* following. The War being over the Houses attempted to get rid of the Army, by offering Six Months Pay, and Six Weeks Advance, to as many as would go over to *Ireland*; and by voting, that the Remainder should be disbanded, with an Act of Indemnity for all Hostilities committed by them, in pursuance of the Powers given them by Parliament; but the Army being apprehensive that the Presbyterians would make Peace with the King, upon the Foot of *Covenant Uniformity*, and without a *Toleration*, resolved to secure this Point in the first Place, for which Purpose they chose a *Council of Officers*; and a *Committee of Agitators*, consisting of two inferior Officers out of each Regiment, to manage their Affairs; these met in distinct Bodies, like the two Houses of Parliament, and came to the following Resolutions, which they sent to *Westminster* by Three of their Number, who delivered them in at the Bar of the House, “ That they would not disband without their Arrears, nor without full Provision for *Liberty of Conscience*. “ That they did not look upon themselves as a Band of *Janizaries*, but as *Voluntiers*, that had been fighting for the Liberties of the Nation, of which they were a Part, and that they were resolved to see those Ends secured.” It was moved in the House, that the Messengers might be committed to the *Tower*, but after a long Debate they were dismissed only with a Reprimand for meddling in Affairs of Government, and for presuming to offer a Petition to Parliament without their *General*. Upon this the Officers sent their Petition by the General himself, but the Parliament, instead of taking it into Consideration, order’d *May 21.* that all who would not list for the *Irish Service* should be immediately paid off and disbanded; upon which the Officers seeing the Snare that was laid for them, bound themselves and the Army, by

King  
Charles I.  
1647.  
Controversy  
between  
the Parl.  
and Army.

Council of  
Officers  
and Agi-  
tators.  
Rushw.  
Vol. VI.  
p. 485,  
498.  
Rapin,  
p. 366.

King  
Charles I.  
1647.

an Engagement May 29. not to disband till the Grievances above-mentioned were redressed. Whereupon the Houses ordered Lieutenant General *Cromwell*, who was then in Town, and suspected to be at the Head of these Counsels, to be seized; but being advertised of the Design, he made his Escape to the Army. They then voted the Petition seditious, and all those Traytors who had promoted it; and having sent a Message to the *General*, to remove the Army further from *London*, they raised the City Trained Bands, and determined to put an End to the Power of the Army by the speedy Conclusion of a Peace with the King.

King's Answer to the Propositions at Newcastle.

His Majesty's Answer to their Propositions at *Newcastle* were read in the House, May 18. in which  
 “ he agrees to settle the Presbyterian Government  
 “ for Three Years — to ratify the Assembly of Divines at *Westminster*, proposing a few of his own  
 “ Clergy to consider what Government to settle afterwards — He yields the Militia for ten Years  
 “ — Desires Ministers of his own to satisfy him  
 “ about the *Covenant* — Consents to the Act against  
 “ Papists — And to an Act of Oblivion — And  
 “ desires to come to *London*, in order to give the  
 “ Parliament Satisfaction upon the other Articles.”  
 Two Days after the Lords voted, that the King be removed to his House at *Oatlands*, and that it be immediately fitted for his Reception.

The King seized and carried to the Army.  
 Rushw.  
 p. 545,  
 549.  
 Rapin,  
 p. 371.

Things being come to this Crisis, the *Agitators* considered, that the KING being the Prize contended for, whoever had him in their Power must be Masters of the Peace, and make their own Terms; they therefore resolved, by the Advice and Direction of Lieutenant General *Cromwell*, to get Possession of his Majesty's Person, which they accomplished by a bold Stratagem, in the Night of *June 4.* with very little Opposition from his Attendance or Guards; *Cornet Joyce*, at the Head of Fifty resolute Horse, having secured the Avenues to *Holmby House*, enter'd with Two or Three of his Company, and going to the



King's Chamber, acquainted him with his Design, of carrying him to the Army at *New-Market*; his Majesty being surprized at so unexpected a Visit, and so late at Night, asked for his Commission, who pointed to his Troops drawn up before the Gates; his Majesty answer'd, *It was very legible*; and finding it in vain to resist, consented to go with the *Cornet* next Morning, on promise of Safety to his Person, and that he should not be forced to any Thing against his Conscience; the chief Officers of the Army met his Majesty at *Childerly*, Four Miles from *Cambridge*, and were admitted to Kiss his Hand; from thence he was removed to *New-Market*, where he took the *Diversion* of the *Heath*, had the Liberty of Four of his own Chaplains to wait upon him, and was attended with all due Ceremony and Respect; *Cromwell* being heard to say among his Friends, that *now he had got the King into his Hands he had the Parliament in his Pocket*.

King  
Charles I.  
1647.

The two Houses received the News of the King's *which* being carried off to the Army with the utmost Sur-*strikes the* prize and Astonishment; the whole City was in Con-*two Houses* fusion, and all Persons within the Lines of Commu-*with sur-* nication ordered to Arms; the *Lobby* at *Westminster* was throng'd with the Disbanded Officers of the Earl of *Essex's* Army offering their Service to the Parliament; for every one imagined the Army would be at the Gates of the City in a few Hours; when their Fright was a little abated, Commissioners were sent to *Rushw.* the *General*, not to advance within Forty Miles of *p. 546,* *London*, but being already at *St. Alban's*, the Gene-*561, 589,* ral promised not to march his Army nearer without *&c.* due Notice; and assured the two Houses, that *they* would not oppose the *Presbyterial* Government, nor set up the *Independant*; but only insisted, that some effectua-*Rapin,* al Course might be taken, that such who, upon con-*p. 375,* scientious Grounds, differ'd from the Establishment, *379.* might not be debarr'd from the common Rights, Liberties, or Benefits belonging equally to all, while they lived soberly and inoffensively towards others, and

King and peaceably and faithfully towards the State.  
 Charles I. June 10. another Letter was sent to the Lord Mayor,  
 1647. Aldermen, and Common Council, of *London*, signed  
 by *Fairfax*, *Cromwell*, and Twelve other Officers,  
 Rushw. assuring them, " they intended no Alteration of the  
 P. 554. " Civil Government; *nor to interrupt the Settlement of*  
 " *Presbytery*; nor to introduce a licentious Liberty,  
 " under colour of obtaining Ease for tender Conscien-  
 " ces, but that when the State had made a Settle-  
 " ment they would submit or suffer. They wished  
 " that every peaceable Subject might have Liber-  
 " ty and Encouragement, for the obtaining which  
 " (say they) we are drawing near the City — We  
 " seek the Good of all, and shall wait for a Time to  
 " see if these Things may be settled without us, and  
 " then we will embark for *Ireland* —"

Declarati- The Commons took no Notice of these Remon-  
 on of the strances, but declared in Print, *That his Majesty was a*  
 Army. *Prisoner, and barbarously used*, because their Commis-  
 Rushw. sioners could have no Access to him, but in Presence  
 P. 589, of some Officers; but the Army replied, " That all  
 590: " Suggestions of that Nature were absolutely false,  
 " and contrary to their Principles, which are most  
 " clearly for a *general Right, and just Freedom to all*  
 " *Men*, and therefore upon this Occasion they de-  
 " clare to the World, that they desire the same for  
 " the King, and others of his Party, so far as can  
 " consist with common Right and Freedom, and with  
 " the Security of the same for the future. And we do  
 " *clearly profess* (say they) *that we do not see how there can*  
 " *be any Peace to this Kingdom firm or lasting, without*  
 " *a due Provision for the Rights, Quiet, and Immunity*  
 " *of his Majesty, his Royal Family, and his late Parta-*  
 " *kers*; and herein we think, that tender and equita-  
 " ble Dealing (as supposing their Cases had been  
 " ours) and a Spirit of common Love and Justice  
 " diffusing it self to the Good and Preservation of  
 " All, will make the most glorious Conquest over  
 " their

“ their Hearts, to make them, and the whole People  
“ of the Land, lasting Friends.” King  
Charles I.  
1647.

The leading Members of the Presbyterian Party in the House of Commons could not contain themselves within any reasonable Bounds, at these Proceedings; they said it was insufferable for the Parliament, instead of treating with the King, to be obliged to treat with their own Servants, and therefore advised the Raising a new Army, and opposing Force with Force, till those who had the King in their Custody should submit to their Superiors, and deliver him back. On the other hand, the Officers and Agitators resolved to get rid of these resolute Gentlemen, and therefore impeached Eleven of the Members of High-Treason, the Pres-  
byterians  
in Parlia-  
ment re-  
solve to op-  
pose the  
Army.  
Eleven of  
their  
Members  
impeached.  
Rushw.  
p. 570.  
372.  
Rapin,  
p. 380. June 16. for obstructing the Business of Ireland; for acting against the Army, and against the Laws and Liberties of the Subject, &c. and desired they might be suspended from the House till they were legally acquitted: Their Names were *Denzil Hollis, Esq; Sir Phil. Stapleton, Sir William Lewis, Sir John Clotworthy, Sir William Waller, Sir John Maynard, Major General Massy, Mr. Glyn Recorder, Colonel Walter Long, Colonel Edward Harley, Antony Nichols, Esq;* but the Commons not only rejected their Impeachment, but ordered the King to be brought to *Richmond*, and that Four full Companies of the Militia should guard the Two Houses. This quicken'd the Resentments of the Army, who sent them the following Proposals, among others, June 23. “ — That the King's coming to *Richmond* be suspended; — that no Place be appointed for his Residence nearer *London* than the Parliament will allow the Quarters of the Army; — that the impeached Members be sequester'd the House; — that the Multitude of Soldiers that flock together about the City be dispersed, and that no new Forces be raised, nor any Preparations made for a new War.” If these Particulars are not complied with in a Week's Time, they declare they will march to *London* and do themselves Justice. The

VOL. III.                      D d                      Houses



King  
Charles I.  
1647.

Whitl.  
p. 264.  
Rapin,  
p. 385,  
388.

Commoti-  
ons in the  
City.

Ibid.  
p. 386.

Rushw.  
p. 637.  
Rapin,  
p. 392.

Houses being terrified with the Approach of the Army agreed to content them for the present, in order to gain Time; and the impeached Members having desired Leave to withdraw, retired first into the City and after some Time left the Kingdom. The other Requests of the Army were also complied with; upon which, after returning Thanks to the Houses, they retreated to *Wickham*, and appointed Commissioners to settle all remaining Differences with the Parliament.

But the City of *London*, by the Influence of the impeached Members, kindled into a Flame, for the Parliament, by an Ordinance of *May 4.* having put the Nomination of the Officers of the Militia into the Hands of the Common Council; *These* had discharged the *old Ones*, and put in such as they could confide in for opposing the Army, and establishing Uniformity according to the *Covenant*; the *Officers* in order to defeat their Design insisted, that the Ordinance of *May 4.* be repealed, and the Militia put into the Hands of those who had conducted it during the Course of the late War. The Houses, with much Reluctancy, consented to the Repeal *July 23.* which alarm'd the Citizens, and occasioned those Tumults which brought upon them the very Mischiefs they were afraid of. *Denzil Hollis*, with the other impeach'd Members who were retir'd into the City, prevailed with the Common Council to oppose the Repeal, and petition the House, that the Ordinance of *May 4.* might remain in full Force. At the same Time some Citizens met at *Skinners Hall*, and subscribed a solemn *Engagement*, to endeavour with the Hazard of their Lives to procure "a personal Treaty with the King; — that he might return to his two Houses with Honour and Safety; — that his Majesty's Concessions of *May 11.* might be confirmed, and the Militia continue in the Hands of the present Committee." But how vain was all this Bustle, when they knew the King was in the Custody

study of those who would pay no Regard to their Demands. The Houses, indeed, forbid the Signing of the *Engagement* by sound of Trumpet, but such was the misguided Zeal of the Citizens, that they held Assemblies, listed Soldiers, and gave them Orders to be ready on the first Notice.

The Parliament was now in great Perplexity, considering the Impossibility of contenting the Presbyterians and the Army at the same Time; but the Citizens were resolved to carry their Point by one Method or another, and accordingly went up to *Westminster*, July 26. with such a Number of Apprentices and young Men as terrified the Houses by their tumultuous and insolent Behaviour, for they would scarce suffer the Door to be shut; some thrust themselves into the House with their Hats on, crying out, *Vote, Vote*; and when the *Speaker* would have left the Chair to put an End to the Confusion, they obliged him to return, till the *Militia* was settled to their Mind, and the King voted to come to *London*. This (says Mr. *Baxter*) looked like a Force upon the Parliament; and, indeed, both Houses were so terrified and pressed between the City Presbyterians on one side, and the Army on the other, that they adjourned immediately from *Monday* to *Friday*, in which Interval the Earl of *Manchester*, Speaker of the House of Lords, with Eight Peers; and the Speaker of the House of Commons, with about a Hundred Members, withdrew privately from the City, and joined the Army; a surprizing Event in their Favour! the Officers received them with the utmost Satisfaction and Transport, paying them all imaginable Honours, and assuring them, that they would re-establish them in their full Power, or die in the Attempt. There must surely have been some very pressing Reasons for this Conduct, otherwise so many zealous Presbyterians, as were most of the Members that quitted the Parliament House, would not have had Recourse to the Protection of the Army. Lord *Clarendon* believes,

King  
Charles I.  
1647.

Tumults in  
the Parl.  
House.  
Rushw.  
p. 642.  
Rapi,  
p. 404.

Which occasions several of the Members to retire to the Army.

<sup>King</sup>  
Charles I.  
1647.  
~~~~~  
that they apprehended the Army designed to restore the King to all his Rights at this Time, and that they were willing to avoid his Majesty's Vengeance, by concurring with them in his Restoration, which is not unlikely, if they could have brought him to their Terms.

*Proceedings
of the Re-
mainder.*

Rapin,
p. 395,
400.
Rushw.
p. 737.

However, the Presbyterian Members that remained in *London* assembled on *Friday* according to Adjournment, and having chose a new Speaker, voted, — the King should come to *London*; — that the Eleven impeached Members should be restored; — that a Committee of Safety should join the City Militia; — and that Forces should be immediately raised under the Command of *Waller*, *Massej*, and *Poyntz*; in all which they appeared so resolute, that no Man could imagine but that they had the King at their Disposal, or at least intended a brave and valiant Defence of the City. The Common Council gave Orders for the Trained Bands to repair to the Works, and for all capable of bearing Arms to appear at the Places of Rendezvous. *Massej*, *Waller*, and *Poyntz*, were also busy in forming Regiments and Companies; and the Committee of the Militia were empowered to punish such as did not repair to their Colours. At the same Time they writ to their Brethren in *Scotland*, to return with their Army immediately to their Assistance; but, alas! they were at too great a Distance; however, they published a Declaration in the Name of the Kirk and whole Kingdom, *Aug. 13.* wherein they engage, by a solemn Oath, to establish the Presbyterian Government in *England*; — to redeem his Majesty out of the Hands of Schismaticks, and place him at the Head of his Parliament with Honour; — to vindicate the Honour of the Eleven impeached Members, and to settle the Privileges of Parliament against the over awing Power of the Army. A little after they declared against *Toleration* and *Liberty of Conscience*, resolving to the last Man to stand

stand by the *Covenant* whatever the *English* Parliament might submit to.

King
Charles I.

1647.

According to the Order of the Two Houses, the General had removed his Head Quarters above Forty Miles from the City, but upon the Representation of the Members who fled to them for Protection from the outrageous Violence of the City Mob, they resolved to push their Advantage, and bring the Mutineers to Justice; accordingly they resolved to march to *London*, and rendezvous'd the whole Army on *Hounslow Heath*, *August 3.* to the Number of twenty Thousand Men, with a suitable Train of Artillery, accompanied with Fourteen Peers, and about one Hundred Members of the House of Commons. The Citizens were no sooner informed of this but their Courage sunk all at once, and instead of defending the City, they ordered the Militia to retire from the Lines, and sent their Submission to the *General*, promising to open their Passes, and give all Assistance to the replacing of those Members that had withdrawn to the Army. *Aug. 6.* being appointed for this Service the Mayor and Aldermen met the General at *Hide Park* with a Present of a Gold Cup, beseeching him to excuse what had been amiss; but his *Excellency* refused the *Present*, and having dismissed them with very little Ceremony, conducted the Members to their Seats in Parliament, who immediately voted all Proceedings in their Absence void, and gave Thanks to the Army for their Safe-Conduct. Next Day the Army marched through the City without any Disorder, and constituted Colonel *Titchburn* Lieutenant of the *Tower*, contrary to the Request of the Lord Mayor and Citizens; the Militia was changed, and put into the Hands of the old Officers who had conducted it before; the Fortifications and Lines of Circumvallation about the City were levell'd, and sundry Peers who had been at the Head of the late Tumults, were impeached of High-Treason, as the Earl of *Suffolk*,

Army re-
solve to
march to
London.
Rushw.
p. 745,
750.

City sub-
mits.
Rushw.
p. 751,
756.

King Charles I. 1647. *Middlesex, Lincoln, Lord Willoughby of Parham, Hundson, &c.* the Lord Mayor, and some of the principal Citizens, were sent to the *Tower*; and it was resolved to purge the House of all that had been active in the late unhappy Riot; which put a full Period to the Presbyterian Power for the present; the Army being quarter'd near the City all the next Winter, there was a Council of Officers at their head Quarters at *Putney*; whose Debates and Resolutions had, no doubt, a very powerful Influence upon the Resolutions of the two Houses.

Presbyterian Ministers Vindication of themselves. The Odium of this grand Revolution, by which the Army became Masters of the City of *London*, and of the Parliament it self, fell chiefly on the *Presbyterians* themselves, whose intemperate Zeal for *Covenant* Uniformity carried them to very impolitick Excesses: The Sermons of their Ministers were filled with Invectives against the Army while at a Distance. In their publick Prayers they entreated the *Almighty* to incline the Hearts of the *Scots* to return to their Relief; and the Conversation of their People was riotous and disorderly; but least the Weight of this Revolution should fall too heavily on the *London* Ministers, as the chief Incendiaries of the People, they wisely prepared a Vindication of themselves, and published it Four Days before the Army enter'd the City; it was dated from *Sion College, August 2. 1647.* and is to this Purpose;

“ WE the Ministers of *London*, whose Names
“ are subscribed, do profess in the Presence
“ of the Searcher of all Hearts,

1. “ That we have never done any Thing purposely and wittingly to engage the City against the
“ Army, or the Army against the City, but have
“ sincerely and faithfully endeavoured to prevent it.

2. “ That seeing both the Parliament and City
“ have declared the Necessity of putting the City
“ into a present Posture of Defence, yet protesting
“ against

“ against any Desires of a new War, and thereupon
 “ have called upon us to stir up the People to pre-
 “ pare for their Defence ; we accordingly have done,
 “ and shall do our Duty therein, that the People
 “ may be encouraged to their own just and necessary
 “ Preservation.

King
 Charles I.
 1647.

3. “ But withal, we profess our Abhorrence of the
 “ shedding any Blood on either Side ; and we humbly
 “ pray all whom it may concern, that they will be very
 “ careful in preventing it by a seasonable Treaty.”

Signed by about Twenty of the *London* Ministers,
 and presented to a Committee of both Houses, sit-
 ing at *Guild-hall*.

Let the Reader now pause a little, and judge of
 the Authors of this grand Revolution, which brought
 the Parliament under the Power of the Army, and how
 far the Presbyterian Ministers were concern'd in it.
 Mr. *Baxter* in a very angry Stile lays all the Blame
 at the Door of the *Independants*. “ A few dissenting
 “ Members of the *Westminster* Synod (says he) be-
 “ gan all this, and carried it far on. Afterwards
 “ they encreased, and others joined them, who part-
 “ ly by Stiffness, and partly by Policy, encreased
 “ our Flames, and kept open our Wounds, as if there
 “ had been none but they considerable in the World,
 “ and having an Army and *City Agents* fit to second
 “ them, effectually hinder'd all Remedy, till they
 “ had dash'd all into Pieces as a broken Glass. One
 “ would have thought, that if all their Opinions had
 “ been certainly true, and their Church-Order good,
 “ yet the Interest of Christ and the Souls of Men,
 “ and of greater Truths, should have been so re-
 “ garded by the Dividers in *England*, as that the Safe-
 “ ty of all these should have been preferr'd, and not
 “ all ruined, rather than their Way should want its
 “ carnal Arm and *Liberty* ; and that they should not
 “ tear the Government of Christ all to Pieces rather
 “ than it should want their *Lace*.” I am far from

Remarks.
 Mr. Baxter's Opin-
 ion.
 Abridg.
 p. 97.

King Charles I. clearing the *Independants* from all manner of Blame in their Conduct; their Principles might be too narrow and mistaken in some Points, and their Zeal for Christian Liberty betray them into some Imprudencies. But on which Side was the Stiffness? On theirs who only desired a peaceable Toleration; Or on theirs who were determined to make the whole Nation stoop to Presbyterian Uniformity? Were not these the Men that kept open the Churches Wounds? Had their Discipline been never so good, yet certainly they might have had some Regard to Men of equal Piety and Virtue, that could not see with their Eyes; could they not be content with being the Established Religion, and having most of the Livings of the Kingdom divided among them, but they must subvert the religious Rights of Mankind, by enforcing an absolute Uniformity, which can never be maintained but upon the Ruins of a good Conscience, nor promote the true Interest of Christ and Salvation of Souls? Mr. *Baxter* had milder Sentiments in his latter Days; and 'tis for the Honour of the present Generation of those commonly called *Presbyterians*, that they have not only abandoned, and renounced these servile Doctrines, but have appeared in Defence of the Civil and Religious Liberties of Mankind upon the most solid and generous Principles.

*the King's
Motions
with the
Army.*

His Majesty was obliged all this Time to attend the Removes of the Army; from *New-Market* he came to *Royston*, June 24. from thence to *Hatfield*; from thence to *Windsor*, and Two Days after to *Caversham*, where he had the Pleasure of conversing with his Children. But when the City of *London* threaten'd a new War his Majesty was removed to a greater Distance; about the Middle of *July* he was at *Maidenhead*; and towards the End of the Month at *Latimer's* in *Buckinghamshire*; when the Army had got Possession of the City they brought his Majesty back to *Oatland's*, Aug. 14. and Two Days after to *Hampton-Court*, where he continued in State and Lustre for about

about Three Months, being attended by the proper Officers of the Court, and a vast Resort of People both from City and Country.

King Charles I.
1647.

While the King was with the Army, Lieutenant-General *Cromwell* and *Ireton* took sundry Opportunities to confer with his Majesty privately about his Restoration. They offer'd to set him upon the Throne with the Freedom of his Conscience in point of Episcopacy, or lose their Lives in the Attempt, if he would consent to their Proposals to the Parliament, and bestow some particular Preferments on themselves, and a few of their Friends, wishing that God would deal with them and their Families according to their Sincerity. Nay they engaged to indemnify his whole Party if they would be quiet. Sir *J. Berkley*, the King's Agent, entreated his Majesty in the most earnest and submissive Manner, to accept the said Proposal, considering the State of his Affairs, but the King treated them with a distant Reserve, and said, if they intended an Accommodation they would not impose such Conditions upon him. Sir *J. Berkley* said, He should suspect they designed to abuse him if they had demanded less; and that a Crown so near lost was never recovered upon more easy Terms. But Mr. *Asburnham*, who came with Instructions from *France*, fell in with the King's Humour, and encouraged him to stand his Ground, relying upon an ill judged Maxim which his Majesty had received, and which his best Friends could not make him depart from (*viz.*) that it was in his Power to turn the Scale, and that the Party must sink which he abandoned. This was his Ruin, and made him play between both, till neither would trust him. When the Parliament brought their Propositions he put them in mind of the Offers of the Army; and when these came with their Proposals in the most respectful Manner he put on a Frown and said, "I shall see you glad, e'er long, to accept more equal Terms; you cannot be without me; you will fall to Ruin if I do not sustain you; no Man shall suffer

L.G. Crom-

well and

Ireton's

Conf. with the King.

Dugdale's

Troubles of England.

P. 264.

His Maje-

sty's mi-

staken Con-

duct.

Rushw.

p. 807,

810.

Hist.

Stuarts,

P. 330.

"fer

King Charles I. 1647. *Which proves his Ruin.* "fer for my sake; the Church must be established according to Law —" The Officers were founded at this Language. Sir (says Sir J. Berkley) you speak as if you had some secret Strength, which since you have concealed from me, I wish you had concealed from these Men. After divers Conferences of this kind to no purpose, *Cromwell* told him plainly, Sir, *We perceive you have a Design to be Arbitrator between the Parliament and us; but we now design to be the same between your Majesty and the Parliament.* This fluctuating Temper (says Bishop Kennet) was the King's Ruin, which he repented of when it was too late. Mr. Whitlock says, the King's Bishops perswaded him against what he was enclined to in his own Judgment, and thereby ruined him and themselves.

Reasons of the Army's deserting the King. When the Officers found they could make no Impressions on the King, and had discovered his secret Correspondence with the Queen, they withdrew from Court, which raised Suspicions in his Majesty's Mind of some secret Design upon his Life, and put him on attempting to escape out of their Hands. 'Tis very certain that *Cromwell* withdrew his Parole of Honour for the King's Safety, and sent him Word a few Days before he left *Hampton Court*, that he would not be answerable any longer for any Thing that might befall him, which was owing to a Discovery he had made of the King's Insincerity in treating with him.

Detect. Mr. Coke says, There was a Report at that Time, *P. 323.* and he is confident, that in Time it will appear, that in the Army's Treaty with the King, *Cromwell* had made a private Article of Advantage for himself, but the King not allowing himself to conclude any Thing without the Queen, writ her Word, "That if he consented to those Proposals it would be easier to take off *Cromwell* afterwards than now he was at the Head of the Army." Which Letter *Cromwell* intercepted. Bishop Kennet says, "That it was reported, that *Cromwell* was to have ten Thousand Pounds and a Garter; and that the Bargain had

Compl. Hist. "cer-
P. 270.

“ certainly taken Effect, if the King had not made
 “ an Apology to the Queen, and sufficiently implied, ^{King}
 “ that he did it by Constraint, and that when he was ^{Charles I.}
 “ at Liberty, and in Power, he should think himself ^{1647.}
 “ discharged from the Obligation. This Letter was
 “ sewed up in the Skirt of a Saddle to be sent to
 “ *France* ; but *Cromwell* and *Ireton* having Informa-
 “ tion of it went to an Inn in *Holborn* and seized the
 “ Letter.—” Dr. *Lane*, of the Commons, frequently
 declared, “ That he had seen this original Letter ;
 “ that he knew it to be the King’s own Hand, and
 “ that the Contents were as above.” Another Wri- ^{Hist.}
 ter says, that the Letter mentioned his Majesty’s being ^{Stuarts,}
 courted by the *Scots* Presbyterians as well as the Ar- ^{p. 390.}
 my, and that they that bid fairest for him should
 have him. Upon the Discovery of this Letter *Crom-*
well went to Mr. *Ashburnham*, who attended the
 King’s Person, and told him, that *he was now satis-*
fied the King could not be trusted ; that he had no Confi-
dence in the Army, but was jealous of them and their Of-
ficers — that he had Treaties with the City Presbyterians,
and with the Scots Commissioners, to engage the Nation
again in Blood, and that therefore he could not be answer-
able if any Thing fell out contrary to Expectation. Sir
Richard Baker, Mr. *Coke*, and others, are of Opinion,
 that till this Time *Cromwell* and *Ireton* were hearty
 and zealous for establishing the King, and opposing
 the Levellers which began to arise in the Army, but
 that after this Discovery they forsook him, as did the
 rest of the chief Officers, who seldom came to Court :
 The *Guards* also changed their Language, and said, that
 God had harden’d the King’s Heart, and blinded his Eyes.

Under these Circumstances the unhappy King ^{King}
 left *Hampton Court*, Nov. 11. at Night, and having ^{escapes}
 crossed the *Thames*, took Horse in Company with Sir ^{from}
J. Berkeley, Mr. *Leg*, and Mr. *Ashburnham*, and next ^{Hampton}
 Morning arrived at *Titchfield House*, where he stay’d ^{Court.}
 while *Leg* went over to the *Isle of Wight*, to treat with ^{Rushw.}
 Colonel *Hammond*, the Governor, about the Safety ^{p. 920,}
 of ^{960.}

King of his Person, who, without any Treaty, brought Charles I. the Governor to the House where his Majesty was, upon which the unhappy King said, *He was betray'd*; 1647. as indeed he was in all his Affairs. *Hammond* carried And is confined in the Isle of Wight. him over to the *Isle Nov. 13.* and after some Time shut him up in *Carisbrook Castle*, where his Majesty remained almost a Year with but one or two Servants, having little or no Conversation with the World, nor any Thing to do, but to contemplate on the Uncertainty of all human Affairs, and on the miserable Circumstances that Divine Providence, and his own imprudent Conduct had reduced him to.

Proposals
of the Ar-
my.

Rushw.
p 736.
Rapin,
p 416,
418.

Let us now attend to the Proposals of the several Parties for settling the Peace of the Nation : As soon as the Army had got Possession of the City of *London*, they made the following Proposals to the two Houses. With regard to Religion, “ That an Act be passed “ to take away all coercive Power and Jurisdiction of “ Bishops extending to any Civil Penalties upon any. “ — That there be a Repeal of all Acts, or Clau- “ ses of Acts, enjoining the Use of the Common “ Prayer, and imposing any Penalty for neglect “ thereof, and for not coming to Church, or for “ meeting elsewhere. — That the taking of the “ Covenant be not enforced upon any, but that all “ Orders and Ordinances tending to that Purpose be “ repealed.” With regard to the State, “ — That “ the Militia and great Offices be disposed of by Par- “ liament for ten Years, and after that the Houses “ to nominate Three, out of which the King to “ choose One. — That there be Acts of Indemnity “ and Revocation of all Declarations against the “ Proceedings of Parliament. — That the present “ unequal, and troublesome, and contentious Way “ of Ministers Maintenance by *Tithes* be consider’d “ of, and some Remedy applied. — That none “ may be obliged to accuse themselves or Relations “ in criminal Causes ; and no Man’s Life taken away “ under two Witnesses. — That Consideration be “ had

“ had of all Statutes, Laws, or Customs of Corpo-
 “ rations, imposing any Oaths tending to molest or
 “ ensnare religious and peaceable People meerly for
 “ Non-Conformity in Religion. — That the arbi-
 “ trary Power given to Committees, and Deputy-
 “ Lieutenants, be recalled.”

King
 Charles I.
 1647.

After several Debates upon these *Proposals* with re-
 gard to Religion, the Lords agreed, Oct. 13. “ that
 “ the King be desired to give his Consent to the set-
 “ tling the Presbyterian Government for Three Years,
 “ with a Provision, that no Person shall be liable to
 “ any Penalty for Non-Conformity to the said Go-
 “ vernment, or Form of Divine Service ; but such
 “ Persons shall have liberty to meet for the Service
 “ and Worship of God, and for Exercise of Religi-
 “ ous Duties and Ordinances in any fit and conveni-
 “ ent Places, so as nothing be done by them to the
 “ Disturbance of the Peace of the Kingdom. Provi-
 “ ded this shall not be construed to extend to a Tole-
 “ ration of the Popish Religion, nor to exempt Po-
 “ pish Recusants from any Penalties imposed upon
 “ them for the Exercise of the same. Nor shall it
 “ extend to the Toleration of any Thing contrary to
 “ the Principles of the Christian Religion, contained
 “ in the *Apostles Creed*, as it is expounded in the Fif-
 “ teen first Articles of the Church of *England*, as
 “ they have been cleared and vindicated by the As-
 “ sembly of Divines now sitting at *Westminster* ; nor
 “ of any Thing contrary to such Points of Faith, for
 “ the Ignorance whereof Men are to be kept from
 “ the Sacrament, according to the Ordinance of
 “ Oct. 20. 1645. Nor shall it extend to excuse any
 “ Persons from the Penalties of 1 *Eliz. cap. 2.* for not
 “ coming to hear the Word of God on the Lord’s Day
 “ in any Parish Church or Chapel, unless he can shew
 “ a reasonable Cause for his Absence, or that he was
 “ present to hear the Word of God preached or ex-
 “ pounded elsewhere.”

Agreement
 of the
 Lords.
 Rushw.
 p. 840.

King Charles I. 1647. *And of the Commons.* The *Commons* likewise agreed, “ That Presbytery be established till the End of the next Sessions of Parliament, or till the second Sessions; that the Tenth, and all other Maintenance belonging to any Church or Chapel shall be only for the Use of them who can submit to the Presbyterial Government, and none other. That Liberty of Conscience shall extend to none who shall print, preach, or publish, contrary to the first Fifteen Articles of the Thirty nine, *except the Eighth, relating to the Three Creeds.* That nothing contained in this Ordinance shall extend to Popish Recusants.” *Oct.* 14. they agreed further, “ That such tender Consciences should be freed, by way of Indulgence, from the Penalty of the Statute for the Presbyterian Government, for their Non-Conformity, who do meet in some other Congregation for the Worship of God on the Lord’s Day, and do nothing against the Laws and Peace of the Kingdom, and that none others shall be freed from the Penalty of the Statute of 1 *Eliz. cap. 2.*” *October* 16. the *Commons* voted, “ That the Indulgence granted to tender Consciences should not extend to tolerate the Use of *Common Prayer* in any part of the Kingdom.” Which was against the Sense of the Army, who were for a general Indulgence, as appears from the Declaration of the Agitators, dated *November* 1. in which they say, that “ Matters of Religion, and the Ways of God’s Worship are not at all intrusted by us to any human Power, because therein we cannot omit, or exceed a Tittle of what our Consciences dictate to be the Mind of God, without wilful Sin; nevertheless, the publick Way of instructing the Nation, so it be not compulsive, is left to their Discretion.” Here was a fair Plan of Accommodation, but no Ordinance was brought into the House to confirm these Resolutions. *November* 8. both Houses agreed to the Addition of some new Propositions. As,

1. " For the due Observation of the Lord's Day.
2. " Against Innovations in Religion.
3. " A new Oath for the Conviction of Papists.
4. " For the Education of the Children of Papists
" in the Protestant Religion.
5. " Against Pluralities."

King
Charles I.
1647.

The Proposals of the *Presbyterians* were the same ^{Proposals} with those of *Newcastle*, already mentioned; but ^{of the} whereas the King declined to accept them without a per- ^{Presbyte-}sonal Treaty, they determined, in the House of Com-^{rians.}mons, to put them into four Bills, which if his Majesty refused to sign as Preliminaries, they determined to settle the Nation without him; but before they were perfected the King withdrew from *Hampton Court*, and was secured in the *Isle of Wight*, where the Commissioners from the Two Houses waited on him, and tender'd him the following Bills, *December 24.* the *First* was for settling the Militia, as has been related. The *Second* for calling in all his Majesty's Declarations and Proclamations against the Two Houses, and those that adher'd to them. The *Third* to disqualify those Peers from sitting in the House, that had been created after the Great Seal had been conveyed to *Oxford*. The *Fourth* to impower the Two Houses to adjourn, as they should think fit. In Matters of Religion they insisted peremptorily on the Establishment of the *Presbyterian* Church Government upon the Ruins of the *Prelatical*; upon the Extirpation of all *Sectaries*; and upon *Covenant Uniformity* in both Nations, as will appear more fully hereafter. But the King, instead of signing the Preliminaries, insisted strenuously on a personal Treaty, which it was hardly reasonable for him to expect, when he had so lately attempted to escape out of their Hands, and now refused to yield any Thing in order to make way for it.

It had not been possible to unriddle the Mystery of ^{Motive of} this Escape if it had not appeared soon after, that the ^{the King's} King was at that very Time throwing himself into the ^{Escape} Hands of the *Scots*, who being offended with the Par-^{from H.}liament ^{Court.}

King
Charles I.
1647.

Vol. III.
P. 104,
105.

Private
Treaty
with the
Scots.
Rapin,
p. 442.

liament (now under the Influence of the Army) for not acting in Concert with them in the present Treaty, according to their *Covenant*, determined to manage privately by themselves; and accordingly, by the Mediation of some of their own Nation, they concluded a secret Treaty with the King, which was began before his Majesty left *Hampton Court*, but not signed till the 27th of *December* following, three Days after his Majesty's Refusal of the Parliament's Four Bills. " This Alliance (says Lord *Clarendon*) " was most scandalous and derogatory to the Honour " and Interest of the *English* Nation, and would have " been abominated if known and understood by all " Men." But *Rapin* thinks it not so monstrous on the Part of the *Scots* as his Lordship represents, since they yielded to the Establishment of their beloved Presbytery in *England* but for Three Years, but it laid the Foundation of the King's Ruin with the Army.

In the Preamble his Majesty gives " a favourable Testimony to the *Solemn League and Covenant*, " and to the good Intentions of those that enter'd into " it." In the Treaty " He obliges himself to confirm " the *Covenant* by Act of Parliament as soon as he can " do it with Honour and Freedom in both Kingdoms; with a Proviso, that none that were unwilling should be obliged to take it for the future. " He engages further, to confirm by Act of Parliament the Presbyterial Government in *England*, " the Directory for publick Worship, and the Assembly of Divines for Three Years only, with liberty for himself and his Household to use that " Form of Divine Service they had formerly practised; and that during the Three Years there should " be a Consultation with the Assembly of Divines, " to whom Twenty of the King's Nomination should " be added, and some from the Church of *Scotland*, " to determine what Form of Church Government " should be established afterwards —" Then follows a Scourge for the Army; " — *That an effectual*
" *Course*

“ Course should be taken to suppress the Opinions of the
 “ Anti-Trinitarians, Arians, Socinians, Arminians, ^{King}
 “ Independants, Brownists, Antinomians, Anabaptists, ^{Charles I.}
 “ Separatists, Seekers; and in general, all Blasphemy, ^{1647.}
 “ Heresy, Schism, and other Doctrines contrary to the
 “ known Principles of Christianity, whether concerning
 “ Faith, Worship, Conversation, or the Power of Godli-
 “ ness, or which may be destructive to Order and Govern-
 “ ment, or to the Peace of the Church and Kingdom.”

In return for these Concessions “ the Scots engaged
 “ to raise an Army to deliver his Majesty out of
 “ Captivity, to assert his Right to the Militia, the
 “ Great Seal, the negative Voice in Parliament;
 “ and, in a Word, to restore him to his Throne
 “ with Honour and Freedom;” which occasioned a
 second Civil War the next Year.

As soon as his Majesty arrived in the *Isle of Wight* ^{King's}
 from *Hampton Court* he sent a Letter to the Speaker ^{Concessions}
 of the House of Lords, to be communicated to the ^{from the}
 Commons, with the following Concessions on his ^{Isle of}
 Part, very inconsistent with the Treaty last mention- ^{Wight.}
 ed. — “ For the Abolishing Archbishops, Bishops, ^{Rushw.}
 “ &c. his Majesty clearly professeth, that he cannot ^{p. 880.}
 “ consent to it either as a *Christian* or a *King*; for ^{Rapin,}
 “ the *First*, he avows, that he is satisfied in his ^{p. 430.}
 “ Judgment, that this Order was placed in the
 “ Church by the Apostles themselves, and ever since
 “ their Time has continued in all Christian Churches
 “ throughout the World till this last Century; And
 “ in this Church, in all Times of Change and Re-
 “ formation, it has been upheld, by the Wisdom of
 “ his Ancestors, as the great Preserver of Doctrine,
 “ Discipline, and Order in the Service of God. As
 “ a *King*, at his Coronation, he not only swore to
 “ maintain this Order, but his Majesty and his Pre-
 “ decessors, in their Confirmations of the *great Char-*
 “ *ter* have inseparably woven the Rights of the
 “ Church into the Liberty of the Subject; and yet
 “ he is willing that it be provided, that particular
 VOL. III. E e “ Bishops

King
Charles I.
1647.

“ Bishops perform the several Duties of their Callings, both by their personal Residence, and frequent Preaching; that in their personal Exercise no Act of Jurisdiction, or Ordination, be without consent of their Presbyters; and will consent, that in all Things their Powers be so limited, that they may not be grievous to the tender Consciences of others; his Majesty sees no Reason why he alone, and those of his Judgment, should be pressed to a Violation of theirs.

“ Nor can his Majesty consent to the Alienation of Church-Lands, because it cannot be denied to be the Sin of *Sacrilege*; as also, that it subverts the Intentions of so many pious Donors, who have laid a heavy Curse upon all such profane Violations. And besides, his Majesty believes it to be a Prejudice to the publick Good; many of his Subjects having the Benefit of renewing Leases at much easier Rates than if those Possessions were in the Hands of private Men; not omitting the Discouragement it will be to Learning and Industry, when such eminent Rewards shall be taken away; yet considering the present Distempers concerning Church Discipline, and that the Presbyterian Government is now in Practice, his Majesty to avoid Confusion as much as may be, and for the Satisfaction of his two Houses, is content, that the same Government be legally permitted to stand in the same Condition it now is for *three Years*, provided that his Majesty, and those of his Judgment, or any others who cannot in Conscience submit thereunto, be not obliged to comply with the Presbyterian Government, but have free Practice of our own Profession without any Prejudice thereby; and that free Consultation be had with the Divines at *Westminster*, Twenty of his Majesty's Nomination being added to them, to consider how to settle the Church afterwards, with full Liberty to all those who shall
“ differ

“ differ upon conscientious Grounds from that Settlement; always provided, that nothing aforesaid be understood to tolerate those of the Popish Profession, or to exempt them from penal Laws, or to tolerate the publick Profession of Atheism, or Blasphemy, contrary to the Doctrine of the Apostles, the *Nicene* and *Athanasian* Creed, they having been received by, and had in Reverence of all Christian Churches, and more especially the Church of *England* since the Reformation.” This was done to please the Army, but was entirely reversed by the *Scots* Treaty five Weeks after.

King
Charles I.
1647.

From these inconsistent Views of the contending Parties we may easily discern the dangerous Situation of the publick Tranquillity, especially as there was a general Distrust on all Sides, and each Party resolved to carry their Point without any Abatements: The King was held by Ties of Conscience and Honour; (as he said) to preserve *Episcopacy*; the *Scots* and *English* Presbyterians, though divided at present, thought themselves bound to stand by their *Solemn League and Covenant*; and the Army were under a solemn Engagement to agree with neither without a *Toleration*. If the King could have submitted to *Covenant Uniformity* he might have been restored by the Presbyterians; or, if either King or Parliament would have consented heartily to a *Toleration*, they might have established themselves by the Assistance of the Military Power; but his Majesty does not seem to have been in earnest. The Reader will judge of the Equity of the several Proposals, and of the prudential Conduct of each Party, from the Circumstances in which they were placed; the King was a Prisoner; the Parliament in Possession of the whole Legislative Authority, but the *Sword* was in the Hands of the Army, who were determined not to sheath it till they had secured to themselves the Liberties they had been fighting for: This they had in vain attempted with the King, and were

King next determin'd to try what they could do with the Charles I. Parliament.

1647.

The Houses being informed of the King's Design to make his Escape out of the *Isle of Wight*, ordered the Army to unite with the Governor to put away his Servants, and shut him up a close Prisoner in the Castle, so that no Person might be admitted to speak to him without leave. His Majesty having also declared, when he rejected the Parliament's Four Bills, that nothing that could befall him should ever prevail with him to consent to any one Act, till the Conditions of the whole Peace were concluded, they began to despair of an Accommodation. In this Juncture the Officers of the Army sent a Message to the Houses, assuring them, that they would live and die with them in settling the Nation either with or without the King, and leave all Transactions of State for the future to them alone.

Votes of
Non-Ad-
dresses.

However, after the Seclusion of the Eleven impeached Members, and the Quartering the Army in the Neighbourhood of the City, the Parliament, either from Interest or Fear, had a great Regard to the Opinion of those Officers that were Members of the House. Upon a Motion that no more Addresses be made to the King from the Parliament, nor any Messages received from him, IRETON and CROMWELL open'd themselves very freely: *Ireton* said, "Subjection to the King was but in lieu of Protection from him, which being denied, we may settle the Kingdom without him — Let us then show our Resolution (says he) and not desert those valiant Men who have engaged for us beyond all possibility of Retreat." *Cromwell* said, "That the Parliament should govern by their own Power, and not teach the People any longer to expect Safety from an obstinate Man, whose Heart God had harden'd. — The Army will defend you against all Opposition. Teach them not, by neglecting your's and the Kingdom's Safety, in which their own

" is

“ is involved, to think themselves betray’d, and left
 “ hereafter to the Rage and Malice of an irrecon- ^{King}
 “ cilable Enemy, whom they have subdued for your ^{Charles I.}
 “ sake, least Despair teach them to seek their Safety ^{1647.}
 “ by some other Means than adhering to you; [here
 “ he put his Hand upon his Sword] and how destru-
 “ ctive such a Resolution will be (says he) I tremble
 “ to think, and leave you to judge!” The Question
 being then put it was carried by a Majority of Fifty
 Voices; *Yea’s* one Hundred forty one, *No’s* Ninety
 one. Jan. 17. the Lords concurr’d with the Com-
 mons in their Votes of *Non-Addresses*. To this very Vol. III.
 Time, says Lord *Clarendon*, no Man mentioned the P. 93.
 King’s Person without Duty and Respect. But now
 a new Scene was open’d, and some of the Officers, at
 their Meetings at *Windſor*, began to talk of Deposing
 the King, or prosecuting him as a Criminal, of
 which his Majesty was advertised by *Watſon* the Quar-
 ter Master, but it made no Impreſſion upon him.

The two Houſes having concurr’d in their Votes ^{Parlia-}
 for *Non-Addreſſes*, the Army agreed to ſtand by the ^{ment’s Re-}
 Parliament in ſettling the Nation without the King; ^{monſtrance}
 and that the People might be ſatiſfied with the Rea-
 ſons of their Proceedings, a Remonſtrance was pub-
 liſhed by Order of Parliament, Feb. 15. in which
 they recapitulate all the Errors of his Majesty’s Go-
 vernment; his Inſincerity in the ſeveral Treaties
 of Peace he had enter’d into with them; and that
 though they had applied to him ſeven Times with
 Propoſitions, in all which the *Scots* had concur-
 red except the laſt, yet he had never complied with
 any; from whence they conclude, either that the
 Nation muſt continue under the preſent Diſtractions,
 or they muſt ſettle it without him. In the Poſt-
 humous Works of Lord *Clarendon* there is a large
 Reply to this *Remonſtrance*, in which his Lordſhip en-
 deavours to vindicate the King, and throw all the
 Blame upon the Parliament; but though there were
 ill Inſtruments on both Sides, and there might be

King
Charles I.
1647.

no real Occasion to rip up all the Misdemeanors of the King's Government from the beginning, yet 'tis hardly possible for the Art of Man to justify his Majesty's Conduct before the War, or to vindicate his Prudence and Sincerity in his Treaties afterwards; the Design of commencing a new War being evidently at this Time concerted and agreed upon, with his Majesty's Allowance, in pursuance of the *Scots Treaty*, while he was amusing both the Parliament and Army with Overtures of Peace.

Ordinance
for Abolish-
ing the Ob-
servance
of Christ-
mas, and
other
Saints
Days.
Scobel,
p. 128.

Among the Ordinances that passed this Year for Reformation of the Church, none occasioned so much Noise and Disturbance as that of *June 8.* for Abolishing the Observance of *Saints Days*, and the Three grand Festivals of *Christmas, Easter, and Whitsuntide*; The Ordinance says, “ Forasmuch as the *Feast of the*
“ *Nativity of Christ, Easter, Whitsuntide, and other*
“ *Festivals*, commonly called *Holy Days*, have been
“ heretofore superstitiously used and observed; be it
“ ordained, that the said Feasts, and all other Festi-
“ vals, commonly called *Holy Days*, be no longer
“ observed as Festivals; any Law, Statute, Custom,
“ Constitution, or Canon to the contrary, in any
“ wise notwithstanding.

Time al-
lotted for
Servants
Recreation.

“ And that there may be a convenient Time allotted for Scholars, Apprentices, and other Servants,
“ for their Recreation, be it ordained, That all
“ Scholars, Apprentices, and other Servants, shall,
“ with the Leave of their Masters, have such con-
“ venient reasonable Recreation, and Relaxation
“ from Labour, every second *Tuesday* in the Month
“ throughout the Year, as formerly they used to
“ have upon the *Festivals*; and Masters of Scholars,
“ Apprentices, and Servants, shall grant to them
“ respectively such Time for their Recreation, on
“ the aforesaid second *Tuesday* in the Month as they
“ may conveniently spare from their extraordinary,
“ necessary Service and Occasions; and if any Dis-
“ ference arise between Masters and Servants con-
“ cerning

“cerning the Liberty hereby granted, the next Ju-
“stice of the Peace shall reconcile it.”

King
Charles I.
1647.

The King was highly displeased with this Ordinance; and therefore, while the Affair was under Debate he put this Query to the Parliament Commissioners at *Holmby House*, April 23. 1647. I desire to be resolved of this Question, *Why the new Reformers discharge the Keeping of Easter?* My Reason for this Query is, “I conceive the Celebration of this
“Feast was instituted by the same Authority which
“changed the *Jewish* Sabbath into the Lord’s Day,
“or Sunday, for it will not be found in Scripture
“where *Saturday* is discharged to be kept, or turn’d
“into the *Sunday*; wherefore it must be the Churches
“Authority that changed the one and instituted the
“other; therefore my Opinion is, that those who
“will not keep *this Feast* may as well return to the
“Observation of *Saturday*, and refuse the weekly
“*Sunday*. When any body can shew me that here-
“in I am in an Error I shall not be ashamed to con-
“fess and amend it, ’till when you know my
“Mind.”

C. R.

Sir *James Harrington* presented his Majesty with an Answer to this Query, in which he denies, that the Change of the Sabbath was from the Authority of the Church, but derives it from the Authority and Example of our Saviour and his Apostles in the New Testament; he admits, that if there was the like mention of the Observation of *Easter* it would be of Divine or Apostolical Authority; but as the Case stands, he apprehends, with great Reason, that the Observation of the Christian Sabbath, and of Easter, stand upon a very different foot.

The changing the Festival of *Christmas* into a *Fast* it occasions
last Winter was not so much taken Notice of, because *Tumults*.
all Parties were employed in Acts of Devotion; but
when it returned this Year, there appeared a strong

King
Charles I.
1647.

Rushw.
p. 948.

Propensity in the People to observe it, the Shops were generally shut, many Presbyterian Ministers preached; in some Places the *Common Prayer* was read, and one or two of the sequester'd Clergy getting into Pulpits prayed publickly for the *Bishops*; several of the Citizens of *London*, who open'd their Shops, were abused; in some Places there were Riots and Insurrections, especially in *Canterbury*, where the Mayor, endeavouring to keep the Peace, had his Head broke by the Populace, and was dragged about the Streets; the Mob broke into divers Houses of the most Religious in the Town, broke their Windows, abused their Persons, and threw their Goods into the Streets, because they exposed them to Sale on *Christmas Day*. At length their Numbers being encreased to above two Thousand they put themselves into a Posture of Defence against the Magistrates, kept Guard, stopp'd Passes, examined Passengers, and seized the Magazines and Arms in the Town-Hall, and were not dispersed without Difficulty. The like Disorders were at *Ealing* in *Middlesex*, and several other Counties. The Parliament was alarmed at these Disorders, and therefore commanded all Papists and Delinquent Clergymen to retire without the Lines of Communication, and punished some of the principal Rioters for a Terror to the rest, it being apparent that the King's Party took the Advantage of the Holy Days to try the Temper of the People in favour of his Release, for during the Space of the following Twelve Years, wherein the Festivals were laid aside, there was not the least Tumult on account of the *Holidays*, the Observation of *Christmas* being left as a Matter of Indifference.

King's
Clergy pe-
tition to be
restored to
their Li-
vings.

The War being thought to be at an end many of the Clergy, who had followed the Camp, returned home, and endeavoured to repossess themselves of their sequester'd Livings, to the Prejudice of those whom the Parliament had put into their Places; they petitioned the King while he was with the Army,
and

and in a State of Honour and Dignity, to take their poor distressed Condition into his gracious Consideration. His Majesty recommended them to the *General* at the very Time when the Difference between the Parliament and Army was subsisting, upon which they represented their Grievances to him, in a Petition, shewing, that “whereas for divers Years they had been outed of their Livings, contrary to the fundamental Laws of the Land, by the arbitrary Power of *Committees*, whose Proceedings have usually been by no Rule of Law, but by their own Wills; most of them having been turned out for refusing the *Covenant*, or adhering to the King, and the Religion established, and of those, divers never called to answer, and scarce one had Articles proved by Oath, or other legal Process, by which means your *Petitioners* are reduced to extream Want and Misery; and whereas those who are put into our Places labour to stir up the People to involve the Kingdom in a new War, and are generally Men ignorant and unable to instruct the People; and many of them scandalous in their Practices, if impartially examined, and divers of them hold Three or Four of the best Benefices, whilst divers other Churches are void, and without any constant Preacher. And forasmuch as the main Profit of our Benefices consists in the Harvest which is now at hand, which many of the present Possessors, if they could receive, would presently be gone, whereby the Burthen of the Cure will lie upon your *Petitioners*, having nothing to live upon the next Year. Your *Petitioners* therefore pray, that your *Excellency* would make stay of the Profits of the Harvest, that those of us that are charged with any legal Scandal may come to a just Trial, and if we are found Innocent may enjoy our Rights, according to the known Laws of the Land.”

King
Charles I.
1647.

Suff. Cler.
P. 145.

By

King
Charles I.
1647.
G. Fairfax's Answer.

By this bold Petition, 'tis evident, these Gentlemen were encouraged to hope, that the Army would carry their Resentments so far as to unravel all they had been doing for Five Years; that they would not only renounce the *Covenant*, but disown the Proceedings of their *Committees*, and even countenance the Clergy's adhering to the King: And no doubt, if his Majesty had at this Time complied with the Proposals of the Army, he might have made good Terms for them; for the *General* received them with Respect, and having debated their Address in Council, proposed it to the Parliament, that the Estates of all sequester'd Persons, including the Clergy, should remain in the Hands of the Tenants till a general Peace. Upon which the old Incumbents grew very troublesome, forbidding the Parishioners to pay their Tithes, and threatening the present Possessors of their Pulpits with Prosecutions by Law.

Counter
Petition of
the Presbyterians.

On the other hand, the Presbyterian Clergy addressed the *General Aug. 12.* a few Days after the Parliament and Army were united, with a Complaint, "That divers delinquent Ministers, who had been put out of their Livings, did now trouble, and seek to turn out those Ministers whom the Parliament had put in; and particularly, that Dr. *Layfield*, by a counterfeit Warrant from the *General*, had endeavoured to remove a Minister from his Benefice in *Surrey*." The General and his Council declared their Dislike of these Proceedings, and promised to write to the Parliament, that such Offenders might be brought to Punishment, which he did accordingly. The Difference between the Parliament and Army being now in a Manner compromised, which put an End to the Expectations of the Clergy: *Aug. 19.* the Lords and Commons acquainted the General, that they would take Care for the Punishment of those delinquent Ministers, and others, by whose Practices Ministers put into Livings by the

Par.

Parliament had been disquieted and turned out; and on the 23d of the same Month they pass an Ordinance, setting forth, "That whereas divers Ministers in the several Counties had been displaced by Authority of Parliament, for notorious Scandals and Delinquency, and godly, learned, and orthodox Ministers, had been placed in their room; and whereas the said scandalous and delinquent Ministers by Force, or otherwise, had enter'd upon the Churches, and gained Possession of the Tithes, &c. the Lords and Commons did therefore ordain, That all Sheriffs, Mayors, Committees, &c. do forthwith apprehend such Ministers, and all such Persons as have been aiding, and abetting to them, and commit them to Prison, there to remain, till those they had thus dispossessed, and molested, should receive Satisfaction for their Damages; and that the said Sheriffs, &c. do restore those molested Ministers to the quiet Possession of their respective Places, and do in case of Need raise the Trained Bands to put this Ordinance in Execution; and do also take effectual Course that the Tithes, Profits, &c. be for the future duly paid to those Ministers put in by Parliament, &c. And if any such Disturbance should hereafter be given, the Offender was to suffer for every such Disturbance one Month's Imprisonment."

King
Charles I.
1647.

Ordinance
in their
Favour.

However, some little Favour was shewn, about this Time, to those Bishops, and others, who had lived peaceably, and been little more than Spectators of the Miseries of their Country; the Committee was ordered to make Payment of the eight Hundred Pounds £ Year granted to the Bishop of Durham; the real Estate of the pious Bishop Hall, who had lately published his *hard Measure*, was discharged; Archbishop Usher had an Allowance of four Hundred Pounds £ Annum, till he could be otherwise

wife

Rushw.
p. 831,
937, 948,
958.

King wise provided for ; and was soon after allowed to be
Charles I. Preacher at *Lincoln's Inn*, only upon taking the
1647. *Negative Oath*. But the Bishops were not much the
better for these Donations. The Commissioners of
the *Great Seal* were ordered to fill up the vacant Li-
vings in the Gift of the Crown, without obliging the
Incumbents to take the *Covenant* ; but the new Di-
sturbances which were created in favour of the cap-
tive King, brought down new Severities upon the
Episcopal Clergy before the End of the following
Year.



.C H A P. IX.

*The Visitation of the University of OXFORD,
State of Religion at the End of the Year.*

SAD and deplorable was the Condition of the Uni-^{King}versity of *Oxford* when it fell into the Hands of ^{Charles I.} the Parliament; the *Colleges* and *Halls* were gone to ^{1647.} Ruin; Five of them perfectly deserted, and the rest ^{Condition} in a very shatter'd Condition. The publick Acts ^{of the Uni-} had been discontinued for some Years, the Schools ^{versity of} were turned into Magazines for the King's Army, ^{Oxford.} and the Chambers filled with Officers and Soldiers, or let out to Townsmen; there was little or no Instruction of Youth, nor hardly the Face of an University; Poverty, Desolation and Plunder, the sad Effects of War, were to be seen in every Corner; the *Bursaries* were emptied of the publick Money, the Plate melted down for the King's Service, and the Colleges involved in Debts which they were not capable to satisfy; there were few Heads of Colleges or Scholars left, but such as remained were strongly prejudiced against the Parliament, having employed their Wits, during the Course of the War, in writing *weekly Mercuries*, and other satyrical Pamphlets, in which they aspersed the Proceedings of the two Houses, and treated their Divines as the most infamous, ignorant, and hypocritical Traitors: Nor were their Tempers in the least changed at present, though their Lives and Fortunes were in the Hands of their Adversaries. It was therefore thought necessary to put the Education of Youth into such Hands as the Parliament could confide in, a Power being ^{Parlia-} reserved for that Purpose in the Articles of Surrender. ^{ment send}

But before they proceeded to Extreames the two ^{Ministers} Houses about the beginning of *September* 1646. ap- ^{to reform} pointed Seven of their most popular Divines to re- ^{it.} pair ^{Suff. Cler.} p. 125.

King
Charles I.
1647.

pair to *Oxford*, with Authority to preach in any of the Pulpits of the University for Six Months, in order to soften the Spirits of the People, and give them a better Opinion of their Cause, viz. the Reverend Mr. *Robert Harris* of *Hanwell, Oxfordshire*; Mr. *Edward Reynolds*, afterwards Bishop of *Norwich*; Mr. *Henry Wilkinson*, of *Magdalen College*; Mr. *Francis Cheynel*, Mr. *Henry Corbet*, of *Merton College*; Mr. *Henry Cornish* of *New Inn*; and, Mr. *Henry Langley*, of *Pembroke Hall*; Men of Reputation and Character, sober Divines, and popular Preachers, though *A. Wood*, the *Oxford* Historian, is pleased to say,
 “ Their Sermons were the Contempt and Scorn of
 “ the University, because they were too long, and
 “ had too little Learning; because they prayed very coldly for the King, but were very earnest for
 “ a Blessing upon the Counsels and Arms of the Parliament, and did not always conclude with the
 “ *Lord's Prayer*; because they reflected on some of
 “ the Heads of the University, calling them Dumb
 “ Dogs, having a Form of Religion without the
 “ Power; and, because their manner of Delivery
 “ was rather Theatrical than Serious; nevertheless,
 “ their Auditories were crowded, though none of the
 “ Heads of Colleges, or senior Scholars, attended
 “ them.”

Their Conduct and Success.
 Suff. Cler.
 p. 125.
 Minst.
 Account,
 p. 5.
 Vol. Pamp.
 No 82.

The Ministers were very diligent in the Discharge of their Trust, preaching twice every Lord's Day; and that they might gain the People, set up a weekly Conference every *Thursday*, in which they proposed to solve such Objections as should be raised against their new *Confession of Faith and Discipline*, and to answer any other important Cases in Divinity: The *Question*, or *Case*, was to be propounded the Week before, that it might be well considered; a *Moderator* also was appointed to keep Order, who began and concluded with a short Prayer, and the whole was conducted with Decency and Gravity. But several of the Scholars ridiculed their Proceedings,

ings, and by way of Contempt called their Place of Meeting, THE SCRUPLE SHOP; however, it was frequented by great Numbers of People, some of whom were prevail'd with to renounce the *Oxford Oath*; and others to take the *Solemn League and Covenant*. They met with some little Disturbance from one *Erbury*, a turbulent *Antinomian*, and Chaplain in the Garrison; but upon the Whole, when the Ministers returned to *Minst. London* they declared, that the Citizens showed them a great deal of Respect, but the University poured all the Contempt upon them imaginable, so that they apprehended themselves to have the same Lot as *Saint Paul* had at *Athens*, Acts xvii. 32, 34. *Some mocked them, others slighted them, but certain clave to them, and believed.*

King Charles I.
1647.

There being no Prospect of reforming the University by these Methods, the Two Houses resolved to proceed upon a *Visitation*, which they apprehended they might undertake without the King, by virtue of the Fourteenth Article of their Capitulation, which says, "That the Chancellor, Masters and Scholars of the University, and all Heads, Governors, Masters, Fellows, and Scholars of the Colleges, Halls, Bodies Corporate, and Societies of the said University, and the publick Professors, Readers, and Orators thereof, and all other Persons belonging to the said University, shall and may, according to their Statutes, Charters, and Customs, enjoy their ancient Form of Government, SUBORDINATE TO THE IMMEDIATE AUTHORITY AND POWER OF PARLIAMENT, and that all the Rights, Privileges, Franchises, Lands, Tenements, Houses, Rents, Revenues, Libraries, Debts, Goods and Chattles, &c. belonging to the said University, shall be enjoyed by them respectively as aforesaid, free from Sequestrations, Fines, Taxes, and all other Molestations whatsoever, under colour of any Thing relating to the present War. And if any Removal shall be made by the Parliament:

Parliament resolves upon a Visitation.
Rushw. p. 283.

King " of any Head, or other Members of the University,
 Charles I. " that they shall enjoy their Profits for Six Months after
 1647. " the Surrendring of Oxon, and shall have convenient
 " Time allowed them for the Removal of themselves and
 " their Goods ; provided that this shall not extend to re-
 " tard any Reformation there intended by the Parlia-
 " ment, or give them any Liberty to intermeddle with the
 " Government." But the Heads of Colleges did not
 think themselves obliged by this Capitulation, nor
 any Thing contained in it, because they were not
 made Parties, nor called upon to give their separate
 Consent to the Articles, though they took Advantage
 of every Thing that was stipulated in their Favour.

Fuller's
 Appeal,
 p. 70.

Ordinance
 for that
 Purpose.
 Scobel's
 Collect.
 Part I.

p 116.
 Suff. Cler.
 p. 126.

May 1. 1647. an Ordinance past both Houses for
 Visiting the University, and named the following
 Gentlemen, Lawyers, and Divines, for that Service,
viz.

Sir Nath. Brent,
 Sir William Cobb,
 William Prince of Lin-
 coln's Inn, *Esq*;
 John Pulliston of Lin-
 coln's Inn, *Esq*;
 Barth. Hall of the Middle
 Temple, *Esq*;
 Tho. Knight of Lincoln's
 Inn, *Esq*;
 William Draper of Lin-
 coln's Inn, *Esq*;
 Gabriel Beck of Lincoln's
 Inn, *Esq*;
 John Cartwright, *Esq*;
 Samuel Dunch, *Esq*;
 Mr. William Tipping,
 Mr. George Greenwood,
 Mr. John Packer,
 Mr. William Cope.

The Rev. Dr. John Wil-
 kinson,
 Mr. Henry Wil-
 kinson,
 Mr. Edw. Rey-
 nolds,
 Mr. Rob. Har-
 ris,
 Mr. Edw. Cor-
 bet,
 Mr. Fran. Chey-
 nell,
 Mr. John Wil-
 kinson,
 Mr. John Mills,
 Mr. Christopher
 Rogers.

King
Charles I.
1647.

The Ordinance empowers the Visitors, or any Five of them, “ to hear and determine all Crimes, “ Offences, Abuses, and Disorders, which by the “ Laws and Statutes of this Realm, or by the Customs and Statutes, rightly established, of that “ University, or by the several Statutes of the respective Colleges or Halls, may lawfully be enquired of, heard, or determined, in the Course and “ Way of Visitation of the University, or of the “ Colleges, Halls, Masters, Scholars, Fellows, “ Members, and Officers, or any of them, respectively. They are more particularly to enquire “ by Oath concerning those that neglect to take the “ *Solemn League and Covenant*, and the *Negative Oath*, “ being tender’d to them by such as are authorized “ by Parliament; and concerning those who oppose “ the Execution of the Ordinance of Parliament, “ concerning the Discipline and Directory; and those “ who shall teach or write against any Point of Doctrine, the Ignorance whereof doth exclude from “ the Lord’s Supper. They are likewise to enquire “ upon Oath, concerning all such who have taken “ up Arms against the Parliament, or who have “ been assisting to the Forces raised against the Parliament. And they are to certify to a Committee “ of the House of Lords and Commons mentioned “ in the Ordinance, what Masters, Scholars, Fellows, Members, or Officers, have committed “ any of the Offences above-mentioned, and the “ Quality and Condition of the Offenders, that such “ further Proceedings may be had thereupon as the “ Committee of Lords and Commons shall think fit. “ The *Visitors* are further empowered, to examine “ and consider of all such Oaths as are enjoyn’d by “ the Statutes of the University, or of any of the “ Halls and Colleges, as are not fit to be taken, “ and present their Opinion to the Committee above-mentioned; provided always, that if any of the “ Masters, Scholars, Fellows, &c. shall find them-

King Charles I. 1647. " selves grieved by any Sentence given by the Visitors, it shall be lawful for them to appeal to the Committee of Lords and Commons, who are authorized finally to hear and determine every such Case brought before them."

Abstract of the University's Reasons against the Covenant, &c. But before the Visitation could take Place the Vice-Chancellor, Dr. Fell, summoned a Convocation [June 1.] wherein it was agreed not to submit to the *Parliament Visitors*; a Paper of Reasons against the Covenant, the *Negative Oath*, and the *Directory*, drawn up chiefly by Dr. Sanderson, was also consented to, and ordered to be published to the World both in *Latin* and *English*, against the Time the Visitors were to come down, under the Title of *Reasons of the present Judgment of the University of Oxford, concerning the Solemn League and Covenant, the Negative Oath, and the Ordinances concerning Discipline and Worship, approved by general Consent in a full Convocation, June 1. 1647.* an Abstract of which I shall now set before the Reader.

TO THE PREFACE OF THE COVENANT [transcribed under the Year 1643.]

Exceptions against the Preface. They declare, " We cannot say the *Rage, Power, and Presumption of the Enemies of God* (in the Sense there intended) is *increased*. Nor that we have consented to any *Supplication or Remonstrance* to the Purposes therein expressed. We do not think the taking the *Covenant* to be a lawful and probable Means to *preserve our Selves and our Religion from Ruin*; nor do we believe it to be according to the commendable *Practice of these Kingdoms, or the Example of God's People in other Nations.*"

TO THE COVENANT IN GENERAL.

Against the Covenant in general. " We are of Opinion, That a *Covenant* ought to be a *voluntary Contract*, and not imposed. Now we can't voluntarily consent to this *Covenant* with-

" OUT

“ out betraying our Liberties, one of which is, *Not to*
 “ *be obliged to take any Oath but what is established by Act*
 “ *of Parliament*; and without acknowledging in the
 “ Imposers a greater Power than has been challen-
 “ ged in former Time, or can subsist with our for-
 “ mer *Protestation*. But if the *Covenant* were not
 “ imposed, but only recommended, we apprehend
 “ the taking it to be inconsistent with our Loyalty
 “ to the King, especially since he has by Proclama-
 “ tion forbid it.”

King
Charles I.
1647.

OBJECTIONS TO THE SEVERAL ARTICLES OF THE
COVENANT.

To the first Article.

“ We cannot swear to preserve the Religion of
 “ *another Kingdom* (Scotland) whereof we have very
 “ little Understanding, which as far as we are ac-
 “ quainted with it, is much worse than our own in
 “ Worship, Discipline, and Government, and in
 “ Doctrine not at all better; wherein there are some
 “ Things so far tending to Superstition and Schism,
 “ that it seems reasonable to us that we should call
 “ upon them to reform, rather than we be bound to
 “ preserve it entire.

*Against
the first
Article.*

“ Neither are we satisfied in the present Reforma-
 “ tion of Religion in *our own Kingdom*, in *Doctrine*,
 “ *Worship*, and *Discipline*, because, (1.) It gives a
 “ manifest Scandal to the *Papist* and *Separatist*, by
 “ giving up the Cause for which the Martyrs and
 “ Bishops have contended since the Reformation;
 “ by justifying the *Papists* in their Recusancy, who
 “ reproach us, by saying, we know not what Reli-
 “ gion we are of; nor where to stop, since we have
 “ left them; and, that ours is a *Parliamentary Reli-*
 “ *gion*. Besides, *this would be a tacit Acknowledgment,*
 “ *that there has been something in the Church of England*
 “ *not agreeable to the Word of God, and so justify the*
 “ *Separation, and condemn all the Penal Laws that have*

Bill.
p 179.

King Charles I. 1647. " *been made to oblige People to conform.* (2.) By the intended Reformation we should wrong our selves, by swearing to reform that which we have formerly by our Subscriptions approved, and which we do still believe to be more agreeable to the Word of God than that which by *this Covenant* we must swear to preserve; and to which, by the Laws still in being, every *Clerk*, at his Admission to a Benefice, is bound to give his Consent. (3.) Besides, we should be in danger of Perjury, because 'tis contrary to our former Protestation, which obliges us to maintain the *Doctrine of the Church of England*, which may take in the whole Establishment; and it is contrary to the Oath of Supremacy, which gives the sole Power to the King in Matters Ecclesiastical."

OBJECTIONS to the second Article.

Against the second Article. Ib. p. 184. " We are very much grieved to see the Prelacy of the Church of *England* rank'd with Popery, Superstition, Heresy, Schism, and Profaneness, with an Intimation, that it is contrary to sound Doctrine, or the Power of Godliness. Nor can we swear to the Extirpation of it, because, (1.) We believe it to be of Apostolical Institution. Or, (2.) At least that Episcopal Aristocracy hath a fairer Claim to a Divine Institution than any other Form of Church Government. (3.) That Episcopal Government has continued in the Church without Interruption for fifteen Hundred Years, therefore to extirpate it would give Advantage to the Papists, who are wont to charge us with a Contempt of Antiquity, and Love of Novelty, and it would diminish the just Authority due to the Consent and Practice of the Catholick Church. (4.) Besides, we can't swear to the Extirpating this Government, because we have subscribed the Thirty nine Articles, one of which says, the Book containing the Form of *Consecration* has nothing in

I " it

“ it contrary to the Word of God. We have been
 “ ordained by Bishops; we have petitioned the Par-
 “ liament for the Continuance of them; and some of
 “ us hold our Livelihoods by the Titles of Deans,
 “ Deans and Chapters, &c. (5.) We are not satis-
 “ fied that the Inconveniencies of the *New Government*
 “ will be less than the *Old*, the House of Commons
 “ having remonstrated [*Dec. 15. 1641.*] that it was
 “ far from their Purpose to abolish this Government,
 “ but only to regulate it, and that it was a Sign of
 “ *Malignancy* to infuse into the People that they had
 “ any other Meaning. *Lastly*, In respect of our
 “ Obligation to his Majesty, having acknowledged
 “ him to be supreme Governor in all Causes Eccle-
 “ siastical, we cannot endeavour to extirpate this
 “ Government without the Royal Assent, which we
 “ are so far from desiring, that *we are continually* lb. p. 197.
 “ *praying, That the King may not be prevailed with to do*
 “ *an Act so prejudicial to his Conscience and Honour, and*
 “ *which, by his Coronation Oath, he is bound to preserve.*
 “ By the Laws of the Land there are sundry Privile-
 “ ges and Emoluments arising to the Crown from
 “ the Ecclesiastical Estate, which are a consider-
 “ able Part of the Revenue, which by the Extirpa-
 “ tion of Prelacy will be cut off; whereas we are
 “ bound by the Oath of Allegiance to maintain the
 “ King’s Honour and Estate. And after all, the
 “ Prelatical Government is best suited to Monarchy,
 “ inasmuch that King *James* used to say, *No Bishop,*
 “ *no King.* .

Objections to the third Article.

“ We are dissatisfied with the Limitation of our *Against the*
 “ Loyalty in these Words, *In the Preservation and* ^{third Ar-}
 “ *Defence of the true Religion, and Liberties of the King-* ^{icle.}
 “ *dom*; because no such Limitation is to be found in ^{lb. p. 201.}
 “ the Oath of Allegiance, nor in the Word of God;
 “ because it leaves the Duty of the Subject loose, and
 “ the Safety of the King uncertain. The Conscience

King “ of a Papist, or Sectary, may swallow an Oath
 Charles I. “ with such a Limitation, but the Conscience of a
 1647. “ good Protestant cannot but strain at it.”

To the fourth Article.

Against the
 fourth
 Article.
 lb. p. 203. They reply, “ That the imposing the Covenant
 “ in this Article may lay a Necessity upon the Son to
 “ accuse the Father, in case he be a *Malignant*,
 “ which is contrary to Religion, Nature and Humani-
 “ ty ; or it may open a Way for Children that are
 “ sick of their Fathers, to effect their unlawful Inten-
 “ tions, by accusing them of Malignancy ; besides
 “ the subjecting our selves to an arbitrary Punish-
 “ ment, at the sole Pleasure of such uncertain Judges
 “ as may be deputed for that Effect, is betraying
 “ the Liberty of the Subject.”

Objections to the fifth Article.

Against the
 fifth Ar-
 ticle.
 lb. p. 206. “ We can’t acknowledge the Happiness of such a
 “ Peace, as in the Article is mentioned, for no
 “ Peace can be firm and well grounded, unless the
 “ respective Authority, Power, and Liberty of
 “ King, Parliament, and Subject, be preserved full
 “ and entire, according to the known Laws, and re-
 “ spective Customs of the Kingdom, before the Be-
 “ ginning of these Distractions.”

Objections to the sixth Article.

Against the
 sixth Ar-
 ticle.
 lb. p. 207. They say, “ We are not satisfied, that the Cause
 “ of our joining in Covenant for the Prosecution of the late
 “ War, was the Cause of Religion, Liberty, and Peace
 “ of the Kingdom, or that the Glory of God, and the Ho-
 “ nour of the King, was concerned in it. And if it was,
 “ we are not satisfied that it ought to be supported
 “ and carried on by such Means as are destitute of all
 “ Warrant from the Word of God, or the Laws of
 “ the Realm.”

The Con-
 clusion. In Conclusion, say they, “ Our Hearts tremble
 “ to think that we should be required to pray, that
 “ other

“ other Christian Churches may be encouraged by our
 “ Example to join in the like Covenant to free themselves
 “ from the Antichristian Yoke, for we do not know any
 “ Antichristian Yoke we were under; nor do we yet
 “ see such good Fruits of this Covenant among our
 “ selves, as to invite us to pray, that other Churches
 “ should follow our Example; ’tis as if we should
 “ pray, that the God of Love and Peace would take
 “ away all Love and Peace, and set the Christian
 “ World in a Combustion; that he would render the
 “ reformed Religion odious to the World; that Chri-
 “ stian Princes might be provoked to use more Seve-
 “ rity towards those of the reformed Religion, if not
 “ to root it out of their Dominions; for the Yoke of
 “ Antichrist, if laid upon Subjects by their lawful
 “ Sovereigns, is to be thrown off by Christian Bold-
 “ ness in confessing the Truth, and suffering for it,
 “ not by taking up Arms, or violent resisting of the
 “ Higher Powers.”

King
Charles I.
1647.

After these Remarks upon the several Articles they take Notice,

(1.) Of the following seeming Contradictions in the Covenant, as, “ the preserving, and yet reforming
 “ one and the same reformed Religion. The Re-
 “ forming Church Government according to the
 “ Word of God, and yet extirpating that Govern-
 “ ment which we apprehend agreeable to it. The
 “ Extirpating Heresy and Schism, and yet dissolving
 “ that Government in the Church, the want of the
 “ due Exercise of which has been the Occasion of
 “ the Growth of these Evils. The preserving the
 “ Liberties of the Kingdom, and yet submitting to a
 “ Covenant and Oath not established by Law.

Contradi-
ctions in
the Cove-
nant.
lb. p. 211.

(2.) They observe some dark and doubtful Ex-
 pressions which they don’t well understand; as,
 “ Who are the Common Enemies? Which are the
 “ best reformed Churches? Who are Malignants?

Doubtful
Expressions
in the Co-
venant.
lb. p. 213.

King Charles I. "How far the hindring Reformation may be extended, &c.

1647.

Abundanties.

(3.) By the Use that has been made of the *Covenant* they apprehend "the Conduct of the Parliament to be contrary to the Meaning of it, for instead of Reforming the Worship and Service of the Church they have quite abolished it; instead of Reforming the Discipline of the Church it is quite destroyed, or put upon such a Foot as is not agreeable to the Word of God, or the Example of any Church since the Creation. Instead of extirpating Heresy and Profaneness little or nothing has been done towards it but only the Extirpation of Prelacy, and something else that looks so like Sacrilege (say they) that we dare not venture upon it. And as for the *Preservation of the King's Honour and Estate in defence of the true Religion, and Liberties of the Kingdom*, tho' we apprehend all other Things should be subordinate to it, yet by some bold Speeches that have been made we are afraid nothing less is intended."

Of the SALVOES FOR TAKING THE COVENANT.

Salvoes for taking the Covenant. (1.) "It has been said, that *we may take it in our own Sense*. But this we apprehend contrary to the Nature and End of an Oath; contrary to the End of Speech; contrary to the Design of the Covenant, and contrary to the solemn Profession at the Conclusion of it (*viz.*) *That we shall take it with a true Intention to perform the same, as we shall answer it to the Searcher of all Hearts at the great Day*. Besides, this would be *Jesuitical*; it would be taking the Name of God in vain; and it would strengthen the Objection of those who say, there is no Faith to be given to Protestants.

Salvo II. (2.) "It has been said, we may take the Covenant with these Salvoes expressed, *so far as lawfully I may, so far as it is agreeable to the Word of God, and the Laws of the Land, saving all Oaths by me for-*
merly

“merly taken, &c. which is no better than vile Hypocrisy; for by the same Rule one might subscribe to the Council of Trent, or the Turkish Alcoran.

King
Charles I.
1647.

(3.) “It is said, that we may take the Covenant in our present Circumstances, notwithstanding our Allegiance to the King, because Protection and Subjection are Relatives, and the King being unable to protect us any longer, we are free from Subjection to him. But we answer, that the King’s Inability to perform his Duty does not discharge the Subject from his, as long as he is able; much less when the Non-Protection on the King’s Part, is not from want of Will, but of Power.

Salvo III.

(4.) “It is said, that the Parliament being the supreme Judicatory of the Kingdom, wheresoever the King is in Person he is alway present with his Parliament in Power; as what is done in Courts of Justice is not done without the King, but by him, though not personally present. But we deny the King to be always present with his Parliament in Power, for then his actual Royal Assent would not be necessary to the making of Laws, but only a virtual Assent included in the Votes of both Houses: The Houses need not then desire the Royal Assent, nor can the King be supposed to have a negative Voice. Besides, the Statute which provides, that the King’s Assent to any Bill signified under his Great Seal shall be as valid as if he were personally present, imports, that the King’s Power is not present with his two Houses, otherwise than it appears in his Person, or under his Great Seal. As to the Analogy of other Courts we conceive it of no Consequence; in other Courts the Judges are the King’s Servants, and do all in his Name, and by his Authority; they sit there not by any proper Interest of their own, but in Right of the King, whose Judges they are; but the Parliament is the King’s Council, and have their several proper Rights and Interests distinct from the King’s, by virtue of which they
“are

King Charles I. 1647. " are distinct Orders and Conservators of their several Interests. Besides, the Judges of other Courts are bounded by the Laws in being, and therefore the King's personal Presence is not necessary; but the Case is quite different in making new Laws, for the making of new Laws is the Exercise of a *Legislative* rather than a *Judicial Power*; now, no Act of Legislative Power can be valid, unless it be confirmed by such Person or Persons as the Sovereignty of that Community resideth in. Upon the Whole, since all *Judicial Power* is radically in the King, who is therefore called the *Fountain of Justice*, it seems to us, that neither the Judges in inferior Courts, nor the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, may exercise any other Power over the Subjects of this Realm, than such as by their respective Patents and Writs issued from the King, or by the established Laws of the Land, formerly assented to by the Kings of this Realm, does appear to be derived from them; by which Writs, Patents, and Laws, it does not appear that the two Houses of Parliament have any Power without the King, to order, command, or transact; but only with him to treat, consult, and advise, concerning the great Affairs of the Kingdom."

Concerning the NEGATIVE OATH.

Objections to the Negative Oath. They say, " We cannot take it without giving up our Liberties, without abusing our natural Allegiance, and without Diminution of his Majesty's just Power and Greatness."

Ibid. p. 243.

Concerning the DISCIPLINE AND DIRECTORY.

And Directory. " We are not satisfied to submit to the Ordinance for establishing the *Directory*, because it has not the Royal Assent, and yet abrogates Acts of Parliament

Ib. p. 244.

King
Charles I.
1647.

“ liament made by the joint Consent of King, Lords
“ and Commons, especially one, which annexes the
“ whole Power of ordering all Ecclesiastical Matters
“ for ever to the Imperial Crown of this Realm;
“ now we are not satisfied that a less Power can
“ have a just Right to abrogate a greater.

“ If under the Title of *Discipline* be comprehended
“ the *Government* of the Church also, we declare,
“ we cannot consent to the Eradication of a Govern-
“ ment of such reverend Antiquity, which has from
“ Time to Time been confirmed by the Laws of the
“ Kingdom, and which the Kings at their successive
“ Coronations have sworn to preserve. If the Word
“ *Discipline* be distinguished from *Government*, as in
“ the first Article of the *Covenant*, yet are we not
“ satisfied to place so much Power in the Hands of
“ Persons (many of whom may be of mean Quality)
“ for the keeping back Thousands of well meaning
“ Christians from the blessed Sacrament, when Saint
“ *Paul*, in a Church abounding with sundry Errors,
“ and Corruptions in Faith and Manners, satisfies
“ himself with a general Declaration of the Danger
“ of unworthy communicating, and enjoins every
“ particular Person a *Self-Examination*, without em-
“ powering either Ministers or Lay-Elders to ex-
“ clude any from the Communion upon their Exa-
“ mination.

“ As to the *Directory* it self, we cannot, without
“ regret of Conscience, and during the Continuance
“ of the present Laws, consent to the taking away
“ the *Book of Common Prayer*, which we have subscri-
“ bed, and solemnly promised to use no other, which
“ we believe contains in it nothing but what is just-
“ ly defensible; and which we think our selves able
“ to justify against all Papists and Sectaries. Besides,
“ we look upon the Statute enjoining the Use of the
“ *Common Prayer* to be still in force, and will always
“ remain so, ’till it shall be repealed by the same
“ good and full Authority by which it was made;
“ that

King Charles I. "that is, by the free Consent of King, Lords and Commons."

1647.

Remarks.

By comparing these Reasons with those of the Parliament Divines for taking the *Covenant*, the Reader will be capable to judge of their Force. If the Constitution had been entire, and the Laws had their free and ordinary Course, as in Times of Peace, most of them would have been conclusive; but how far the Justice of the War, and Self-Defence, will vindicate the extraordinary Proceedings of the Parliament, must be left to every one's Judgment. I am no Advocate for the Particulars of the *Covenant* no more than for the high and arbitrary Principles of Government, contained in the *University's Reasons*. The Consciences of Men are not under the Direction of their *Wills*, and therefore ought not to be obliged by *Oaths*, or *Protestations*, or *Covenants*, to attempt those Things in Matters of Religion for which their *own Hearts* must condemn them. Religion and Civil Government stand upon a distinct Basis; the Magistrate may demand Security for Men's peaceable Submission to the Government they live under, but ought not to force them to be active against the Light of their Consciences. But the University Reasons are not built upon these Principles; for those Gentlemen were as much for the Coercive Power of the Magistrate in Matters of Conscience as the Puritans; I shall therefore only remark, that whereas they say, *the Allegiance of the Subject, and the Protection of the King, are not Relatives; and that the King's Inability to discharge his Duty does not absolve the Subject from his*, that upon these Principles the Crown can never be forfeited; a Coronation Oath is of very little significance; nor may a Nation submit to a Conqueror when they can resist no longer. Inability alone in the Prince may not in all Cases absolve us from our Allegiance, but Tyranny, Oppression, and Overt Attempts to subvert the whole Constitution and Laws of the Country, certainly may: Upon what other Principles can we justify the late Revolution, and the

Proq-

Protestant Succession. When the *Oxford* Divines had taken the Oath of Allegiance to King *James II.* and the Corporation Oath, which says, *It is not lawful to resist, or take up Arms against the King upon any Pretence whatsoever*; what could absolve them from these Oaths, or justify their joining the *Prince of ORANGE* with a foreign Force against a King upon the Throne? King Charles I.
1647.

However, this Act of the University was a bold and adventurous Attempt at this Time, for which they had afterwards the Congratulations of the *Oxford* Parliament in the Year 1665. when it was resolved, "That the Thanks of the House of Commons be returned to the Chancellor, Masters, and Scholars, of the University of *Oxford*, for their bold Opposition to the rebellious Visitors; for refusing to submit to their *League and Covenant*; and Lastly, For the illustrious Performance they printed, entitled, *The Judgment of the University*, &c. in which they have learnedly maintained the King's Cause." This was the fashionable Doctrine of King CHARLES the Second's Reign, when the Laws were suspended, and arbitrary Power in the Prince rose up to such a Height as occasioned a Revolution of Government in the next Reign. The University of *Oxford* did all they could to support it, for in the Year 1683. they passed a Decree in full Convocation, affirming the Necessity of Passive-Obedience and Non-Resistance in the strongest Terms; but how soon were the Tables turned! when within five Years these very Gentlemen thought fit to enter into an Association to stand by the Prince of ORANGE against the King that was then upon the Throne, and have since had the Mortification to see their Decree burnt by the Hands of the common Hangman.

To return to the Visitation, May 15. a Citation^{visitation} was issued in the Names of Ten of the Visitors then in^{open'd.} London, to the Proctors, and Heads of Houses, or^{Suff. Cler.} their Vice-Principals, requiring them, and all the^{p. 127.} Officers, Scholars, &c. to appear in the Convocation-House, on Friday June 4. between the Hours of
Nine

King
Charles I.

1647.

University
use the Vi-
sitors ill,
and will
not sub-
mit.

Nine and Eleven in the Morning, and to bring with them a List of the several Names of those that were absent, and of the Colleges to which they belonged. At the Time appointed the Reverend Mr. *Harris*, Mr. *Reynolds*, Mr. *Rogers*, Mr. *Henry Wilkinson*, Mr. *Cheyne*, Mr. *John Wilkinson*, Mr. *Dunce*, and Mr. *Diaper*, &c. open'd the Visitation with Prayers and a Sermon at St. Mary's Church, from whence they proceeded to the Convocation-House, where the Vice-Chancellor [Dr. *Fell*] and a few of the Scholars, had been waiting for some Time; but perceiving the Visitors were like to out-stay the precise Hour of Citation, he ordered the Sexton to set the Clock exactly with the Sun, and as soon as it struck Eleven he dismissed the Scholars, and marched away with the *Beadles* before him; the Visitors met them in their Return at the *Proscholium*, where the Passage being narrow, the *Beadle* cried out, *Make way for Mr. Vice-Chancellor*, which the Visitors did. And the Vice-Chancellor having moved his Hat, as he passed by, said, *How do ye, Gentlemen, 'tis past Eleven a Clock*. But the Visitors went forward, and having consulted about an Hour upon the Vice-Chancellor's Behaviour resolved to adjourn till *Michaelmas*, and return to *London*, in order to obtain further Powers from the Parliament. In the mean Time Dr. *Fell* summoned a Committee of the Heads of the several Colleges, who came to the following Resolutions.

1. That no Man should appear before the Visitors unless the Summons had Five Names.
2. That no one should appear upon an *Holy Day*.
3. That he should demand by what Authority he was summoned; and if denied an Answer should presently depart.
4. That if they declared their Authority he should answer with a *salvis juribus Regni, Academicæ & Collegii*, &c.

5. That

5. That he should demand his Accufation in Writing, as alfo Time to put in his Answer, and should return it in Writing, and no otherwife.

King
Charles I.
1647.

Laſtly, That he ſhould utterly reſuſe to Answer on Oath, becauſe that would be to accuſe himſelf, and would plainly revive the Oath *Ex Officio*.

Such was the ſtout Behaviour of theſe few Acade-Suff. Cler. micks, “ who (according to Dr. *Walker*) poured up-p. 12,
“ on the Viſitors all manner of Contempt and Scorn. 123, 128,
“ though they knew their very Lives and Fortunes &c.
“ were at their Diſpoſal. The Univerſity (ſays he)
“ held out a Siege of more than a Year and half; the
“ Convocation-Houſe proved a Citadel, and each
“ ſingle College a Fort not eaſy to be reduced,”
a ſurpriſing Inſtance of the Humanity of the Viſitors,
and an unanſwerable Demonſtration of the Neceſſity
of the Parliament’s diſpoſſeſſing them!

The Two Houſes having reſolved to ſupport their *Parlia-*
Viſitors, and enable them to go through their Work; *ment re-*
paſt an Ordinance, Aug. 26. empowering them “ to ad-*ſolve to*
“ miniſter the Covenant, and the Negative Oath; to de-*ſupport*
“ mand the Peruſal of the Statutes, Registers, Accompts, *their vi-*
“ &c. and of all other Papers of the Univerſity, and *lb. p. 128;*
“ of the reſpective Colleges and Halls; and to ſeize
“ and detain in Cuſtody any Perſon, who after a per-
“ ſonal Citation reſuſed to appear, and produce their
“ Books and Papers after a ſecond Citation; a Jury
“ was alſo to be impanell’d, of Members of the Uni-
“ verſity, above the Age of Twenty one, to en-
“ quire by Oath on the Articles contained in the Or-
“ dinance of Viſitation;” and a new Commiſſion
was drawn up by Mr. Attorney General *St. John*,
with the Great Seal affixed to it [*Sept. 27.*] autho-
riſing the Perſons above-named, to viſit the Univer-
ſity without any further Warrant; the Commiſſion
began in the uſual Form, *Charles, by the Grace of*
God, &c. to our truſty and well-beloved Sir Nath. Brent,
&c. Know ye, that we intending the Regulation and Re-
formation of our Univerſity of Oxford, &c. which was
very

King
Charles I.
1647.

very odd, considering the King was never consulted about the *Visitation*, nor consented to it ; but the Houses affected this Form, from a mistaken Supposition, that the King was always present with his Parliament in his legislative Capacity ; but it served no other Purpose than giving the Adversary an Opportunity to ridicule their Proceedings, and charge them with Forgery.

The *Visitation* reviewed.

Wood's
Antiq.
Oxon.
p. 382.

Furnish'd with these new *Powers* the Visitors returned to *Oxford* the latter End of *September*, the Mayor, Sheriffs, and other Magistrates, being commanded to aid and assist them as there should be occasion. On *Michaelmas* Day a Paper was fix'd to the Door of *University Church*, giving Notice, that the *Visitation* would now proceed *de die in diem*. Next Day a *Citation* was issued to all the Heads of Houses, requiring them to bring in their Statutes, Registers, Accompts, and all their publick Writings, to the Wardens Lodgings at *Merton College*. The *Vice-Chancellor* was ordered to appear at the same Time, to answer to such Questions, as should be demanded of him, and to send by the Hands of the Persons who served those Orders, all the Books and Acts belonging to the University. The *Proctors* were likewise enjoined to bring in their Books, Keys, and other publick Things in their Custody. But it is not enough to say (says the *Oxford Antiquary*) that every one of these Orders were disobeyed ; they were also despised and contemned. However, the *Vice-Chancellor* and Heads of Colleges condescended to appear at the second Summons, *October 6.* but instead of bringing their Books and Papers, they demanded to know, by what Authority they were summoned ? upon which the Visitors produced their Commission under the *Broad Seal*, and at the same Time served them with a third Citation, to appear four Days after with their Books and Papers, or with their Reasons in Writing why they refused so to do. Next Day they sent for the Keys of the *Convocation-House* and *School*, and for the *Beadles Staves*, but they were denied. The Day following the *Proctors* appeared,

The University will not submit.

appeared, and delivered a Protestation, attested by a publick Notary, in the Name of the Vice-Chancellor, Delegates, and all the Scholars, to this Purpose, that
 “ they could not own any Visitor but the *King*, and
 “ that having sworn to maintain his Right, they
 “ could not, without Perjury submit themselves to
 “ this Visitation, wherewith they desire them to ac-
 “ quaint the Parliament.” Upon this Dr. *Fell* the Vice-Chancellor, the very same Day, was deprived of his Vice-Chancellorship, and publick Notice was given to the Proctors, and other Officers of the University, not to obey him any longer under that Character; but the Doctor, without Regard to his Deprivation, or to the Prorogation of the Term, which the Visitors had adjourn’d from the 10th to the 15th Instant, proceeded on the 11th to hold a Congregation, and open the Term as usual; whereupon he was taken into Custody, and some Time after, by Order of Parliament brought to *London*; immediately upon which Dr. *Potter*, President of *Trinity College*, order’d the *Beadles* with their Staves to attend him as *Pro-Vice-Chancellor*. November 2d and 4th the several Heads of Colleges then present appeared before the Visitors, but *without their Statute Books and Papers*, and being called in severally, were asked in their Turns, Whether they approved of the *Judicium* Suff. Cleri;
Universitatis; or the *Reasons of the University* above-p. 130.
mentioned? Whether they own’d the Power of the Visitors?
 Or whether they approved of the *Answer of the Proctors in the Name of the whole University?* And refusing to give a direct Answer they were served with a Citation to appear before the *Committee for Reformation of the University at Westminster* the 11th Instant, which they did accordingly, and having owned their Approbation of the Answer of the *Proctors* in the Name of the University, they tender’d a Paper to the *Committee* in the Name of all that had been cited, setting forth, “ That what they had done was not out of
 “ Obstinacy, but from Conscience; and praying,
 “ that

King Charles I. "that in an Affair of so much Consequence they might be allowed Time to advise with Council."

1647.

They are heard by their Council.

Their Request being readily granted two Gentlemen of the Long Robe of their own Nomination (*viz.*) Mr. HALE and Mr. CHUTE, were appointed their Council. The Day of Hearing was *December 9.* the Position they offered to maintain was, that *it was one of the Privileges of the University to be subject ONLY to a Royal Visitation*; the Council for the University made

Eccl. Hist. a p. 766.

a learned Argument upon this Head; but, as Mr. Collier observes, this Question had been debated before the King and Council in the Year 1637. when Archbishop Laud claimed a Right of visiting the two Universities *jure Metropolitico*. It was then admitted, that the King might visit when he pleased, but after a full Hearing his Majesty, with the Advice of his Council, declared and adjudged the Right of Visiting both Universities, as Universities, to belong to the Archbishop, and Metropolitcal Church of Canterbury, by themselves or Commissaries, and that the Universities should from Time to Time be obedient thereunto. Which Determination of his Majesty, the Archbishop moved might be drawn up by Council learned in the Law, and put under the Broad Seal to prevent Disputes for the future, which was accordingly done; the University therefore lost their Question in the Committee. The Council for the Visitors were further of Opinion, that the *Kingly Power was always virtually present with his great Council of Parliament*, and that therefore they might visit; but supposing this to be a Mistake, they affirmed, that the Parliament had an undoubted Right to reform the University by the *Articles of Capitulation*, in which they had expressly reserved this Power to themselves. After a full Hearing on both Sides the Committee voted, that *the Answer of the several Heads of Houses, and of others of the University, was derogatory to the Authority of Parliament*.

But are cast.

It et. to Mr. S. then. Suff. Cler. p. 130.

The Oxford Divines not satisfied with this Determination appealed soon after to the Publick, in a Letter

to

to the learned Mr. Selden, Burgeſs for the Univerſity, King Charles I. 1647. Vol Pamp. No 34. entitled, *The Caſe of the Univerſity of Oxford*; or, the ſad Dilemma that all the Members thereof are put to, to be perjured or deſtroyed. The Letter ſays, “ that the only Queſtion propoſed by the Viſitors to “ every ſingle Perſon in the Univerſity is, *Whether* “ *he will ſubmit to the Power of the Parliament in this* “ *Viſitation?* To which they reply, that unleſs they “ have the perſonal Conſent of the King they can- “ not ſubmit to any Viſitation without danger of Per- “ jury, as appears by the Words of the Oath, which “ are, *You ſhall ſwear to obſerve all the Statutes, Liber-* “ *ties, Privileges, and Cuſtoms of the Univerſity*; to “ which the Scholar answers, *I ſwear*. Now it be- “ ing one of our Privileges to be viſited by none but “ the King, or by the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, “ the Archbiſhop being dead, it follows, we can be “ viſited by none but the King; to ſubmit therefore “ to another Viſitation muſt be a Breach of our Li- “ berties, and conſequently downright Perjury. “ They urged further, the Statutes of their ſeveral “ Colleges, which bind them to certain Rules in “ their Electing of Proctors, in the Calling and “ Meeting of Convocations, in the Choice of ſeveral “ Officers in Caſe of a Vacancy, all which, inſtead “ of being referr’d to the Members of the Univer- “ ſity, is now done by the arbitrary Power of the “ Viſitors. Nothing (ſay they) can be alledg’d in “ Answer to this, but the pretended ſovereign Pow- “ er of the two Houſes to make and aboliſh Laws, “ which We abſolutely diſbelieve. Upon the “ Whole, they appeal to *any Divine*, whether they “ ought to ſubmit to the Viſitation as long as they “ believe their Oaths to be in full Force, and are “ confident, that the Two Houſes cannot diſpenſe “ with them? And conſequently, Whether they “ ought to be turned out of their Freeholds on this “ Account?” But this Reaſoning was thought too weak to deſerve any further Answer.

King The COMMITTEE at *London* having waited to the
Charles I. End of the Month of *December*, to see if any of the
 1647. Heads of Colleges would submit, voted Dr. *Fell* out
Suff. Cler. of his *Deanry* of *Christ Church* for *Contumacy*; and
 p. 131. pass'd the same Sentence upon

Dr. *Oliver*, President of *Magdalen College*,
 Dr. *Potter*, ———— *Trinity*,
 Dr. *Bayly*, ———— *St. John's*,
 Dr. *Radcliffe*, Principal of *Brazen Nose*,
 Dr. *Gardner*,
 Dr. *Iles*, } Canons of *Christ Church*.
 Dr. *Morley*, }

Their stub- But when their Resolutions were sent to *Oxford*
born Beha- the proper Officers refused to publish them, and
viour. when they were pasted upon the Walls of the Colle-
 ges they were torn down, and trampled under foot;
 upon which the *Pro-Vice-Chancellor*, and the Two
 Proctors were ordered into Custody, but they ab-
 scounded, and Dr. *Oliver* assumed the Office of Pro-
 Whitlock, Vice-Chancellor. The Parliament provoked with
 p. 290. this Usage passed an Ordinance *Jan. 22. 1648.* con-
 stituting the Earl of *Pembroke* Chancellor of *Oxford*,
 and *March 8.* they ordered him to repair thither in
 Person, to support the Visitors, and place the sever-
 al Persons whom the Committee had chosen, in the
 respective Chairs of those they had ejected.

E. of Pem- April 11. the Chancellor made his publick Entrance
broke into the City, attended with a great Number of Cler-
Chancellor gy, and Gentlemen of the Country, and about one
visits in Hundred Horse out of *Oxford* it self; the Mayor
Person. welcomed him at his Entrance into the City with a
 congratulatory Speech; and when he came to his
 Lodgings Mr. *Button*, one of the new Proctors, made
 a Speech to him in *Latin*, but not one of the Heads
 of Colleges came near him; the *Insignia* of the Uni-
 versity were not to be found, and the Scholars treat-
 ed the Chancellor and his Retinue with all that Rude-
 ness

ness they had been taught to express towards all that ^{King} adhered to the Parliament. ^{Charles I.}

Next Morning the *Earl*, attended with a Guard of ^{1647.} Soldiers, went to *Christ Church*, and having in vain ^{His Pro-} desired Mrs. *Fell*, the Dean's Wife, to quit the ^{ceedings.} Lodgings peaceably, he commanded the Soldiers to ^{Suff. Cler.} break open the Doors, and carry her out in a ^{P. 133.} Chair into the Middle of the Quadrangle; he then put the new elected Dean, Mr. *Reynolds*, afterwards Bishop of *Norwich* into Possession; from thence his Lordship, with the Visitors, went to the Hall, and having got the *Buttery Book*, struck out Dr. *Fell's* Name, and inserted that of Mr. *Reynolds*; the like they did by Dr. *Hammond* Sub-Dean, and publick Orator; by Dr. *Gardner*, Dr. *Rayne*, Dr. *Wall*, Dr. *Iles*, and Dr. *Morley*, placing in their stead Mr. *Corbet*, who was made publick Orator; Mr. *Rogers*, Mr. *Mills*, Mr. *Cornish*, Mr. *Henry Wilkinson*, sen. and Mr. *Langley*; Dr. *Sanderson* being spared because he was out of Town when the last Summons was issued.

In the Afternoon they held a Convocation, which ^{Rushw.} was opened with an elegant *Latin* Oration, pro- ^{P. 1064.} nounced by Mr. *Corbet* their new Orator. When the *Chancellor* had taken the Chair in the Convocation-House he declared Mr. *Reynolds* Vice-Chancellor, who took an Oath to observe the Statutes and Privileges of the University, subject to the Authority of Parliament. Mr. *Button* and Mr. *Crofs* were ^{Suff. Cler.} declared Proctors, and all Three returned their ^{P. 133.} Thanks to the Chancellor in *Latin* Speeches. At ^{134.} this Convocation Degrees were conferr'd upon divers learned Men. Mr. *Chambers*, Mr. *Callicott*, and Mr. *Harris*, were made Doctors of Divinity; Mr. *Palmer* Doctor of Physick; Mr. *J. Wilkins*, [afterwards Bishop,] Mr. *Langley*, Mr. *Cornish*, and Mr. *Cheyne*, Bachelors of Divinity; the young Earl of *Carnarvan*, the Chancellor's two youngest Sons, and several other Gentlemen, Masters of Arts.

King
Charles I
1647.

Next Morning, *April 13.* the Chancellor and Visitors, with a Guard of Musquetiers, went to *Magdalen College*, and having broke open the Doors of the President's Lodgings [*Dr. Oliver*] who was out of the Way, they gave *Dr. Wilkinson* Possession. In the Afternoon they went to *All-Souls*, where *Dr. Sheldon*, the Warden appeared, but refusing to submit, went back to his Lodgings and lock'd the Doors, which being broke open, the Doctor was taken into Custody for his Contempt, and *Dr. Palmer* put in his Place; from thence they went to *Trinity College*, and having broke open the Lodgings, *Dr. Harris* was put into Possession in the Room of *Dr. Potter*. In like manner they put *Dr. Cheynel* into Possession of *St. John's* in the Room of *Dr. Bayly*; *Mr. Wilkins* into the Presidentship of *Wadham College* in the Room of *Dr. Pit*; and *Mr. Greenwood* into *Brazen Nose College* in the Room of *Dr. Radcliffe*, allowing each of them a Month's Time to remove their Effects. But some of the Students of *Christ's Church* having got the *Buttery Book*, impudently cut out the Names of those whom the Visitors had inserted; so that they were forced to return next Day and write over again the Names of their new Dean and Canons. The Heads of Colleges being thus placed in their several Stations the Chancellor took leave of the University, and returned to *London*; and having reported his Conduct to the Two Houses *April 21.* received their Thanks.

Suff. Cler.
p. 134.

Reports
the Behaviour
of the
University
to the Par-
liament.

But *Dr. Wilkinson*, sen. and *Mr. Cheynel*, who came to Town with the Chancellor, having represented to the Parliament, that the Fellows, Scholars, and under Officers, still refused to submit to their Orders, it was resolved, " That the Visitors should cite all
" the Officers, Fellows, and Scholars, before them,
" and that such as refused to appear, or upon Ap-
" pearance did not submit, should be suspended from
" their Places, and their Names returned to the
" Committee, who were authorized to expel them the
" University; and the new Heads (on Signification of
" such

It. p. 134.

“ such Sentence from the Committee) in Conjunction with the Visitors, were empowered to put others in their Places. They resolved further, that the *Bursars* should make no Dividend of Money till they had Orders from the Committees; and that the Tenants should pay their Rents to none but the *Heads* appointed by the Authority of Parliament.” But the *Bursars* absconded and were not to be found.

King
Charles I.
1647.

By virtue of these Orders the Visitors cited the *Numbers* Fellows, Scholars of Houses, Gentlemen Common-ejected. ers, and Servitors, to appear before them at several Times; the only Question that was asked them was, *Will you submit to the Power of the Parliament in this Visitation?* To which they were to give their Answer in writing, and were accordingly continued or displaced. Great Numbers were absent from the Life of University, and did not appear; Others disowned the *Mr. Phil.* Power of the Parliament at first, and afterwards submitted, but the main Body stood it out to the last: *Henry.* Dr. *Walker* says, that one Hundred and Eighty with-Suff. Cle drew; that of about six Hundred seventy six that ap-Part I. peared, five Hundred forty eight refused at first to P. 135. own the Authority of the Visitation, but that after-Ibid. wards many submitted, and made their Peace. In-Part II. p. 138, another Place he supposes one Fourth submitted; and 139. makes the whole Number of Fellows and Scholars deprived to amount to three Hundred seventy five; and then by a List of new Elections in some following Years, reduces them to three Hundred fifty six; but then considering that some may have been omitted, he guesses the Whole to be about four Hundred. The *Oxford Historian*, Mr. *Wood*, says, the Number of them that did not submit was about three Hundred thirty four, but that they were not presently expell'd; for though the Visitors were obliged to return their Names to the Committee, and were empowered to expel them, yet they deferr'd the Execution of their Powers, in hopes that Time

King
Charles I.
1647.

might bring them to a Compliance; which 'tis very likely it did, because it appears by the Register, that in the Eight following Years, *i. e.* between the Years 1648 and 1656. there were no more than three Hundred ninety six new Elections, which, considering the many Deaths and Removals that happened within that compass of Time, must suppose the *Deprivations* at this Time to be not very considerable; but if their Numbers had been much greater than they really were, the Parliament were obliged, in their own Defence, to dispossess them.

Insolence of
the Scho-
lars.

But the few Scholars that remained in the University treated the Visitors with insufferable Rudeness; scurrilous and invective Satyrs, equal if not superior in Railery and ill Language, to *Martin Mar-Prelate*, and the rest of the *Brownistical* Pamphlets in the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, were scattered in the most publick Places of the City every Week; as *Mercurius Academicus*; *Pegasus*, or the *Flying Horse from Oxon*; *Pegasus taught to dance to the Tune of Lachrymæ*; *News from Pembroke and Montgomery, or Oxford Manchester'd*. *The Owl at Athens*; or, *the Entrance of the Earl of Pembroke into Oxford April 11*. *The Oxford Tragi-Comedy*, in heroick Latin Verse. *Lord have Mercy upon us*; which is the Inscription put upon Houses that have the Plague; and a great many others; which the Visitors took no further Notice of, than to forbid the Booksellers to print or sell the like for the future. If the Puritans had published such Pamphlets against the Exorbitancies of the High Commission Court in the late Times, the Authors or Publishers must have lost their Ears, as the *Brownists* did their Lives in the latter End of Queen *Elizabeth*; and surely, the University might have preserved their Loyalty without offering such unmannerly Provocations to Gentlemen who were willing to behave towards them with all Gentleness and Moderation.

The Visitors being informed that an Insurrection was designed among the Scholars in favour of the King, and in Concert with the Loyalists in other Parts of the Kingdom, acquainted the commanding Officers of the Garrison, who gave immediate Orders to search the Colleges for Arms; and on the 26th of May, 1648. the Visitors ordered all the Members of the University to give a peremptory Answer in writing within seven Days, *Whether they would submit to the Authority of the Parliament in this Visitation or no?* And that none should depart the University without leave from the *Pro-Vice-Chancellor*. The Day following both Houses of Parliament pass'd an Order, "That for as much as many Doctors, and other Members of the University, notwithstanding the Example that had been made of some of them, did still persist in their Contempt of the Authority of Parliament, which might be of dangerous Consequence, therefore the Committee for Reforming the University should have Power to send for them under the Custody of a Guard and commit them to Prison." When this Order came to Oxford the Visitors declared, that whosoever should not plainly, and without Reserve, declare his Submission to the Visitation, should be deemed as flatly denying the Authority of it, and be taken into Custody; and that whosoever laid Claim to any Place in the University should within Fifteen Days declare his Submission or be deprived; accordingly, at the Expiration of the Time, such as did not appear were deprived of their Fellowships, and expelled the University: But still the Scholars would not remove, being too stubborn to be turn'd out of their Colleges by Votes at London, or Papers and *Programma's* at Oxford. The Visitors therefore, after having waited above Six Months, were obliged to proceed to the last Extremity; and July 5. 1648. ordered a Serjeant, attended with some Files of Musquetiers, to publish by Beat of Drum before the Gates of the several

King
Charles I.
1647.

Garrison
search the
Colleges for
Arms.

Suff. Cler.
p. 137.

Scholars
expell'd.

King
Charles I.
1647.

several Colleges, that “if any of those who had been expell’d by the Visitors should presume to continue any longer in the University they should be taken into Custody, and be made Prisoners by the Governor.” But this not taking Effect, the *Oxford* Historian adds, that Four Days after they published a further Order by Beat of Drum before the Gate of every College, “That if any one who had been expell’d did presume to tarry in the Town, or was taken within Five Miles of it, he should be deemed as a Spy, and punished with Death.” And to fortify this Order *General Fairfax*, who was then in the Field, gave publick Notice, that he would proceed accordingly with such as did not depart in Four Days, unless they obtained leave from the Vice-Chancellor and Visitors to continue longer. This cool’d their Courage, and prevailed with the young Gentlemen to retire. Thus the University of *Oxford* was cleared of the Royalists, and the Visitors at liberty to fill up their Vacancies in the best manner they could; in all which one cannot tell which most to admire, the unparallel’d Patience and Forbearance of a victorious Parliament for almost two Years, or the stubborn Perverseness and provoking Behaviour of a few Academicks, against a Power that could have batter’d their Colleges about their Ears, and buried them in their Ruins in a few Days.

Heads of
Colleges
that sub-
mitted and
kept their
Places.

About Ten of the old Heads of Colleges, and Professors of Sciences, submitted to the Visitors, and kept their Places, and about Nineteen or Twenty were expell’d. Those that submitted were,

Dr. Langbain, <i>Provost of Queen’s</i> —	} College,
Dr. Hood, <i>Rector of Lincoln</i> ———	
Dr. Saunders, <i>Provost of Oriel</i> ———	
Dr. Hakewell, <i>Rector of Exeter</i> ———	
Sir Nath. Brent, <i>Warden of Merton</i>	
Dr. Zouch, <i>Principal of Alban Hall</i>	
Dr. Lawrence, <i>Master of Baliol</i> ———	

Dr.

Dr. Pocock, *Arabick Professor*,
 Dr. Clayton, *Anatomy Professor*,
 Mr. Philips, *Musick Professor*.

King
 Charles I.
 1647.


The following Characters of these Gentlemen, with *Their Characters* those that were ejected, and their Successors, I have taken for the most part, from Writers that can never be suspected of Partiality in favour of the Puritans.

Dr. Gerard Langbain, Provost of *Queen's College*, Dr. Langbain. was a great Ornament to his College; he was elected Keeper of the Archives, or Records of the University, being in general Esteem for his great Learning Wood's Athen. Vol. II. and Honesty. He was an excellent Linguist, an p. 220. able Philosopher and Divine, a good common Lawyer, a publick spirited Man, a Lover of Learning and learned Men, beloved of Archbishop *Usher*, *Selden*, and the great *Goliaths* of Literature. He was also an excellent Antiquary, indefatigable in his Studies, and of immense Undertakings. He died *Feb. 10. 1658.* and was buried in the inner Chapel of *Queen's College*.

Dr. Paul Hood, Rector of *Lincoln College*, had Dr. Hood. been many Years Governor of this House, and continued in it, through all Changes, till his Death; he Wood's Fasti. p. 127. was Vice-Chancellor of the University in the Year 1660. when he conformed to the Established Church, and died in the Year 1668.

• Dr. John Saunders, Provost of *Oriel College*, dis- Dr. Saunders. owned the Authority of the Visitors at first, but afterwards complied; for as Dr. Walker observes, Walker, p. 131. there was no other Provost till after his Death, which was in the Year 1652.

Dr. George Hakewell, Rector of *Exeter College*, had Dr. Hakewell. been Chaplain to Prince Charles, and Archdeacon of *Surry*; upon the Promotion of Dr. Prideaux to the See Walker, p. 114. of *Worcester* he was chosen Rector of this College, but resisted little there, for all the Time of the Wars he retired to his Rectory of *Heanton* in *Devon*, where he lived a retired Life, and died in *April 1649.* He was (says Dr. Walker) a great Divine, a very good Philosopher, and a noted Preacher.

Sir

King
Charles I. Sir *Nathaniel Brent*, Warden of *Merton College*,
 1647. was Probationer Fellow, in the Year 1594. and
 Proctor of the University in 1607. he afterwards tra-
Sir Nath. velled into several Parts of the learned World, and
Brent. underwent dangerous Adventures in *Italy* to procure
Athen. the History of the Council of *Trent*, which he transla-
Oxon. ted into *English*, and therefore, says *Mr. Wood*, de-
 p. 167. serves an honourable mention. By the Favour of
 Archbishop *Abbot* he was made Commissary of the
 Diocese of *Canterbury*, and Vicar-General to the
 Archbishop, being Doctor of Laws, and at length
 Judge of the Prerogative. In 1629. he was knighted
 at *Woodstock*, but upon the Breaking out of the Civil
 Wars he took part with the Parliament, for which
 Reason he was ejected his Wardenship of this College,
 but restor'd again when it came into the Parliament's
 Hands in 1646. He was one of the Visitors of the
 University, and was a very learned and judicious Ci-
 vilian. He resigned his Wardenship in the Year
 1650. and died at *London* in 1652. after he had lived
 Seventy nine Years.

Dr. Zouch. Dr. *Richard Zouch*, L. L. D. Principal of *Alban*
Athen. *Hall*, was of noble Birth, and served in Parliament
Oxon. for the Borough of *Hylb* in *Kent*. He was Chancellor
 p. 255. of the Diocese of *Oxon*, Principal of *St. Alban Hall*,
 1625. and at length Judge of the high Court of Ad-
 miralty; he was an exact Artist in his Profession;
 a subtle Logician, an expert Historian, and for the
 Knowledge and Practice of the Civil Law the chief
 Person of his Time. As his Birth was noble (says
Mr. Wood) so was his Behaviour and Discourse; and
 as he was personable and handsome, so naturally
 sweet, pleasing, and affable: He kept his Principal-
 ship and Professorship till his Death, which happen'd
 March 1. 1661.

Dr. Law- Dr. *Tho. Lawrence*, Master of *Baliol College*, and
rence. *Margaret Professor* of Divinity, had been Chaplain
Athen. to King *Charles I.* and Prebendary of *Lichfield*, and by
Oxon. the Interest of Archbishop *Laud* prefer'd to the
 p. 214. Master-

Mastership of this College in 1637. He submitted
 to the Authority of the Visitors, and had a Certi-
 ficate under their Hands, dated *August 3. 1648.*
 wherein they attest, *That he had engaged to observe the*
Directory in all Ecclesiastical Administrations, to preach
practical Divinity to the People, and to forbear preaching
any of those Opinions that the reformed Church had con-
demned. Dr. Walker says, he resigned all his Pre-Suff. Cler.
 ferments in the University in the Year 1650. but P. 100.
 does not say upon what Occasion; only, that he grew
 careless, and did much degenerate in his Life and
 Manners; that he died in the Year 1657. but that if
 he had lived three Years longer he would, notwith-
 standing, have been consecrated an *Irish* Bishop.

The Professors of Sciences that submitted to the
 Visitors, and were continued, were,

Dr. Edward Pocock, Professor of the *Hebrew* and
Arabick Languages; one of the most learned Men
 of his Age, and justly admired at Home and Abroad
 for his great Skill in the Oriental Languages, and
 for many learned Works that he published. He
 was afterwards ejected from his Canonry of *Christ*
Church for refusing the *Engagement*, 1651. but was
 suffered to enjoy his Professorship of *Arabick* and
Hebrew; he conformed in the Year 1660. and lived
 in great Reputation till the Year 1691.

Thomas Clayton, M. D. King's Professor of *Ana-*
tomy; he kept his Place till the Year 1651. and
 then renounced it in favour of Sir William Petty.
 After the Restoration he was knighted, and made
 Warden of *Merton College* upon the Death of Bi-
 shop Reynolds in the Year 1676.

Mr. Arthur Philips, Professor of *Musick*, of whom
 I have met with no Account.

The Heads of Colleges ejected by the Visitors,
 with their Successors, may be seen in the following
 Table.

Heads

King
Charles I.
1647.

H^eads of
Colleges
ejected.

H^eads of Colleges
turned out.

Dr. Fell, Vice-
Chancellor, from

Dr. Pit, Warden of

Dr. Walker,
Dr. Radcliffe,
Dr. Sheldon,
Dr. Newlin,
Dr. Bayly,

Dr. Oliver,

Dr. Han. Potter,
Dr. Manfell,
Mr. Wightwick,
B. D.

Dr. Stringer,
Prof. Gr. Lang.

Colleges.

Deanry of Christ
Church,

Wadham College

University Coll.
Brazen Nose Coll.
All Souls Coll.
Corp. Christi Coll.
St. John's Coll.

Magdalen Coll.

Trinity Coll.
Jesus Coll.

Pembroke Coll.

New Coll.

Succeeded by.

Dr. Reynolds,
afterwards Bp.
of Norwich,

Dr. J. Wilkins,
afterwards Bp.
of Chester,

Dr. Joshua Hoyle,
Dr. D. Greenwood,
Dr. Palmer, M.D.
Dr. Ed. Staunton,
Dr. Cheynel,

Dr. John Wil-
kinson,
Dr. H. Wilkin-
son, jun. Princ.
of Magd. Hall,

Dr. Rob. Harris,
Dr. Mic. Roberts,

Dr. H. Langley,

Mr. Ch. Rogers,
Mr. Harmar,
Prof. Gr. Lang.

Professors of Scien-
ces turned out.

Dr. Rb. Sanderfon,
Mr. Birkenhead,
A. M.

Mr. Rob. Warin,
Dr. Jn. Edwards,
Dr. Turner, M. D.
Mr. Jn. Greaves,
A. M.

Dr. Hen. Ham-
mond,

Professorships.

Reg. Pr. of Div.

M. Philos. Prof.

Camb. Hist. Prof.
Nat. Phil. Prof.
Savil Prof. Geo.

Profess. Astron.

University Ora-
tor.

Succeeded by.

Dr. Crosse,
Dr. Henry Wil-
kinson, jun.

Dr. L. du Moulin,
Dr. Joshua Crosse,
Dr. John Wallis,

Dr. Ward, astw.
Bp. Salisbury,

Mr. Button, A.M.
Mr. Corbet, who
quitted.

Dr.

Dr. *Gilbert Sheldou*, Warden of *All Souls College*, was ejected *April 3. 1648.* and lived retired with his Friends in *Staffordshire* till 1659. when he was restored to his Wardenship upon the Death of Dr. *Palmer*. After the Restoration he was successively Bishop of *London*, Chancellor of *Oxford*, and Archbishop of *Canterbury*; he built the noble Theatre at *Oxford*, and did a great many other Works of Charity, but never gave any great Specimens of his Piety or Learning to the World.

King Charles I.
1647.
Their Cha-
racters.
Dr. Shel-
don.
Walker's
Suff. Cler.
p. 98.

Dr. *Samuel Fell*, Vice-Chancellor of the University, and Dean of *Christ Church*, dispossessed of his Deanry *April 12. 1648.* He gave the Visitors all the Disturbance he could, and was therefore taken into Custody for some Time, but being quickly released he retired to his Rectory of *Sunningwell* in *Berkshire*, where he died *Feb. 1. 1649.* He had been a Calvinist, but finding that was not the Way to Preferment he changed his Opinion, and after great Creepings and Cringings to Archbishop *Laud* (says Mr. *Wood*) he became his Creature, and if the Rebellion had not broke out, would, no doubt, have been a Bishop. He left no remarkable Specimens of his Learning behind him.

Dr. Fell
Walker,
p. 102.

Dr. *Samuel Radcliffe*, Principal of *Brazen Nose College*, was elected to this Headship 1614. and was in an infirm Condition when he was ejected for disowning the Authority of the Visitors, *April 13. 1648.* and died the *June* following. Neither Mr. *Wood* nor *Walker* say any Thing of his Learning, nor has he published any Thing that I know of to the World.

Dr. Rad-
cliffe.
Walker,
p. 101.

Dr. *Robert Newlin*, President of *Corpus Christi College*, and Pro-Vice-Chancellor in the Year 1648. He was restored to his Presidentship again in the Year 1660. and died in it 1687. But neither *Wood* nor *Walker* give any Character of him.

Dr. New-
lin.
Walker,
p. 111.

Dr. *Richard Bayly*, President of *St. John's College*, a Kinsman of Archbishop *Laud*, and one of his Executors; he had been President of this College Twenty

Dr. Bayly.
Walker,
p. 116.

Years

King Charles I. Years when he was ejected; but was restored again in 1660. and died at *Salisbury* 1667. He was Hospitable and Charitable, but very faulty (says *Mr. Wood*) in using some kind of Oaths in common Conversation. He published nothing that I know of to the World.

Dr. Oliver, Walker, *P. 122.* Dr. *John Oliver*, President of *Magdalen College*, had been domestick Chaplain to Archbishop *Laud*, and was a Man (says *Dr. Walker*) of great Learning and sound Principles in Religion, [that is of the Principles of the Archbishop] he was restored to his Preferments 1660. but died soon after *Octob. 27.* 1661.

Dr. Potter, Walker, *P. 133.* Dr. *Hannibal Potter*, President of *Trinity College*, elected 1643. and turned out with the rest that disowned the Authority of the Visitors, *April 13.* 1648. He afterwards accepted of a Curacy in *Somersetshire*, and was ejected for Insufficiency; but *Dr. Walker* says, it was because he used part of the Church Service. He was restored in 1660. and died in 1664.

Dr. Pitt, Walker, *P. 136.* Dr. *John Pitt*, Warden of *Wadham College*; elected *April 16.* 1644. after that City was garrisoned for the King; he behaved very refractorily towards the Visitors, and died soon after his Ejection.

Dr. Mansel, Dr. *Francis Mansel*, Principal of *Jesus College*, elected to this Principalship in the Year 1630. and ejected *May 22.* 1648. He was restored again in 1660. and died in 1665. having been a great Benefactor to his College.

Dr. Walker, *P. 114.* Dr. *Thomas Walker*, Master of *University College*, elected 1632. and dispossessed by the Visitors *July 10.* 1648. He was restored in the Year 1660. and died in 1665. He was related to Archbishop *Laud*, and was one of his Executors, and (according to *Lloyd*) a deserving modest Man, and a great Sufferer.

Mr. Wightwick, Walker, *P. 132.* Mr. *Henry Wightwick*, B. D. elected to the Mastership of *Pembroke College* in direct Opposition to the Order of Parliament, *July 13.* 1647. for which Reason

son he was soon after dispossessed. In the Year 1660 King Charles I. 1647. he was restored, but turned out again in 1664. for what Reasons Dr. Walker says he does not know. He died in *Lincolnshire* 1671.

Dr. Henry Stringer, elected to the Wardenship of *New College*, after the same Manner, in direct Opposition to the Visitors, Nov. 18. 1647. for which Reason he was deprived Aug. 1. 1648. He was Professor of the *Greek Language*, but resigned, and died at *London* 1657. Dr. Stringer. Walker, p. 127.

The Professors that were turned out by the Visitors were,

Dr. Robert Sanderson, Regius Professor of Divinity; a very learned Man, and an excellent Casuist; he was nominated one of the *Assembly of Divines*, but did not sit among them. He had a very considerable Hand in drawing up *the Reasons of the University against the Covenant, and the Negative Oath*. After his Ejection he retired to his Living at *Brothby*, where he continued preaching, though not without some Difficulties, till the Restoration, when he was preferr'd to the Bishoprick of *Lincoln*, and died 1662. Professors ejected Dr. Sanderson. Life of Sanderson by Walton,

Mr. John Birkenhead, A. M. Moral Philosophy Reader; he was employed by the Court to write the *Mercurius Aulicus*, a Paper filled with most bitter Invectives against the Parliament, for which he was rewarded with this Lectureship. After his Ejection he lived privately till the Restoration, when he was knighted, and chose Burgeſs in Parliament for the Borough of *Wilton*. He was also created L. L. D. and Master of the Faculties, and died in 1679. leaving behind him (according to *Wood*) a very sorry Character. Mr. Birkenhead. Athen. Ox. p. 639.

Mr. Robert Waring, *Camden History* Professor; he bore Arms for the King in the Garrison at *Oxford*, and was not elected to this Professorship till after the Visitation began: He was reckon'd (says *Wood*) Mr. Waring. Walker, p. 126. Athen. Ox. p. 143.

King among the Wits of the University, and was a good
Charles I. Poet and Orator. He died 1658.

1647. *John Edwards*, M. D. *Natural Philosophy* Lecturer ;
Dr. Ed- he behaved rudely towards the Visitors, and was
wards. therefore not only dispossessed of his Preferment, but
Walker, expell'd the University ; but neither *Wood* nor *Wal-*
p. 118. *ker* give any Character of him.

Dr. Tur- *Peter Turner*, M. D. *Savilian* Professor of *Geometry* ;
rer. he served his Majesty as a Voluntier under the Com-
Wood, mand of Sir *J. Byron*, and being a zealous Loyalist was
p. 125. expelled the University by the Visitors, after which he
 retired to *London*, and died 1650. He was a good Ma-
 thematician, well read in the Fathers, an excellent Lin-
 guist, and highly valued by Archbishop *Laud*.

Mr. *John Greaves*, A. M. Professor of *Astronomy*, was
Greaves. sent by Archbishop *Laud* to travel into the East-
Walker, ern Parts of the World to make a Collection of Books
p. 125. in those Languages. After his Return he was pre-
 ferr'd to this Professorship, but was ejected by the
 Visitors, and Nov. 9. 1648. expell'd the University,
 for sending the College Treasure to the King, and
 other Crimes of the like Nature. He died at *London*
 1652. with the Reputation of a good Scholar, and was
 well respected by Mr. *Selden*, and others.

Dr. Ham- *Dr. Henry Hammond*, University Orator, was a ve-
mond. ry learned Man, and a great Divine, highly esteem-
Vide ed by King *Charles I.* He assisted at the Treaty of
his Life. *Uxbridge*, and attended the King as his Chaplain
 when he was permitted. After his Ejectment he
 retired to the House of Sir *J. Packington* of *Worcester-*
shire, where he employed his Time in writing several
 valuable and learned Treatises in Defence of the
 Hierarchy of the Church of *England*, and in the
 Study of the New Testament. He died April 25.
 1660.

The Heads of Colleges who succeeded those that
 were ejected by Authority of Parliament, were

Dr.

Dr. *Edward Reynolds*, Vice-Chancellor of the University, and Dean of *Christ Church* in the Place of *Dr. Fell*; he was Probationer Fellow of *Merton College* in the Year 1620. which he obtained by his uncommon Skill in the *Greek Tongue*; he was a good Disputant and Orator, a popular Divine, and in great Esteem in the City of *London*, being Preacher to the Honourable Society of *Lincoln's Inn*. Mr. *Wood* confesses, he was a Person of excellent Parts and Endowments, of a very good Wit, Fancy and Judgment, and much esteemed by all Parties for his florid Stile. Sir *Tho. Brown* adds, that he was a Divine of singular Affability, Meekness, and Humility; of great Learning, a frequent Preacher, and a constant Resident. He conform'd at the Restoration and was made Bishop of *Norwich*, and died 1676.

Dr. *John Wilkins*, promoted to the Wardenship of *Wadham College* in the Place of *Dr. Pit.* He was educated in *Magdalen Hall*, and was Chaplain to *Charles Count Palatine* of the *Rhine*: A little before the Restoration he came to *London*, and was Minister of *St. Lawrence Jury*, and Preacher to the Society at *Lincoln's Inn*. Mr. *Wood* admits, that he was a Person of rare Gifts, a noted Theologist and Preacher, a curious Critick, an excellent Mathematician, and as well seen in Mechanism, and the new Philosophy, as any in his Time. In the Year 1656. he married the Sister of O. CROMWELL, then Lord Protector of *England*, and had the Headship of *Trinity College*, in *Cambridge*, conferr'd upon him, which is the best Preferment in that University. He was afterwards a Member of the *Royal Society*, to which he was a considerable Benefactor. Dr. *Burnet* says, that Bishop *Wilkins* was a Man of as great a Mind, as true a Judgment, of as eminent Virtue, and as good a Soul, as any he ever knew. Bishop *Tillotson* gives him the same Character; and several Members of the *Royal Society* acknowledge him to have been an Ornament to the University, and to the *English Nation*.

King tion. He was created Bishop of *Chester* in the Year
Charles I. 1668. and died of the Stone in the House of Dr. *Tillot-*
 1647. son 1672.

Dr. Hoyle. Dr. *Joshua Hoyle* preferr'd to the Headship of Uni-
Athen.Ox. versity College in the Room of Dr. *Walker*; he was
 p. 185. educated in *Magdalen Hall, Oxford*, but being invited
 into *Ireland* became Fellow of *Trinity College*, and
 Professor of *Divinity* in the University of *Dublin*. In
 the Beginning of the *Irish* Rebellion he came over to
England and was made *Vicar* of *Stepney*, a Member of
 the Assembly of Divines, and at length Master of this
 College, and King's Professor of *Divinity* in the
 Room of Dr. *Sanderfon*. Mr. *Wood* says, he was a
 Person of great Reading and Memory, but of less
 Judgment. He was exactly acquainted with all the
School Men, and so much devoted to his Book, that
 he was in a Manner a Stranger to the World; he was
 indefatigably industrious, and as well qualified for an
 Academick as any Person of his Time. He died
 1654.

Dr. Green- Dr. *Daniel Greenwood*, Principal of *Brazen Nose*
wood. College in the Room of Dr. *Radcliffe*; he had been
Wood's Fellow of the College for a considerable Time, and
Fell. had the Reputation of a profound Scholar and Di-
 p. 91. vine. Mr. *Wood* says, he was a severe and good Go-
 vernor, as well in his Vice-Chancellorship as in his
 Principallship; he continued in his College with an
 unspotted Character till the Restoration, when he
 was ejected by the King's Commissioners, after which
 he lived privately till 1673. when he died.

Dr. John Dr. *John Wilkinson* had been President of *Magdalen*
Wilkin- College before the Civil Wars, but when that Univer-
 son. sity was garrisoned by the King he fled into the Par-
 liament's Quarters, and was succeeded in his Presi-
 dentship by Dr. *Oliver*, about the Year 1643. but
 the Doctor not submitting to the Visitors was voted
 out of his Place April 13. 1648. and Dr. *Wilkinson* was
 restored. He was a learned and pious Man, but did
 not continue long in his Station.

Dr. Henry Wilkinson, jun. commonly called *Dean King Harry*, President of *Magdalen Hall*; he was a noted *Charles I.* Tutor, and Moderator in his College before the Be- *1647.* ginning of the Civil Wars, upon the Breaking out of *Dr. Henry Wilkin-* which he left *Oxford* and came to *London*, but when *son.* that City was surrender'd to the Parliament he return- *Athen. Ox.* ed to the University, and was created *D. D.* made *P 543.* *Principal* of his College, and *Moral Philosophy* Profes-
 sor in the Room of Mr. *Birkenhead*. Mr. *Wood* says, that he took all Ways imaginable to make his House flourish with young Students; that he was a frequent and active Preacher, and a good Disciplinarian, for which Reason the Heads of the University perswaded him earnestly to conform at the Restoration, that they might keep him among them, but he refused. After his Ejectment he suffered for his Non-Conformity, by Imprisonments, Mulcts, and the Loss of his Goods and Books; though according to the same Author, he was very courteous in Speech and Carriage, communicative of his Knowledge, Generous, Charitable to the Poor, and so Publick-spirited, that he always minded the common Good more than his own private Concerns. He published several learned Works, and died 1690. *Ætat.* Seventy four.

Dr. Robert Harris, President of *Trinity College* in *Dr Harris.* the Room of Dr. *Potter*, was educated in *Magda-* *Clark's* *lens Hall*, and had been a famous Preacher in *Oxford-* *Lives,* *shire* for about Forty Years; upon the Breaking out *P. 314.* of the War he came to *London*, where he continued till appointed one of the Visitors of the University, and Head of this College, over which he presided Ten Years, though he was now Seventy. He was a Person of great Piety and Gravity, an exact Master of the *Hebrew* Language, and well versed in Chronology, Church History, the Councils and Fathers. He governed his College with great Prudence, and gained the Affections of all the Students, who revered him as a Father, though he has been stigmatized by the Royalists as a notorious Pluralist. To

King
Charles I.
1647.

which the Writer of his Life replies, that whatever Benefices he might have been nominated to, he declared he did not receive the Profits of them. The Inscription upon his Tomb-Stone says, that he was *Præses æternum celebrandus; Perspicacissimus indolum scrutator, Potestatis Arbiter mitissimus, merentium Fautor integerrimus, &c.* He died 1658.

Dr Lang-
ley.

Wood's

Falti,

p. 66, 91.

Dr. Henry Langley, Master of *Pembroke College* in the Room of Mr. *Wightwick*, was original Fellow of his College, and made Master of it in 1647. He kept his Place till the Restoration, after which he set up a private Academy among the Dissenters; he was a solid and judicious Divine, and a frequent Preacher. He died 1679.

Dr. Chey-
nel.

Athen. Ox.

p. 358.

Dr. Francis Cheynel, President of *St. John's College* in the Room of Dr. Bayly, was Probationer Fellow of *Merton College* in the Year 1629. and afterwards Rector of *Petworth*, a Member of the Assembly of Divines, and this Year made President of that College, and *Margaret Professor* in the Room of Doctor *Lawrence*, both which he quitted after some Time for refusing the *Engagement*, and retired to his Living at *Petworth*, from whence he was ejected at the Restoration. He was a Person of a great deal of imprudent Zeal, as appears by his Behaviour at the Funeral of the great Mr. *Chillingworth*, already mentioned. Bishop *Hoadly* says, he was exactly Orthodox, and as Pious, Honest, and Charitable, as his Bigotry would permit; and Mr. *Eachard* adds, that he was of considerable Learning and great Abilities.

Dr. Ro-
berts.

Falti,

p. 71.

Dr. Michael Roberts, Principal of *Jesus College* in the Room of Dr. *Mansel*, was a good Scholar, and would, no doubt, have conformed at the Restoration, had he been enclined to have accepted any Preferment, but he had resigned his Principality into the Hands of the Protector, 1657. and being rich chose a private Life. He published a *Latin Elegy* upon General *Monk*, Duke of *Albemarle*, and died in *Oxford* 1679.

Dr.

Dr. *Edmund Staunton*, Principal of *Corpus Christi* College in the Room of Dr. *Newlin*, was admitted Fellow of this College 1616. and afterwards Minister of *Kingston upon Thames*. He took the Degrees in Divinity 1634. and was afterwards one of the Assembly of Divines. He kept his Principality till he was ejected by the King's Commissioners at the Restoration; he was a diligent popular Preacher, a good Scholar, and continued his Labours among the Non-Conformists till his Death, which happen'd 1671.

King
Charles I.
1647.
Dr. Staunton's Life
by *Mr. Mayo.*
Athen. Ox.
p. 484.

John Palmer, M. D. Warden of *All Souls* in the Room of Dr. *Sheldon*, had been Batchelor of *Physick* of *Queen's College*, and was now created M. D. in presence of the Chancellor; he was a learned Man, and held his Preferment till March 4. 1659. when he died. Upon his Death, there being a near Prospect of the Restoration, Dr. *Sheldon* was repossessed of his Wardenship.

Dr. Palmer.
Fasti.
p. 66.

Upon the Death of Dr. *Pink* the Visitors nominated old Mr. *White* of *Dorchester* to succeed him, but I think he refused it, being very much advanced in Years, and that it was conferr'd on Mr. *Christopher Rogers*, who was a Person of a Reverend Aspect, an excellent plain Preacher, and a very charitable Man, but of no great Parts; he was ejected at the Restoration, and lived afterwards privately to his Death.

Wood's
Fasti.
p. 68.

The Professors of Sciences who succeeded those that were ejected were,

New Professors.

Dr. *Seth Ward*, Professor of *Astronomy* in the Place of Dr. *Greaves*, and according to Mr. *Wood*, the most noted Mathematician and Astronomer of his Time; he was educated in *Sidney College, Cambridge*, and in the Year 1643. ejected for adhering to the King, but having afterwards changed his Mind he made Friends to the Committee for reforming the University of *Oxford*, and was appointed to this Preferment; he was afterwards Master of *Trinity College*, and soon after his Majesty's Restoration preferr'd first to

Dr. Ward.
ast. Bishop.
Athen. Ox.
p. 826.

King the Bishoprick of *Exeter*, and then to that of *Salisbury*, where he died, 1668.

Charles I.
1647.
Dr. *John Wallis*, *Savilian* Professor of *Geometry* in the Room of Dr. *Turner*; the Fame of this most learned Gentleman is well known to the World; he was of *Emanuel College, Cambridge*, and afterwards Fellow of *Queen's College* in the same University, then Minister of *St. Martin's Ironmonger-Lane, London*, one of the Scribes in the Assembly of Divines, and now, by the Appointment of the Committee, *Geometry Professor*; he conformed at the Restoration, and continued in his Place, an Ornament to the University, to a very old Age.

Dr. Du
Moulin.
Wood's
Fasti,
p. 72.
Dr. *Lewis du Moulin*, M. D. of the University of *Leyden, Cambrden* Professor of *History* in the Place of Mr. *Robert Wareing*, was incorporated in the same Degree at *Cambridge*, 1634. he was Son of the famous *Peter du Moulin*, the French Protestant, and kept his Pre-ferment till the Restoration, when he was turned out by his Majesty's Commissioners, and continued a Non-Conformist till his Death. He was a valuable and learned Man, as appears by his Writings; but Mr. *Wood* adds, he was a violent Independent, and ill-natured: He died in *London* 1680.

Dr. Crosse.
Calamy's
Abridg.
p. 58.
Dr. *Josua Crosse*, L. L. D. *Natural Philosopher* Reader in the Room of Dr. *Edwards*, and one of the Proctors of the University; he was Fellow of *Magdalen College*, and kept his Reader's Place till the Restoration, after which he lived privately in *Oxford* till 1676. when he died. He was a Gentleman much honoured for his becoming Conversation.

Mr. But-
ton.
Calamy's
Abridg.
p. 60.
Ralph *Button*, A. M. University Orator in the Room of Dr. *Hammond*, and one of the Proctors of the University, was originally of *Exeter College*, where he made so great a Progress in Philosophy, and other Literature, that when he was but Bachelor of Arts he was recommended by Dr. *Prideaux* to stand for a Fellowship in *Merton College*, and was accordingly chosen 1633. He was afterwards a noted Tutor in his

his House, but was obliged to leave *Oxford* in the Beginning of the Civil Wars because he would not bear Arms for the King. When the War was over he returned and took Pupils, and upon the Refusal of *Edward Corbet* was made *Canon* of *Christ Church*, and *University Orator*; he was ejected at the Restoration, and afterwards taught Academical Learning at *Islington*, near *London*, till 1680. when he died. He was an excellent Scholar, a most humble sincere Man, and a great Sufferer for Non-Conformity.

King
Charles I.
1647.

Mr. *John Harmar*, A. M. Professor of the Greek Language in the Room of Dr. *Stringer*, was educated in *Magdalen College*, and took his Degrees 1617. he was afterwards Master of the Free School at *St. Albans*, and one of the Masters of *Westminster School*; from thence he was removed to the Greek Professorship in this University. He was (says Mr. *Wood*) a great Philosopher, a tolerable *Latin* Poet, and one of the most excellent *Grecians* of his Time, but otherwise an honest weak Man. He was turned out at the Restoration, and afterwards lived privately at *Steven-ton* in *Hampshire* till the Year 1670. when he died.

Mr. Har-
mar.
Athen. Ox.
p. 478.

These were all the Changes that were made among the Heads of Colleges and Professors at this Time; and upon the whole, though it must be allowed, that many of the ejected Loyalists were Men of real Learning and Merit, 'tis certain, those that kept their Places, and the Successors of such as were ejected were Men of equal Probity and Virtue, and no less eminent in their several Professions, as appears by the Monuments of their Learning which several of them have left to the World.

The very Enemies of the new Heads of Colleges have confessed, that they were severe in the Government of their several Houses; that they kept a more than common Watch over the Morals of the Students, and oblig'd them to an exact Compliance with their Statutes. The Professors were indefatigable in instructing

Behaviour
of the new
Professors.

King
Charles I.
1647.

structing their Pupils both in publick and private ; Religion flourish'd more than before ; Drunkenness, Oaths, and Profanation of the Lord's Day, were banished ; strict Piety, and a Profession of Religion were in fashion ; the Scholars often met together for Prayer and religious Conference ; so that, as Mr. *Philip Henry*, who lived then in the University, observes, *If those of the old Spirit and Way were at first the better Scholars, these were the better Men.*

Remarks.

Walker's
Suff. Cler.
p. 140.

Let the Reader now judge of the Spirit and Candor of those Writers, who insinuate, “ that the new Professors could neither pronounce *Latin*, nor write *English* ; that in the Room of the ejected Loyalists there succeeded an illiterate Rabble, swept up from the Plough tail, from Shops and Grammar Schools, and the Dregs of the neighbouring University ; that the Muses were driven from their ancient Seats ; that all Loyalty, Learning, and good Sense, was banished ; and that there succeeded in their Room nothing but Barbarism, Enthusiasm, and Ignorance, till the Dawn of the Restoration.” Lord *Clarendon* was a declared Enemy to these Changes, and has painted them in the most frightful Colours, but the Force of Truth has obliged him to confess, that “ though it might have been reasonably expected, that this wild and barbarous Depopulation (as he calls it) would have extirpated all the Learning, Religion and Loyalty, which had flourished there, and that the succeeding ill Husbandry, and unskilful Cultivation, would have made it fruitful only in Ignorance, Profaneness, Atheism and Rebellion, yet by God's wonderful Providence that fruitful Soil could not be made Barren by all that Stupidity and Negligence ; it choaked the Weeds, and would not suffer the poisonous Seeds that were sown with Industry enough, to spring up, but after several tyrannical Governors mutually succeeding each other, and with the same Malice and Perverseness endeavouring to

“ extin-

King
Charles I.
1647.

“ extinguish all good Literature and Allegiance, it
 “ yielded an Harvest of extraordinary good Know-
 “ ledge in all Parts of Learning; and many who
 “ were wickedly introduced applied themselves to
 “ the Study of good Learning, and the Practice of
 “ Virtue, and had Inclinations to that Duty and
 “ Obedience they had never been taught, that when
 “ it pleased God to bring King *Charles II.* back to his
 “ Throne he found the University abounding in ex-
 “ cellent Learning, and devoted to Duty and Obe-
 “ dience little inferior to what it was before its Deso-
 “ lation.” Without remarking upon the ill-natured
 Satyr of this Paragraph, it must be acknowledged a
 noble Testimony to the Learning and Industry of the
new Professors, from the Pen of an Adversary; and
 with the same Justice it may be added, that the Uni-
 versity was in a much better Condition for Learning,
 Religion, and good Sense, at the Restoration, than
 before the Beginning of the Civil Wars, for all the
 great Philosophers and Divines of the Church of *Eng-
 land*, and others that flourished in the Reigns of King
Charles II. and King *William III.* owed their Educa-
 tion to these Professors, as the *Tillotsons, Stillingfleets,
 Patricks, Souths, Caves, Sprats, Kidders, Whitbys,
 Bulls, Boyles, Newtons, Lockes*, and others. The Uni-
 versity was in great Reputation in foreign Parts, and
 produced as many learned Performances as at any
 Time before. If then we admit, that the new Pro-
 fessors were not introduced into their Places in a le-
 gal Way, according to the Statutes, because of the
Necessity of the Times, 'tis certain, they proved wise
 and careful Governors, strict Observers of their Sta-
 tutes, and industrious Promoters of Learning and
 Piety; so far were they from deserving the infamous
 Characters of *ignorant, illiterate, hypocritical Block-
 heads, Enemies to the legal Constitution of their Country,*
 or of being any ways unworthy the Preferments they
 enjoyed in the University.

There

King
Charles I.
1647.
Vacancies
in the Uni-
versity fill-
ed up.

There were no doubt, at first, very considerable Vacancies in the several Colleges by these Removes; many of the Fellows and Scholars being dead, or killed in the King's Service, others having resigned their Places in the University for Benefices in the Church, besides those that were expell'd by the Visitors, already mentioned; but to supply the Defect of *Fellows* and *Tutors*, the Committee encouraged several learned Graduates in the University of *Cambridge* to translate themselves to *Oxford*, and accept of Preferments according to their Merits. Many that had fled from the University when it became a Garrison for the King, returned to their Colleges, and were promoted according to their Seniority. Great Numbers of Youth that had been kept at home because of the Wars were now sent to *Oxford* by their Parents, to perfect their Education; and if it be consider'd further, that there had been no Admissions from *Westminster*, *Eaton*, *St. Paul's*, *Merchant-Taylors*, and other publick Schools, for five or six Years past, it is not to be wonder'd that there was an unusual flow of Youth to the University at this Time, so that the Damage occasioned by this Revolution of Affairs was quickly repaired, Learning revived, and the Muses returned to their ancient Seats.

Causes of
the In-
crease of
Lay-
Preachers.

The long Interruption of Education in the University produced a very great Scarcity of orthodox and learned Ministers in the Countries, some being silenced for refusing the Covenant, and others dispersed, or killed in the Wars. Many Pulpits also were vacant by reason of the Scandal or Insufficiency of the Incumbents, which was one Occasion of the Increase of Lay-Preachers, for the Country People would go to hear any body rather than have no Sermons; besides, the Presbyterian Clergy would authorize none to preach but such as would take the *Covenant*, and consent to their Discipline. To remedy these Evils the Northern Counties petitioned the Houses to erect a new University in the City of *York*, but the Confusion of the

Re shw.
p. 854.

Times prevented their prosecuting the Design. The *King* *Charles I.* *1647.*
Independants, who were less zealous about Clerical Orders, encouraged, or at least connived at the Lay-Preachers, apprehending, that in Cases of Necessity, pious Men of good natural Parts might exercise their Gifts publickly to the Edification of the Church; till under this Cover they saw every bold Enthusiast almost begin to usurp the Office of a Teacher. To bring Things therefore into a little better Order, the following Petition was presented to both Houses of Parliament, *Oct. 6.* under the Title of *The humble Petition of many Citizens of London, and others.*

“ **Y**OUR Petitioners are deeply sensible of the *Petition*
 “ extream Want of Preaching the Gospel *for unordained*
 “ throughout this Kingdom, there being many Hun- *Preachers,*
 “ dreds of Towns and Villages altogether destitute *Rushw.*
 “ of any Preaching Ministers, and many others are *p. 834*
 “ not well supplied; by reason whereof Ignorance,
 “ Drunkenness, Profaneness, Disaffection to the Par-
 “ liament, and to others in Authority, every where
 “ abounds, there being scarce so much as the Face
 “ of Religion in many Places. There is a great
 “ Cry of People from several Counties of the King-
 “ dom, for Men to preach to them the Word of eter-
 “ nal Life; and there are many Men of competent
 “ Gifts and Abilities, of good Life and honest Con-
 “ versation, who being willing to employ their Ta-
 “ lents in the Lord’s Work, and to submit them-
 “ selves for Approbation to moderate and judicious
 “ Men, are yet, by Occasion of some Scruples about
 “ Ordination, discouraged from engaging in this
 “ Work of publishing the Gospel, wherein they
 “ might be helpful to many. And seeing that in
 “ the Days of Queen *Elizabeth*, UPON OCCASION, OF
 “ PEOPLE’S NECESSITIES, many such Men were
 “ sent forth to publish the Gospel, who had no for-
 “ mal Act of Ministerial Ordination past upon them,
 “ whose

King “ whose Endeavours the Lord blessed to the Good of
Charles I. “ many Souls, and the furthering of the Kingdom’s
 1647. “ Peace. And since also we nothing doubt, but the
 ~~~~~ “ Propagation of the Gospel throughout this King-  
 “ dom, and the Information of Men in the Things of  
 “ their Peace, and the Peace and Safety of the King-  
 “ dom, are worthy of your greatest Zeal, and are  
 “ not the least of your Care ;

“ Therefore your Petitioners humbly pray, that  
 “ those who shall be approved of as Men meet to  
 “ dispense the Mysteries of the Gospel, by such ju-  
 “ dicious, moderate, and able Men, whom you in  
 “ Wisdom shall appoint thereunto, may receive from  
 “ this honourable House Encouragement and Pro-  
 “ tection in Preaching the Gospel in any Place of  
 “ this Kingdom, or Dominion of *Wales*, where  
 “ Need requires, that so the Word of the Lord may  
 “ have free Course and be glorified ; ignorant Men  
 “ may be instructed ; Drunkenness, Profaneness, and  
 “ Disaffection to the Parliament, and to others in  
 “ Authority, may be abandoned ; and both the tem-  
 “ poral and spiritual Peace and Prosperity of all  
 “ Sorts of Men be the more advanced.”

The Houses thanked the Petitioners for their good Affection, but did nothing upon it.

*Stage*  
*Plays put*  
*down.*  
*Scobel,*  
*p. 143.*

By an Ordinance of *Feb. 11.* this Year, “ All  
 “ Stage-Players were declared to be Rogues punish-  
 “ able by the Act of the 39th of Queen *Elizabeth*,  
 “ and 7th of King *James*, notwithstanding any Li-  
 “ cence they might have from the King, or any  
 “ other Person. All Stage Galleries, Seats and  
 “ Boxes, are ordered to be pulled down by War-  
 “ rant of two Justices of Peace ; all Actors in Plays  
 “ for Time to come being convicted shall be pub-  
 “ lickly whipp’d, and find Sureties for their not of-  
 “ fending in like Manner for the future ; and all  
 “ Spectators of Plays for every Offence are to pay  
 “ Five Shillings.”

The Controversies about Church-Government, and Liberty of Conscience, ran still as high as ever; the *Presbyterians*, who had the Government of the City of *London* in their Hands, were for pressing *Covenant Uniformity* in their Sermons, which the *Independants*, and others of more Catholick Principles, endeavoured to oppose with all their might. Lord *Clarendon* is pleased to represent this in a ludicrous Manner; “The Pulpit Skirmishes (says his Lordship) were now higher than ever; the *Presbyterians* in those Fields losing nothing of their Courage; having a notorious Power in the City, notwithstanding the Emulation of the *Independants*, who were more learned and rational, who, tho’ they had not so great Congregations of the common People, yet infected, and were followed by the most substantial Citizens, and by others of better Condition. To these Men *Cromwell* and most of the Officers of the Army adhered; but the Divinity of the Times was not to be judged by the Preaching and Congregations in Churches, which were now thought not to be the fit and proper Places of Devotion, and Religious Exercises, where the Bishops had exercised such illimited Tyranny, and which had been polluted by their Consecrations. *Liberty of Conscience* was now become the great Charter, and Men who were inspir’d preach’d and pray’d when and where they would. *Anabaptists* grew very numerous, with whom the *Independants* concurr’d, so far as to join with them for the Abolishing of Tithes, as of judaical Institution — If any honest Man could have been at so much Ease as to have beheld the Prospect with Delight, never was such a Scene of Confusion as had spread itself at this Time over the whole Kingdom.” And yet it is certain, that the Laws against Vice and Immorality were strictly executed, the *Lord’s Day* was duly observed, the Churches were crowded with attentive Hearers, Family Devotion was in Repute, neither Servants nor Children being allowed to walk

King  
Charles I.  
1647.  
State of  
Religion.  
Clarend.  
Vol. V.  
P. 115,  
116.



*King*  
*Charles I.*  
 1647.  
 ~~~~~  
 in the Fields, or frequent the Publick Houses. In a Word, notwithstanding the Difference of Men's Opinions, and politick Views, there was a Zeal for God, and a much greater Appearance of Sobriety, Virtue, and true Religion, than before the Civil War, or after the Blessed Restoration.

Death of
Mr. Her-
bert Pal-
mer.
Clark's
Lives.

Among the Puritan Divines that died this Year was the Reverend Mr. *Herbert Palmer*, B. D. of whom mention has been made among the *Cambridge* Professors; his Father was Sir *Thomas Palmer* of *Wingham* in *Kent*, his Mother the eldest Daughter of *Herbert Pelham* of *Suffex*, Esq; Our Divine was born at *Wingham*, and baptized there *March 29. 1601.* he had a polite Education in his Father's House, and learn'd the *French* Language almost as soon as he could speak. In the Year 1615. he was admitted Fellow Commoner in *St. John's College Cambridge.* In the Year 1622. he took the Degrees of *M. A.* In 1623. he was chosen Fellow of *Queen's College* in that University; the Year following he was ordained to the Ministry, to which he had devoted himself from his Infancy: His first Exercise was at a Lecture in the City of *Canterbury*, where he preached once a Week till it was put down with the rest of the Afternoon Sermons. In the Year 1632. he was presented by Archbishop *Laud* to the Vicarage of *Ashwell* in *Hertfordshire*, where he preached Twice every Lord's Day, and catechised the Children of his Parishioners. The same Year he was chosen one of the University Preachers of *Cambridge*, by which he had Authority to preach, as he should have Occasion, in any Part of *England.* In the Year 1640. he and Dr. *Tuckney* were chosen Clerks of the Convocation for the Diocese of *Lincoln.* In the Year 1643. he was called to be a Member of the Assembly of Divines at *Westminster*, and after some Time chosen one of their *Assessors*, in which Place he behaved with great Wisdom and Integrity. *April 11. 1644.* he was constituted Master of *Queen's College Cambridge*, by the Earl
 of

of *Manchester*; here he set himself industriously to the promoting of Religion and Learning, being very solicitous that none should be admitted to a Scholarship or Fellowship in his College but such as were qualified in both these Respects, the good Effects of which appeared in the Reputation and Credit of that Society beyond most others of the University in his Time. Mr. *Palmer* was a Gentleman of a low Stature, and a weakly Constitution, but indefatigable in Business; all his Time was employed in Works of Devotion and Charity, for as he had a competent Estate, and chose a single Life, he had an Opportunity of doing a great deal of Good; he maintained several poor Scholars at his own Expence in the College, and when he died left a considerable Sum of Money to the same Purpose. His last Sickness was not long, his Constitution being spent, but his Behaviour was uncommon, he looked the King of Terrors in the Face with an holy Courage and Resolution, and resigned his Life this Summer, with a firm Expectation of the Mercy of God to eternal Life, in the Forty sixth Year of his Age, and was buried in the New Church at *Westminster*.

Mr. *Henry Wilkinson*, B. D. was born in *Yorkshire*, and educated in *Merton College Oxford*. In the Year 1586. he was chosen Probationer Fellow, and proceeded in Arts; after some Time he was made B. D. and in the Year 1601. became Pastor of *Waddesdon* in *Bucks*. He was a Person of considerable Learning and Piety, and being an old Puritan (says Mr. *Wood*) was elected one of the Assembly of Divines in 1643. but he spent the chief of his Time and Labours among his Parishioners at *Waddesdon*, by whom he was greatly beloved; here he died, in a very advanced Age, March 19. 1647. and lies buried in his own Church.

Mr. *John Salmons*, descended of an ancient Family in *Yorkshire*, was educated in *Magdalen College Cambridge*, and graduated there; he was esteemed a Person of a fine active Fancy, no contemptible Poet, and

King
Charles I.
1647.

and a good Preacher ; he was first Minister at *Northampton*, afterwards at *Braisted* in *Kent*, and at length Chaplain in Sir *Tho. Fairfax's* Army, where he always preached up Love and Peace : He meddled not with Presbytery or Independency, but laboured to draw Souls from Sin to Christ. He writ some Treatises, by which it appears he was of *Antinomian* Principles. The Manner of his Death was extraordinary ; *Decemb. 4. 1647.* being at his House at *Ilford* in *Essex* he told his Wife he had been in a Trance, and received a Message from God which he must immediately deliver to the Army. He went that Night to *London*, and next Day to *Windsor* ; being come to the Council of Officers he told them, that the Lord had left them ; that he would not prosper their Consultations, but destroy them by Divisions among themselves, because they had sought to destroy the People of God, those who had stood by them in their greatest Difficulties. He then went to the *General*, and without moving his Hat told him, that God was highly displeased with him for committing of Saints to Prison. The like Message he delivered to *Cromwell*, and required him to take effectual Measures for the Enlargement of the Members of the Army that were committed for not complying with the general Council. He then took his Leave of the Officers, telling them, he had now done his Errand, and must leave them, never to see them any more. After which he went to *London*, and took Leave of his Friends there, telling them, his Work was done, and desiring some of them to be careful of his Wife. *Thursday, Dec. 9.* he returned to *Ilford* in perfect Health ; next Day he told his Wife, that he had now finished his Work, and must go to his Father. *Saturday Morning, Dec. 11.* he was taken speechless, and about Four in the Afternoon he died.

Rushw.
p. 244.

CHAP. X.

The second Civil War. The Conclusion of the Assembly of Divines. The Progress of Presbytery. The Treaty of the Isle of Wight. Death and Character of King CHARLES I. His Works. And, the Authors of his unhappy Sufferings.

THE King was all last Winter a close Prisoner in *King*
Carisbrook Castle, attended only by Two Ser- *Charles I.*
 vants of his own, but debarred of all other Conversa- *1648.*
 tion, without the Knowledge of the Governor; ne- *The second*
 vertheless, by the Assistance of some particular *Civil War.*
 Friends, he sent, and received several Letters from
 the Queen, though his Correspondence was discover'd
 oftner than he was aware. His Majesty made several
 Attempts to escape but was always discovered; Captain
Burley attempted to raise the Island for him, but was
 apprehended and executed. However, in pursuance of the
 secret Treaty with the Scots, already mentioned, an Army
 was raising in that Kingdom, to be commanded by Duke
Hamilton, but the English Cavaliers, impatient of Delay,
 without concerting proper Measures among themselves,
 or with the Presbyterians, rose up in Arms in several
 Counties to deliver the King from his Confinement, and
 to restore him without any Treaty with his Parliament.
 The *Rusw.*
Welch appeared first, under Major General *Langhorn*, *P. 1667.*
 Colonel *Poyer* and *Powel*, Three Officers in the Par-
 liament Army, who had privately accepted Commissions
 from the Prince of Wales. These were followed
 by others in *Derbyshire*, *Devonshire*, *Suffex*, *Surrey*,
Lincolnshire, *Norfolk*, *Kent*, *Nottinghamshire*, *Essex*,
 and in the City of London it self. The Insurrection
 in the City began on Sunday, April 9. in *Moorfields*,
 by a Company of young Fellows with Clubs and
 Staves,

King
Charles I.
1648.

Staves, crying out, for *God and King Charles*. But after they had done some Mischief in the Night, and frightened the Mayor into the *Tower*, they were dispersed next Morning by the General at the Head of Two Regiments. The *Kentish Men* under the Earl of *Norwich* plunder'd some Houses, but were defeated near *Maidstone*, and having a Promise of Pardon the main Body laid down their Arms; but the Earl of *Norwich*, with five Hundred resolute Men, crossed the *Thames* at the *Isle of Dogs*, and came as far as *Mile-End Green*, expecting Assistance from the City, but being disappointed, he joined the *Essex* Cavaliers under Sir *Charles Lucas* and Lord *Capel*, who surprized the Parliament's Committee at *Chelmsford*, and then shut themselves up in *Colchester*, where they maintained themselves against General *Fairfax* for Ten Weeks, till being reduced to the last Extremity they were forced to surrender at Discretion Aug. 28. after which the General marched round about the Country, and having quieted all Insurrections in those Parts returned to his head Quarters at *St. Alban's* about *Michaelmas*. While *Fairfax* was in *Kent* and *Essex*, Lieutenant General *Cromwell* reduced the *Welch* by the End of *June*. About which Time the Earl of *Holland* and Duke of *Buckingham* appeared at the Head of five Hundred Horse and some Foot about *Kingston upon Thames*, but they were soon dispersed; the Earl was taken Prisoner at *St. Neot's* in *Huntingtonshire* by Colonel *Scroop*, and the Duke of *Buckingham*, with great Difficulty, got into the *Low Countries*. About the same Time several of the Parliament's Ships revolted to the Prince of *Wales*, then in *Holland*, who went on Board, and with Prince *Rupert*, Lord *Hopton*, and others, sailed to the Coast of *England* with a Design to relieve *Colchester*, but being disappointed, he landed five Hundred Men about *Deal* and *Sandwich*, and blocked up the *Thames* Mouth; but when the Earl of *Warwick* came up with the Parliament's Fleet he sailed back

to *Holland*, and most of the Ships returned to the Obedience of the Parliament.

King
Charles I.
1648.

It was not without great Difficulty that the King's Friends in *Scotland* prevailed with their Parliament to consent to the Raising an Army against *England*, for the Commissioners of the Kirk, and the whole Body of their Ministers were vehemently against it; and when it was put to the Vote, Eighteen Lords and Forty Commoners entred their Protest, from a strong Suspicion, that by the Flocking of the Loyalists to *Edinburgh* there was a private Agreement between *Hamilton* and that Party to lay aside the *Covenant*, and restore the King without any Conditions; to prevent which the *Scots* Parliament gave express Orders, that none should be received into their Army, or join with them, at their Entrance into *England*, but such as should take the *Covenant*; but *Hamilton*, who betray'd their Cause, found Means to evade the Order, by which Means he ruined himself, and the Party he intended to serve.

The *Scots* Army enter'd *England* July 8. to the Number of Twenty Thousand Foot and Six Thousand Horse, under the Command of Duke *Hamilton*, and were met some Time after by Sir *Marmaduke Langdale* at the Head of Four Thousand Foot and Seven Thousand Horse; but these being *English* Men and Cavaliers, who had not taken the *Covenant*, were not incorporated with the *Scots* Forces, but were obliged to march a Day before them, which was *Hamilton's* Contrivance to evade his Orders; nevertheless they were but one Army, *Langdale* being to receive all his Orders from *Hamilton*, and to act only by his Directions. But though there was a private Understanding between the Two Generals, the Subalterns, and Soldiers of both Parties were not acquainted with it, but had the same incurable Jealousy of each others Intentions as formerly; for the same Reason the Presbyterians in the Parliament at *Westminster* commissioned their Army to oppose the *Scots*, though they

The Scots
Army enters
England.

King
Charles I.
1648.

came into *England* with an avowed Intention of restoring the King upon the Terms of the *Covenant*; which was the Thing they wished for above all Things.

It may seem surprising, however, that there was no good Understanding between the Two Parliaments, when those of *England* sent Commissioners to *Edinburgh* to accomplish it; but the *Scots* were so strongly perswaded, that the Parliament at *Westminster* was still governed by an Army of *Independants*, that all that Mr. *Marshall*, and the rest could say, was not sufficient to divert them from their Enterprize, which is not to be wonder'd at, considering the Strength of the *Hamiltonian Faction*, and their Obligations to the King by their secret Treaty. This appears from the *Duke's* Letter to *Lambert*, in which he acquaints him, that he was commanded to enter *England* with an Army, for maintaining the Solemn League and Covenant; for settling Religion; for delivering the King from his base Imprisonment; and freeing the Parliament from the Constraint put upon them. But the State of Affairs was now changed by the Rising of the *English Cavaliers*; the Army was in the Field, and divided into several distant Parts of the Kingdom, and the *Presbyterians* in as full Possession of the Government, as heretofore; they were reviving the Treaty with the King, and sending Propositions to the *Scots* to join with them, but the good Understanding between the two Nations having been interrupted last Winter, by the growing Influence of the Army, who were no Friends to *Covenant Uniformity*, the *Scots* would not be satisfied with the present Revolution of Affairs, unless they were disbanded, and therefore had not changed the Instructions to their General. On the other hand, the Parliament could not with Safety disband their Army while the *Cavaliers* were in the Field; nor could they forbid their opposing the *Scots*, because they had joined the common Enemy, and were marching into *England* with an armed Force to deliver the King from his Imprisonment, without concerting Measures with

Rushw.
p. 1194.

with the Two Houses, or communicating their secret Treaty with his Majesty in the *Isle of Wight*. Thus the two Parliaments of *England* and *Scotland* opposed each other, when both had the same Views, and were carrying on the very same Design. If the *Scots* Army had been commanded by a General the *Presbyterians* could have confided in, and had marched directly for *London*, without joining the *Cavaliers*, the Parliament of *England* would have received them, while the Army was abroad, and the Citizens of *London* have opened their Gates; for the *English Presbyterians* wished them well; but by joining the common Enemy, who were in Arms all over the Kingdom, they were stagger'd; and Duke *Hamilton*, who betray'd their Cause, by trifling away a whole Month in the North, gave the Army, which was divided and dispersed into distant Parts, Time to join, and defeat all their Enterprizes.

The *Scots* invading *England* after this Manner, and in the Midst of so many Insurrections, awaken'd Men's Fears, and made them apprehend the Cause was to be fought over again. The Parliament was alarm'd on every Side, but the Army promised to stand by them, and march wheresoever the Committee of the Two Houses (appointed to manage their Motions) should direct. General *Fairfax* engaged heartily against the *Cavaliers*, but refused to march against the *Scots*, because they had declared openly for the *Covenant*. Colonel *Lambert* therefore was ordered into the North, with a flying Squadron to harra'ss them, till Lieutenant General *Cromwell* could come out of *Wales* to his Assistance; the *Scots* having been joined by Sir *Marmaduke Langdale*, who had seized the important Town of *Berwick*, marched through *Cumberland* and *Westmorland* into *Lancashire* without Opposition, but upon the 17th of *August* *Cromwell* having joined *Lambert*, and refreshed his Troops, faced them near *Preston* with Eight or Ten Thousand Men, and after a sharp Fight with the *Cavaliers*,

King
Charles I.
1648.

Ham. M.
p. 337.
345, 353
&c.

And is de-
feated by
Cromwell.

King Charles I.
1648.

valiers, under Sir *Marmaduke Langdale*, who were almost a Day's March before the *Duke*, routed the whole *Scots Army*, and took Eight or Nine Thousand Prisoners, with all their Artillery and Baggage; *Hamilton* fled with Three Thousand Horse, but was so closely pursued by *Lambert*, that he surrender'd without striking another Stroke, and all his Men were dispersed or taken Prisoners. *Cromwell*, after this, pursued his Victory with rapid Swiftness, marching directly to *Edinburgh*, which opened its Gates, and having changed the Magistracy, and settled the Government to his Mind, he left Three Regiments of Horse to keep the Country quiet, and returned into *England October 11.* laden with martial Glory and Renown.

Proceed-
ings of
Parliam-
ent.
Rushw.
1. 1074.

Before the Army left *London*, and while their Influence over the Parliament continued, the Commons having taken into Consideration the Affair of settling the Government, voted unanimously, that the Government of the Kingdom should be still by *King, Lords, and Commons*, and that the Ground-work for a Settlement should be the Propositions at *Hampton Court*, which shews, there was no Design of changing the Government into a Commonwealth, as yet formed, at least nothing appeared, though the *Agitators*, who were the chief Managers of the Army, began to mutter, that if the King could not be brought to Reason he must be set aside, and the Duke of *Gloucester*, or one of his younger Children, placed on the Throne.

which is
entirely
Presby-
terian.
Rushw.
1. 1074.
vol. 1.
312.

The Army had no sooner left the Neighbourhood of the City, but the *Presbyterians* resumed the Management of all publick Affairs. May 5. the Parliament resolved to maintain the *Solemn League and Covenant*, and to unite with the Kingdom of *Scotland* upon the Propositions of *Hampton Court*. The Militia of the City of *London* was restored to the Lord Mayor and Common Council; the Eleven impeached Members, and the Seven Peers were discharged; and,

and, in short, all that had been done against the Presbyterian Greatness by the Influence of the Army last Winter, was reversed; so that, as from *August 6. 1647.* to the Beginning of *May 1648.* the Parliament may be supposed to be under some Restraint from the Army; from that Time to the End of the Treaty of the *Isle of Wight*, it was at full liberty, and entirely under Presbyterian Direction. Petitions came now from divers Counties, and from the City of *London* it self, for a personal Treaty with the King; upon which the *Commons* set aside their Votes of Non-Addresses, and at the Request of the Lords consented to treat with the King without his signing any preliminary Propositions, hoping, as Matters then stood, his Majesty would not delay a Moment to grant their Demands, that he might be released from his Confinement, and placed upon his Throne, before the Army should be at leisure to throw any Obstacles in the Way; but here was the fatal Oversight, the King and his Friends would not comply, nor the Presbyterians relax, till both were driven out of the Field, and the Army at liberty to break all their Measures.

Let the Reader now pause a little, and reflect with Grief upon the miserable Distractions of this unhappy Kingdom; here were Three or Four powerful Parties with separate Views, and all at a Crisis; the KING was the *golden Prize* contended for, who was a close Prisoner in the *Isle of Wight*, and could do nothing himself, though by signing the *Scots Treaty* he was reputed the Author of that Invasion, and of the second Civil War; the CAVALIERS were in Arms to preserve the EPISCOPAL CHURCH of *England*, but having concerted no Measures among themselves were easily dispersed. The Scots came into *England* in pursuance of the COVENANT, and the secret Treaty of the *Isle of Wight*, but two Mistakes ruined this whole Enterprize; one was, their not communicating the Contents of that Treaty to the

King
Charles I.
1648.
Rushw.
p. 1127.

Remarks
on the Con-
fusion of
the Times.

Engl.

King
Charles I.
1648.

English Presbyterians, which they might have done by their Commissioners before they marched into *England*, without the Knowledge of the Army. The other was Duke *Hamilton's* acting in Concert with the *English Cavaliers*, allowing them to march in the Van of his Army, which gave their Enemies in the Parliament at *Westminster* a fair Opportunity of engaging the whole military Power of *England* against them; for without all doubt, if the Duke had prevailed, not only the *Independant*, but the *Presbyterian Cause*, had been betrayed into the Hands of the *Cavaliers*, which must, in the End, have been equally fatal to both Parties, and lost them all the Advantages of the War. This fatal Conjunction broke the Strength of the *English Presbyterians*, and played the Advantage into the Hands of a Third Party, which destroyed the other two. The ARMY, with whom were the *Independants*, *Anabaptists*, and other Sectaries, was governed by the *Agitators*, who had given up the King, and had an incurable Aversion to the *Cavaliers*, and all that adher'd to them, as their most determined Enemies; nor could they confide in the *Presbyterians*, because in all their Treaties with the King they were made a Sacrifice, and given up to their *Covenant Uniformity*. Upon the Whole, all Parties were resolute in their Demands, but disunited in their Councils, and fatally distrustful of each other. Among the *Presbyterians*, some were for fighting only with the *Cavaliers*, and others for opposing the *Scots* Invasion also; some of the *Cavaliers* were for Restoring the King by their own Valour, and others for joining with the *Scots* as Tools to play the Game into their own Hands. The Army was no less perplexed; those that served under General *Fairfax* were unwilling to march against the *Scots Presbyterians*; but those under *Cromwell* were for destroying every Power that would not secure them that Liberty of Conscience they contended for; and not being able to obtain this from the King, nor the *Scots* or *English Presbyterians*, they

were

were driven to Despair, and unhappily run upon those extravagant Measures which ended in the Sub-^{King}version of the Constitution, and Destruction of the ^{Charles I.} King the following Winter. 1648.

Tantum Religio potuit suadere malorum !

In the mean Time, let us attend the Affairs of the ^{Conclusion} Church: The Assembly of Divines having finished ^{of the As-} their main Business, was now reduced to a small ^{sembly of} Number, most of the Country Ministers went home, ^{Divines.} and those that remained about ^{MS.} London were employed ^{penes me.} chiefly in the Examination of such Ministers as presented themselves for Ordination, or Induction into Livings; thus they continued till Feb. 22. 1648³. about Three Weeks after the King's Death, having sat Five Years, Six Months, and Twenty two Days, in which Time they had one Thousand, one Hundred, and Sixty three Sessions. They were afterwards turned into a Committee for the Purposes last mentioned, and met every *Thursday* Morning till *March* 25. 1652. when the long Parliament being turned out of the House by *Oliver Cromwell* they broke up without any formal Dissolution.

The Works of the Assembly, besides some Let-^{Their}ters to foreign Churches, and occasional Admoni-^{Works.}tions, were,

1. Their humble Advice to the Parliament for Ordination of Ministers, and settling the Presbyterian Government.

2. A Directory for publick Worship.

3. A Confession of Faith.

4. A larger and shorter Catechism.

5. A Review of some of the Thirty nine Articles.

But the Annotations on the Bible, which go under their Name, were neither undertaken, nor reviled by them, but by a Committee of Parliament, who named the *Commentators*, and furnished them with Books;

King
Charles I.
1648. Books; nor were they all Members of the Assembly,
as appears by the following List.

Those with *Asterisks* were not of the Assembly.

The Commen- tary on the Five Books of <i>Moses</i> ,	Was Written by	The Rev. Mr. <i>Ley</i> , Sub- dean of <i>Chester</i> .
The Two Books of <i>Kings</i> ,		
The Two Books of <i>Chronicles</i> ,		Dr. <i>Gouge</i> .
<i>Ezra</i> ,		
<i>Nehemiah</i> ,		
<i>Esther</i> ,		
The <i>Psalms</i> ,		* Mr. <i>Meric Causabon</i> .
<i>Proverbs</i> ,		Mr. <i>Francis Taylor</i> .
<i>Ecclesiastes</i> ,		Dr. <i>Reynolds</i> .
<i>Solomon Song</i> ,		* Mr. <i>Smalwood</i> , recommend- ed by Archbishop <i>Usher</i> .
<i>Isaiah</i> ,		
<i>Jeremiah</i> ,		Mr. <i>Gataker</i> .
<i>Lamentations</i> ,		
<i>Ezekiel</i> ,		* Mr. <i>Pemberton</i> in the First Edition.
<i>Daniel</i> , and the smaller <i>Pro-</i> <i>phets</i> ,		* Bp. <i>Richardson</i> in the Se- cond.
<i>Matthew</i> ,		
<i>Mark</i> ,		Mr. <i>Ley</i> ,
<i>Luke</i> ,		
<i>John</i> ,		
St. <i>Paul's Epi-</i> <i>stles</i> ,		Dr. <i>D. Featley</i> , but his Notes are broken and imperfect, the Author dying before he had revised them.

There were Two other Persons concerned in this Work, who might probably have the other Parts of Scripture allotted them, not here mentioned, *viz.* Mr. *Downham* and Mr. *Reading*.

When

When Posterity shall impartially review the Labours of this *Assembly of Divines*, and consider the Times in which they sat, they will have a just Veneration for their Memory; for though their Sentiments in Divinity were in many Instances too narrow and contracted, yet with all their Faults, amongst which their persecuting Zeal for Religion was not the least, they were certainly Men of real Piety and Virtue, who meant well, and had the Interest of Religion at Heart; most of them had as much Learning as any in the Times in which they lived; the Names of *Lightfoot, Selden, Gataker, Greenbill, Arrowsmith, Twisse, Bishop Reynolds, Wallis, &c.* will be always famous in the learned World; and had they not grasped at *coercive Power*, or Jurisdiction over the Consciences of Men, their Memories would have been unspotted. Mr. *Baxter*, who knew most of them, says, “They were Men of eminent Learning, Godliness, ministerial Abilities, and Fidelity; and being not worthy to be one of them myself (says he) I may more fully speak the Truth which I know, even in the Face of Malice and Envy, that as far as I am able to judge by the Information of History, and by any other Evidence, the Christian World, since the Days of the Apostles, had never a Synod of more excellent Divines than this Synod, and the Synod of *Dort*.” They were in high Esteem in the learned World till they run into Heats, and split upon the fatal Rock of the DIVINE RIGHT of the *Presbyterian Government*; this engaged them first with the *Parliament*, and then with the *Independants* and *Erasians*; their opposing a Toleration raised them a great many Enemies, and divided their own Body, for after they had carried the Question of DIVINE RIGHT the *Independants* and *Erasians* deserted them, after which they found it very difficult to get so many together as would make a House. Had the Parliament dissolved them at that Time they had gone off with Honour, but they

King
Charles I.
1648.

Their
Character;

Baxter's
Life,
p. 73.

King they sunk by Degrees, as has been related; the Bu-
Charles I. siness of the Church being now translated to the Pro-
 1648. vincial Assemblies.

Proceedings
of the 3d
Provincial
Assembly.
MS.

We have already remember'd the Two former of these Assemblies, the *Third* met *May 3.* this Year, and chose the Reverend Mr. *Whitaker* Moderator. In their Fourth Session they agreed to present a Second Petition to the Parliament in the Name of the Province, humbly to desire, 1. "That they would renew the Consideration of their former Petition. 2. That they would establish the Two Catechisms of the Assembly of Divines, and appoint them to be publickly taught throughout the Kingdom. 3. That they would add their civil Sanction to the new Confession of Faith. 4. That the Directory for publick Worship may be better observ'd; and that better Care may be taken for the Observation of the Lord's Day." — In their Twelfth Session, *October 6.* they agreed to the Report of their Committee concerning the Cause of the Decay of Religion, and of the Increase of Wickedness, which they say was chiefly owing to the Want of able and settled Ministers, there being above Forty Parish Churches and Congregations within the Province that had no Ministers settled among them by Allowance of Authority, a Catalogue of which Churches was subjoin'd. The Reason of this Defect being chiefly want of Maintenance, they pray the Houses, "to agree upon some Method, that the Dean and Chapter Lands, and the Impropriations belonging to Bishops, lying within this Province, may be applied for the Augmentation of the Clergy's Maintenance; and that there may be a fixed Maintenance in every Parish recoverable by the Incumbent."

The 4th
Provincial
Assembly.

The Fourth Provincial Assembly met *Nov. 3.* the Reverend Mr. *Edmund Calamy* Moderator. In their Third Session, *Nov. 23.* they order'd, that the several Ministers of the Province of *London* do begin the Work

Work of Catechising; that they use the Assembly's Catechism, and no other; that the Persons to be catechised be Children and Servants not admitted to the Lord's Table; that the Time be in the Afternoon before Sermon; and that they exhort their Parishioners to encourage it. In their Fourth Session, Nov. 30. they resolv'd, that the Twelve Classes of the Province of *London* observe their Course for Ordination of Ministers; and that at the Close of every publick Ordination Notice be given which *Classis* is to ordain next. But the Nation being in Confusion; and the Clouds gathering thick over their Heads, they did little else this Winter but keep a weekly Fast among themselves, to avert the Judgments of God, which threaten'd the Life of the King, and the Dissolution of the whole Government.

King
Charles I.
1648.

The County of *Lancashire* being formed into another *Presbyterian Province* this Year, assembled at *Preston Feb. 7. 1648.* and published a Kind of Pastoral Letter, or solemn Exhortation to the several Churches within their Province, to the Practice of those Duties that were requisite to the supporting and carrying on the *Presbyterian Discipline*, subscribed by the Reverend

Provincial
Assembly of
Lancashire.
Vol. Pamp.
No. 73.

Mr. *James Hyett*, Moderator,
Mr. *Tho. Johnson*, Assessor,
Mr. *Edw. Gee*, Scribe.

They likewise appointed a Committee to examine the Paper called THE AGREEMENT OF THE PEOPLE, [hereafter to be mentioned] and tender'd to the Consideration of the Nation by the Officers of the Army, with a Desire that they would by Subscription declare their concurrence to it; but it was carried in the Negative. The Design of this Paper was to change the Form of Government into a kind of Commonwealth, without a King or House of Lords. It was published by way of Probation, that they might learn the Sense of the Nation; but the Article relating to Religion

Agreement
of the
People.
Rushw.
p. 1558.

King
Charles I.
1648.

being peculiar, and giving great Offence to the *Presbyterian* Clergy, shall be transcrib'd entire, " We
 " do not impower our Representatives (say they) to
 " continue in force, or make any Laws, Oaths, or
 " Covenants, whereby to compel by Penalties, or
 " otherwise, any Person to any Thing, in or about
 " Matters of Faith, Religion, or God's Worship;
 " or restrain any Person from professing his Faith,
 " or exercise of his Religion according to his Consci-
 " ence, in any House or Place, except such as are,
 " or shall be set apart for the publick Worship.
 " Nevertheless, the Instruction or Direction of
 " the Nation in a publick Way, for Matters of
 " Faith, Worship or Discipline, so it be not com-
 " pulsive or express Popery, is referr'd to their Di-
 " scretion." The AGREEMENT adds, " It is in-
 " tended that the Christian Religion be held forth,
 " and recommended as the publick Profession in this
 " Nation, which we desire may, by the Grace of
 " God, be reform'd to the greatest Purity in Do-
 " ctrine, Worship, and Discipline, according to the
 " Word of God. The instructing the People there-
 " unto in a publick Way, provided it be not com-
 " pulsive; as also the Maintaining of able Teachers
 " for that end, and for the Confutation and Discove-
 " ry of Heresy, Error, and whatsoever is contrary
 " to sound Doctrine, is allow'd to be provided by
 " our Representatives; the Maintenance of Teach-
 " ers may be out of a Treasury, and we desire not
 " by *Tithes*." But besides these, " *All who profess*
 " *Faith in God by Jesus Christ, however differing in*
 " *Judgment from the Doctrine, Discipline, and Worship*
 " *publickly held forth, shall be protected in the Profession*
 " *of their Faith, and Exercise of their Religion according*
 " *to their Consciences, so as they abuse not this Liberty*
 " *to the civil Injury of others, or the Disturbance of the*
 " *publick Peace.*" These were generous and free Sen-
 timents; but the Synod forbid their People to sub-
 scribe them, not only because the AGREEMENT im-
 ported

ported a Change in the Civil Government, but because of the Mischiefs that would attend a *Toleration*; their Reasons for which they published to the World *March 6. 1648.* subscribed by Fifty nine Ministers. King Charles I. 1648.

The Provincial Assemblies of *London* met regularly every half Year, to the Year 1655. when finding themselves without *Power*, and not being willing to apply to the *Protector* and his Parliament for Support they desisted; but there were none legally formed in any other Counties of *England*. However, the Country Ministers enter'd into voluntary Associations, and erected a Sort of Classes for Ordination of Ministers, and promoting Friendship and Peace among themselves, many of the *Independant* Ministers joining with them: The Associations met once a Month, at one or other Church in the County, and after Prayers and a Sermon conferr'd upon the State of Religion, and gave their Advice upon such Cases as were brought before them in a neighbourly and friendly Manner. Country Associations.

To return to the Parliament, which was now recruited with such *Presbyterian* Members as had absconded, or deserted their Stations, while the Army was quartered in the Neighbourhood of the City; these Gentlemen finding they had the Superiority in the House, resumed their Courage, and took the Opportunity of discovering their Principles and Spirit, by passing such a Law against Hereticks as is hardly to be parallel'd among Protestants. It had been laid aside by the Influence of the Army for above Nine Months, but *May 1.* it was voted, that all Ordinances concerning Church Government referr'd to Committees, be brought in and debated; and that the *Ordinance against Blasphemy and Heresy* be now determined, which was done accordingly. This was one of the most shocking Laws I have met with, and shews, that the governing *Presbyterians* in these Times would have made a terrible Use of their Power, if it had been supported by the Ordinance against Blasphemy and Heresy. Scobel's Collect. cap. 114. p. 149.

King
Charles I.
1648.

Sword of the Civil Magistrate. The Ordinance is dated *May 2. 1648.* and ordains, “ That all Persons who shall willingly maintain, publish, or defend, by preaching or writing, the following Heresies with Obstinacy, shall, upon Complaint, or Proof, by the Oaths of Two Witnesses, before Two Justices of the Peace, or Confession of the Party, be committed to Prison, without Bail or Mainprize, till the next Gaol Delivery ; and in case the Indictment shall then be found, and the Party upon his Trial shall not abjure his said Error, and his Defence and Maintenance of the same, he shall suffer the Pains of Death, as in case of Felony, without Benefit of Clergy ; and if he recant or abjure, he shall remain in Prison till he find Sureties, that he will not maintain the said Heresies or Errors any more ; but if he relapse, and is convicted a second Time, he shall suffer Death as before. The Heresies or Errors are these following.

1. “ That there is no God.
2. “ That God is not Omnipresent, Omniscient, Almighty, Eternal, and perfectly Holy.
3. “ That the Father is not God, that the Son is not God, that the Holy Ghost is not God, or that these Three are not One eternal God ; or, that Christ is not God equal with the Father.
4. “ The Denial of the Manhood of Christ, or that the Godhead and Manhood are distinct Natures ; or, that the Humanity of Christ is pure and unspotted of all Sin.
5. “ The Maintaining that Christ did not die, nor rise again, nor ascend into Heaven bodily.
6. “ The Denying that the Death of Christ is Meritorious on the Behalf of Believers ; or, that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.
7. “ The Denying that the Holy Scriptures of the Old and New Testament are the Word of God.

8. “ The

8. " The Denying of the Resurrection of the
" Dead, and a future Judgment."

King
Charles I.
1648.

The Ordinance goes on to mention some other Errors of less Demerit, and says, " That whosoever
" shall maintain or defend them, shall, upon Con-
" viction by the Oaths of Two Witnesses, or by his
" own Confession before Two Justices of Peace, be
" ordered to renounce his said Error or Errors in the
" publick Congregation of the Parish from whence
" the Complaint comes, or where the Offence was
" committed, and in case of Refusal he shall be com-
" mitted to Prison till he find Sureties that he shall
" not publish or maintain the said Error or Errors
" any more. The Errors are these following :

1. " That all Men shall be saved.
2. " That Man by Nature hath Free-Will to turn
" to God.
3. " That God may be worshipped in, or by Pi-
" ctures or Images.
4. " That the Soul dies with the Body, or after
" Death goes neither to Heaven, or Hell, but to
" Purgatory.
5. " That the Soul of Man sleeps, when the Bo-
" dy is dead.
6. " That the Revelations, or Workings of the
" Spirit, are a Rule of Faith or Christian Life,
" though diverse from, or contrary to the written
" Word of God.
7. " That Man is bound to believe no more than
" by his Reason he can comprehend.
8. " That the Moral Law contained in the Ten
" Commandments is no Rule of the Christian
" Life.
9. " That a Believer need not repent, or pray for
" pardon of Sin.
10. " That the Two Sacraments, of Baptism and
" the Lord's Supper, are not Ordinances command-
" ed by the Word of God.

King
Charles I.
1648.

11. " That the Baptism of Infants is unlawful and void ; and that such Persons ought to be baptized again.

12. " That the Observation of the Lord's Day, as enjoined by the Ordinances and Laws of this Realm, is not according, or is contrary to the Word of God.

13. " That it is not lawful to join in publick, or family Prayer, or to teach Children to pray.

14. " That the Churches of *England* are no true Churches, nor their Ministers and Ordinances true Ministers and Ordinances ; or, that the Church Government by Presbyters is Antichristian or Unlawful.

15. " That Magistracy, or the Power of the Civil Magistrate, by Law established in *England*, is unlawful.

16. " That all Use of Arms, though for the publick Defence (and be the Cause never so just) is unlawful."

Remarks.

These Heresies and Errors were taken from the Speeches or Writings of the *Papists, Arminians, Antinomians, Arians, Baptists, and Quakers, &c.* of those Times. The Ordinance was a comprehensive Engine of Cruelty, and would have enclosed great Numbers of good Christians, and good Subjects. The Presbyterians of the present Age are not only thankful that the Confusion of the Times did not permit their Predecessors to put this Law in Execution, but wish also, that it could be blotted out of the Records of Time, for 'tis so very unrighteous that no Censure too severe can be passed upon it.

Ordinance
for settling
the Pres-
byterian
Discipline.
Scobel,
cap. 118.
p. 155.

June 21. the Army being still in the Field, and the Parliament at liberty, the Ordinance for the more effectual Settling the *Presbyterian* Government, without Limitation of Time, was read the Second Time and committed, and on the 29th of *August* it was perfect-

perfected, and received the Sanction of both Houses, under the Title of *A Form of Church Government to be used in the Churches of England and Ireland*. It is a Collection of the several Ordinances for establishing the Branches of Presbyterial Government already mentioned, and ordains, that “all Parishes and Places
“ whatsoever within *England* and *Wales* shall be under
“ the Government of Congregational, Classial, Provincial, and National Assemblies, except the
“ Houses or Chapels of the King and his Children,
“ and of the Peers of the Realm, which are to continue free for the Exercise of Divine Duties, according to the *Directory*, and not otherwise; it gives
“ Directions for the Choice of Ruling Elders in every Parish, and for proper Persons to be Judges
“ of the Qualifications of the Persons chosen; it appoints Commissioners to divide the whole Kingdom into distinct Classial Presbyteries; it gives
“ Direction about the Constituting of Provincial and National Synods, with the Extent of their several
“ Powers; it determines the Method of Ordination of Ministers, of dispensing Church Censures, and
“ Suspension from the Sacrament; and last of all, it gives Direction for Excommunication and Absolution,” but lays no Penalty upon *Recusants*, or such as do not come to the Sacrament, or submit to their Discipline; which was the utmost Length that *Presbytery* obtained in this Kingdom.

King
Charles I.
1648.

The Parliament having agreed to treat with the King without any preliminary Conditions, sent the Earl of *Middlesex*, Sir *John Hiply*, and Mr. *Bulkly*, to acquaint his Majesty with their Resolutions, and to desire him to appoint what Place he pleased in the *Isle of Wight* for the Treaty; his Majesty seemed pleased with the Message, and sent a Letter to the Two Houses Aug. 10. desiring them to recal their Votes, which forbid the Access of his Friends, and to direct, that Men of necessary Use in this Affair may be permitted

Treaty of the Isle of Wight.
Rushw.
Vol. II.
p. 1236.

King
Charles I.
1648.

ted to assist him ; and that the *Scots* be Parties in the Treaty. His Majesty then appointed *Newport* in the *Isle of Wight* for the Place of Conference ; to all which the Lords agreed without any Restriction ; but the Commons insisted, that no Person lately in Arms against the Parliament be of the Number ; that the *Scots* be not included ; and, that if his Majesty be at liberty, as at *Hampton Court*, he pass his Royal Word not to go out of the Island during the Treaty, nor Twenty eight Days after, without consent of Parliament.

Upon these Conditions his Majesty was conducted to *Newport*, and left at liberty upon his *Parole of Honour*. Several Noblemen, Gentlemen, Divines, and Lawyers, were appointed to assist him in the Treaty, who were to stand behind his Majesty's Chair and hear the Debates, but not to speak, except when the King withdrew into another Room for their Advice : The Names of his Divines were, Dr. *Juxon* Bishop of *London*, Dr. *Duppa*, Bishop of *Salisbury*, Dr. *Sheldon*, Dr. *Hammond*, Dr. *Oldsworth*, Dr. *Sanderson*, Dr. *Turner*, Dr. *Haywood* ; and towards the End of the Treaty Dr. *Usher*, Archbishop of *Armagh*, Dr. *Bramhall*, Dr. *Prideaux*, Dr. *Warner*, Dr. *Ferne*, and Dr. *Morley* ; Dr. *Brownrigge*, Bishop of *Exeter*, was also sent for, but he was under Restraint.

The Parliament appointed Five Noblemen, Ten Commoners, and Four Divines to assist them in their Debates about Religion (*viz.*) Mr. *Vines*, Mr. *Caryl*, Dr. *Seaman*, and Mr. *Marshall*. The Treaty was to continue Forty Days, and to proceed upon the Propositions of *Hampton Court*. Sept. 12. the Parliament kept a Day of publick Fasting and Prayer, for a Blessing ; and some Days after the King and his Household did the like, when after the publick Service the following Prayer was read, drawn up by his Majesty's Direction.

Rapin,
p. 526.

“ **O** MOST merciful Father, Lord God of
 “ Peace and Truth, we a People sorely affli-
 “ cted by the Scourge of an unnatural War, do ear-
 “ nestly beseech thee to command a Blessing from
 “ Heaven upon this present Treaty, begging for
 “ the Establishment of an happy Peace. Soften the
 “ most obdurate Hearts with a true Christian Desire
 “ of saving those Mens Blood for whom Christ him-
 “ self hath shed his; or, if the Guilt of our great
 “ Sins cause this Treaty to break off in vain, Lord,
 “ let the Truth clearly appear, who those Men are,
 “ who, under pretence of the publick Good do pur-
 “ sue their own private Ends; that this People may
 “ be no longer so blindly miserable, as not to see at
 “ least in this their Day, the Things that belong to
 “ their Peace. Grant this, gracious God, for his
 “ sake, who is our Peace it self, even Jesus Christ
 “ our Lord. *Amen.*”

The Treaty began on *Monday September 18.* about *Parlia-*
 Nine in the Morning, at the House of Sir *William* *ment's Pro-*
Hodges. The first Day the Commissioners presented *posals and*
 the King with a Draught of Three Bills; the First to *the King's*
 establish the *Presbyterian* Government for ever in the *Reply.*
 Church of *England*; the Second to relinquish the
Militia to the Two Houses for Thirty Years; and
 the Third, to recal all his Majesty's Declarations
 against the Parliament. To the last of these the
 King readily consented, but excepted to the Pream-
 ble, in which were these Words, *That the Two Houses*
of Parliament had been necessitated to enter into a War in
their just and lawful Defence. Instead of which, the *Rushw.*
 King proposed an Act of Indemnity; but the Com- *p. 1263.*
 missioners insisting peremptorily upon it, as that with-
 out which they could not be safe, his Majesty with
 great Reluctancy consented, having first protested in
 writing, that *no Concession of his should be binding if the*
Treaty broke off without Effect. His Majesty yielded

King
Charles I.
1648.

the *Militia* to the Parliament for Twenty Years; and the Management of the *Irish* War. He consented to vacate those Titles of Honour that had been conferr'd since the Carrying away the *Great Seal*, and to confirm the Parliament's *Great Seal*. He agreed to the Payment of the publick Debts, provided they were stated within two Years; to confirm the Charter of the City of *London*; to impower the Parliament to confer Offices, and constitute Magistrates for Twenty Years; and to take away the Court of Wards provided he might have fifty Thousand Pounds a Year in lieu of it. His Majesty consented further, that those of his Party which they called *Delinquents* should submit to a Fine, or be prohibited the Court, if the Parliament saw fit; but he abhorred the Thoughts of charging them with Treason for acting by his Commission, and therefore absolutely refused to consent to it.

King's
Concessions
on the Ar-
ticle of Re-
ligion.
Rushw.
p. 1281.

With regard to RELIGION his Majesty agreed, October 2. that “ the Assembly of Divines at *West-*
“ *minster* be confirm'd for Three Years; that the
“ *Directory* and *Presbyterian* Government be confirm'd
“ for the same Time, provided that neither himself,
“ nor those of his Judgment, be obliged to comply
“ with it; that a Consultation in the mean Time be
“ had with the Assembly, and Twenty Divines of his
“ Majesty's Nomination, what Form of Church
“ Government shall be established afterwards, with
“ a Clause for the Ease of tender Consciences. His
“ Majesty consented further, that legal Estates for
“ Lives, or for a Term of Years not exceeding
“ Ninety nine, should be made out of the Bishops
“ Lands and Revenues, for the Satisfaction of
“ them that have purchased them, provided that the
“ Inheritance may still remain to the Church, and
“ the rest be reserved for their Maintenance. His
“ Majesty will consent further, to an Act for the
“ better Observation of the *Lord's Day*; for suppres-
“ sing Innovations in Churches and Chapels; for the
“ better

“ better advancing of Preaching God’s holy Word ;
 “ and against Pluralities and Non-Residence. To
 “ an Act for regulating and reforming the Univer-
 “ sities, and the Colleges of *Westminster, Winchester,*
 “ and *Eaton* ; for the better Discovery of Papists,
 “ and for the Educating their Children in the Prote-
 “ stant Religion ; to an Act for better putting the
 “ Laws in Execution against Papists, and to prevent
 “ the hearing and saying Mass ; but as to the *Cove-*
 “ *nant*, his Majesty is not as yet satisfied to sign or
 “ swear to it, or consent to impose it on the Consci-
 “ ences of others.”

King
Charles I.
1648.

These Concessions about Church Government be-
 ing declared not satisfactory, as amounting only to
 a Sort of *Interim*, his Majesty desired to confer with
 the Parliament Divines for the Satisfaction of his Con-
 science, having been bred and instructed (as he said)
 in the Way he stands for, by his *Father*, the wisest
 King and best in the World, and therefore could not
 easily yield. There is hardly any Thing to be met
 with in this Conference but what has been already ta-
 ken notice of in his Majesty’s Debate with Mr. *Hen-*
derson, and in the Answer of the Smectymnuan Di-
 vines to Bishop *Hall*, in the Second Volume of this
 History ; and therefore it will be the less necessary
 to enter into the same Particulars in this Place. His
 Majesty proposed some Scruples in Law about the
 Obligation of his *Coronation Oath*, which the Com-
 missioners undertook to answer themselves ; but the
 Papers relating to the *Unalterable Institution of Episco-*
pacy were referr’d to the *Divines* on both sides, and
 were as follow :

Conference
between
the King
and Parl.
Divines.

The King’s First Paper.

Newport, Oct. 2. 1648.

King’s first
Paper to
the Parl.
Divines.

CHARLES REX,

“ I Conceive that *Episcopal Government* is most con-
 “ sonant to the Word of God, and of an Apo-
 “ stolical

Rel. Carol.
Vol. II.
p. 245.

King Charles I. 1648. " stolical Institution, as it appears by the Scripture
 Acts xiv. 23. " to have been practised by the Apostles themselves,
 Acts vi. 6. " and by them committed and derived to particular
 1 Cor. xvi. 1. " Persons as their Substitutes or Successors therein,
 1 Cor. xiv. " (as for ordaining Presbyters and Deacons, giving
 1 Cor. v. 3. " Rules concerning Christian Discipline, and exerci-
 3 John " sing Censures over Presbyters and others) and has
 ix. 10. " ever since, till these last Times, been exercised by
 1 Tim. v. 22. " Bishops in all the Churches of Christ; and there-
 Titus i. 5. " fore I cannot in Conscience consent to abolish the
 Rev. ii. 3. " said Government.
 1 Tim. v. 19. " Notwithstanding this my Perswasion I will be glad
 Titus iii. 10. " to be informed, if our Saviour and his Apostles did
 " so leave the Church at liberty, as they might to-
 " tally alter or change the Church Government at
 " their Pleasure, which, if you can make appear to
 " me, then I will confess that one of my great Scr-
 " ples is clean taken away, and then there only re-
 " mains,
 " That being by my Coronation Oath obliged to
 " maintain Episcopal Government, as I found it
 " settled to my Hands, whether I may consent to the
 " Abolishing thereof until the same shall be eviden-
 " ced to me to be contrary to the Word of God."

Abstract of the Parli. Divines Reply. p. 246. The Parliament Divines, in answer to the first Part
 of his Majesty's Paper admit, that the Apostles did
 exercise the *extraordinary Powers* his Majesty mentions;
 but deny, that they conferr'd them upon any particular
 Persons as their Substitutes or *Successors*, and insist, that
 in Scripture there are only Two Orders of Officers
 (*viz.*) *Bishops* and *Deacons*, Phil. i. 1. *To the Saints at Phi-*
lippi that are in Christ Jesus, with the Bishops and Dea-
cons; and that the *Name, Office, and Work* of a *Bishop*
 and a *Presbyter* is the same; as in *Titus i. 5*, and *7*.
For this Cause left I thee in Crete — that thou shouldst or-
dain Presbyters in every City; for a Bishop must be blame-
less. Acts xx. 27, 28. *Paul called the Presbyters to-*
gether, and charged them to take heed to the Flock over

which the Holy Ghost had made them BISHOPS*. I Pet. ^{King} v. 1, 2. The PRESBYTERS among you I exhort, who also ^{Charles I.} am a PRESBYTER, feed the Flock of God among you, per- ^{1648.} forming the Office of BISHOPS †. As the Apostles were* Επισκο- extraordinary Officers, so were Timothy and Titus ^{† Επισκο-} ^{ποιους.} (viz.) Evangelists, but neither of them are called Bi- ^{† Επισκο-} ^{ποιους.} shops in Scripture, much less were they fixed to Ephe- sus or Crete, but travell'd up and down to settle Churches in several Countries. They observe further, that in the same Order of Officers there was not any one superior to another; no Apostle above an Apostle, no Presbyter above a Presbyter, nor one Deacon above another. They add, that the Angels of the Churches in the Revelations are never called Bishops, nor is the Word used in any of St. John's Writings, who calls himself a Presbyter; from whence they argue the Identity of these Offices in Scripture, and the Equality of the Officers. They admit, that not long after the Apostles Times Bishops are reported to have some Superiority above Presbyters, but this was not a Divine, but an Ecclesiastical Institution, as is evident from the Testimony of the most ancient Fathers, and the most considerable Writers in the Romish Church; to which they add the Suffrage of the first Reformers in King Henry the Eighth's Reign. The *Erudition of a Christian Man*, printed 1643. says expressly, That the Scripture mentions but two Orders, i. e. Bishops or Priests, and Deacons. They conclude with observing, that the modern Episcopacy is very different from that which began to obtain in the Second and Third Ages of the Church, insomuch that the present Hierarchy, which is but an human Institution, might be abolished, and the other remain.

After Three Days his Majesty, with the Assistance ^{Octob. 6.} of his learned Divines, replied to the foregoing Pa- ^{King's se-} ^{cond Paper.} per, and acknowledges, "that the Words Bishop and ^{Rel. Carol.} "Presbyter are sometimes confounded in Scripture; p. 260.
" he

King
Charles I.
1648.

“ he admits, that Presbyters are *Episcopi Gregis*, Bi-
shops of the Flock ; but that *Bishops* are *Episcopi*
“ *Gregis & Pastorum* within their several Precincts,
“ *i. e.* Bishops of the Flock and of the Pastors too ;
“ and that soon after, common Usage appropriated
“ *Bishop* to the Ecclesiastical Governor, leaving
“ *Presbyter* to signify the ordinary Minister or *Priest*,
“ as appears from the ancient Fathers and Councils.
“ He admits the Calling of the Apostles and their
“ Gifts to be extraordinary, but adds, that their
“ Mission to govern and teach was ordinary and per-
“ petual ; that the Bishops succeeded them in the
“ former, and Presbyters in the latter Function.

“ His Majesty still insists, that *Timothy* and *Titus*
“ were *Bishops*, as appears from Antiquity, and by
“ a Catalogue of Twenty seven Bishops of *Ephesus*
“ lineally descending from *Timothy*, as is avouched
“ by Dr. Reynolds against *Hart*, and therefore the Di-
“ stinction between an *Evangelist* and a *Bishop* is with-
“ out Foundation, the Work of an Evangelist being
“ no more than *Diligence in Preaching the Word*, not-
“ withstanding all Impediments, according to the Apo-
“ stle, 2 *Tim.* ii. 4, 5. His Majesty observes, that the
“ Parliament Divines had said nothing to prove, that
“ the Angels of the Churches were not *personæ singula-*
“ *res*, and such as had a Prelacy over Pastors, *i. e.* Bi-
“ shops, but that they dealt only in generals, and seem-
“ ed unwilling to speak their Opinions about them.

His Majesty affirms, “ that *Bishops* are the Succes-
sors of the Apostles in all Things not extraordina-
ry, such as *Teaching* and *Governing* ; and the Reasons
why they are not mentioned as a *distinct Order* in the
“ *New Testament*, are, 1. Because the Apostles reserv’d
“ to themselves the Government of those Churches
“ where they appointed Presbyters, and so ’tis pro-
“ bable the *Philippians* had no Bishop when *Paul* writ
“ to them. 2. Because in the Epistles of *Timothy* and
“ *Titus*, the Persons to whom he writ being them-
selves Bishops, there was no need to write about the

“ Qua-

“ Qualifications of any other Officers than those they
 “ wanted, which were Presbyters and Deacons only.

King
 Charles I.
 1648.

His Majesty admits concerning the Ages after the
 Apostles, “ That they are but a human Testimony,
 “ and yet may be infallible in Matter of Fact, as we
 “ infallibly know that *Aristotle* was a *Greek* Philoso-
 “ pher, &c. he avers the Genuineness of those Epistles
 “ of *Ignatius*, which give Testimony to the Superi-
 “ ority of a Bishop above a Presbyter; and though
 “ his Majesty’s Royal Progenitors had enlarged the
 “ Power and Privileges of Bishops, he conceives the
 “ Government to be substantially the same.”

Eleven Days after the Parliament’s Divines replied Octob. 17.
 to the King’s second Paper, in which they say, that Parl. Di-
 they can find no such Partition of the Apostolical Of- vines Re-
 fice in Scripture, as his Majesty mentions, (*viz.*) that ply.
 the *Governing part* should be committed to Bishops, Rel. Carol.
 the *Teaching and Administring the Sacraments* to Presbyters; p. 277.
 but that the whole Work, *per omnia*, belongs to Pres-
 byters, as appears from the Two Words used in the
Acts of the Apostles and St. Peter’s Epistle, ΠΟΛΙΤΕΙΝ,
 and ΕΠΙΣΚΟΠΕΙΝ, under the Force of which Words the
 Bishops claim their whole Right of Government and
 Jurisdiction; and when the Apostle *Paul* was taking
 leave of the *Ephesian* Presbyters and Bishops, he com-
 mits the *Government* of the Church, not to *Timothy*,
 who was then at his Elbow, but to the *Presbyters*,
 under the Name of Bishops, made by the Holy
 Ghost: From whence they conclude; that Bishops
 and Presbyters must be only Two Names of the same
 Order. They observe, that the Obscurity of Church
 History in the Times succeeding the Apostles made
 the *Catalogue Makers* take up their Succession upon
 Report; and ’tis a Blemish to their Evidence, that
 the nearer they come to the Days of the Apostles,
 they are the more doubtful and contradictory. These
 Divines are therefore of Opinion, that human Testi-
 mony on both Sides ought to be discharged, and the
 Point in Debate be determined only by Scripture.

And

King
Charles I.
1648.

And here they take hold of his Majesty's Concession, that in Scripture the Names of Bishops and Presbyters are not distinguished; and that there is no mention but of Two Orders, Bishops and Deacons. They desire his Majesty to shew them, where the Scripture has assigned any particular Work or Duty to a *Bishop* that is not common to a *Presbyter*, for they apprehend his Majesty's asserting that a Bishop is an Ecclesiastical Governor, and a Presbyter an ordinary Minister, is without any Demonstration or Evidence; a few clear Passages of Scripture for the Proof of this (say they) would bring the Point to an Issue. They deny his Majesty's Distinction of *Episcopi Gregis & Pastorum*, *Bishop of Sheep and Shepherds*, as being the Point in Question, and affirmed without any Evidence — That the Office of *Teaching* and *Governing* was ordinary in the Apostles, because continued in the Church (we crave leave to say) is that great Mistake which runs through the whole File of your Majesty's Discourse; for though there is a Succession in the Work of teaching and governing, there is no Succession in the *Commission or Office*, by which the Apostles performed them; a Succession may be to the same Work, but not to the same Commission; and since your Majesty can't produce any Record from Scripture warranting the Division of the Office of *Teaching* and *Governing* into Two Hands, we must look upon it but as an Invention of Men to get the Power into their Hands.

These Divines go on with a long Proof that *Timothy* and *Titus* were Evangelists; that is, not fixed to one Place, but travelling with the Apostles from one Country to another to plant Churches, and accordingly have drawn out an Account of their Travels from the *Acts* of the *Apostles*, and *St. Paul's Epistles*. They observe the Weakness of his Majesty's Reasons, why Bishops are not mentioned as a *distinct Order* in Scripture, and add a Third of their own (*viz.*) Because really *they were not*. As for the Apostles reserving in their own Hands the *Power of governing*, they

they admit, that they could no more part with it than with their Apostleship. Had they set up Bishops in all Churches they had no more parted with their Power of governing, than in setting up Presbyters; Presbyters being called *Rulers, Governors, and Bishops*; nor could the Apostles reasonably be supposed to commit the Government of the Church of *Ephesus* to the Presbyters, when he was taking his last Farewel of them, and yet reserve the Power of governing (in ordinary) to himself. His Majesty's other Reason (they say) is inconclusive, and in a Sort begging the Question. They add, that it is very unaccountable, that if there had been two Sorts of Bishops, one *over Presbyters*, and the other *over the Flock*, that there should be no mention, no mark of Difference, no distinct Method of Ordination, by which they might be distinguished, throughout the whole *New Testament*.

King
Charles I.
1648.

As to the Ages after the Apostles, they admit there were *Presbyter Bishops*, but not of Divine Institution; that the Catalogues of Succession are undoubtedly defective, but if they were not, it remains still to be proved, that the *Bishops* in the Catalogue were vested with the *Jurisdiction* which the modern Bishops claim.

These Divines profess to honour the pious Intentions of his Majesty's Ancestors, and admit, that ornamental Accessions to the Person make no substantial Change in the Office, but that the primitive Episcopacy, and the present Hierarchy, are essentially different. They acknowledge a Subordination of the Exercise of Jurisdiction to the Civil Power, and the Laws of the Land; and conclude with Thanks to his Majesty's Condescension, in allowing them to examine his learned Reply, clothed in such Excellency of Style, and pray, that a Pen in the Hand of such Abilities may ever be employed in a Subject worthy of it.

King
 Charles I. wherein " he acknowledges the great Pains of these
 1648. " Divines to inform his Judgment, and takes parti-
 Nov. I. " cular Notice of the Decency of their Manner, and
 1648. " of their respectful Address to him upon this Occa-
 King's last " sion, but says they mistook him, when they spoke
 Paper. " of a Writ of Partition of the Episcopal Office ;
 Ib. p. 324. " whereas his Meaning was, that the Office of *Teach-*
 " *ing* was common both to the Bishop and Presbyter,
 " but that *Government* was peculiar to the Bishop." His Majesty declines answering to all the Particulars, because he would not draw out the Dispute into a greater length, but seems not convinced by any Thing that had been offer'd ; he affirms, that *Timothy* and *Titus* were *Episcopi Pastorum*, Bishops over Presbyters ; and that *Timothy* had a distinct Work from Presbyters, that is, that he *might know how to behave himself in the Exercise of his Episcopal Office*. His Majesty relies on the numerous Testimonies of ancient and modern Writers for the Scripture Original of Bishops, and adds, that the Testimonies of an equal Number of equal Credit to the contrary will signify nothing, because one Witness for the *Affirmative* ought to be of more Value than Ten for the *Negative* — In conclusion his Majesty put them upon evidencing one of these Three Things, (1.) Either, that there is no Form of Church Government prescribed in Scripture. Or, (2.) If there be, that the Civil Power may change it as they see cause. Or, (3.) If it be unchangeable, that it was not *Episcopal*, but some other that they will name, for till this is done he shall think himself excusable for not consenting to the Abolishing that Government which he found settled at his Coronation ; which is so ancient ; has been so universally received in the Christian World ; has been confirmed by so many Acts of Parliament, and subscribed by all the Clergy of the Church of *England*. But the Ministers declined entering into so large a Field, which

which must have brought on a Debate upon the whole Ecclesiastical Polity of the Church.

King
Charles I.
1648.

Remarks.

These were all the Papers that passed on both Sides, and deserve the Notice of those who would enter deep into this Controversy. His Majesty saying, that one Witness for the Affirmative, that *Episcopacy is of Divine Institution*, ought to be of more Value than Ten for the Negative, is (I apprehend) one of the weakest and most frivolous Arguments of his Letter; for 'tis but changing the Form of the Question, and making the Presbyterian say, that *Presbytery is of Divine Institution*, and then asking his Majesty, or any Episcopal Divine, whether *one Affirmative Testimony* ought to be of more Value than *ten Negative ones* of equal Merit. His Majesty's Stile is strong and masculine, and the Parliament Divines decent and respectful. Sir *Phil. Warwick* read the King's Papers before the Commissioners, and Mr. *Vines* those of the Ministers: All was manag'd with the greatest Propriety, which makes it hard to account for Lord *Clarendon's* Account of the Behaviour of these Divines, who says, "they all behaved with p. 216.
" that Rudeness, as if they meant to be no longer
" subject to a King any more than to a Bishop;
" that they inveigh'd bitterly against the Pride and
" Lustre of Lord Bishops; that Two of them very
" plainly and fiercely told the King, that if he did
" not consent to the utter Abolishing of Bishops he
" would be damned; the Men were *Spurstow* and
" *Jenkins*, who after the Return of King *Charles II.*
" according to the Modesty of that Race of People,
" came to kiss his Majesty's Hand." And yet neither of the Divines above-mentioned were nominated to assist at the Treaty, nor had any Share in the Debates. Mr. *Baxter* says, *All the Parliament Divines came off with great Honour.* But such is his Lordship's Candor towards any Thing that looks like a Presbyterian!

King
Charles I.
1648.
Of the Co-
ronation
Oath.

The King's second Difficulty, relating to his *Coronation Oath*, by which he apprehended himself bound to maintain Episcopal Government as he found it settled when he received the Crown, the Commissioners did not think so proper for the Determination of *Divines*, because it depended upon the Law of the Land, and therefore took this part of the Debate upon themselves. The King conceived, *That the Consent of the Clergy themselves in Convocation assembled, was necessary before they could be deprived of those Possessions and Privileges of which they were legally possessed.* But the Commissioners maintained, that the Legislature alone was to determine in this Case, as it did at the Reformation; that it was not to be supposed, that any Body of Men would consent to part with their Possessions if they could keep them; but *if the Legislature judged any Part of the King's Coronation Oath hurtful to the Publick it was certainly in their Power, with the Consent of the King, to alter or annul it.*—One may justly wonder, that this Branch of the Coronation Oath should stick so much with the King, when it was notorious that his Government for almost Fifteen Years, was one continued Breach of *Magna Charta*, and an Invasion upon the Civil Liberties of his Subjects, without their Consent in Parliament, or any other way.

The King's
final Con-
cessions.

Rushw.
p. 1291.

But neither Party would accede to the other, tho' the Article of Religion was almost the only Point that hinder'd the Conclusion of the Treaty: His Majesty wondered at the Shyness and Unwillingness of the Parliament *Divines* to debate his Three Questions, and told them plainly, that their Endeavours to give him Satisfaction in them, would have added to the Reputation of their Ingenuity in the whole Undertaking, it not being probable that they should work much upon *his* Judgment while they were fearful to declare their *own*; or possible to relieve *his* Conscience, but by a free declaring of *theirs*. But what was all this to the Point? The only Question before them was, *Whether*

ther Diocesan Episcopacy was of Divine Institution? If they had satisfied his Majesty in that they had done their Duty; to launch out farther was to lose Time and protract the Treaty beyond its Limits. If *Diocesan Episcopacy* was not *scriptural* it might be abolished, which was all the Parliament contended for at present. But the King's Divines made him dispute every Inch of Ground, and instead of yielding any one Point to the Ministers, started new Difficulties, which was his Ruin. However, towards the Close of the Treaty, when the conquering Army was returning towards London, and Things were almost come to an Extremity, his Majesty told the *Commissioners*, " that though he could not with a good Conscience consent to the Abolishing of Episcopacy, because he believed the Substance of it to be of Apostolical Institution, he was willing to reduce it to the primitive Usage; and if his Two Houses should so advise, he would be content to lessen the Extent, and multiply the Number of Diocesses — He still apprehended the entire Alienation of the Bishops Lands by Sale to be Sacrilege — He was willing to assent to the Calling and Sitting of the Assembly of Divines, as desired — He would also confirm the publick Use of the *Directory* in all Churches and Chapels, and would repeal so much of all Statutes as concerned the Book of *Common Prayer* only; provided the Use thereof might be continued in his Majesty's Chapel for himself and his Household; and that the same [*i. e.* the *Directory*] should be confirmed by Act of Parliament for Three Years, provided a Consultation be had in the mean Time with the Assembly of Divines as before mentioned — Touching the Articles of Religion [the *Assembly's Confession*] his Majesty desired further Time to examine them before he bound up himself and his Subjects in Matters of Faith and Doctrine — His Majesty will consent to an Act for better Observation of the Lord's

King
Charles I.
1648.

Rushw.
p. 1301,
1302.

King Charles I. 1648. " Day, and to prevent saying of Mass — But as to the *Covenant*, his Majesty was not satisfied to take it, nor to impose it upon others."

These Concessions being voted unsatisfactory by the Two Houses at *Westminster*, his Majesty consented further, *Octob. 21. 1.* " That Archbishops, Chancellors, Deans, and the whole Hierarchy, be abolished, except BISHOPS. 2. That none but the *Presbyterian* Government be exercised for *Three Years*. 3. That in case no Settlement should be agreed upon within that Time, that then for the future the Power of Ordination should not be exercised by *Bishops* without the Counsel and Assistance of Presbyters; that no other Episcopal Jurisdiction should be exercised but such as should be agreed upon in Parliament; and if within that Time his Majesty should be convinced that *Episcopacy* is not agreeable to the Word of God, or that Christ commanded any other Government, he will embrace it, and take *Episcopacy* quite away." The Houses not being satisfied with these Concessions, his Majesty added, *Nov. 4.* " That he would make no new Bishops for Three Years; and for the further Satisfaction of the Parliament, he would not insist upon the Use of the *Common Prayer* in his own Chapel for that Time, but would make use of some other Form of Divine Service for himself, and forbid Mass to be said in the Queen's Chapel." This was his Majesty's final Answer, which the Commons voted unsatisfactory, and ordered the Commissioners to acquaint him with their Votes.

Arguments and Motives of the Parli. Commissioners to gain the King's Consent. Rushw. p. 1335. Whitl. p. 351.

The Treaty was prolonged Three Weeks after this, in which Time the Commissioners did all that was in their Power to obtain his Majesty's Consent, beseeching him with Tears upon their bended Knees, since Matters were brought to so narrow a Compass, to yield up the Point of *Religion*. In their last Paper of *Nov. 20.* they beseech him to consider, " That it is not the *Apostolical Bishop* which the Parliament

" desire

“ desire him to abolish, but that Episcopacy which
 “ was formerly established by Law in this Kingdom,
 “ and has been found by Experience to be an Hind-
 “ rance to Piety, a Grievance to the Subject, an
 “ Encroachment upon the Power of the Civil Magi-
 “ strate, and so a Burden to the Persons, Purfes, and
 “ Consciences of Men. They do not meddle with
 “ the *Apostolical Bishop*, nor determine what that Bi-
 “ shop was whom the Apostles mention in Scripture;
 “ but they are for putting *him* down by a Law *who*
 “ was set up by a Law; and certainly nothing can
 “ be more proper for Parliaments, than to alter,
 “ repeal, or make Laws which appear to them for
 “ the Good of the Commonwealth.

“ But admitting *Apostolical Bishops* were within the
 “ Purport of this Bill, we humbly conceive it does
 “ not follow, that therefore in Conscience it must
 “ not be passed, for we may not grant, that no Oc-
 “ casion can make that alterable which has Founda-
 “ tion only in the *Practice* of the Apostles, and not
 “ in a *Precept*. Some Things have certainly been
 “ altered which the Apostles practised; Circumstan-
 “ ces many Times change the Nature of moral Acti-
 “ ons; For the attaining a great Good, or the avoid-
 “ ing a great Evil, that which, singly consider'd, is
 “ not fit to be done, and, perhaps, would be a
 “ Fault if it were, may become a Duty, and a Man
 “ may be bound in Conscience to do it. And if ever
 “ Circumstances could have a more powerful and
 “ considerable Influence than in this Juncture, we
 “ leave to your Majesty's Consideration. But this
 “ is said only for Argument sake, admitting, but
 “ not granting the Grounds on which your Majesty
 “ is pleased to go, in refusing to pass this Bill.” The
 Strength of the Commissioners Reasoning upon this
 Head may be seen at once in this short Syllogism;
*Whatsoever is not of Divine Institution may be very law-
 fully altered, changed, or reversed — But the Episcopacy
 which is established in the Church of England is not that*

King
Charles I.
1648.

Episcopacy mentioned in Scripture — therefore the Laws which establiſhed it may take it away.

The Commissioners go on, “ As for the *Sale of Bi-*
“ *shops Lands*, which your Majesty conceives to be
“ *Sacrilege*, we humbly offer, that Bishopricks be-
“ ing dissolved their Lands revert to the *Crown*,
“ which is their Foundation and Patron, and here-
“ tofore held it no Sacrilege to dispose of Bishops
“ Lands to its own and other Uses by Act of Parlia-
“ ment, which was an ordinary Practice in your Ma-
“ jesty’s Predecessors, Kings and Queens of this Na-
“ tion. Besides, in all Ages, even under the Cere-
“ monial Law, imminent and urgent Necessity has
“ dispensed with the Alienation of consecrated
“ Things.

“ Your Majesty is pleased to say, *You cannot com-*
“ *municate in a publick Form of Divine Service, where*
“ *it is uncertain what the Minister will offer to God.*
“ But we beseech your Majesty to be informed,
“ that the *Directory* sets down the Matter of the
“ Prayer which the Minister is to use; Words and
“ Expressions for Enlargement being left to his Dis-
“ cretion. But give us leave to add, that this ought
“ to be no Objection with your Majesty, for then
“ one must not hear any Prayer before Sermon, for
“ here every Minister has a several Form, which he
“ varies according to Occasion.

“ Upon the whole therefore we humbly hope,
“ that your Majesty, after a most serious Considera-
“ tion, will discern the just Cause which the Two
“ Houses have for remaining unsatisfied with your
“ Majesty’s Concessions, *with relation to the Church*,
“ for they are apprehensive, that after the Expira-
“ tion of the Three Years in which Episcopal Go-
“ vernment is to be suspended, a Bishop so qualified
“ as your Majesty expresses will rise again; for if
“ you should not in the mean Time agree with your
“ Parliament upon any other Form of Government,
“ which depends wholly upon your Majesty’s Plea-
“ sure,

“ sure, no other Government can be set up ; and then
 “ this Episcopacy will return with so great Power,
 “ that the Bishop may choose whether any Minister
 “ at all, shall be made in the Church of *England*, and
 “ those that shall must be at his Devotion, he having
 “ the negative Voice in Ordination, which, we hum-
 “ bly conceive, is no where declared in Scripture to
 “ be the Prerogative of an *Apostolical Bishop*.

King
 Charles I.
 1648.

“ We humbly say further, that the Charging Bi-
 “ shops Lands with Leases for Ninety nine Years
 “ is not sufficient, because there is a Rent reserved to
 “ the Bishop, and the Property will continue as be-
 “ fore ; so that it can't be expected that the *Presbyte-
 “ rian Government* should be complied with, and
 “ exercised with Profit or Comfort to the Church,
 “ as long as a Door is left open for the Return of a su-
 “ perior Power upon the first Opportunity.

“ We hope your Majesty will pardon our pressing
 “ in this manner ; our Intention is not to offer Vio-
 “ lence to your Majesty's Conscience, but to endea-
 “ vour to inform it in a Matter that appears to the
 “ Two Houses of so great Consequence. We again
 “ humbly beseech your Majesty to review our for-
 “ mer Papers ; call to mind those Reasons and Ar-
 “ guments which in Debate have been used upon this
 “ Subject, with such others as your own Wisdom
 “ shall suggest, and then be pleased to give your
 “ Royal Consent to the Particulars above specified,
 “ that both your self and your People may have
 “ Cause to rejoice.”

The Committee of States in *Scotland* joined with *States of*
 the Parliament Commissioners in beseeching his *Scotland*
 Majesty to consent to the *Proposition about Religion*, *press the*
 which they understood to be the Point his Majesty *King's*
 most stuck at, and which they in Honour and Inte-
 rest were obliged most to insist upon, and without *Consent.*
 which (they add) his Throne cannot be established
 in Righteousness. They also writ to the Prince of *Rushw.*
 Wales

King Charles I. 1648. *Wales to mediate with his Father. The General Assembly, and the Commissioners of the Kirk of Scotland,* sent at the same Time two frowning Letters, for (it was said) *they* could speak more plainly in the Name of their *Master* than the Commissioners of Estates would venture to do in their own. But his Majesty was deaf to all Arguments and Perswasions, being determined, if his Two Houses did not think fit to recede from the Strictness of their Demands in these Particulars, to cast himself (as he said) on his *Saviour's* Goodness to support and defend him from all Afflictions, how great soever, which might befall him, rather than upon politick Considerations deprive himself of the Tranquillity of his Mind; and therefore, excepting his Majesty's *Consent to license the Assembly's lesser Catechism with a proper Preface*, in all other Matters in difference he resolved to abide by his former Answers.

King's Speech to the Commissioners.
Vol. Pam.
N^o 83.

At the Close of the Treaty the King made a short Speech to the Commissioners, in which he reminds them how far he had condescended for the sake of Peace. He desired them to put a good Interpretation on his vehement Expressions in some parts of the Debates, there being nothing in his Intentions but Kindness; and that as they had used a great deal of Freedom, and shewed great Abilities in their Debates, which had taken him off from some of his Opinions, that they would use the same Freedom with his Two Houses, to press them to an Abatement of those Things in which his Conscience was not yet satisfied, which more Time might do, his Opinions not being like the Laws of the *Medes and Persians*, unalterable or infallible; adding his very hearty Thanks for the Pains they had taken to satisfy him, professing that he wanted Eloquence to commend their Abilities. He desired them candidly to represent all the Transactions of the Treaty to his Two Houses, that they might see nothing of his own Interest, how near or dear soever (but that wherein his Conscience is not satisfied) can hinder, on his Part, an happy Conclusion of the Treaty.

The

The King's Concessions were certainly a sufficient Foundation for Peace with the *Presbyterians*, if they could have been relied upon, and were so voted by the Parliament when it was too late. His Majesty had given up the main Pillars of the Hierarchy, by consenting to abolish Archbishops, Deans, and Chapters, and that a Bishop should not act without his Presbyters; which was Archbishop *Usher's* Scheme, and all that the *Puritans* at first contended for; but the *Scots* and *English Presbyterians* not being so apprehensive of Danger from the Army as they ought, concluded they could not fail of their whole Establishment in a few Weeks, though there was not the least mention of *Liberty of Conscience for Dissenters*, which, they were sensible, must occasion high Discontents in the Army. The Commissioners would willingly have relaxed to an Accommodation, and took all Opportunities to assure his Majesty, that if he would but yield for a Time, Things should be made easy to him afterwards. But the Truth is, as the King would not trust the Parliament, so neither would they the King, because they observed, (1.) His Dilatoriness in the Treaty, as if he waited for some advantageous Turn of Affairs to revoke his Concessions. (2.) His resolute Disputing every Inch of Ground without yielding a single Proposition. (3.) His Majesty's Maxim, *That what was yielded out of Necessity was not binding when the Restraint was taken off.* (4.) They suspected his Sincerity, because the Duke of *Ormond* was at this very Time treating with the *Irish* Rebels by his Majesty's Commission, which he would not recal. (5.) They remember'd his Majesty's artful Manner of interpreting away his Concessions. (6.) They gave out that he was not his own Master, but that his Conscience was under the Directions of his *Divines*, who would put him upon all Extreame for their Support. (7.) They were incensed at the Murders and Depredations of the Cavalier Soldiers, even after they were beaten out of the Field, and were afraid of their recover-

King
Charles I.
1648.
Remarks.

Clar: 7
p. 222.

King recovering the Management of publick Affairs. And
 Charles I. *Lastly*, They were as firmly in the Belief of the Divine
 1648. Institution of Presbytery, and the Obligation of the
 Covenant, as the King and his Divines could be of the
 Necessity of Episcopacy.

Book XI. But under all these Prepossessions Lord *Clarendon*
 p. 217. observes some of the Commissioners found means to
 advertise the King in private, “ that they were of
 “ his Majesty’s Judgment about Church Govern-
 “ ment, which they hoped might be preserved,
 “ but not by the Method his Majesty pursued ;
 “ that all the reasonable Hope of preserving the
 “ Crown was in dividing the Parliament and
 “ the Army, which could be done no other way
 “ than by giving Satisfaction with Reference to
 “ the Church. This might probably unite the
 “ Parliament and the City of *London*, and en-
 “ able them to bring his Majesty to *London* with
 “ Honour, where he might have an Opportu-
 “ nity of gaining more Abatements than he could
 “ ever expect by refusing to sign the Prelimi-
 “ naries. Many Advertisements came from his
 “ Majesty’s Friends in *London*, and other Places,
 “ that it was high Time the Treaty was at an End,
 “ before the Army drew nearer *London*, which it
 “ would shortly do, as soon as those in the North
 “ had finished their Works.” Sir *J. Browning* begged
 his Majesty, in his Closet, to make all his Conces-
 sions in one Declaration, at one Instant, and in
 one Day. The Parliament Commissioners were
 no less importunate with the King, but he was in-
 flexible, and usually out of Humour. Remarkable
 are the Words of Mr. *Whitlock*, speaking of the
 above-mentioned Concessions ; “ More than this
 “ could not be obtained, though most earnestly
 “ begg’d of his Majesty by some of the Commis-
 “ sioners (great Persons) with Tears, and upon their
 “ Knees, particularly, as to the Proposition con-
 “ cerning *Religion*, wherein Church Government,

Whitel.
 Mem.
 p. 335,
 336.

“ pub-

“ publick Worship, and chiefly the Revenues of the
 “ Church, swayed more with the *King's Chaplains*
 “ then about him; and they more with his Maje-
 “ sty (continually whispering Matter of Conscience
 “ to him) than the Parliament, and all his Commis-
 “ sioners, could prevail with him for an Agreement,
 “ though possibly his own Judgment (which was
 “ above all theirs) might not be so fully convinced
 “ by his eager Divines about him.” But *these* had
 Possession of his Majesty's Conscience, and directed
 his Answers: And tho' they abhorred the Thoughts
 of deposing the King, or putting him to Death, it
 ought to be considered, Whether their stiff and im-
 prudent Behaviour did not manifestly lead the Way
 to it?

King
Charles I.
 1648.

His Majesty being intangled in this manner was
 pleased, before the breaking up of the Treaty, to
 send for Archbishop *Usher*, and asked him this Que-
 stion, *Whether he found in all Antiquity, that Presbyters*
alone ordained any? To which the Archbishop repli-
 ed frankly, that he could shew his Majesty more
 than that, *even that Presbyters alone had successively or-*
ained Bishops, and instanced in St. *Jerom's* Words,
 in his *Epist. ad Evagrium*, where he says, the Pres-
 byters of *Alexandria* chose and made their own Bi-
 shops from the Days of *Mark* the Apostle till *Hera-*
clus and *Dionysius*. At the same Time the Archbi-
 shop offered his Majesty his own Scheme for the Re-
 duction of Episcopacy to the Form of Presbytery,
 which his Majesty had formerly rejected, but was
 now at length willing to accept, as the Archbishop
 himself told Mr. *Baxter*; but the *Scots* and *English*
Presbyterians would not acquiesce.

Archbisp. p
Usher's
Sentiments
Baxter's
Life,
 p. 206.

Though the Commissioners had no Power to re-
 cede from their Instructions, the Treaty was pro-
 longed from Time to Time in hopes that something
 or other might gain upon the King; but his Maje-
 sty was frequently out of Temper, and treated the
 Commissioners with no Degree of Confidence. The
 Forty

Conclusion
of the
Treaty.

King
Charles I.
1648.
p. 232.

Book XI.
p. 227.

Forty Days to which the Treaty was limited being ended *Octob.* 28. it was prolonged for Seven Days, then for Fourteen, and so on, to the 28th of *November*, for which (says Lord *Clarendon*) his Majesty was nothing glad; nor did his Friends in the House desire the Prolongation, but was moved by those that wished the Treaty might have no good Effect, to give the Army Time to finish their Summer's Work, and return to *London*. On the last Day of the Treaty, when the *Commissioners* pressed his Majesty to consider, that there was not one whole Day to determine the Fate of the Kingdom, and that nothing could save his Majesty from the growing Power of the Army, but giving his Two Houses Satisfaction in the Particular of the Church, "then (says Lord *Clarendon*) his Majesty's own Council, and the Divines, besought him to consider the Safety of his Person, even for the Church's sake, which had no Prospect of being preserved but by his Life, that the unavoidable Necessity that lay upon him obliged him to do any Thing that was not Sin." But why did they not do this sooner? However, it seems *they could only prevail for a Suspension of the Episcopal Power in Point of Ordination and Jurisdiction, till he and the Two Houses should agree what Government should be established for the future.* Which was the Substance of all his Majesty meant by his Concessions. After Supper the *Commissioners* took their leave, and having kissed his Majesty's Hand, began their Journey next Morning towards *London*. 'Tis heroick Language that Mr. *Warwick* puts into the King's Mouth on this Occasion: His Majesty said to him one Night, "I am like a Captain that has defended a Place well, and his Superiors not being able to relieve him he had leave to surrender it; but though they cannot relieve me in the Time let them relieve me when they can, else (says he) I will hold it out till I make some Stone in this Building my Tomb-Stone; and so will I do by the Church of *England*."

Lord

Lord *Clarendon* is of Opinion, "That the major
 " Part of both Houses, as well as the *Commissioners*,
 " were at this Time so far from desiring the Execu-
 " tion of all their Concessions, that if they had been
 " able to have resisted the wild Fury of the Army,
 " they would themselves have been Suitors to have
 " declined the greatest part of them." And were
 not the King's Counsellors and Divines sensible of
 this? Why then did they trifle away the Time in fruit-
 less Debates for above a Month, when it was evident
 to all Men that every Day the King lost made his
 Condition more desperate? But thus ended the famous
 Treaty of *Newport*, which, like all the rest, proved
 unsuccessful, chiefly from an incurable Jealousy and
 Distrust between the contending Parties, which, how
 reasonable it was on either Side must be left with the
 Reader.

King
Charles I.
 1648.

The noble Historian observes, that the King sent
 the Prince of *Wales* a Journal of the Proceedings of
 the Treaty, and an exact Copy of all the Papers that
 had passed to the 29th of *November*, together with
 a Letter of Six Sheets of Paper writ with his Majesty's
 own Hand, containing the Reasons and Motives of
 all his Concessions. The Conclusion of the Letter,
 his Lordship says, deserves to be preserved in Letters
 of Gold, as it gives the best Character of that excel-
 lent Prince; but the Copy does not, in my Opinion,
 resemble the Original. Some Passages of it are these,
 " — We have laboured long in search of Peace, do
 " not you be dishearten'd to tread in the same Steps.
 " — Prefer the Way of Peace — Conquer your
 " Enemies by pardoning rather than by punishing
 " — Never affect more Greatness or Prerogative
 " than that which is really and intrinsically for the
 " Good of your Subjects, not the Satisfaction of Fa-
 " vourites. You may perceive that all Men en-
 " trust their Treasure where it returns them Inte-
 " rest. If Princes, like the Sea, receive, and repay
 " all the fresh Streams the Rivers intrust them with,
 " they

*King's Let-
 ter to the
 Prince.*

Book XI.
 p. 229.

King Charles I. 1648. " they will not grudge, but pride themselves to
 " make them up an Ocean — If God restore you to
 " your Right whatever you promise keep — Don't
 " think any Thing in this World worth obtaining by
 " false and unjust Means —" These are excellent
 Maxims of Government; but surely if his Majesty
 had conducted himself by them he could not have
 been reduced to such a low and destitute Condi-
 tion, as to have hardly a Place in the World to hide
 himself in; " for, says Lord Clarendon, there was
 Clarend. p. 231. " at that Time no Court in Christendom so honour-
 " ably or generously constituted, that it would have
 " been glad to have seen him, and they who wished
 " him well, did not wish his Escape, because they
 " imagined Imprisonment was the worst that could
 " befall him."

Remarks. I am unwilling to suspect the Genuineness of this
 Letter, though there were so many Forgeries put
 upon the World about this Time to advance his Ma-
 jesty's Piety and Virtue, that one can hardly feel the
 Ground he treads on. If such a Letter was sent to the
 Prince 'tis very strange he should never see it; or that
 his Lordship, who lived in the Prince's Family, and
 extracted his Account of the Treaty of *Newport* from
 these Papers (as he declares) should never shew it
 his Master; and yet these are the Words of Bishop
 Burnet, in the *History of his Life and Times*, " The
 p. 51. " Duke of York suffer'd me to talk very freely to
 " him about Religion, and he told me among other
 " Things, that *the Letter to the Prince of Wales was*
 " *never brought to him.*"

The Case of the Army. The Army had been Six Months in the Field this
 Summer fighting against the *Cavaliers* and *Scots*, but
 both being now reduced and conquered they began to
 express an high Dissatisfaction with the *present Trea-*
ty, because no Provision was made for the Point they
 had so much at Heart, which was *Liberty of Conscience*.
 Here they had just Reason of Complaint, but ought
 not to have relieved themselves by the Methods, and at
 the

the Expence they did. They were thoroughly incensed against the *King and his Cavaliers* on one hand, and the *high Presbyterians* on the other. It appeared to them, that the King's Sentiments in Religion and Politicks were not changed; that he would always be raising new Commotions till Things returned to their former Channel; that in the present Treaty he had yielded nothing but by Constraint; and, that when he was restored to his Throne they should neither be safe in their Lives or Fortunes after the shedding so much loyal Blood. On the other hand, if *Presbyterian Uniformity* should take Place by virtue of the present Treaty their Condition would not be much mended; for (said they) if the King himself cannot obtain Liberty to have the *Common Prayer* read privately in his own Family, what must the *Independants* and *Seſtaries* expect? What have we been fighting for, if after all the Hazards we have run to set up *Presbytery* as the established Religion we must be banished our Country or driven into Corners?

King
Charles I.
1648.

While the Resentments of the Army ran thus high, *Their Pro-*
their Officers, who were *high Enthusiasts*, but other-ceedings.
wise Men of sober and virtuous Morals, kept several Days of Fasting and Prayer at their Head Quarters at St. *Alban's*, till at length being in deep Dispair, and having worked themselves up to a kind of spiritual Phrensy, they enter'd upon the most desperate Measures, resolving to assume the SOVEREIGN POWER into their own Hands; to bring the King to Justice; to set aside the *Covenant*; and change the Government into a Commonwealth. To accomplish these monstrous Resolutions, which were founded (as they said) upon SELF PRESERVATION, though carried on by Methods subversive not only of the Rights of Parliament, but of the very Laws of Society it self, the Officers agreed upon a *Remonstrance*, which was presented to the Parliament by Six of their Council, Nov. 20. Eight Days before the Expiration of the Treaty with the King, together with

King a Letter from General *Fairfax* to the House, desiring
Charles I. it might have a present Reading.
 1648.

Their Remonstrance The Remonstrance sets forth the Miscarriages of
 the King's Government; his double and dilatory
 Proceedings in Treaties, particularly in *that now on*
Foot; and then desires the House to return to their
 Votes of Non-Addresses; to lay aside that bargain-
 ing Proposition of compounding with Delinquents, and
 bring them to Punishment; and among these Offenders,
Clarend. they propose, " (1.) That the KING be brought to
 p. 236. " Justice, as the capital Cause of all. (2.) That a
Rapin, " Day be set for the Prince of *Wales* and Duke of
 p. 549. " *York* to surrender themselves, or be declared inca-
 " pable of the Government; and, that for the fu-
 " ture, no King be admitted but by the free Electi-
 " on of the People."

They seize The Commons, upon reading this Remonstrance,
the King's were struck with Surprise, and being all in Confusion,
Person a deferr'd the Debate for Ten Days, *i. e.* to the End of
2d Time. the Treaty. But the Officers being apprehensive of what
 might happen in that Time sent Colonel *Ewer* to the
Isle of Wight with a Party of Horse to secure the Person
 of the King, and to order Colonel *Hammond* to quit the
 Island, and attend the Council of Officers at their head
 Quarters at *Windsor*; the King was secured the very
 Day, after the Expiration of the Treaty, and next
 Morning [Nov. 30.] convey'd by a Party of Horse to
Hurst Castle, where he continued till he was conduct-
 ed by Colonel *Harrison* to *Windsor*, in order to his
Rushw. Trial. The same Day the Officers sent a Declaration to
 p. 1341. the House to enforce their late *Remonstrance*, complain-
 Rapin, ing that they were wholly neglected, and desiring the
 p. 555. Majority of the House to exclude from their Councils
 such as would obstruct Justice, or else withdraw from
 them. This occasioned such high Language among
Clarend. the Members, that some moved that the principal
 p. 237. Officers who had a Share in the Remonstrance might
They march be impeach'd of High Treason. Upon which the
to London Army marched directly to *London*, with General
and purge
the Parl. *Fair-*

Fairfax at their Head, who writ to the Lord Mayor and Common Council, that he was marching to *Westminster* in pursuance of the late Remonstrance, and desired 40000*l.* of the City in part of their Arrears. *Dec. 2.* he quarter'd his Troops about *Whitehall*, the *Mews*, *Covent Garden*, and *St. James's*, assuring the Citizens, that they should disturb no Man in his Property.

King
Charles I.
1648.

Though the Houses were now surrounded with an armed Force; they had the Courage to vote, that the *Seizing the Person of the King, and carrying him Prisoner to Hurst Castle, was without their Advice and Consent*; and next Day, after having sat all Night [*Dec. 5.*] it was carried without a Division, that the *King's Concessions to the Parliament's Propositions were a sufficient Ground for the Houses to proceed upon for settling the Peace of the Kingdom*; two Hundred forty four Members being present. But the Officers being determined to carry their Point discharged the City Trained Bands, and placed a Regiment of Horse, and another of Foot, the very next Day, at the Door of the Parliament House, and Colonel *Pride* having a List of the disaffected Members in his Hand, took about Forty of them into Custody, and denied Entrance to about an Hundred more, which discouraged several others from keeping their Places, insomuch that the House of Commons was left in the Possession of about one Hundred and fifty or two Hundred Persons, most of them Officers of the Army, who carried every Thing according to the Plan agreed upon in their Council at *St. Albans*. *Oliver Cromwell* was not yet come to *London* from his Northern Expedition, but writ from *Knottingly*, *Nov. 20.* that the Officers of his Regiments were deeply sensible of the Miseries of the Kingdom, and had a great Zeal for impartial Justice to be done on Offenders, with whom he concurred. *December 6.* he came to *London*, and next Day had the Thanks of the House for his faithful Services to the Publick. *December 11.* a Paper called the

Dugdale,
P. 363.

King AGREEMENT OF THE PEOPLE was presented to the
Charles I. General and Council of Officers, as a Rule for future
1648. Government. 'Twas supposed to be drawn up by *Ire-*
ton, and proposed a Dissolution of the present Parlia-
 ment, and a new one to be chosen, consisting of three
 Hundred Members, who shall elect a *Council of State*
 from among themselves for the Management of all
 publick Affairs, under certain Restrictions; one of
 which is, that *they do not lay any Restraints on the Con-*
sciences of Men for religious Differences (as has been
 mentioned) but no Proceedings were had upon it,
 nor did it ever take place.

Votes of the In the mean Time, the House of Commons (if
Remainder they now deserved that Name) voted his Majesty's
of the H. of Concessions at the *Ile of Wight* not *satisfactory*; and,
Commons. "that no Member who had been absent when that
Rushw. "Vote was passed should sit again in the House till
p. 1360. "he had subscribed it; that no more Addresses
Ibid. "be made to the King for the future; that no Ma-
p. 1365. "lignant, who had assisted against the Parliament
 "in the first or second Civil War, or that had abet-
 "ted the late Tumults, should be capable of being
 "chosen Lord Mayor or Alderman of the City of
 "London, or be capable of any Place of Profit or
 "Trust, or so much as of giving his Vote for choo-
 "sing Persons into such Offices, for the Space of
Clarend. "One Year." The secluded Members published a
p. 240. Protestation against all these Proceedings as null and
 void, till they were restored to their Places; but the
 Lords and Commons that remained in the Houses vo-
 ted their Protestation false, scandalous, and seditious.

Who re- The Army having conquered all Opposition went
solve to try on with irresistible Violence to change the whole
the King. Frame of the Government; and to make way
Rushw. for it, determined to impeach the King of High
p. 1363. Treason, as having been the Cause of all the Blood
Rapin, that had been spilt in the late War. This unheard
p. 562. of Motion met with some Opposition even in that
Ingle, pack'd Assembly; *Oliver Cromwell* was in doubt, and
p. 566. said,

said, “ if any Man moved this of Choice or Design he
 “ should think him the greatest Traytor in the World;
 “ but since PROVIDENCE and NECESSITY had cast
 “ them upon it, he should pray God to bless their
 “ Councils, though he was not provided on the sudden
 “ to give them Advice.” Some said, there was no need
 to bring the King to a Trial; others, that there
 was no Law to try him, nor any Judicatory to call
 him to Account; but all this was over-ruled; and
 because the *Lords* rejected the Ordinance for the
 King’s Trial, Lord *Clarendon* tells us, they shut up
 their Doors; but Mr. *Whitlock* says, they enter’d
 their House, and pass’d several Ordinances, but that
 the Commons would not own them any longer. Thus
 the Constitution was dissolved, and the whole Legisla-
 ture brought under the Power of the Sword.

King
Charles I.
 1648.

Tho’ some few Petitions had been procured from di-
 vers Counties, and even from the Common Council of
London, that Justice might be done upon the Authors of
our Troubles, and Bloodshed, in an exemplary Way, and
without respect of Persons; yet the Voice of the Nation
 was against it, as appears by the Petitions and Protes-
 tations of all Orders of People.

The Prelatical Clergy lay still, either because they
 could not assemble in a Body, or because they appre-
 hended they could do no Service by appearing; but
 Dr. *Gauden*, afterwards Bishop of *Exeter*, published
 a Protestation against the declared Purposes and Proceed-
 ings of the Army, and others, about trying and destroying
 our Sovereign Lord the King, dated January 5. and sent
 it to a Colonel to be presented to Lord *Fairfax* at the
 Council of War. Dr. *Hammond* sent an humble Ad-
 dress also to the General and Council of War, to prevent
 the horrid Design of putting the King to Death, dated
 Jan. 15. Both these Papers insisted on the Divine
 Right of kingly Government, and that to call the
 King before the Tribunal of the People was contrary
 to the Laws of the Land. The famous Mr. *Prynne*,
 one of the secluded Members, published a brief Me-
 morial

Dr. Gauden and
Dr. Hammond's
protestations

King Charles I. 1648. *mento to the present unparliamentary Junto, touching their present Intentions and Proceedings to depose and execute CHARLES STEWART, their lawful King of England, dated from the King's Head in the Strand, Jan. 1. 1648.*

And of the whole Body of the Presbyterian Ministers of London. The Officers of the Army attempted by their Creatures to gain over the London Ministers to their Side, or at least to perswade them to a Neutrality. *Hugh Peters*, one of their Chaplains, was sent to the Remains of the Assembly of Divines at Westminster for this purpose, but they declared unanimously for the Release of the King. He then invited several of the London Ministers, as Mr. Marshall, Calamy, Whitaker, Sedgewick, Ash, &c. to a Conference with some Officers of the Army, upon the Subject of the coercive Power of the Magistrate in Matters of Religion, which was nothing to the present Purpose; but instead of meeting them, these Divines assembled with their Brethren at Sion College, who published a Paper, entitled, *A serious and faithful Representation of the Judgment of the Ministers of the Gospel within the Province of London, whose Names are subscribed, contained in a Letter to the General, and his Council of War, delivered to his Excellency by some of the Subscribers, Jan. 18. 1648.*

Vol. Pamp. N° 52. In this Address, after giving Reasons why they would not consult with the Officers upon Matters of Religion, they complain of their imprisoning the Members of Parliament; “ We remember (say they) that when the King with a Multitude of armed Men demanded but a small Number of the Members of Parliament it was deemed an unparalleled Breach of the Privilege of Parliament, and was one Reason that an Army was raised by their Authority, and for their Preservation; but that this very Army should so far exceed that Act, which was then esteemed without Parallel, is what we could not believe, had not our Eyes been Witnesses of it!

“ And

“ And though both Houses of Parliament saw Reason to take up Arms in their own Defence, and in Defence of the Protestant Religion, and the Fundamental Laws of their Country, yet this cannot be pleaded in Justification of your usurping an Authority over King and Parliament, who are but so many private Persons, and no part of the Legislature.

King
Charles I.
1648.

“ Moreover, though the Parliament took up Arms in Defence of the Laws, it was never their Intention to do Violence to the *Person of the King*, or divest him of his Royal Authority, much less to overthrow the whole Constitution.

“ We therefore think our selves bound by our Protestation, and by our *Solemn League and Covenant*, to appear for our excellent Constitution against arbitrary and tyrannical Power in the King, on the one hand, and against the illegal Proceedings of private Persons, tending to subvert the Constitution, and introduce *Anarchy and Confusion* on the other.

“ Instead therefore of consulting with you, we earnestly entreat you, as the Ambassadors of Christ, that you would consider of the Evil of your present Ways, and turn from them. You cannot but know, that the Word of God commands Obedience to Magistrates, and consonant to Scripture this hath been the Judgment of Protestant Divines at home and abroad, with whom we concur; disclaiming, detesting, and abhorring the Practices of Jesuits, concerning the Opposing of lawful Magistrates by any private Persons, and the Murthering of Kings by any, though under the most specious and colourable Pretences. Examine your Consciences, if any Number of Persons of different Principles from your selves, had invaded the Rights of Parliament, imprison'd the King, and carried him about from Place to Place, and attempted the Dissolution of the whole Government, whether you

King
Charles I.
1648.

“ would not have charged them with the highest Crimes?

“ We desire you not to infer the Justice of your Proceedings from the Success, but to distinguish between God’s Permission and Approbation, and that God’s suffering Men to prosper in their evil Courses is one of the severest Judgments; the Providence of God therefore, which is so often pleaded in Justification of your Actions, is no safe Rule to walk by, in such Actions which the Word of God condemns.

“ Nor is it safe to be guided by the *Impulses of the Spirit*, when they are contrary to the written Word of God; we are to try the Spirits, and to have recourse to the Law and the Testimony, if they speak not according to them, there is no Light in them.

“ If you plead *Necessity* for doing that which your selves confess to be irregular, we answer, no Necessity can oblige Men to sin; besides, ’tis apparent, you were under no Necessity, the Parliament (till forced by you) being full and free; besides, you have engaged by Oath to preserve his Majesty’s Person, and the Privileges of Parliament, and no Necessity can justify Perjury, or dispense with lawful Oaths.

“ We therefore beseech you to recede from this your evil Way, and learn *John Baptist’s Lesson* to Soldiers, *Do Violence to no Man, neither accuse any Man falsely, and be content with your Wages.* But if you persist in this Way, *be sure your Sin will find you out.* If our Exhortation prevail not we have discharged our Duty, and we hope delivered our own Souls. If it be our Portion to suffer, as we are told, we trust we shall suffer as Christians; but we hope better Things of you, and subscribe our selves your Servants in the Lord.”

James Nalton <i>Pastor Foster-lane,</i>	Ralph Robinson <i>Pastor St. King</i>
Tho. Cawton <i>St. Bartholomew Exchange,</i>	Mary Wooln th, <i>Charles I. 1648.</i>
John Fuller <i>Bishopsgate,</i>	Will. Blackmore <i>St. Peter Cornhill,</i>
Fran. Roberts <i>St. Austm,</i>	Fran. Peck <i>St. Nic. Acorns,</i>
W. Jenkin <i>Christ Church,</i>	Steph. Watkins <i>St. Saviour Southwark,</i>
Elidad Blackwel <i>Alhall. Undershaft,</i>	Will. Wickers <i>St. Andrew Hubbard,</i>
William Harrison <i>Grace Church,</i>	John Wallis <i>Ironmonger-lane,</i>
John Sheffield <i>St. Swithins,</i>	Tho. Manton <i>Stoke-Newington,</i>
Matth. Haviland <i>Trinity,</i>	Tho. Gouge <i>St. Sepulchres,</i>
Geo. Smaliwood <i>Poultry,</i>	Tho. Watfon <i>Walbrook,</i>
Will. Taylor <i>Coleman-street,</i>	Nath. Staniforth <i>St. Mary Bothaw,</i>
Christ. Love <i>Aldersgate,</i>	John Halk <i>Alhallows on the Wall</i>
Rob. Mercer <i>St. Br des,</i>	John Glascock <i>St. Andrew Undershaft,</i>
Tho. Gataker <i>Rotherhithe,</i>	Tho. Whately <i>St. Mary. Woolchurch,</i>
Geo. Walker <i>St. J. Evang.</i>	Jacob Tice <i>Billingsgate,</i>
Arthur Jackson <i>M. Wood-street,</i>	Jonat. Loyd <i>Garlickhithe,</i>
Char. Offspring <i>St. Antho lines,</i>	John Morton <i>Newington-Butts,</i>
Hen. Roborough <i>East-ch.</i>	Joshua Kirby,
Nic. Profet <i>Foster-lane,</i>	Arth. Barham <i>St. Helens,</i>
Tho. Case <i>Milk-street,</i>	Benj. Needler <i>St. Margaret Moles,</i>
Stanly Gower <i>Ludgate,</i>	Joan Wells <i>St. Olave Jury,</i>
Andrew Janeway <i>Alhall. on the Wall,</i>	Rob. Mathew <i>St. Andrew Wardrobe.</i>
Sam. Clark <i>St. Bennet Fink,</i>	
Tho. Clendon <i>Alh. Barkin,</i>	
John Wale <i>St. M. Cornhill,</i>	
James Crawford <i>St. Christ.</i>	

Notwithstanding th's bold Remonstrance, the Episcopal Divines in order to throw off all the Guilt of the King's Misfortunes from themselves, who by their resolute Behaviour had in reality reduced him to the

1643. last Extremity, resolved to fix it upon the *Presby-*
 1645. *terians*; as their Successors have done ever since.

Their fur-
ther Vindi-
cation.

It was therefore given out among the People, that the *Presbyterians* had brought the King to the Block, and that the *Independants* would cut off his Head. To wipe away this Calumny the *Presbyterian* Clergy published another Paper, entitled, *A Vindication of the London Ministers from the unjust Aspersions cast upon their former Actions for the Parliament, as if they had promoted the bringing the King to capital Punishment.* It was addressed to the People, and after they had declared over again their Dislike of the Proceedings at *Westminster* against the King, they conclude in Words to this Purpose, “ Therefore according to
 “ our *Covenant* we do, in the Name of the great God,
 “ warn and exhort all that belong to our respective
 “ Charges, or to whom we have administer’d the
 “ said *Covenant*, to abide by their Vow, and not suf-
 “ fer themselves to be perswaded to subscribe the
 “ AGREEMENT OF THE PEOPLE, which is subver-
 “ sive of the present Constitution, and makes way
 “ for the Toleration of all Heresies and Blasphemies,
 “ and will effectually divide the Two Kingdoms of
 “ *England* and *Scotland*. We earnestly beseech them
 “ to mourn for the Sins of the Parliament and City,
 “ and for the Miscarriages of the King himself in his
 “ Government, which have cast him down from his
 “ Excellency into an horrid Pit of Misery almost
 “ beyond Example; and to pray, that God would
 “ give him effectual Repentance, and sanctify the
 “ bitter Cup of Divine Displeasure which Divine
 “ Providence has put into his Hands; and that God
 “ would restrain the Violence of Men, that they
 “ may not dare to draw upon themselves and the
 “ Kingdom the Blood of their Sovereign.”

This was signed by Fifty seven Ministers, among whom were the following Nineteen, whose Names were not to the above-mentioned Representation.

Corn. Burges, D. D. at St. Paul's,	Laz. Seaman Bread-streer,	King Charles I. 1648.
Will. Gouge, D. D. Blackfriars,	Simeon Ash Bassishaw,	
Edm. Stanton, D. D. Kingston,	Tho. Thoroughgood of Crayford,	
Tho. Temple, D. D. Battersea,	Ed. Corbet Croydon,	
Edm. Calamy, B. D. Aldermanbury,	John Viner Aldgate,	
Jer. Whitaker St. Mary Magd. Bermondsey,	John Crosse Friday-street,	
Dan. Cawdry St. Martin in the Fields,	Peter Witham St. Alban Wood-street,	
William Spurston, D. D. Hackney,	John Stileman Rotherhithe,	
	Josias Ball North Grey,	
	Jonathan Devereux, late of St. Andrew Holborn,	
	Paul Ruffel Hackney.	

It was not possible for the few *Independant Ministers* Behaviour in London to join the *Presbyterians* in these Addresses, of the Independants. Vol. Pamp. p. 108.

(1.) Because they were not possessed of Parochial Livings, nor Members of the Provincial Assembly of London, nor admitted to their weekly Consultations at Sion College, but were a Sort of Dissenters from the publick Establishment. (2.) Because they did not believe themselves so far bound by the *Covenant* as to oppose a Toleration, nor to support any Constitution that was not consistent with Christian Liberty, which the *Presbyterians* would not admit. None of their Ministers, that I know of, declared their Approbation of the Proceedings of the Council of Officers in the Trial of the King, except *Hugh Peters*, and *John Goodwin* the *Arminian*. Some of the *Independant Ministers* in the Country joined the *Presbyterians* in protesting against it; those of Oxford and Northampton of both Denominations published their *humble Advice and earnest Desire*, presented to General *Fairfax* and the Council of War, Jan. 25. subscribed by Nineteen or Twenty Names, in which they declare their utter Dissent from all Proceedings against his Majesty's Crown and Life, as

con-

King
Charles I.
1648.

contrary to Scripture, to the Laws of the Land, the Solemn League and Covenant, and tending to destroy the Constitution, and involve the Nation in a War with their Neighbours — They express their Dissent from the late Violence upon the Parliament — But with reference to Religion they say, “ Though our Souls abhor that grand Design of the Devil and his Agents to decry all religious and zealous Professors under the Name of *Sectaries* and *Independants*, we willingly grant, and heartily desire, that the Interest of all godly and honest Men may be carefully provided for, and secured, as far as is consistent with the Word of God, our *Covenant*, and the publick Peace; and that Men of different Apprehensions in Matters of Religion may not be utterly incapable of all Offices of Power and Trust, though we cannot agree to an *universal Toleration*.” They conclude with beseeching the *General* to suspend all further Prosecution against the King, and to endeavour a right Understanding between the King, Parliament and Army; but if they cannot prevail they desire to wash their Hands of the Blood of their dread Sovereign, and to approve themselves innocent of all that Blood and Misery in which the Deposing and taking away his Majesty’s Life will involve them, their Posterity, and all Men professing Godliness in the Three Kingdoms.

It must be confessed, the *Independants* were a Sort of Malecontents, and had Reason to be dissatisfied with the Treaty of *Newport*, because they were not only excluded from the *new Establishment*, but debarred of a *Toleration*; and yet, as Mr. *Eachard* and Dr. *Bates* the Physician observe, several of them join’d with their Brethren in declaring against the Design of putting the King to Death, in their Sermons from the Pulpit, in Conferences, Monitorial Letters, Petitions, Protestations, and publick Remonstrances.

And of the
Scots.

The *Scots Kirk*, by their Commissioners, declared and protested against putting the King to Death, as

Each. Hist.
p. 654.
Blench.
Not. Narr.
1^{ma}.
p. 118.

abso-

absolutely inconsistent with their *Solemn League and Covenant*. They published a *Protestation*, directed to the Ministers of the Province of *London* meeting at *Sion College*, Jan. 25. 1648. with a Letter, exhorting them to Courage and Constancy in their Opposition to the Proceeding of the House of Commons, and an *universal Toleration*.

King
Charles I.
1648.



Sundry foreign Princes and States, by their Ambassadors, interceded for the King; some from their Respect to his Person, and others from a Regard to the Honour that was due to crowned Heads. But it was impossible to stop the impetuous Wildfire of the Army, who having brought the King from *Hurst Castle* to *Winchester* obtained a Vote in the Parliament (if we may so call it) that all Ceremonies due to a crowned Head be laid aside; and then came to the following Resolutions, Jan. 4. First, *That the People under God are the Original of all just Power*. Secondly, *That the House of Commons are the supreme Power of the Nation*. Thirdly, *That whatever is declared for Law by the Commons in Parliament is valid though the Consent of the King and House of Peers be not had thereto*. The House of Lords, which was reduced to Sixteen Peers, having unanimously rejected the Ordinance of the Commons for the King's Trial, and adjourned for a Fortnight, the Commons resolved to act without them, and having named a Committee of Thirty eight Persons to receive Informations, and draw up a Charge against the King, they constituted a High Court of Justice for his Trial, consisting of one Hundred Forty five Persons, of whom Twenty or more might proceed to Business; but not above one half would be concerned; Mr. Serjeant *Drumshaw* was President; Mr. *Cook* Solicitor General; and Mr. *Steel*, Mr. *Doriflaus*, and Mr. *Aske*, were to manage the Cause. The Form of Process being settled by the Commissioners, the King, who had been conducted to *St. James's*, Jan. 15. appeared before his Judges in *Westminster-Hall*, the first Time, on Saturday

Proceedings
of the Army and
Parliament.

Rapin,
p. 568.

The King's
Trial and
Execution.

King
Charles I.
1648.

day Jan. 20. when being seated at the Bar in a Chair of Crimson Velvet, and covered, as were all his Judges, Mr. Cook the Solicitor exhibited a Charge of High Treason against him, which being read, the King, instead of pleading to the Charge, excepted to the Jurisdiction of the Court, which was over-ruled, the *President* replying, that they would not suffer their Authority to be disputed, and therefore required the King to think better of it against *Monday*; but his Majesty persisting in his Refusal to plead both on *Monday* and *Tuesday*, the Clerk was ordered to record the Default; *Wednesday* the Court sat in the *Painted Chamber*, and examined Witnesses against the King; *Thursday* and *Friday* they consulted how to proceed; and on *Saturday* his Majesty was brought the last Time to the Bar, when persisting to disown the Jurisdiction of the Court, but desiring to be heard in the *Painted Chamber* by the Lords and Commons, his Request was denied, and the *President* pronounced Sentence of Death against him as a Traytor, Fifty nine being present, and signifying their Concurrence by *standing up*, as had been agreed. Sundry Indignities and Affronts were offered to the King by the Soldiers, as he past along *Westminster-Hall*, but the far greater Number of People pitied his unhappy Condition. *Tuesday Jan. 30.* being appointed for his Execution his Majesty was offered the Assistance of Mr. *Calamy*, *Vines*, *Caryl*, *Dell* and *Goodwin*, but he refused them, and chose Dr. *Juxon*, Bishop of *London*, who, according to Bishop *Burnet*, did his Office with such a dry Coldness as could not raise the King's Devotion. On the fatal Day he was conducted on Foot by a strong Guard through *St. James's Park* to a Scaffold erected in the open Street before the *Banqueting House* at *Whitehall*, where he made a short Speech to the People, in which he made no mention of the Mistakes of his Government, but declared himself a Martyr for the Laws and Liberties of the People; after which he laid down his Head on the Block, which was sever'd

from

from his Body at one Blow by some bold Executioner in a Mask, in the Forty ninth Year of his Age, and Twenty fourth of his Reign. His Body was buried privately at *Windsor Feb. 28th.* following, without Ceremony, and with no other Inscription on the Coffin, than KING CHARLES, 1648.

*King
Charles I.
1648.*

The Reader will collect the Character of this Prince *His Cha- rather from the foregoing History, than from the sa- racter.* tyrical Reflections of his determined Enemies, or the flattering Encomiums of his Friends and Admirers, who, in their Anniversary Sermons, have almost equall'd his Sufferings with those of our blessed Saviour. It must be admitted, that King CHARLES I. was sober, temperate, chaste, an Enemy to Debauchery and Lewdness, and very regular in his Devotions. But these excellent Qualities were sullied with some of a very different Nature; his Temper was distant and grave to a Fault; he was far from being liberal, and when he bestowed any Favour it was in a very disagreeable and uncourtly Manner; his Judgment in Affairs of Government was weak, insomuch that he was always under the Direction of a Favourite. In his Treaties with the Parliament he was chargeable with great Insincerity, making use of doubtful and ambiguous Terms, the Explication of which he reserved for a proper Time and Place. He *Clarend.* had high Notions of the absolute Power of Kings, *Hist.* and the unlimited Obedience of Subjects; and tho' *P. 430.* he was very scrupulous about his *Coronation Oath* with regard to the *Church*, it gave him no trouble with regard to the *Laws and Liberties of his Subjects*, which he lived in the constant Violation of for Fifteen Years. He was a perfect Slave, to his Queen, who had too much the Direction of all Affairs both in Church and State; nor was there that he had a perfect Aversion to *Popery*, and was so much to the Pomp and *Shew* of the Church of Rome, that though he was very severe for meeting the Papists he was not so for meeting one *noctley* Reli-

King
Charles I.
1648

Life of
Sander-
son.

Defect.
P. 336.

His Life,
P. 47.

Religion throughout *Great Britain*, in which both Parties might unite. He told Dr. *Sanderson*, that if God ever restored him to his Crown he would go bare Foot from the *Tower of London*, or *Whitehall*, to *St. Paul's*, by way of Penance, for consenting to the Earl of *Strafford's* Death, and to the Abolishing of Episcopacy in *Scotland*, and desire the People to intercede with God for his Pardon. Such was his Majesty's Superstition! Upon the whole, though King *Charles I.* had Virtues enough for a private Gentleman, his Foibles were so many as render'd him a very weak and impolitick Prince; far from appearing truly Great in any one Scene of his whole Life except the last. Mr. *Coke* says, he was wilful, and impatient of Contradiction; his Actions sudden and inconsiderate, and his Councils without secrecy. He would never own any of his Irregularities in Government, but justified them all to his Death. If any gave him Advice contrary to his Inclination he would never be Friends with him again. He was unaffable, and difficult of Address, requiring such strain'd Submissions as were not usual to his Predecessors. The Sincerity of his Promises and Declarations were suspected by his Friends as well as Enemies, so that he fell a Sacrifice to his arbitrary Principles, the best Friends of the *Constitution* being afraid to trust him. Bishop *Burnet* adds, "That he affected in his Behaviour the solemn Gravity of the Court of *Spain*, which was sullen even to Moroseness; this led him to a grave reserved Deportment, in which he forgot the Civilities and Affabilities which the Nation naturally lov'd; nor did he, in his outward Deportment, take any Pains to oblige any Persons whatsoever. He had such an ungracious Way of shewing Favour, that the Manner of bestowing it was almost as mortifying as the Favour was obliging. He loved high and rough Measures, but had neither Skill to conduct them, nor Height of Genius to manage them. He hated all that offered prudent and moderate Counsels, " and

“ and even when it was necessary to follow such Ad-
 “ vices he hated those that gave them. His whole *King*
 “ Reign, both in Peace and War, was a continued *Charles I.*
 “ Series of Errors, so that it does not appear that he *1648.*
 “ had a true Judgment of Things. He was out of
 “ Measure set upon following his Humour, but un-
 “ reasonably feeble to those whom he trusted, chief-
 “ ly to the *Queen*, and (it may be added also) to the
 “ *Clergy*. He had a high Notion of the Regal Pow-
 “ er, and thought that every Opposition to it was
 “ *Rebellion*. He minded little Things too much, and
 “ was more concerned in drawing up a Paper than
 “ in fighting a Battle. He had a firm Aversion to
 “ Popery, but was much inclined to a middle Way
 “ between Protestants and Papists, by which he lost
 “ one without gaining the other. At his Death he
 “ shewed a calm and composed Firmness which
 “ amazed all People, and so much the more, be-
 “ cause it was not natural to him, and was there-
 “ fore by his Friends imputed to an extraordinary
 “ Measure of supernatural Assistance.”

After his Majesty's Death the Episcopal Clergy *His Works.*
 did all they could to canonize him for a *Martyr*;
 they printed *his Sayings, his Prayers, his Meditations,*
and Forms of Devotion under his Sufferings, with his
 Picture in the most devout and heavenly Posture.
 His Works, consisting of sundry Declarations, Re-
 monstrances, and other Papers, have been printed in
 a most pompous and elegant Form; among which
 One is of very suspected Authority, if not absolutely spu-
 rious, I mean his *Fixer Basiliak*, i. e. *Elkeon Basilik*,
or the Portraiture of his sacred Majesty in his Solitude and
Sufferings, said to be written with the King's own
 Hand: It was first printed in the Year 1649. and
 passed through Fifty Editions in divers Languages
 within Twelve Months. No Book ever raised the
 King's Reputation so high as this, which obliged the
 new Council of State to employ the famous Mr. Milton
 to destroy its Credit, which he attempted, in a Trea-
 tise

King
Charles I.
1648.

tise under the Title of *Ἐικῶνο Κλάσις* [*Eikono Clastese*] or an Answer to a Book entitled, *Eikoon Basilikè*, printed by *Du Garde*, 1652. but the Fraud was not fully discovered till some Years after.

Ἐικῶν
Βασιλικὴ
a spurious
Performance.
Vide
Bayle's
Dict. Title
Milton.
His Life,
p. 51.

The Grounds and Evidences of the Spuriousness of this Book are these, 1. That Lord *Clarendon*, in his History of the *Grand Rebellion*, makes no mention of it. 2. Bishop *Burnet* says, the Duke of *York*, afterwards King *James II.* told him in the Year 1673. that the Book called *Eikoon Basilikè* was not of his Father's Writing, but that Dr. *Gauden* writ it; that after the Restoration, the Doctor brought the Duke of *Somerset* to the King and to the Duke of *York*, who both affirmed, they knew it to be his [the Doctor's] writing, and that it was carried down by the Earl of *Southampton*, and shewed the King during the Treaty of *Newport*, who read and approved it. 3. The Earl of *Anglesey* gave it under his Hand, that King *Charles II.* and the Duke of *York* declared to him in the Year 1675. that they were very sure the said Book was not written by the King their Father, but by Dr. *Gauden*, Bishop of *Exeter*. 4. Dr. *Gauden* himself, after the Restoration, pleaded the Merit of this Performance in a Letter to Lord Chancellor *Hyde*, who returned for Answer, that the Particular he mentioned [*i. e.* of his being the Author of that Book] was communicated to him as a Secret; I am sorry (says his Lordship) that it was told me, for when it ceases to be a

Crit. Hist.
p. 191.

Secret it will please no body but Mr. *Milton*. 5. Dr. *Walker*, a Clergyman of the Church of *England*, after invoking the great God, the Searcher of Hearts, to witness to the Truth of what he declares, says, in his Treatise entitled, *A true Account of the Author of Eikoon Basilikè*, "I know and believe the Book was
" written by Dr. *Gauden*, except Chap. 16th and
" 24th. by Dr. *Duppa*. Dr. *Gauden* (says he) acquainted me with his Design, and shewed me
" the Heads of several Chapters, and some of the
" Discourses. Some Time after the King's Death I
" asked

Crit. Hist.
p. 189.
Hist.
Stuarts,
p. 283.

“asked him, Whether his Majesty had ever seen the Book? He replied, I know it certainly no more than you; but I used my best Endeavours that he might, for I delivered a Copy of it to the Marquis of Hertford, when he went to the Treaty of the Isle of Wight—” Dr. Gauden delivered the MS. to this Walker, and Walker carried it to the Press; it was copied by Mr. Gifford, and both the Doctor’s Son and his Wife affirm, that they believe it was written in the House where they lived.

King
Charles I.
1648.

Notwithstanding all this Evidence Mr. Archdeacon Eachard says, the Book is incontestably the King’s; and Bishop Kennet adds, that those who pretend Eikoon Basilikè was a Sham put upon the World, are a Set of Men that delight to judge and execute the Royal Martyr over again by murdering his Name. Dr. Hollingworth, Dugdale, Wagstaffe, and others, have endeavoured to invalidate the above-mentioned Authorities, by shewing that Dr. Gauden was not capable of writing such a Book; but surely, the Evidence already produced is as strong and convincing as any Thing of this Nature can possibly be.

The King’s Trial and Execution in such an illegal and unheard of Manner struck the whole Christian World with Astonishment. The Prince of Wales, then in Holland, encouraged the learned Salmasius to write a Latin Treatise, entitled, *Defensio Regia*, or a Defence of King Charles I. dedicated to his Son Charles II. which was answered by Milton, in a Book entitled, *Defensio pro Populo Anglicano*, or a Defence of the People of England, writ in an elegant but severe Style. This Book, says Mr. Bayle, made the Author’s Name famous over all the learned World. Another Performance appeared about the same Time, entitled, *Clamor Regii Sanguinis ad Cælum*; or, *The Cry of the King’s Blood to Heaven*. It was writ in Latin by Peter du Moulin, jun. and answered by Milton in the same Language. But to satisfy the English Reader, Mr. John Goodwin publish’d a small Treatise, which he

King
Charles I.
1648.

called *A Defence of the Sentence passed upon the late King by the High Court of Justice* — wherein the Justice and Equity of the said Sentence is demonstratively asserted, as well from clear Texts of Scripture as Principles of Reason, Grounds of Law, Authorities and Presidents, as well foreign as domestick; a very weak and inconclusive Performance! for admitting our Author's Principles, that the Original of Government is from the People, and that Magistrates are accountable to them for their Administration, they are not applicable to the present Case, because the Officers of the Army had neither the Voice of the People, nor of their Representatives in a free Parliament; the House of Commons was purged, and the House of Lords quite shut up, in order to make way for this Outrage upon the Constitution. Our Author was so sensible of this Objection, that in order to evade it he advances this ridiculous Conclusion, that *though the erecting an High Court of Justice BY THE HOUSE OF COMMONS ALONE be contrary to the LETTER, yet it being for the People's Good it is sufficient that it is agreeable to the SPIRIT of the Law.* But who gave a few Officers of the Army Authority to judge what was for the *People's Good*, or to act according to the *Spirit* of a Law in contradiction to the *Letter*? This would expose every Man's Life and Estate to the Will and Pleasure of the most arbitrary Tyrant, and introduce a *Rule of Government* so justly complained of in the former Part of this Reign, in Opposition to a *Rule of Law.* The President Bradshaw, in his Speech at pronouncing Sentence, goes upon the same general Topicks, that *the People are the Origin of Civil Power*, which they transfer to their Magistrates under what Limitations they think fit, and that *the King himself is accountable to them for the Abuse of it*; but if this were true, it is not to the present Purpose, because as has been observed, the *King's Judges* had not the Consent of the People of *England* in their defensive or collective Capacity. His Majesty's own Reasons against this *High Court of Justice*, which he

would

would have given in Court, if he might have been heard, are, in my Opinion, a sufficient Answer to all that can be said on the other side.

*King
Charles I.
1648.*

“ — Admitting, but not granting (says his Majesty) that the People of *England's* Commission could grant your pretended Power, I see nothing you can shew for that, for certainly you never asked the Question of the Tenth Man of the Kingdom; and in this Way you manifestly wrong even the poorest Plough-Man, if you demand not his free Consent; nor can you pretend any Colour for this your pretended Commission without Consent at least of the major Part of the People of *England*, of whatsoever Quality or Condition, which I am sure you never went about to seek, so far are you from having it — Nor must I forget the Privileges of both Houses of Parliament, which this Day's Proceedings do not only violate, but likewise occasion the greatest Breach of the publick Faith that I believe ever was heard of, with which I am far from charging the two Houses — Then for any Thing I can see, the higher House is totally excluded; and for the House of Commons it is too well known, that the major Part of them are detained, or deterred from sitting — And after all, how the House of Commons can erect a *Court of Judicature*, which was never one it self, as is well known to all Lawyers, I leave to God and the World to judge — ”

King *Charles* therefore died by the Hands of Violence, or by the *Military Sword*, assumed and managed in an arbitrary Manner by a few desperate Officers of the Army, and their Dependants, of sundry Denominations as to Religion, without any Regard to the ancient Constitution of their Country, or the fundamental Laws of Society; for by the former, the King cannot be tried for his Life before any inferior Court of Justice; nor could they feign any Pretence for the latter, without the express Consent of

*Authors of
the King's
Death.*

King
Charles I.
1648.

the Majority of the Nation, in their personal or representative Capacities, which these Gentlemen never consulted. But since all Parties have endeavoured to throw off the Odium of this Fact from themselves, it may not be improper to set before the Reader the Sentiments of our best Historians upon this Head, leaving every one to draw what Conclusion from them he pleases.

Of the
King
and his
Divines.
Wh. Mem.
p. 335.
Coke's
Detect.
P 331,
332.

Not to insist upon the King's servile Fondness for his Queen and her Friends; his resolute Stiffness for his old Principles of Government in Church and State; his *untimely* and ungracious Manner of yielding to what he could not avoid; his distant and reserved Behaviour towards those that were only capable of serving him, and his manifest doubling between the Parliament and Army, which some very reasonably apprehend were the principal Causes of all his Misfortunes, Mr. *Whitlock* and Mr. *Coke* lay a good deal of Blame on his Majesty's Chaplains; the *latter* reproaches them with insisting peremptorily to the last upon the Divine Right of Episcopacy; and the *former* for continual Whispering in the King's Ears the Importance of preserving the Revenues of the Church to the Hazard of the King and Kingdom; and surely if *these* *swarm and eager Divines* could have disintangled his Majesty's Conscience (which Mr. *Whitlock* apprehends was not fully satisfied) as soon as the Cavaliers had been dispersed, and the *Scots* beaten out of the Field, the Mischief that followed might have been prevented. I will not take upon me to say how far their Influence might reach, though his Majesty's profound Deference to their Judgment was notorious; but the Conviction does not seem impracticable, when it is remember'd the King was of Opinion, that *what he yielded through the Necessity of his Affairs was not binding when he should be at Liberty*; but neither his Majesty nor his Clergy foresaw the Event.

Of the
Presbyterians.

Most of the Writers on the King's Side, as well as the *Preachers* after the Restoration, in their Anniversary

versary Sermons, have with great Ingratitude charged the *Presbyterians* with bringing the King to the Block, contrary to the strongest and most convincing Evidence; for though their Stiffness for the *Divine Right of Presbytery*, and their Antipathy to *Liberty of Conscience*, is not to be justified, yet I apprehend enough has been said in the foregoing Pages to vindicate them from this unrighteous Charge; if the Zeal of the *Presbyterians* for their *Discipline* and *Covenant* was culpable, the Behaviour of the King and his Divines in the Opposition was no less so, considering he was a Prisoner, and in the Hands of a victorious Parliament; neither Side were sensible of the Danger till it was too late, but when the Storm was ready to break over their Heads, I do not see what Men could do more in their Circumstances to divert it, than the *Presbyterians* did; they preached and prayed, and protested against it in the most publick Manner; many of them resigned their Preferments because they would not take the *Engagement* to the new Commonwealth; They groaned under all the succeeding Changes of Government, and had a principal Share in the Restoration of the *Royal Family* in the Year 1660. without which these *Anniversary Declaimers* would never have had an Opportunity of pelting them with their Ecclesiastical Artillery as they have done.

The forementioned Writers, together with Mr. *Of the Independent* Rapin, in his late History of *England*, load the *Independants*, as a religious Sect, with all the Guilt of cutting off the King's Head; and with being in a Plot from the Beginning of the Civil War to destroy equally King, Monarchy, Episcopacy, and Presbyterianism; but this Writer not being acquainted with their religious Principles constantly confounds the *Independants* with the *Army*, which was made up of a Number of Sectaries, the Majority of whom were not of that distinguishing Character. There were no doubt among the *Independants*, as well as among other Parties, Men of *Republican Principles*, who had a large Share

King in the Reproach of this Day ; but besides what has
Char. es 1. been observed, of some of their Number joining with
 1648. the *Presbyterians* in protesting against putting the King
 to Death, the *Divines of this Perswasion* had no Difference
 with the *Presbyterians*, or *moderate Episcopalians*,
 about Forms of Civil Government ; the Officers would
 have contributed their Part toward Restoring his Ma-
 jesty to his Throne, when he was with the Army, up-
 on more equal Terms than some others, if they had
 not discovered his Designs to destroy them when it
 should be in his Power. In their last Proposi-
 tions they consented to the Restoring the King
 upon the Foot of a Toleration for themselves and
 the Episcopal Party ; leaving the *Presbyterians* in
 possession of the Establishment. Both *Whitlock* and
Welwood observe, that at the very Time of the King's
 Trial the *prevailing Party* were not determined what
 Form of Government to set up, " Many having
 " Thoughts of making the Duke of Gloucester King ;"
 which his Majesty being informed of, forbid the
 Duke, in his last Interview, to accept the Crown
 while his elder Brothers were living. And though
 Mr. *Rapin* says, that after the Force put upon the
 Members of Parliament on the 6th and 7th of *Decem-*
ber, the House consisted of none but Independent Mem-
 bers, 'tis certain to a Demonstration, that there were
 then left in the House Men of all Parties, *Episcopa-*
lians, *Presbyterians*, *Independants*, *Anabaptists*, and
 others ; so little Foundation is there for this Writer's
 Conclusion, that the *Independants*, and THESE ONLY,
 put the King to Death.

Sentiments Dr. *Lewis du Moulin*, History Professor in Oxford,
of Dr. Du who lived through these Times, says, " That no
Moulin. " Party of Men, as a religious Body, were the
Vind. Prot. " Actors of this Tragedy, but that it was the Con-
Relig. " trivance of an Army, which, like that of King
P 53, " David's in the Wilderness, was a Medly or Col-
59. " lection of all Parties that were discontented ; some
 " Courtiers, some *Presbyterians*, some *Episcopalians* ;
 " few

“ few of any Sect, but most of none, or else of the
 “ Religion of *Tho. Hobbes* and *Dr. Scarborough* ; not
 “ to mention the *Papists*, who had the greatest Hand
 “ in it of all.” The same learned Professor, in his
 Book entitled, *The Conformity of the Independant*
Discipline with that of the Primitive Christians, pub-
 lished 1680. had a Chapter entitled, *An Answer to*
those who accuse the Independants for having an immediate
Hand in the Death of King Charles I. but the Times
 were such that the Author was advised not to pub-
 lish it.

King
 Charles I.
 1648.

Mr. *Baxter* says, “ Many that minded no side in
 “ Religion thought it was no Policy to trust a con-
 “ quer’d King, and therefore were wholly for a Par-
 “ liamentary Government without a King ; of these
 “ (says he) some were for an *Aristocracy*, and others
 “ for a *Democracy*, and some thought they ought to
 “ judge the King for all the Blood that had been
 “ shed ; the *Vanists*, the *Independants*, and other
 “ Sects, with the *Democratical Party*, being left by
 “ *Cromwell* to do the Business under the Name of the
 “ Parliament of England.”

Of Mr.
 Baxter.
 Baxter’s
 Life,
 p. 63.

Bishop *Burnet* says, that “ *Ireton* was the Person
 “ that drove it on, for *Cromwell* was all the while in
 “ suspense about it ; *Ireton* had the Principles and
 “ Temper of a *Cassius*, he stuck at nothing that
 “ might turn *England* into a Commonwealth ; *Fairfax*
 “ was much distracted in his Mind, and changed Pur-
 “ poses every Day ; the *Presbyterians*, and the *Body of*
 “ the City were much against it, and were every Day fast-
 “ ing and praying for the King’s Preservation. There were
 “ not above eight Thousand of the Army about the
 “ Town, but those were the most engaged in Enthu-
 “ siasm, and were kept at Prayer in their way almost
 “ Day and Night, except when they were upon
 “ Duty, so that they were wrought up to a pitch of
 “ Fury that struck Terror into all People.”

Bp Bur-
 net.
 Hist. Life
 and
 Times.
 Vol. I.
 p. 46, 47.

Mr. *Eachard*, and some others, are of Opinion, of the Pa-
 that great Numbers of *Papists*, under hopes of Li-
 pits.

King
 Charles I.
 1648.
 Part III.
 p. 188.

berty of Conscience, or of destroying Episcopacy,
 joined with foreign Priests and Jesuits against the
 King. The celebrated Author of *Foxes and Fire-*
brands has this remarkable Passage; "Let all true
 " Protestants, who desire sincerely to have an happy
 " Union, recollect what a Blemish the Emissaries of
 " Rome have cast upon those Protestants named *Pres-*
 " *byterian* and *Independant*, Rome saying the *Presbyte-*
 " *rians* brought *Charles* the First's Head to the Block,
 " and *Independants* cut it off; whereas it is certain,
 " that the Members and Clergy of Rome, under dissent-
 " ing Shapes, contrived this Murder. Nay, the
 " good King himself was informed, that the Je-
 " suits in France, at a general Meeting, resolved to
 " bring him to Justice, and to take off his Head by
 " the Power of their Friends in the Army." Bishop
 Ib. p. 168, 169. *Bramball*, in a Letter to Archbishop *Usher*, dated
July 20. 1654. adds, "Thus much to my Know-
 ledge have I seen and heard, since my leaving your
 Lordship, which I my self could hardly have cre-
 dited had not mine Eyes seen sure Evidence of the
 same (*viz.*) that when the *Romish* Orders which
 were in disguise in the Parliament Army writ to
 their several Convents, and especially to the *Sor-*
bonists, about the Lawfulness of taking away the
 King's Life, it was returned by the *Sorbonists*, that
 it was lawful for any *Roman* Catholick to work a
 change in Governments for the Mother Church's
 Advancement, and chiefly in an heretical Kingdom,
 and so, lawful to make away with the King." Mr.
 Necess. Vind. *Prynne* adds, "That Mr. *Henry Spotswood* saw the
 P. 45. Queen's Confessor on Horseback among the
 Crowd in the Habit of a Trooper, with his drawn
 Sword flourishing it over his Head in Triumph,
 as others did, when the King's Head was just cut
 off; and being asked how he could be present at
 so sad a Spectacle, answered, there were above
 Forty more Priests and Jesuits there besides him-
 self, and when the fatal Blow was given he flou-
 rished

“ rished his Sword and said, *Now the greatest Enemy* King Charles I.
 “ *we have in the World is dead.*” But this Story does 1648.
 not seem to me very probable, nor is it easy to be-
 lieve that the Papists should triumph in the Death of Fox and
 a King who was their Friend and Protector in Prospe- Fire-
 rity, and whose Sufferings are in a great Measure brand,
 chargeable upon his too great Attachment to their Part II.
 Interests. p. 86.

But the strongest, and most authentick Testimony, Sentiments
 is the *Act of Attainder of the King's Judges at the Restora-* of the Con-
tion of King Charles II. the Preamble to which sets vention
 forth, “ That the execrable Murder of his Royal Fa- Parliam-
 “ ther was committed by a Party of wretched Men 12 Car. II.
 “ desperately wicked, and harden'd in their Impiety, chap. 30.
 “ who having first plotted and contrived the Ruin of
 “ this excellent Monarchy, and with it of the true
 “ Protestant Religion, which had long flourished un-
 “ der it, found it necessary, in order to carry on
 “ their pernicious and traiterous Designs, to throw
 “ down all the Bulwarks and Fences of Law, and
 “ to subvert the very Being and Constitution of Par-
 “ liament — And for the more easy effecting their
 “ Attempts on the Person of the King himself, *they*
 “ *first seduced some part of the then Army into a Compli-*
 “ *ance, and then kept the rest in subjection partly for hopes*
 “ *of Preferment, and chiefly for fear of losing their Em-*
 “ *ployments and Arrears,* till by these, and other more
 “ odious Arts and Devices, they had fully strength-
 “ ned themselves in Power and Faction; which being
 “ done, they declared against all manner of Treaties
 “ with the Person of the King, while a Treaty with
 “ him was subsisting; they remonstrated against the
 “ Parliament for their Proceedings; they seized up-
 “ on his Royal Person while the Commissioners were
 “ returned to *London* with his Answers, which were
 “ voted a sufficient Foundation for Peace; they then
 “ secluded and imprisoned several Members of the
 “ House of Commons, and *then there being left but a*
 “ *small Number of their own Creatures (not a tenth Part*
 “ of

King
Charles I.
1648.

“ of the Whole) they shelter’d themselves under the Name
“ and Authority of a Parliament, and in that Name
“ prepared an Ordinance for the Trial of his Majesty;
“ which being rejected by the Lords they passed
“ alone in the Name of the Commons of England,
“ and pursued it with all possible Force and Cruelty
“ till they murdered the King, before the Gates of his
“ own Palace. Thus (say they) the Fanatick Rage
“ of a few Miscreants, who were neither true Prote-
“ stants nor good Subjects, stands imputed by our
“ Adversaries to the whole Nation; we therefore re-
“ nounce, abominate, and protest against it —”

If this be a true State of the Case it is evident, that the King’s Death was not chargeable upon any religious Party, or Sect of Christians, as such; nor upon the People of *England* assembled in a free Parliament, but upon the *Council of Officers and Agitators*, who being made desperate by the restless Behaviour of the *Cavaliers*, and ill Conduct of the several Parties concerned in the Treaty of *Newport*, plotted the Destruction of the King and Constitution, and accomplished it by the Power of the Sword; that it was but a small Part of the Army that were seduced into a Compliance, and these kept the rest in Subjection till the others had executed their pernicious Purposes; so that though the Wisdom of the Nation has thought fit to perpetuate the Memory of this unhappy Day by an Anniversary Fast, as *that which may be instructive both to Princes and Subjects*, yet if we may believe the Declaration of his Majesty at his Trial, or the Act of Parliament that restored his Successor, the putting the King to Death was not the Act of the People of *England*, nor of their legal Representatives, and therefore ought not to be remember’d as a National Sin.

The End of the Third VOLUME.

APPEN.



APPENDIX.

NUMB. I.

THE
ARTICLES
Of the
Church of England.

ARTICLES
Of the
Church of England,
Revised and Alter'd by the
Assembly of Divines, at
Westminster in the Year
1643. with Scripture Re-
ferences.

ARTICLE I.

Of Faith in the Holy Trinity.

HERE is but One li-
ving and true God,
everlasting, without
Body, Parts, or Pas-
sions; of infinite Power, Wis-
dom, and Goodness, the Maker
and Preserver of all Things both
visible and invisible. And in Uni-
ty of this Godhead there be
Three Persons, of one Substance,
Power, and Eternity, the Fa-
ther, the Son, and the Holy
Ghost.

ARTICLE I.

Of Faith in the Holy Trinity.

HERE is but ^a One ^a Isa. 46. 9.
living and true God ^b, 1 Cor. 8.
everlasting ^c, without 4, 6. ^b Jer.
Body, Parts ^d, or Pas- 10. 10.
sions ^e, of infinite Power ^f, Wis- 1 Thes. 1,
dom ^g, and Goodness ^h; the Ma- 9. ^c Psal.
ker and Preserver of all Things 90. 2.
both visible and invisible ⁱ. And Rom. 16.
in Unity of this Godhead there 26. ^d Deu.
be Three Persons of one Sub- 4. 15, 16.
stance, Power, and Eternity; Joh. 4. 24.
the Father, the Son, and the with Luke
Holy Ghost ^k. 24. 39.

^e Acts 14.

15. Jam. 1. 17. ^f Jer. 32. 17, 27. Mar. 10. 27. ^g Psal. 147. 5. Rom. 11. 33.
^h Psal. 119. 68. with Mat. 19. 17. ⁱ Neh. 9. 6. Col. 1. 16, 17. ^k Mat. 3,
16, 17. Chap. 28. 19. 1 John 4. 7. 2 Cor. 13. 14.

ARTICLE

*Articles revised.**Articles of the Ch. of England.*

ARTICLE II.

Of the Word, or Son of God, which was made very Man.

The Son, which is the Word of the Father, begotten from
 1 Prov. 8. everlasting of the Father¹, the
 22—31. very^m and eternal Godⁿ, of one
 Joh. 1. 12, Substance with the Father^o, took
 14. Man's Nature in the Womb of
 m 1 John the blessed Virgin, of her Sub-
 5. 20. stance^p; so that two whole and
 Rom. 9. 5. perfect Natures, that is to say,
 n John 17. the Godhead and the Manhood,
 5. Heb. were joined together in one Per-
 1. 8. son, never to be divided, where-
 Psal. 45. 6. of is one Christ, very God and
 o John 10. very Man^o, who for our sakes
 30. Heb. truly suffered most grievous Tor-
 1. 3. ments in his Soul from God^r,
 p John 1. was crucified, dead, and buried^t,
 14. Isa. 7. to reconcile his Father to us^t,
 14. Luke and to be a Sacrifice, not only
 1. 35. for original Guilt, but also for
 Gal. 4. 4. actual Sins of Men^v.

^q Isa. 7. 14.

with Mat. 1. 23. Rom. 1. 3, 4. Heb. 13. 8. ^r Isa. 53. 10, 11. Mark 14. 33,
 34. ^s 1 Pet. 2. 24. Phil. 2. 8. 1 Cor. 15. 3, 4. ^t Ezek. 16. 63. Rom. 3. 25.
 2 Cor. 5. 12. ^v Isa. 53. 10. Eph. 5. 2. 1 John 1. 7. Heb. 9. 26.

ARTICLE III.

As Christ died for us, and was buried, so it is to be belie-
 w Psal. 16. ved that he continued in the
 10. with State of the Dead, and under the
 Acts 2. 24, Power and Dominion of Death^w,
 25, 26, 27, from the Time of his Death and
 31. Burial until his Resurrection^x;
 x Rom. 6, which hath been otherwise expref-
 s. Mat. sed thus, *He went down into Hell.*
 12. 40.

ARTICLE IV.

Of the Resurrection of Christ.

Christ did truly rise again from
 Death^y, and took again his Bo-
 y, with Flesh, Bones, and all
 y 1 Cor. 15. 4.
 Rom. 8. 34. Psal. 16. 10. with Acts 2. 31. Luke 24. 34.

ARTICLE II.

Of the Word, or Son of God, which was made very Man.

The Son, which is the Word of the Father, begotten from everlasting of the Father, the very and eternal God, of one Substance with the Father, took Man's Nature in the Womb of the blessed Virgin, of her Substance; so that two whole and perfect Natures, that is to say, the Godhead and Manhood, were joynd together in one Person, never to be divided, whereof is one Christ, very God and very Man, who truly suffered, was crucified, dead, and buried, to reconcile his Father to us, and to be a Sacrifice, not only for original Guilt, but also for all actual Sins of Men.

ARTICLE III.

Of the going down of Christ into Hell.

As Christ died for us, and was buried: So also is it to be believed that he went down into Hell.

ARTICLE IV.

Of the Resurrection of Christ.

Christ did truly rise again from Death, and took again his Body, with Flesh, Bones, and all Things

Articles of the Ch. of England.

appertaining to the Perfection of Man's Nature, wherewith he ascended into Heaven, and there sitteth, until he return to judge all Men at the last Day.

Pfal. 110. 1. with Acts 2. 34, 35. Mar. 19. 10. Rom. 8. 34. ^b Acts 3. 21. Psal. 110. 1. with 1 Cor. 15. 25, 26. Acts 1. 11. ^c 2 Cor. 5. 20. Acts 17. 31. ^d Exod. 3. 6. with Luke 20. 37, 38. Acts 24. 14, 15. 1 Cor. 15. 12. to the end : John 5. 28, 29.

ARTICLE V.

Of the Holy Ghost.

The Holy Ghost, proceeding from the Father and the Son, is of one Substance, Majesty and Glory, with the Father and the Son, very and eternal God.

25. Acts 5. 3, 4. 1 Cor. 3. 16. 1 Cor. 6. 19. ^f Job 26. 13. Job 33. 4: 1 Cor. 12th Chap. Mat. 28. 19. 2 Cor. 13. 14. ^g 1 Cor. 12. 11. Eph. 1. 17. and 1 Cor. 2. 8. with 1 Pet. 4. 14. ^h John 15. 26. Mat. 10. 20. and 1 Cor. 2. 11, 12. with Gal. 4. 6. and Rom. 8. 9. and Phil. 1. 9. John 16. 14. Isa. 11. 2. Isa. 61. 1. Gen. 1. 24 2 Chron. 15. 1.

ARTICLE VI.

Of the Sufficiency of the holy Scriptures for Salvation.

Holy Scripture containeth all Things necessary to Salvation; so that whatsoever is not read therein, nor may be proved thereby, is not to be required of any Man, that it should be believed as an Article of the Faith, or be thought requisite or necessary to Salvation. In the Name of the holy Scripture we do understand those canonical Books of the Old and New Testament, of whose Authority was never any Doubt in the Church.

22. with ver. 20, 27. Gal. 1. 8, 9. John 5. 39.

Articles revised.

Things appertaining to the Perfection of Man's Nature ^a, where- ^a Luke with he ascended into Heaven, 24, 39. and there sitteth ^a, until he re- with John turn to judge ^b all Men ^c at the 20. 25, 27. general Resurrection of the Body ^a Psal. 68. at the last Day ^d.

18. with Eph. 4. 8.

ARTICLE V.

Of the Holy Ghost.

The Holy Ghost is very and eternal God, of one Substance ^e, ^e 2 Sam. Majesty ^f, and Glory with the 23. 2. Father and the Son ^g, proceed- with verse ing from the Father and the 3. Isa. 6, 5, 8. with Acts 28.

ARTICLE VI.

Of the Sufficiency of the holy Scriptures for Salvation.

Holy Scripture ⁱ containeth all ⁱ Rom. 1. Things necessary to Salvation ^k, 2. 2 Tim. so that whatsoever is not read 3. 15. therein, nor may be proved 2 Pet. 1. thereby, is not to be believed as 20, 21. an Article of Faith, or necessary ^k Psal. 19. to Salvation ^l.

7. 2 Tim.

By the Name of holy Scripture we understand all the Canonical Books of the Old and New Testament, which follow,

3. 15, 16, 17. Jam. 1. 21, 25. Acts 20. 32. ^l Prov. 30. 5, 6. Isa. 8. 20. Acts 26.

Articles revised.

Of the Old Testament, *Of the New Testament,*

Genesis, *The Gospel of St.*
Exodus, &c. Matthew, &c.

All which Books, as they are commonly received, we do receive, and acknowledge them to be given by the Inspiration of God, and in that regard to be of most certain Credit, and highest Authority.

Articles of the Ch. of England.

Of the Names and Number of the Canonical Books.

Genesis, Leviticus,
Exodus, Numbers, &c.

And the other Books (as *Hierome* saith) the Church doth read for Example of Life and Instruction of Manners; but yet doth it not apply them to establish any Doctrine: Such are these following,

Third of Esdras, Book of Tobias, Fourth of Esdras, Judith, &c.

All the Books of the New Testament, as they are commonly received, we do receive, and account them for Canonical.

ARTICLE VII.

Of the Old Testament.

The Old Testament is not contrary to the New, in the Doctrine contained in them^m; for
 21, 23. both in the Old and New Testament everlasting Life is offered to Mankind by Christⁿ, who
 44. Rom. is the only Mediator between
 3. 31. Gal. God and Man^o, being both God
 3. 21, 23, and Man^p. Wherefore they are
 24. ⁿ Gen. not to be heard, which feign,
 3. 15. that the old Fathers did look on-
 Gen. 22. ly for temporary Promises^q.
 18. with Although the Law given from
 Gal. 3. 8, God by *Moses*, as touching Ce-
 14. 1 Cor. remonies and Rites, do not bind
 10. 2, 3, 4. Christians; nor the civil Pre-
 Luke 1. cepts given by *Moses*, such as
 69, 70. were peculiarly fitted to the Com-
 Acts 3. 24. monwealth of the *Jewes*, are of
 Isa. 53. necessity to be received in any
 Chap.

^o Dan. 9. 17. Rom. 8. 34. 1 John 2. 1. Heb. 7. 25. 1 Tim. 2. 5. John
 14. 6. ^p Gal. 4. 4, 5. Acts 20. 28. Phil. 2. 7, 8. ^q Acts 26. 6, 7. Rom.
 4. 11. Gal. 3. 9. Heb. 11. 10, 16, 35. ^r Gal. 4. 9, 10. Col. 2. 14, 16, 17.
 Heb. 9. 9, 10.

ARTICLE VII.

Of the Old Testament.

The Old Testament is not contrary to the New; for both in the Old and New Testament everlasting Life is offered to Mankind by Christ, who is the only Mediator between God and Man, being both God and Man. Wherefore they are not to be heard which say that the old Fathers did look only for transitory Promises. Although the Law given from GOD by *Moses*, as touching Ceremonies and Rites, do not bind Christian Men, nor the Civil Precepts thereof ought of Necessity to be received in any Commonwealth; yet notwithstanding no Christian Man whatsoever is free from the Obedience of the

Command-

Articles of the Ch. of England.

Commandments, which are called moral.

Articles revised.

Commonwealth¹; yet notwithstanding no Christian Man whatsoever is free from the Obedience with Deut. of the Commandments which 17. 8 — are called Moral¹. By the Moral Law we understand all the 13. 1, 5. Ten Commandments taken in Tit. 3. 1. their full extent. 1 Pet. 2. 13, 14.

² Mat. 5. 17, to the end. Rom. 13. 8, 9, 10. Eph. 6. 1, 2, 3. Jam. 2. 8, 9, 10, 11, 12. Rom. 7. 25. Rom. 3. 31. Mat. 7. 12.

ARTICLE VIII.

Of the Three Creeds.

The Three Creeds; Nice Creed, Athanasius Creed, and that which is commonly called the Apostles Creed, ought thoroughly to be received and believed; for they may be proved by most certain Warrants of holy Scripture.

ARTICLE IX.

Of Original or Birth Sin.

Original Sin standeth not in the following of Adam (as the Pelagians do vainly talk) but it is the Fault and Corruption of the Nature of every Man, that naturally is engendred of the Offspring of Adam, whereby Man is very far gone from original Righteousness, and is of his own Nature enclined to Evil, so that the Flesh lusteth always contrary to the Spirit, and therefore in every Person born into this World, it deserveth God's Wrath and Damnation. And this Infection of Nature doth remain, yea in them that are regenerated, whereby the Lust of the Flesh, called in Greek *φρόνημα σαρκός*, which some do ex-

ARTICLE IX.

Of Original or Birth Sin.

Original Sin^v standeth not in^v Psal. 51. the following of Adam, as the Pelagians do vainly talk^w; but, 5. 6. together with his first Sin imputed^x, it is the Fault and Corruption of the Nature of every Man, that naturally is propagated from Adam; whereby Man is wholly deprived of original^x Righteousness^y, and is of his own Nature inclined only to Evil^z. So that the Lust of the Flesh, called in Greek *φρόνημα σαρκός*, which some do expound the Wisdom, some Sensuality, some the Affection, some the Desire of the Flesh, is not subject to the Law of God^a, and therefore in every Person born into this World it deserveth God's

Jer. 17. 9. Rom. 7. 8. James 1. 14. ^a Rom. 8. 7. 1 Cor. 2. 14. Col. 1. 21. Wrath

Articles revised.

^b Eph. 2. Wrath and Damnation ^b. And
 3. Rom. this Infection of Nature doth re-
 8. 6, 7. main, yea in them that are re-
^c Prov. generate ^c, whereby the Flesh
 20. 9. lusteth always contrary to the
 Rom. 7. Spirit ^d. And although there is
 17, 20, no Condemnation for them that
 23, 25. are regenerate, and do believe ^e,
^d Gal. yet the Apostle doth confess,
 5. 17. that Concupiscence and Lust is
^e Rom. 8. truly and properly Sin ^f.
 1, 13.
 John 3. 13. ^f Rom. 8. 17, 20.

ARTICLE X.

Of Free Will.

The Condition of Man after
 the Fall of *Adam* is such, that he
 cannot turn or prepare himself,
 by his own natural Strength and
 good Works, to Faith and Call-
^g Eph. 2. ing upon God ^g; wherefore we
 1, 5. have no Power to do good Works
 1 Cor. 2. pleasing and acceptable to God ^h,
 14. Eph. without the Grace of God by
 2. 8, 9, Christ, both preventing us, that
 10. John we may have a good Will, and
 6. 44, 65. working so effectually in us, as
^h Rom. 8. that it determineth our Will to
 8. Heb. that which is good ⁱ, and also
 11. 6. working with us when we have
ⁱ Ezek. that Will unto good ^k.
 11. 19, 20.
 Ezek. 36. 26, 27. Jer. 31. 32, 33. with
 John 6. 45. Eph. 1. 19, 20. 1 Cor. 4. 7.
 12. 22. 1 Pet. 5. 10. 1 Theff. 5. 23, 24. 1

ARTICLE XI.

*Of the Justification of Man before
God.*

We are justified, that is, we
 are accounted Righteous before
 God, and have Remission of
 Sins ^l, not for, nor by our own
^l Rom. 4. Works or Deservings ^m, but
 5, 6, 7. freely by his Grace ⁿ, only for
 Psal. 32.
 1, 2. ⁿ Rom. 3. 20. Gal. 2. 16. Gal. 3. 10, 11. Phil. 3. 9. ⁿ Rom. 3. 24. Tit. 3. 7.

Articles of the Ch. of England.

pound the Wisdom, some Sen-
 suality, some the Affection, some
 the Desire of the Flesh, is not
 subject to the Law of GOD.
 And although there is no Con-
 demnation for them that believe
 and are baptized, yet the Apo-
 stle doth confess that Concupi-
 scence and Lust hath of it self
 the Nature of Sin.

ARTICLE X.

Of Free Will.

The Condition of Man after
 the Fall of *Adam* is such, that
 he cannot turn and prepare him-
 self by his own natural Strength
 and good Works to Faith and
 Calling upon God. Wherefore
 we have no Power to do good
 Works pleasant and acceptable
 to God, without the Grace of
 God by Christ preventing us,
 that we may have a Good-will,
 and working with us, when we
 have that Good-will.

Heb. 8. 10, 11. Phil. 2. 12, 13.
^k Heb. 13. 21. Phil. 1. 6. Heb.
 Kings 8. 57, 58.

ARTICLE XI.

Of the Justification of Man.

We are accounted Righteous
 before GOD, only for the Me-
 rit of our Lord and Saviour Je-
 sus Christ, by Faith, and not
 for our own Works or Deser-
 vings. Wherefore, that we are
 justified

Articles of the Ch. of England.

justified by Faith only is a most wholesome Doctrine, and very full of Comfort, as more largely is expressed in the Homily of Justification.

Articles revised.

our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ's sake, his whole Obedience and Satisfaction being by 24, 25. God imputed unto us, and Rom. 5. 1. Christ with his Righteousness, 2 Cor. 5. being apprehended and rested on 18, 19. by Faith only. The Doctrine Rom. 5. of Justification by Faith only is 9, 17, 18, an wholesome Doctrine, and very full of Comfort, notwithstanding 3. 25, 26. standing God doth not forgive Rom. 4. them that are Impenitent, and 6, 24. go on still in their sinnes. 2 Cor. 5. 21.

1 Rom. 3. 22, 25, 26, 28. Gal. 2. 16. Isa. 28. 16. with Rom. 9. 33. and 1 Pet. 2. 6. Phil. 3. 9. 2 Tim. 1. 13. Rom. 5. 1, 2, 8, 11. Rom. 15. 13. 1 Pet. 1. 8. 1 Psal. 68. 20, 21. Exod. 34. 6, 7. Luke 13. 3, 5.

ARTICLE XII.

Of Good Works.

Albeit that good Works, which are the Fruits of Faith, and follow after Justification, cannot put away our Sins, and endure the Severity of God's Judgment, yet are they pleasing and acceptable to God in Christ, and do spring out necessarily of a true and lively Faith, in so much that by them a lively Faith may be as evidently known as a Tree discerned by the Fruit.

ARTICLE XII.

Of Good Works.

Good Works, which are the Fruits of Faith, and follow after Justification, cannot put away 2. 17, 18, our Sins, and endure the Severity of God's Judgment; yet are 2. 14. Tit. they, notwithstanding their Imperfections, in the Sight of Eph. 2. 8, God pleasing and acceptable unto him in and for Christ, and do spring out necessarily of a true and lively Faith, in so much that by them a lively Faith may be evidently known, as a Tree discerned by the Fruits.

143. 2. Job 9. 14, 15, 19, 20. Exod. 28. 38. Rev. 8. 3, 4. 1 Pet. 2. 5. Heb. 13. 16, 20, 21. Col. 1. 10. Phil. 4. 18. James 2. 16. 1 John 1. 4. James 2. 18, 19. John 15. 4, 5. 1 John 2. 3, 5. Mat. 12. 33.

ARTICLE XIII.

Of Works before Justification.

Works done before the Grace of Christ, and the Inspiration of his Spirit, are not pleasant to GOD, for as much as they spring not of Faith in Jesus

ARTICLE XIII.

Of Works before Justification.

Works done before Justification by Christ, and Regeneration by his Spirit, are not pleasing unto God, for as much as they spring not of Faith in Jesus

18. Rom. 8. 8. Prov. 15. 8, 26. Prov. 21. 27. Rom. 3. 12.

*Articles revised.**Articles of the Ch. of England.*

^c Heb. 11. Christ^c; neither do they make
 5, 6. Gal. Men meet to receive Grace, or
 5. 6. (as the School Authors say) de-
 " 2 Tim. serve Grace of Congruity; yea
 1. 9. Joh. rather, for that they are not
 1. 13. done as God hath willed and
^e Rom. 8. commanded them to be done,
 7. 8. they are sinful.
 Hag. 2.
 14. Isa. 58. 1—5. Isa. 66. 2, 3.

Christ, neither do they make
 Men meet to receive Grace, or
 (as the School Authors say) de-
 serve Grace of Congruity; yea
 rather, for that they are not done
 as GOD hath willed and com-
 manded them to be done, we
 doubt not but they have the Na-
 ture of Sin.

ARTICLE XIV.

Of Works of Supererogation.

Voluntary Works, besides
 over and above God's Command-
 ments, which they call *Works of*

^f Mat. 5. *Supererogation*, cannot be taughtⁱ
 48. without Arrogancy and Impie-
 Mar. 12. ty^o; for by them Men do declare
 30, 31. that they do not only render un-
 Phil. 4. to God as much as they are
 8, 9. bound to do; but that they do
^g Job 9. more for his sake than of bounden
 2, 3, 20. Duty is required; whereas Christ
 21. Psal. saith plainly, *When you have*
 143. 2. *done all those Things that are*
 Prov. 20. *commanded you, say, We are un-*
 9. Phil. 3. *profitable Servants, we have*
 8—15. *done that which was our Duty*
^h Luke *to do*.
 17. 10,
 with ver. 7, 8, 9.

ARTICLE XIV.

Of the Works of Supererogation.

Voluntary Works besides,
 over and above God's Command-
 ments, which they call Works
 of Supererogation, cannot be
 taught without Arrogancy and
 Impiety. For by them Men do
 declare that they do not only
 render unto God as much as
 they are bound to do, but that
 they do more for his sake than of
 bounden Duty is required; where-
 as Christ saith plainly, When
 ye have done all that are com-
 manded to you, say, We be un-
 profitable Servants.

ARTICLE XV.

Of Christ alone without Sin.

Christ in the Truth of our
 Nature was made like unto us in
 all Things, Sin only excepted^j,
 from which he was clearly void
 both in his Flesh and in his Spi-
 rit^k: He came to be the Lamb
 without spot, who by Sacrifice
 of himself^m once madeⁿ, should
 take away the Sins of the World^o;

1. 35,

with Acts 3. 14. John 14. 30. 2 Cor. 5. 21. Heb. 7. 26. ¹ 1 Pet. 1. 19.
^m Eph. 5. 2. ⁿ Heb. 9. 26, 28. Heb. 10. 10, 12. ^o John 1. 29.

ARTICLE XV.

Of Christ alone without Sin.

Christ in the Truth of our
 Nature, was made like unto us
 in all Things. (Sin only except)
 from which he was clearly void,
 both in his Flesh and in his Spi-
 rit. He came to be a Lamb
 without spot, who by Sacrifice
 of himself once made, should
 take away the Sins of the World;

and

Articles of the Ch. of England.

and Sin (as St. *John* saith) was not in him. But all we the rest (although baptized, and born again in Christ) yet offend in many Things; and if we say we have no Sin we deceive our selves, and the Truth is not in us.

Articles revised.

and Sin (as St. *John* saith) was not in him. But all we the rest, although baptized and regenerate, yet offend in many Things; and if we say we have no Sin, we deceive our selves, and the Truth is not in us. 1 John 3. 5. James 3. 2. 1 John 1. 8, 10.

Charles Herle, *Prolocutor.*

Henry Rebrough, *Scriba.*

Adoniram Byfield, *Scriba.*

N.B. The Assembly proceeded no farther in the Revision.





APPENDIX.

NUMB. II.

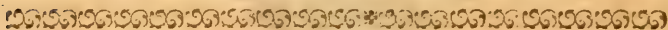


THE DIRECTORY

FOR THE

PUBLICK WORSHIP of GOD,

Agreed upon by the Assembly of Divines at *Westminster* ; examined and approved, *Anno* 1645. by the GENERAL ASSEMBLY of the CHURCH of *SCOTLAND* ; and ratified by Act of Parliament the same Year.



The PREFACE.

IN the Beginning of the blessed Reformation, our wise and pious Ancestors took Care to set forth an Order for Redress of many Things, which they then, by the Word, discovered to be Vain, Erroneous, Superstitious, and Idolatrous, in the publick Worship of God. This occasioned many Godly and Learned Men to rejoice much in the Book of Common-Prayer, at that Time set forth ; because the Mass, and the rest of the Latin Service being removed, the publick Worship was celebrated in our own Tongue ; many of the common People also received Benefit by hearing the Scriptures read in their own Language, which formerly were unto them as a Book that is sealed.

Hoccebeit,

Howbeit, long and sad Experience hath made it manifest, That the Liturgy used in the Church of England (notwithstanding all the Pains and religious Intentions of the Compilers of it) hath proved an Offence, not only to many of the Godly at Home, but also to the Reformed Churches Abroad. For, not to speak of urging the Reading of all the Prayers, which very greatly increased the Burden of it; the many unprofitable and burdensome Ceremonies contained in it, have occasioned much Mischief, as well by disquieting the Consciences of many Godly Ministers and People, who could not yield unto them, as by depriving them of the Ordinances of God, which they might not enjoy without conforming or subscribing to those Ceremonies. Sundry good Christians have been, by Means thereof, kept from the Lord's Table, and divers able and faithful Ministers debarred from the Exercise of their Ministry (to the Endangering of many Thousand Souls, in a Time of such Scarcity of faithful Pastors) and spoiled of their Livelihood, to the Undoing of them and their Families. Prelates and their Faction have laboured to raise the Estimation of it to such an Height, as if there were no other Worship, or Way of Worship of GOD amongst us, but only the Service-Book; to the great Hindrance of the Preaching of the Word, and (in some Places, specially of late) to the Justling of it out, as unnecessary; or (at best) as far inferior to the Reading of Common-Prayer, which was made no better than an Idol by many ignorant and superstitious People, who pleasing themselves in their Presence at that Service, and their Lip-labour in bearing a Part in it, have thereby harden'd themselves in their Ignorance and Carelessness of saving Knowledge and true Piety.

In the mean Time, Papists boasted, that the Book was a Compliance with them in a great Part of their Service; and so were not a little confirmed in their Superstition and Idolatry, expecting rather our Return to them, than endeavouring the Reformation of themselves: In which Expectation they were of late very much encouraged, when, upon the pretended Warrantableness of imposing of the former Ceremonies, new Ones were daily obtruded upon the Church.

Add hereunto (which was not foreseen, but since hath come to pass) that the Liturgy hath been a great Means, as on the one Hand to make and increase an idle and unedifying Ministry, which contented it self with set Forms made to their Heads by others, without putting forth themselves to exercise the Gift of Prayer, with which our Lord Jesus Christ pleaseth to furnish all his Servants whom he calls to that Office: So on the other Side, it hath been (and ever would be, if continued) a Matter of endless Strife and Contention in the Church, and a Snare both to many godly and faithful Ministers, who have been persecuted and silenced upon that Occasion, and to others of hopeful Parts, many of which have been, and more still would be diverted

from all Thoughts of the Ministry to other Studies; especially in these later Times, wherein God vouchsafeth to his People more and better Means for the Discovery of Error and Superstition, and for attaining of Knowledge in the Mysteries of Godliness, and Gifts in Preaching and Prayer.

Upon these, and many the like weighty Considerations, in Reference to the whole Book in general, and because of divers Particulars contained in it; not from any Love to Novelty, or Intention to disparage our first Reformers (of whom we are perswaded, that, were they now alive, they would join with us in this Work, and whom we acknowledge as excellent Instruments, raised by God, to begin the Purging and Building of his House, and desire they may be had of us and Posterity in everlasting Remembrance, with Thankfulness and Honour;) but that we may, in some Measure, answer the gracious Providence of God, which at this Time calleth upon us for further Reformation, and may satisfy our own Consciences, and answer the Expectation of other Reformed Churches, and the Desires of many of the Godly among our selves, and withal give some publick Testimony of our Endeavours for Uniformity in Divine Worship, which we have promised in our Solemn League and Covenant: We have, after earnest and frequent Calling upon the Name of God, and after much Consultation, not with Flesh and Blood, but with his holy Word, resolved to lay aside the former Liturgy, with the many Rites and Ceremonies formerly used in the Worship of God; and have agreed upon this following Directory for all the Parts of publick Worship, at ordinary and extraordinary Times.

Wherein our Care hath been, to hold forth such Things as are of Divine Institution in every Ordinance; and other Things we have endeavoured to set forth according to the Rules of Christian Prudence, agreeable to the general Rules of the World of God: Our Meaning therein being only, that the general Heads, the Sense and Scope of the Prayers, and other Parts of Publick Worship, being known to all, there may be a Consent of all the Churches, in those Things that contain the Substance of the Service and Worship of God; and the Ministers may be hereby directed in their Administrations, to keep like Soundness in Doctrine and Prayer; and may, if need be, have some Help and Furniture; and yet so, as they become not hereby slothful and negligent in stirring up the Gifts of Christ in them; but, that each one, by Meditation, by taking Heed to himself and the Flock of God committed to him, and by wise Observing the Ways of Divine Providence, may be careful to furnish his Heart and Tongue with further, or other Materials of Prayer and Exhortation, as shall be needful upon all Occasions.

Of the Assembling of the Congregation, and their Behaviour in the publick Worship of God.

W H E N the Congregation is to meet for publick Worship, the People (having before prepared their Hearts thereunto) ought all to come, and join therein; not abtinenting themselves from the publick Ordinances through Negligence, or upon Pretence of private Meetings.

Let all enter the Assembly, not irreverently, but in a grave and seemly Manner, taking their Seats or Places without Adoration, or bowing themselves towards one Place or other.

The Congregation being assembled, the Minister, after solemn Calling on them to the Worshipping of the great Name of God, is to begin with Prayer.

“ In all Reverence and Humility acknowledging the incomprehensible Greatness and Majesty of the Lord (in whose Presence they do then in a special Manner appear) and their own Vileness and Unworthiness to approach so near him, with their utter Inability of themselves to so great a Work; and humbly beseeching him for Pardon, Assistance and Acceptance in the whole Service then to be performed; and for a Blessing on that particular Portion of his Word than to be read: And all in the Name and Mediation of the Lord Jesus Christ.”

The Publick Worship being begun, the People are wholly to attend upon it, forbearing to read any Thing, except what the Minister is then reading or citing; and abstaining much more from all private Whisperings, Conferences, Salutations, or doing Reverence to any Persons present, or coming in; as also from all Gazing, Sleeping, and other undecent Behaviour, which may disturb the Minister or People, or hinder themselves or others in the Service of God.

If any, through Necessity, be hinder'd from being present at the Beginning, they ought not, when they come into the Congregation, to betake themselves to their private Devotions, but reverently to compose themselves to join with the Assembly, in that Ordinance of God which is then in Hand.

Of publick Reading of the holy Scriptures.

R EADING of the Word in the Congregation, being Part of the publick Worship of God, (wherein we acknowledge our Dependance upon him, and Subjection to him) and one Means sanctified by him for the Edifying of his People, is to be performed by the Pastors and Teachers.

Howbeit, such as intend the Ministry, may occasionally both read the Word, and exercise their Gift in Preaching in the Congregation, if allowed by the Presbytery thereunto.

All the Canonical Books of the Old and New Testament (but none of those which are commonly called *Apocrypha*) shall be publickly

lickly read in the vulgar Tongue, out of the best allowed Translation, distinctly, that all may hear and understand.

How large a Portion shall be read at once, is left to the Wisdom of the Minister; but it is convenient, that ordinarily one Chapter of each Testament be read at every Meeting; and sometimes more, where the Chapters be short, or the Coherence of Matter requireth it.

It is requisite that all the Canonical Books be read over in Order, that the People may be better acquainted with the whole Body of the Scriptures; and ordinarily, where the Reading in either Testament endeth on one Lord's Day, it is to begin the next.

We commend also the more frequent Reading of such Scriptures, as he that readeth shall think best for Edification of his Hearers, as the Book of *Psalms*, and such like.

When the Minister, who readeth, shall judge it necessary to expound any Part of what is read, let it not be done until the whole Chapter or Psalm be ended; and Regard is always to be had unto the Time, that neither Preaching, nor other Ordinance, be shortened, or rendered tedious. Which Rule is to be observed in all other publick Performances.

Beside publick Reading of the holy Scriptures, every Person that can read, is to be exhorted to read the Scriptures privately, (and all others that cannot read, if not disabled by Age, or otherwise, are likewise to be exhorted to learn to read) and to have a Bible.

Of publick Prayer before the Sermon.

After Reading of the Word (and Singing of the Psalm) the Minister who is to preach, is to endeavour to get his own, and his Hearers Hearts to be rightly affected with their Sins, that they may all mourn in Sense thereof before the Lord, and hunger and thirst after the Grace of God in Jesus Christ, by proceeding to a more full Confession of Sin, with Shame and holy Confusion of Face, and to call upon the Lord to this Effect;

“ To acknowledge our great Sinfulness, *First*, By Reason of
 “ original Sin, which (beside the Guilt that makes us liable to
 “ everlasting Damnation) is the Seed of all other Sins, hath de-
 “ praved and poisoned all the Faculties and Powers of Soul and
 “ Body, doth defile our best Actions, and (were it not restrained,
 “ or our Hearts renewed by Grace) would break forth into innu-
 “ merable Transgressions, and greatest Rebellions against the
 “ Lord, that ever were committed by the vilest of the Sons of
 “ Men. And, *next*, By Reason of actual Sins, our own Sins,
 “ the Sins of Magistrates, of Ministers, and of the whole Nation,
 “ unto which we are many Ways accessory: Which Sins of ours
 “ receive many fearful Aggravations, we having broken all the
 “ Commandments of the holy, just, and good Law of God, do-
 “ ing that which is forbidden, and leaving undone what is enjoin-
 “ ed; and that not only out of Ignorance and Infirmary, but also
 “ more

“ more presumptuously, against the Light of our Minds, Checks
 “ of our Consciences, and Motions of his own holy Spirit to the
 “ contrary, so that we have no Cloke for our Sins; yea, not on-
 “ ly despising the Riches of God’s Goodness, forbearance, and
 “ Long-suffering, but standing out against many Invitations and
 “ Offers of Grace in the Gospel; not endeavouring, as we ought,
 “ to receive Christ into our Hearts by Faith, or to walk worthy of
 “ him in our Lives.

“ To bewail our Blindness of Mind, Hardness of Heart, Unbe-
 “ lief, Impenitency, Security, Lukewarmness, Barrenness; our
 “ not endeavouring after Mortification and Newness of Life; nor
 “ after the Exercise of Godliness in the Power thereof: And that
 “ the best of us have not so stedfastly walked with God, kept our
 “ Garments so unspotted, nor been so zealous of his Glory, and
 “ the Good of others, as we ought: And to mourn over such
 “ other Sins, as the Congregation is particularly guilty of, not-
 “ withstanding the manifold and great Mercies of our God, the
 “ Love of Christ, the Light of the Gospel, and Reformation of
 “ Religion, our own Purposes, Promises, Vows, solemn Cove-
 “ nant, and other special Obligations to the contrary.

“ To acknowledge and confess, that, as we are convinced of
 “ our Guilt, so, out of a deep Sense thereof, we judge our selves
 “ unworthy of the smallest Benefits, most worthy of God’s fiercest
 “ Wrath, and of all the Curses of the Law, and heaviest Judg-
 “ ments inflicted upon the most rebellious Sinners; and that he
 “ might most justly take his Kingdom and Gospel from us, plague
 “ us with all Sorts of spiritual and temporal Judgments in this Life,
 “ and after cast us into utter Darkness, in the Lake that burneth
 “ with Fire and Brimstone, where is Weeping and Gnashing of
 “ Teeth for evermore.

“ Notwithstanding all which, to draw near to the Throne of
 “ Grace, encouraging our selves with Hope of a gracious Answer
 “ of our Prayers, in the Riches and All-sufficiency of that only
 “ one Oblation, the Satisfaction and Intercession of the Lord
 “ Jesus Christ, at the right Hand of his Father, and our Father;
 “ and, in Confidence of the exceeding great and precious Promises
 “ of Mercy and Grace in the New Covenant, through the same
 “ Mediator thereof, to deprecate the heavy Wrath and Curse of
 “ GOD, which we are not able to avoid, or bear; and humbly
 “ and earnestly to supplicate for Mercy in the free and full Re-
 “ mission of all our Sins, and that only for the bitter Sufferings
 “ and precious Merits of that our only Saviour Jesus Christ.

“ That the Lord would vouchsafe to shed abroad his Love in
 “ our Hearts by the Holy Ghost; seal unto us, by the same Spi-
 “ rit of Adoption, the full Assurance of our Pardon and Reconcili-
 “ liation; comfort all that mourn in Zion, speak Peace to the
 “ wounded and troubled Spirit, and bind up the Broken-hearted:
 “ And as for secure and presumptuous Sinners, that he would
 “ open

“ open their Eyes, convince their Consciences, and turn them
 “ from Darkneſs unto Light, and from the Power of Satan unto
 “ God, that they alſo may receive Forgiveneſs of Sin, and an
 “ Inheritance among them that are ſanctified by Faith in Chriſt
 “ Jeſus.

“ With Remiſſion of Sins through the Blood of Chriſt, to pray
 “ for Sanctification by his Spirit ; the Mortification of Sin dwelling
 “ in, and many Times tyrannizing over us ; the Quickning of
 “ our dead Spirits, with the Life of God in Chriſt ; Grace to fit
 “ and enable us for all Duties of Converſation and Callings to-
 “ wards God and Men ; Strength againſt Temptations, the ſancti-
 “ fied Uſe of Bleſſings and Crollſes, and Perſeverance in Faith and
 “ Obedience unto the End.

“ To pray for the Propagation of the Goſpel and Kingdom of
 “ Chriſt to all Nations, for the Converſion of the *Jews*, the Ful-
 “ neſs of the *Gentiles*, the Fall of *Antichriſt*, and the Haſtening of
 “ the Second Coming of our Lord ; for the Deliverance of the di-
 “ ſtreſſed Churches abroad from the Tyranny of the *Antichriſtian*
 “ *Faſſion*, and from the cruel Oppreſſions and Blaſphemies of the
 “ *Turk* ; for the Bleſſing of God upon all the Reformed Churches,
 “ eſpecially upon the Churches and Kingdoms of *Scotland*, *Eng-*
 “ *land*, and *Ireland*, now more ſtrictly and religiously united in
 “ the *Solemn National League and Covenant* ; and for our Planta-
 “ tions in the remote Parts of the World : More particularly for
 “ that Church and Kingdom whereof we are Members, that there-
 “ in God would eſtabliſh Peace and Truth, the Purity of all his
 “ Ordinances, and the Power of Godlineſs ; prevent and remove
 “ Hereſy, Schiſm, Prophaneneſs, Superſtition, Security, and Un-
 “ fruitfulneſs under the Means of Grace ; heal all our Rents and
 “ Diviſions, and preſerve us from Breach of our *Solemn Co-*
 “ *venant*.

“ To pray for all in Authority, eſpecially for the King's Ma-
 “ jeſty, that God would make him rich in Bleſſings, both in his
 “ Perſon and Government ; eſtabliſh his Throne in Religion and
 “ Righteouſneſs, ſave him from evil Counſel, and make him a
 “ bleſſed and glorious Inſtrument, for the Conſervation and Propa-
 “ gation of the Goſpel, for the Encouragement and Protection
 “ of them that do Well, the Terror of all that do Evil, and
 “ the great Good of the whole Church, and of all his Kingdoms ;
 “ for the Converſion of the Queen, the religious Education of the
 “ Prince, and the reſt of the Royal Seed ; for the Comforting the
 “ afflicted Queen of *Bohemia*, Siſter to our Sovereign ; and for the
 “ Reſtitution and Eſtabliſhment of the Illuſtrious Prince *Charles*,
 “ Elector *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, to all his Dominions and Digni-
 “ ties ; for a Bleſſing upon the high Court of Parliament (when
 “ ſitting in any of theſe Kingdoms reſpectively) the Nobility, the
 “ ſubordinate Judges and Magiſtrates, the Gentry, and all the
 “ Commonalty ; for all Paſtors and Teachers, that God would

“ All

“ fill them with his Spirit, make them exemplarily Holy, Sober,
 “ Just, Peaceable, and Gracious in their Lives; Sound, Faithful,
 “ and Powerful in their Ministry; and follow all their Labours
 “ with Abundance of Success and Blessing; and give unto all his
 “ People Pastors according to his own Heart; for the Universities,
 “ and all Schools and Religious Seminaries of Church and Com-
 “ monwealth, that they may flourish more and more in Learning
 “ and Piety; for the particular City or Congregation, that God
 “ would pour out a Blessing upon the Ministry of the Word, Sa-
 “ craments and Discipline, upon the Civil Government, and all
 “ the several Families and Persons therein; for Mercy to the Af-
 “ flicted, under any inward or outward Distress. For seasonable
 “ Weather, and fruitful Seasons, as the Time may require; for
 “ Averting the Judgment that we either feel or fear, or are liable
 “ unto, as Famine, Pestilence, the Sword, and such like.

“ And, with Confidence of his Mercy to his whole Church,
 “ and the Acceptance of our Persons, through the Merits and Me-
 “ diation of our High Priest the Lord Jesus, to profess that it is
 “ the Desire of our Souls to have Fellowship with God, in the re-
 “ verend and conscientious Use of his holy Ordinances; and, to
 “ that Purpose, to pray earnestly for his Grace, and effectual As-
 “ sistance to the Sanctification of his holy Sabbath, the Lord’s
 “ Day, in all the Duties thereof, publick and private, both to
 “ our selves, and to all other Congregations of his People, accord-
 “ ing to the Riches and Excellency of the Gospel, this Day cele-
 “ brated and enjoyed.

“ And, because we have been unprofitable Hearers in Times
 “ past, and now cannot of our selves receive, as we should, the
 “ deep Things of God, the Mysteries of Jesus Christ, which re-
 “ quire a spiritual Discerning; to pray, that the Lord, who teach-
 “ eth to profit, would graciously please to pour out the Spirit of
 “ Grace, together with the outward Means thereof, causing us to
 “ attain such a Measure of the Excellency of the Knowledge of
 “ Christ Jesus our Lord, and, in him, of the Things which be-
 “ long to our Peace, that we may account all Things but as Dross
 “ in Comparison of him: And that we, tasting the first Fruits of
 “ the Glory that is to be revealed, may long for a more full and
 “ perfect Communion with him, that where he is, we may be al-
 “ so, and enjoy the Fulness of those Joys and Pleasures which are
 “ at his right Hand for evermore.

“ More particularly, that God would in special Manner furnish
 “ his Servant (now called to dispense the Bread of Life unto his
 “ Household) with Wisdom, Fidelity, Zeal, and Utterance, that
 “ he may divide the Word of God aright, to every one his Por-
 “ tion, in Evidence and Demonstration of the Spirit and Power;
 “ and that the Lord would circumscribe the Ears and Hearts of the
 “ Hearers, to hear, love, and receive with Meekness the ingrafted
 “ Word, which is able to save their Souls; make them as good

“ Ground!

“ Ground to receive in the good Seed of the Word, and strengthen
 “ them against the Temptations of Satan, the Cares of the World,
 “ the Hardness of their own Hearts, and whatsoever else may hin-
 “ der their profitable and saving Hearing; that to Christ may be
 “ so formed in them, and live in them, that all their Thoughts
 “ may be brought into Captivity to the Obedience of Christ, and
 “ their Hearts established in every good Word and Work for
 “ ever.”

We judge this to be a convenient Order, in the ordinary Publick Prayers; yet so, as the Minister may defer (as in Prudence he shall think meet) some part of these Petitions, till after his Sermon, or offer up to God some of the Thanksgivings hereafter appointed, in his Prayer before his Sermon.

Of the Preaching of the Word.

Preaching of the Word being the Power of God unto Salvation, and one of the greatest and most excellent Works belonging to the Ministry of the Gospel, should be so performed, that the Workman need not be ashamed, but may save himself, and those that hear him.

It is presupposed (according to the Rules for Ordination) that the Minister of Christ is in some good Measure gifted for so weighty a Service, by his Skill in the Original Languages, and in such Arts and Sciences as are Handmaids unto Divinity; by his Knowledge in the whole Body of Theology, but most of all in the holy Scriptures, having his Senses and Heart exercised in them above the common Sort of Believers; and by the Illumination of God's Spirit, and other Gifts of Edification, which (together with Reading and Studying of the Word) he ought still to seek by Prayer, and an humble Heart, resolving to admit and receive any Truth not yet attained, whenever God shall make it known unto him. All which he is to make Use of, and improve, in his private Preparations, before he deliver in Publick what he hath provided.

Ordinarily, the Subject of his Sermon is to be some Text of Scripture, holding forth some Principle or Head of Religion, or suitable to some special Occasion emergent; or he may go on in some Chapter, Psalm, or Book of the holy Scripture, as he shall see fit.

Let the Introduction to his Text be brief and perspicuous, drawn from the Text it self, or Context, or some parallel Place, or general Sentence of Scripture.

If the Text be long (as in Histories and Parables it sometimes must be) let him give a brief Sum of it; if short, a Paraphrase thereof, if need be: In both, looking diligently to the Scope of the Text, and pointing at the chief Heads and Grounds of Doctrine, which he is to raise from it.

In analysing and dividing his Text, he is to regard more the Order of Matter, than of Words; and neither to burden the Memory

mory of the Hearers in the Beginning with too many Members of Division, nor to trouble their Minds with obscure Terms of Art.

In railing Doctrines from the Text, his Care ought to be, *First*, That the Matter be the Truth of God. *Secondly*, That it be a Truth contained in, or grounded on that Text, that the Hearers may discern how God teacheth it from thence. *Thirdly*, That he chiefly insist upon those Doctrines which are principally intended, and make most for the Edification of the Hearers.

The Doctrine is to be expressed in plain Terms; or, if any Thing in it need Explication, is to be opened, and the Consequence also from the Text cleared. The parallel Places of Scripture confirming the Doctrine are rather to be plain and pertinent, than many, and (if need be) somewhat insisted upon, and applied to the Purpose in hand.

The Arguments or Reasons are to be solid; and, as much as may be, convincing. The Illustrations, of what Kind soever, ought to be full of Light, and such as may convey the Truth into the Hearer's Heart with spiritual Delight.

If any Doubt, obvious from Scripture, Reason, or Prejudice of the Hearers, seem to arise, it is very requisite to remove it, by reconciling the seeming Differences, answering the Reasons, and discovering and taking away the Causes of Prejudice and Mistake. Otherwise, it is not fit to detain the Hearers with propounding or answering vain or wicked Cavils, which as they are endless, so the propounding and answering of them doth more hinder than promote Edification.

He is not to rest in general Doctrine, although never so much cleared and confirmed, but to bring it home to special Use, by Application to his Hearers; which albeit it prove a Work of great Difficulty to himself, requiring much Prudence, Zeal, and Meditation, and to the natural and corrupt Man will be very unpleasant; yet he is to endeavour to perform it in such a Manner, that his Auditors may feel the Word of God to be quick and powerful, and a Discerner of the Thoughts and Intents of the Heart; and that, if any Unbeliever or ignorant Person be present, he may have the Secrets of his Heart made manifest, and give Glory to God.

In the Use of Instruction or Information in the Knowledge of some Truth, which is a Consequence from his Doctrine, he may (when convenient) confirm it by a few firm Arguments from the Text in hand, and other Places of Scripture, or from the Nature of that Common-Place in Divinity, whereof that Truth is a Branch.

In Confutation of false Doctrines, he is neither to raise an old Heresy from the Grave, nor to mention a blasphemous Opinion unnecessarily: But if the People be in danger of an Error, he is to confute it soundly, and endeavour to satisfy their Judgments and Consciences against all Objections.

In exhorting to Duties, he is, as he seeth Cause, to teach also the Means that help to the Performance of them.

In Dehortation, Reprehension, and publick Admonition (which require special Wisdom) let him, as there shall be Cause, not only discover the Nature and Greatness of the Sin, with the Misery attending it, but also shew the Danger his Hearers are in to be overtaken and surprized by it, together with the Remedies and best Way to avoid it.

In applying Comfort, whether general against all Temptations, or particular against some special Troubles or Terrors, he is carefully to answer such Objections, as a troubled Heart and afflicted Spirit may suggest to the contrary.

It is also sometimes requisite to give some Notes of Trial (which is very profitable, especially when performed by able and experienced Ministers, with Circumspection and Prudence, and the Signs clearly grounded on the holy Scripture) whereby the Hearers may be able to examine themselves, whether they have attained those Graces, and performed those Duties to which he exhorteth, or be guilty of the Sin reprehended, and in danger of the Judgments threatened, or are such to whom the Consolations propounded do belong; that accordingly they may be quicken'd and excited to Duty, humbled for their Wants and Sins, affected with their Danger, and strengthened with Comfort, as their Condition upon Examination shall require.

And, as he needeth not always to prosecute every Doctrine which lies in his Text, so is he wisely to make Choice of such Uses, as, by his Residence and Conversing with his Flock, he findeth most needful and seasonable; and, amongst these, such as may most draw their Souls to Christ, the Fountain of Light, Holiness and Comfort.

This Method is not prescribed as necessary for every Man, or upon every Text; but only recommended, as being found by Experience to be very much blessed of God, and very helpful for the Peoples Understandings and Memories.

But the Servant of Christ, whatever his Method be, is to perform his whole Ministry,

1. Painfully, not doing the Work of the Lord negligently.
2. Plainly, that the meanest may understand, delivering the Truth, not in the enticing Words of Man's Wisdom, but in Demonstration of the Spirit and of Power, lest the Cross of Christ should be made of none Effect; abstaining also from an unprofitable Use of unknown Tongues, strange Phrases, and Cadences of Sounds and Words, sparingly citing Sentences of Ecclesiastical, or other human Writers, Ancient or Modern, be they never so elegant.
3. Faithfully, looking at the Honour of Christ, the Conversion, Edification and Salvation of the People, not at his own Gain or Glory, keeping nothing back which may promote those holy Ends, giving to every one his own Portion, and bearing indifferent Respect.

spect unto all, without neglecting the Meanest, or sparing the Greatest in their Sins.

4. Wisely, framing all his Doctrines, Exhortations, and especially his Reproofs, in such a Manner as may be most likely to prevail, shewing all due Respect to each Man's Person and Place, and not mixing his own Passion or Bitterness.

5. Gravely, as becometh the Word of God, shunning all such Gesture, Voice and Expressions, as may occasion the Corruptions of Men to despise him and his Ministry.

6. With loving Affection, that the People may see all coming from his godly Zeal, and hearty Desire to do them good. And,

7. As taught of God, and perswaded in his own Heart, that all that he teacheth is the Truth of Christ; and walking before his Flock, as an Example to them in it; earnestly, both in Private and Publick, recommending his Labours to the Blessing of God, and watchfully looking to himself and the Flock, whereof the Lord hath made him Overseer: So shall the Doctrine of Truth be preserved uncorrupt, many Souls converted and built up, and himself receive manifold Comforts of his Labours, even in this Life, and afterward the Crown of Glory laid up for him in the World to come.

Where there are more Ministers in a Congregation than one, and they of different Gifts, each may more especially apply himself to Doctrine or Exhortation, according to the Gift wherein he most excelleth, and as they shall agree between themselves.

Of Prayer after Sermon.

THE Sermon being ended, the Minister is, "To give Thanks
" for the great Love of God, in sending his Son Jesus Christ
" unto us; for the Communication of his Holy Spirit; for the
" Light and Liberty of the glorious Gospel, and the rich and heavenly Blessings revealed therein; as namely, Election, Vocation, Adoption, Justification, Sanctification, and Hope of Glory; for the admirable Goodness of God, in freeing the Land
" from Antichristian Darknes and Tyranny, and for all other
" National Deliverances; for the Reformation of Religion; for
" the Covenant; and for many temporal Blessings.

" To pray for the Continuance of the Gospel, and all Ordinances thereof, in their Purity, Power and Liberty: To turn the
" chief and most useful Heads of the Sermon into some few Petitions; and to pray that it may abide in the Heart, and bring
" forth Fruit.

" To pray for Preparation for Death and Judgment, and a
" Watching for the Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ: To entreat
" of God the Forgiveness of the Iniquities of our holy Things,
" and the Acceptation of our spiritual Sacrifice, through the Merit
" and Mediation of our great High Priest and Saviour the Lord
" Jesus Christ.

And

And because the Prayer which Christ taught his Disciples, is not only a Pattern of Prayer, but it self a most comprehensive Prayer, we recommend it also to be used in the Prayers of the Church.

And whereas, at the Administration of the Sacraments, the holding Publick Fasts, and Days of Thanksgiving, and other special Occasions, which may afford Matter of special Petitions and Thanksgivings, it is requisite to exprets somewhat in our publick Prayers (as at this Time, it is our Duty to pray for a Blessing upon the Assembly of Divines, the Armies by Sea and Land, for the Defence of the King, Parliament, and Kingdom;) Every Minister is herein to apply himself in his Prayer, before or after Sermon, to those Occasions; but for the Manner, he is left to his Liberty, as God shall direct and enable him, in Piety and Wisdom to discharge his Duty.

The Prayer ended, let a Psalm be sung, if with Conveniency it may be done. After which (unless some other Ordinance of Christ, that concerneth the Congregation at that Time, be to follow) let the Minister dismiss the Congregation with a solemn Blessing.



The Administration of the Sacraments.

And first, *Of Baptism.*

Baptism, as it is not unnecessarily to be delayed, so it is not to be administer'd in any Case by any private Person, but by a Minister of Christ, called to be the Steward of the Mysteries of God.

Nor is it to be administer'd in private Places, or Privately, but in the Place of publick Worship, and in the Face of the Congregation, where the People may most conveniently see and hear, and not in the Places where Fonts, in the Time of Popery, were unfitly and superstitiously placed.

The Child to be baptized, after Notice given to the Minister the Day before, is to be presented by the Father, or (in case of his necessary Absence) by some Christian Friend in his Place, professing his earnest Desire that the Child may be baptized.

Before Baptism, the Minister is to use some Words of Instruction, touching the Institution, Nature, Use, and Ends of this Sacrament: Shewing,

“ That it is instituted by our Lord Jesus Christ; that it is a
 “ Seal of the Covenant of Grace, of our Ingrafting into Christ,
 “ and of our Union with him, of Remission of Sins, Regenera-
 “ tion, Adoption, and Life eternal. That the Water in Baptism
 “ representeth and signifieth, both the Blood of Christ, which ta-
 “ keth away all Guilt of Sin, original and actual; and the sancti-
 “ fying

“ fying Vertue of the Spirit of Chrift againft the Dominion of
 “ Sin, and the Corruption of our finful Nature: That Baptizing,
 “ or Sprinkling and Washing with Water, fignifieth the Cleaning
 “ from Sin by the Blood, and for the Merit of Chrift, together
 “ with the Mortification of Sin, and Riling from Sin to Newnefs
 “ of Life, by vertue of the Death and Refurrection of Chrift:
 “ That the Promise is made to Believers and their Seed; and that
 “ the Seed and Poffterity of the Faithful, born within the Church,
 “ have, by their Birth, Interelt in the Covenant, and Right to
 “ the Seal of it, and to the outward Privileges of the Church, un-
 “ der the Gofpel, no lefs than the Children of *Abraham* in the
 “ Time of the Old Teftament; the Covenant of Grace, for Sub-
 “ ftance, being the fame; and the Grace of God, and the Confo-
 “ lation of Believers, more plentiful than before: That the Son of
 “ God admitted little Children into his Prefence, embracing and
 “ bleffing them, faying, *For of fuch is the Kingdom of God*: That
 “ Children, by Baptifm, are folemnly received into the Bosom of
 “ the vifible Church, diftinguifhed from the World, and them
 “ that are without, and united with Believers; and that all who
 “ are baptized in the Name of Chrift, do renounce, and, by their
 “ Baptifm, are bound to fight againft the Devil, the World, and
 “ the Flefh: That they are Chriftians, and federally holy before
 “ Baptifm, and therefore are they baptized: That the inward
 “ Grace and Vertue of Baptifm, is not tied to that very Moment
 “ of Time wherein it is adminifter’d, and that the Fruit and Power
 “ thereof reacheth to the whole Courfe of our Life; and that out-
 “ ward Baptifm is not fo neceffary, that through the Want there-
 “ of the Infant is in danger of Damnation, or the Parents guilty,
 “ if they do not condemn or neglect the Ordinance of Chrift, when
 “ and where it may be had.”

In thefe, or the like Inftuctions, the Minifter is to ufe his own
 Liberty and godly Wifdom, as the Ignorance or Errors in the Do-
 ctine of Baptifm, and the Edification of the People fhall require.

He is alfo to admonifh all that are prefent,

“ To look back to their Baptifm; to repent of their Sins againft
 “ their Covenant with God; to fir up their Faith; to improve
 “ and make the right Ufe of their Baptifm, and of the Covenant
 “ fealed thereby betwixt God and their Souls.”

He is to exhort the Parent,

“ To confider the great Mercy of God to him and his Child;
 “ to bring up the Child in the Knowledge of the Grounds of the
 “ Chriftian Religion, and in the Nuture and Admonition of the
 “ Lord; and to let him know the Danger of God’s Wrath to him-
 “ felf and Child, if he be negligent; requiring his folemn Promise
 “ for the Performance of his Duty.”

This being done, Prayer is also to be joined with the Word of Institution, for sanctifying the Water to this spiritual Use; and the Minister is to pray to this or the like Effect,

“ That the Lord, who hath not left us as Strangers without the
 “ Covenant of Promise, but called us to the Privileges of his Or-
 “ dinances, would graciously vouchsafe to sanctify and bless his
 “ own Ordinance of Baptism at this Time: That he would join
 “ the inward Baptism of his Spirit with the outward Baptism of
 “ Water; make this Baptism to the Infant a Seal of Adoption,
 “ Remission of Sin, Regeneration, and eternal Life, and all other
 “ Promises of the Covenant of Grace: That the Child may be
 “ planted into the Likeness of the Death and Resurrection of
 “ Christ; and that the Body of Sin being destroyed in him, he
 “ may serve God in Newness of Life all his Days.”

Then the Minister is to demand the Name of the Child, which being told him, he is to say (calling the Child by his Name.)

I baptize thee in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.

As he pronounceth these Words he is to baptize the Child with Water; which, for the Manner of doing it, is not only lawful but sufficient, and most expedient to be, by pouring or sprinkling of the Water on the Face of the Child, without adding any other Ceremony.

This done, he is to give Thanks, and pray to this or the like Purpose;

“ Acknowledging with all Thankfulness, that the Lord is True
 “ and Faithful in keeping Covenant and Mercy; that he is Good
 “ and Gracious, not only in that he numbeth us among his Saints,
 “ but is pleased also to bestow upon our Children this singular
 “ Token and Badge of his Love in Christ: That, in his Truth
 “ and special Providence, he daily bringeth some into the Bosom of
 “ his Church, to be Partakers of his inestimable Benefits, purcha-
 “ sed by the Blood of his dear Son, for the Continuance and In-
 “ crease of his Church.

“ And praying, That the Lord would still continue, and daily
 “ confirm more and more this his unspeakable Favour: That he
 “ would receive the Infant, now baptized, and solemnly enter’d
 “ into the Household of Faith, into his Fatherly Tuition and De-
 “ fence, and remember him with the Favour that he sheweth to his
 “ People: That, if he shall be taken out of this Life in his Infan-
 “ cy, the Lord, who is rich in Mercy, would be pleased to re-
 “ ceive him up into Glory; and if he live, and attain the Years of
 “ Discretion, that the Lord would so teach him by his Word and
 “ Spirit, and make his Baptism effectual to him, and so uphold
 “ him by his Divine Power and Grace, that by Faith he may pre-
 “ vail against the Devil, the World, and the Flesh, till in the
 “ End

“ End he obtain a full and final Victory, and to be kept by the
“ Power of God through Faith unto Salvation, through Jesus
“ Christ our Lord.”

*Of the Celebration of the Communion, or Sacrament of the Lord's
Supper.*

TH E Communion, or Supper of the Lord, is frequently to be celebrated: But how often, may be considered, and determined by the Ministers, and other Church-Governors of each Congregation, as they shall find most convenient for the Comfort and Edification of the People committed to their Charge. And when it shall be administer'd, we judge it convenient to be done after the Morning Sermon.

The Ignorant and the Scandalous are not fit to receive this Sacrament of the Lord's Supper.

Where this Sacrament cannot with Convenience be frequently administer'd, it is requisite that publick Warning be given the Sabbath Day before the Administration thereof: And that either then, or on some Day of that Week, something concerning that Ordinance, and the due Preparation thereunto, and Participation thereof, be taught; that, by the diligent Use of all Means sanctified of God to that End, both in Publick and Private, all may come better prepared to that heavenly Feast.

When the Day is come for Administration, the Minister, having ended his Sermon and Prayer, shall make a short Exhortation;

“ Expressing the inestimable Benefit we have by this Sacrament;
“ together with the Ends and Use thereof: Setting forth the great
“ Necessity of having our Comforts and Strength renewed thereby,
“ in this our Pilgrimage and Warfare: How Necessary it is, that
“ we come unto it with Knowledge, Faith, Repentance, Love,
“ and with hungry and thirsting Souls after Christ and his Benefits:
“ How great the Danger to eat and drink unworthily.

“ Next, he is, in the Name of Christ, on the one Part, to
“ warn all such as are Ignorant, Scandalous, Profane, or that
“ live in any Sin or Offence against their Knowledge or Conscience,
“ that they presume not to come to that holy Table; shewing
“ them, That he that Eateth and Drinketh Unworthily, Eateth
“ and Drinketh Judgment unto himself: And on the other
“ part, he is in especial Manner to invite and encourage all that
“ labour under the Sense of the Burden of their Sins, and Fear of
“ Wrath, and Desire to reach out unto a greater Progress in Grace
“ than yet they can attain unto, to come to the Lord's Table:
“ assuring them, in the same Name, of Ease, Refreshing, and
“ Strength, to their weak and wearied Souls.”

After this Exhortation, Warning, and Invitation, the Table being before decently covered, and so conveniently placed that the Communicants may orderly sit about it, or at it, the Minister is to begin the Action with sanctifying and blessing the Elements of

Bread and Wine set before him (the Bread in comely and convenient Vessels, so prepared, that being broken by him, and given, it may be distributed amongst the Communicants : The Wine also in large Cups ;) having first in a few Words shewed, That those Elements, otherwise common, are now set apart and sanctified to this holy Use, by the Word of Institution and Prayer.

Let the Words of Institution be read out of the Evangelists, or out of the first Epistle of the Apostle *Paul* to the *Corinthians*, Chap. xi. verse 23. *I have received of the Lord, &c.* to the 27th Verse, which the Minister may, when he seeth requisite, explain and apply.

Let the Prayer, Thanksgiving, or Blessing of the Bread and Wine, be to this Effect ;

“ **W** I T H humble and hearty Acknowledgment of the Greatness of our Misery, from which neither Man nor Angel was able to deliver us, and of our great Unworthiness of the least of all God’s Mercies ; to give Thanks to God for all his Benefits, and especially for that great Benefit of our Redemption, the Love of God the Father, the Sufferings and Merits of the Lord Jesus Christ the Son of God, by which we are delivered ; and for all Means of Grace, the Word and Sacraments ; and for this Sacrament in particular, by which Christ, and all his Benefits, are applied and sealed up unto us, which, notwithstanding the Denial of them unto others, are in great Mercy continued unto us, after so much and long abuse of them all.

“ To profess, that there is no other Name under Heaven by which we can be saved, but the Name of Jesus Christ, by whom alone we receive Liberty and Life, have Access to the Throne of Grace, are admitted to eat and drink at his own Table, and are sealed up by his Spirit to an Assurance of Happiness and everlasting Life.

“ Earnestly to pray to God, the Father of all Mercies, and God of all Consolation, to vouchsafe his gracious Presence, and the effectual Working of his Spirit in us, and so to sanctify these Elements, both of Bread and Wine, and to bless his own Ordinance, that we may receive, by Faith, the Body and Blood of Jesus Christ crucified for us, and so to feed upon him, that he may be one with us, and we with him ; that he may live in us, and we in him, and to him, who hath loved us, and given himself for us.”

All which he is to endeavour to perform with suitable Affections, answerable to such an holy Action, and to stir up the like in the People.

The Elements being now sanctified by the Word and Prayer, the Minister, being at the Table, is to take the Bread in his Hand, and

and say, in these Expressions (or other the like, used by Christ, or his Apostle upon this Occasion :)

“ According to the holy Institution, Command, and Example of our blessed Saviour Jesus Christ, I take this Bread, and having given Thanks, I break it, and give it unto you (There the Minister, who is also himself to communicate, is to break the Bread and give it to the Communicants :) *Take ye, eat ye ; This is the Body of Christ which is broken for you ; Do this in Remembrance of him.*”

In like Manner the Minister is to take the Cup, and say, in these Expressions (or other the like, used by Christ, or the Apostle, upon the same Occasion ;)

“ According to the Institution, Command, and Example of our Lord Jesus Christ, I take this Cup, and give it unto you (Here he giveth it to the Communicants) *This Cup is the New Testament in the Blood of Christ, which is shed for the Remission of the Sins of many ; Drink ye all of it.*”

After all have communicated, the Minister may, in a few Words, put them in mind,

“ Of the Grace of God, in Jesus Christ, held forth in this Sacrament ; and exhort them to walk worthy of it.”

The Minister is to give solemn Thanks to God,

“ For his rich Mercy, and invaluable Goodness vouchsafed to them in that Sacrament ; and to entreat for Pardon for the Defects of the whole Service, and for the gracious Assistance of his good Spirit, whereby they may be enabled to walk in the Strength of that Grace, as becometh those who have received so great Pledges of Salvation.”

The Collection for the Poor is so to be ordered, that no part of the Publick Worship be thereby hindered.

Of the Sanctification of the Lord's Day.

THE Lord's Day ought to be so remember'd before-hand, as that all worldly Business of our ordinary Callings may be so ordered, and so timely and seasonably laid aside, as they may not be Impediments to the due Sanctifying of the Day when it comes.

The whole Day is to be celebrated as Holy to the Lord, both in publick and private, as being the Christian Sabbath. To which end, it is requisite, that there be a holy Cessation, or Resting all the Day, from all unnecessary Labours ; and an Abstaining, not only from all Sports and Pastimes, but also from all worldly Words and Thoughts.

That the Diet on that Day be so ordered, as that neither Servants be unnecessarily detained from the Publick Worship of God, nor any other Persons hinder'd from the sanctifying that Day.

That there be private Preparation of every Person and Family, by Prayer for themselves, and for God's Assistance of the Minister,

and for a Blessing upon his Ministry ; and by such other holy Exercises, as may further dispose them to a more comfortable Communion with God in his Publick Ordinances.

That all the People meet so timely for Publick Worship, that the whole Congregation may be present at the Beginning, and with one Heart solemnly join together in all Parts of the Publick Worship, and not depart till after the Blessing.

That what Time is vacant, between, or after the solemn Meetings of the Congregation in Publick, be spent in Reading, Meditation, Repetition of Prayers ; (especially by calling their Families to an Account of what they have heard) and Catechizing of them, holy Conferences, Prayer for a Blessing upon the Publick Ordinances, Singing of Psalms, Visiting the Sick, Relieving the Poor, and such like Duties of Piety, Charity and Mercy, accounting the Sabbath a Delight.

The Solemnization of Marriage.

ALthough Marriage be no Sacrament, nor peculiar to the Church of God, but common to Mankind, and of Publick Interest in every Commonwealth ; yet, because such as marry are to marry in the Lord, and have special Need of Instruction, Direction, and Exhortation, from the Word of God, at their entering into such a new Condition ; and of the Blessing of God upon them therein ; we judge it expedient, that Marriage be solemnized by a lawful Minister of the Word, that he may accordingly counsel them, and pray for a Blessing upon them.

Marriage is to be betwixt one Man and one Woman only ; and they, such as are not within the Degrees of Consanguinity or Affinity prohibited by the Word of God ; and the Parties are to be of Years of Discretion, fit to make their own Choice, or, upon good Grounds, to give their mutual Consent.

Before the Solemnizing of Marriage between any Persons, their Purpose of Marriage shall be published by the Minister, three several Sabbath Days, in the Congregation at the Place or Places of their most usual and constant Abode respectively. And of this Publication, the Minister who is to join them in Marriage, shall have sufficient Testimony, before he proceed to solemnize the Marriage.

Before that Publication of such their Purpose (if the Parties be under Age) the Consent of the Parents, or others under whose Power they are (in case the Parents be dead) is to be made known to the Church Officers of that Congregation to be recorded.

The like is to be observed in the Proceedings of all others, although of Age, whose Parents are living, for their first Marriage. And in after Marriages of either of those Parties, they shall be exhorted not to contract Marriage without first acquainting their Parents with it (if with Conveniency it may be done) endeavouring to obtain their Consent.

Parents

Parents ought not to force their Children to marry without their free Consent, nor deny their own Consent without just Cause.

After the Purpose or Contract of Marriage hath been thus published, the Marriage is not to be long deferred. Therefore the Minister, having had convenient Warning, and nothing being objected to hinder it, is publickly to solemnise it in the Place appointed by Authority for Publick Worship, before a competent Number of credible Witnesses, at some convenient Hour of the Day, at any Time of the Year, except on a Day of publick Humiliation. And we advise that it be not on the Lord's Day.

And because all Relations are sanctified by the Word and Prayer, the Minister is to pray for a Blessing upon them, to this Effect;

“ Acknowledging our Sins, whereby we have made our selves
 “ less than the least of all the Mercies of God, and provoked him
 “ to imbitter all our Comforts; earnestly, in the Name of Christ,
 “ to entreat the Lord (whose Presence and Favour is the Happi-
 “ ness of every Condition, and sweetens every Relation) to be their
 “ Portion, and to own and accept them in Christ, who are now
 “ to be joined in the honourable Estate of Marriage, the Covenant
 “ of their God: And that, as he hath brought them together by
 “ his Providence, he would sanctify them by his Spirit, giving
 “ them a new Frame of Heart, fit for their new Estate; enrich-
 “ ing them with all Graces, whereby they may perform the
 “ Duties, enjoy the Comforts, undergo the Cares, and resist
 “ the Temptations which accompany that Condition, as becometh
 “ Christians.”

The Prayer being ended, it is convenient that the Minister do briefly declare unto them out of the Scripture,

“ The Institution, Use, and Ends of Marriage, with the Con-
 “ jugal Duties, which, in all Faithfulness, they are to perform
 “ each to other; exhorting them to study the holy Word of God,
 “ that they may learn to live by Faith, and to be content in the
 “ Midst of all Marriage-Cares and Troubles, sanctifying God's
 “ Name, in a thankful, sober, and holy Use of all conjugal
 “ Comforts; praying much with, and for one another; watch-
 “ ing over, and provoking each other to Love and good
 “ Works; and to live together as the Heirs of the Grace of
 “ Life.”

After solemn Charging of the Persons to be married before the great God, who searcheth all Hearts, and to whom they must give a strict Account at the last Day, that if either of them know any Cause, by Precontract, or otherwise, why they may not lawfully proceed to Marriage, that they now discover it: The Minister (if no Impediment be acknowledged) shall cause first the Man to take the Woman by the right Hand, saying these Words,

I N, do take thee N. to be my married Wife, and do, in the Presence of God, and before this Congregation, promise and covenant to be

a loving and faithful Husband unto thee, until God shall separate us by Death.

Then the Woman shall take the Man by his right Hand, and say these Words,

I N. do take thee N. to be my married Husband, and I do, in the Presence of God, and before this Congregation, promise and covenant to be a loving, faithful, and obedient Wife unto thee, until God shall separate us by Death.

Then, without any further Ceremony, the Minister shall, in the Face of the Congregation, pronounce them to be Husband and Wife, according to God's Ordinance; and so conclude the Action with Prayer, to this Effect;

“That the Lord would be pleased to accompany his own Ordinance with his Blessing, beseeching him to enrich the Persons now married, as with other Pledges of his Love, so particularly with the Comforts and Fruits of Marriage, to the Praise of his abundant Mercy, in and through Christ Jesus.”

A Register is to be carefully kept, wherein the Names of the Parties so married, with the Time of their Marriage, are forthwith to be fairly recorded in a Book, provided for that Purpose, for the Perusal of all whom it may concern.

Concerning Visitation of the Sick.

IT is the Duty of the Minister, not only to teach the People committed to his Charge, in Publick; but privately and particularly to admonish, exhort, reprove, and comfort them, upon all seasonable Occasions, so far as his Time, Strength, and personal Safety will permit.

He is to admonish them, in Time of Health, to prepare for Death; and, for that Purpose, they are often to confer with their Minister about the Estate of their Souls; and in Times of Sickness, to desire his Advice and Help, timely and seasonably, before their Strength and Understanding fail them.

Times of Sickness and Affliction are special Opportunities put into his Hand by God, to minister a Word in Season to weary Souls: Because then the Consciences of Men are, or should be more awakened to bethink themselves of their spiritual Estates for Eternity; and Satan also takes Advantage then, to load them more with sore and heavy Temptations: Therefore the Minister being sent for, and repairing to the Sick, is to apply himself with all Tenderness and Love, to administer some spiritual Good to his Soul, to this Effect.

He may, from the Consideration of the present Sickness, instruct him out of Scripture, that Diseases come not by Chance, or by Impers of Body only, but by the wise and orderly Guidance

of the good Hand of God, to every particular Person smitten by them. And that, whether it be laid upon him out of Displeasure for Sin, for his Correction and Amendment, or for Trial and Exercise of his Graces, or for other special and excellent Ends, all his Sufferings shall turn to his Profit, and work together for his Good, if he sincerely labour to make a sanctified Use of God's Visitation, neither despising his Chastning, nor waxing weary of his Correction.

If he suspect him of Ignorance, he shall examine him in the Principles of Religion, especially touching Repentance and Faith; and, as he seeth Cause, instruct him in the Nature, Use, Excellency, and Necessity of those Graces; as also touching the Covenant of Grace, and Christ the Son of God, the Mediator of it, and concerning Remission of Sins by Faith in him.

He shall exhort the sick Person to examine himself, to search and try his former Ways, and his Estate towards God.

And if the sick Person shall declare any Scruple, Doubt or Temptation that are upon him, Instructions and Resolutions shall be given to satisfy and settle him.

If it appear that he hath not a due Sense of his Sins, Endeavours ought to be used to convince him of his Sins, of the Guilt and Desert of them; of the Filth and Pollution which the Soul contracts by them; and of the Curse of the Law, and Wrath of God, due to them; that he may be truly affected with, and humbled for them: And withal to make known the Danger of deferring Repentance, and of neglecting Salvation at any Time offer'd; to awaken his Conscience, and rouse him up out of a stupid and secure Condition, to apprehend the Justice and Wrath of God, before whom none can stand, but he that, being lost in himself, layeth hold upon Christ by Faith.

If he have endeavoured to walk in the Ways of Holiness, and to serve God in Uprightness, although not without many Failings and Infirmities; or if his Spirit be broken with the Sense of Sin, or cast down through Want of the Sense of God's Favour, then it will be fit to raise him up, by setting before him the Freeness and Fullness of God's Grace, the Sufficiency of Righteousness in Christ, the gracious Offers in the Gospel, that all who repent and believe with all their Heart in God's Mercy through Christ, renouncing their own Righteousness, shall have Life and Salvation in him: It may be also useful to shew him, that Death hath in it no spiritual Evil to be feared by those that are in Christ, because Sin, the Sting of Death, is taken away by Christ, who hath delivered all that are his, from the Bondage of the Fear of Death, triumphed over the Grave, given us Victory, is himself enter'd into Glory, to prepare a Place for his People: So that neither Life nor Death shall be able to separate them from God's Love in Christ, in whom such are sure, though now they must be laid in the Dust, to obtain a joyful and glorious Resurrection to eternal Life.

Advice

Advice also may be given, as to beware of an ill-grounded Perswasion on Mercy, or on the Goodness of his Condition for Heaven, so to disclaim all Merit in himself, and to cast himself wholly upon God for Mercy, in the sole Merits and Mediation of Jesus Christ, who hath engaged himself never to cast off them who in Truth and Sincerity come unto him. Care also must be taken, that the sick Person be not cast down into Despair, by such a severe Representation of the Wrath of God due to him for his Sins, as is not mollified by a seasonable propounding of Christ and his Merit, for a Door of Hope to every penitent Believer.

When the sick Person is best composed, may be least disturbed, and other necessary Offices about him least hinder'd, the Minister, if desired, shall pray with him, and for him, to this Effect;

“ Confessing and bewailing of ~~the~~ original and actual, the miserable Condition of all by Nature, ~~as~~ being Children of Wrath, and under the Curse; acknowledging that all Diseases, Sicknesses, Death, and Hell it self, are the proper Issues and Effects thereof; imploring God's Mercy for the sick Person through the Blood of Christ; beseeching that God would open his Eyes, discover unto him his Sins, cause him to see himself lost in himself, make known to him the Cause why God smiteth him, reveal Jesus Christ to his Soul for Righteousness and Life, give unto him his Holy Spirit to create and strengthen Faith, to lay hold upon Christ, to work in him comfortable Evidences of his Love, to arm him against Temptations, to take off his Heart from the World, to sanctify his present Visitation, to furnish him with Patience and Strength to bear it, and to give him Perseverance in Faith to the End.

“ That if God shall please to add to his Days, he would vouchsafe to bless and sanctify all Means of his Recovery, to remove the Disease, renew his Strength, and enable him to walk worthy of God, by a faithful Remembrance, and diligent Observing of such Vows and Promises of Holiness and Obedience, as Men are apt to make in Times of Sickness, that he may glorify God in the remaining Part of his Life.

“ And if God have determined to finish his Days by the present Visitation, he may find such Evidence of the Pardon of all his Sins, of his Interest in Christ, and eternal Life by Christ, as may cause his inward Man to be renewed, while his outward Man decayeth; that he may behold Death without Fear, cast himself wholly upon Christ without Doubting, desire to be dissolved and to be with Christ, and so receive the End of his Faith, the Salvation of his Soul, through the only Merits and Intercession of the Lord Jesus Christ, our alone Saviour, and All-sufficient Redeemer.”

The Minister shall admonish him also (as there shall be Cause) to set his House in Order, thereby to prevent Inconveniencies; to take
Care

Care for the Payment of his Debts, and to make Restitution or Satisfaction where he hath done any Wrong; to be reconciled to those with whom he hath been at Variance, and fully to forgive all Men their Trespases against him, as he expects Forgiveness at the Hand of God.

Lastly, The Minister may improve the present Occasion to exhort these about the sick Person, to consider their own Mortality, to return to the Lord, and make Peace with him; in Health to prepare for Sickness, Death, and Judgment; and all the Days of their appointed Time so to wait until their Change come, that when Christ, who is our Life, shall appear, they may appear with him in Glory.

Concerning Burial of the Dead.

WHEN any Person departeth this Life let the dead Body, upon the Day of Burial, be decently attended from the House to the Place appointed for Publick Burial, and there immediately interred, without any Ceremony.

And because the Customs of Kneeling down, and Praying by, or towards the dead Corps, and other such Usages, in the Place where it lies, before it be carried to Burial, are superstitious; and for that, Praying, Reading, and Singing, both in going to, and at the Grave, have been grossly abused, are no way beneficial to the Dead, and have proved many Ways hurtful to the Living, therefore let all such Things be laid aside.

Howbeit, we judge it very convenient, that the Christian Friends which accompany the dead Body to the Place appointed for Publick Burial, do apply themselves to Meditations, and Conferences suitable to the Occasion: And that the Minister, as upon other Occasions, so at this Time, if he be present, may put them in Remembrance of their Duty.

That this shall not extend to deny any civil Respects or Deferences at the Burial, suitable to the Rank and Condition of the Party deceased, while he was living.

Concerning Publick solemn Fasting.

WHEN some great and notable Judgments are either inflicted upon a People, or apparently imminent, or by some extraordinary Provocations notoriously deserved; as also, when some special Blessing is to be sought and obtained, Publick solemn Fasting (which is to continue the whole Day) is a Duty that God expecteth from that Nation or People.

A Religious Fast requires total Abstinence, not only from all Food (unless bodily Weakness do manifestly disable from holding out till the Fast be ended, in which Case, somewhat may be taken, yet very sparingly, to support Nature, when ready to faint) but also from all worldly Labour, Discourses and Thoughts, and from all bodily Delights (although at other Times lawful) rich Apparel,
Orna-

Ornaments, and such like, during the Fast; and much more from whatever is in the Nature, or Use, scandalous and offensive, as gaudish Attire, lascivious Habits, and Gestures, and other Vanities of either Sex; which we recommend to all Ministers, in their Places, diligently and zealously to reprove, as at other Times, so especially at a Fast, without respect of Persons, as there shall be Occasion.

Before the Publick Meeting, each Family and Person apart, are privately to use all religious Care to prepare their Hearts to such a solemn Work, and to be early at the Congregation.

So large a Portion of the Day, as conveniently may be, is to be spent in Publick Reading and Preaching of the Word, with Singing of Psalms fit to quicken Affections suitable to such a Duty, but especially in Prayer, to this or the like Effect:

“ Giving Glory to the great Majesty of God, the Creator, Preserver, and supreme Ruler of all the World, the better to affect us thereby with an holy Reverence and Awe of him; acknowledging his manifold, great, and tender Mercies, especially to the Church and Nation, the more effectually to soften and abase our Hearts before him; humbly confessing of Sins of all Sorts, with their several Aggravations; justifying God’s righteous Judgments, as being far less than our Sins do deserve; yet humbly and earnestly imploring his Mercy and Grace for our selves, the Church and Nation, for our King, and all in Authority, and for all others for whom we are bound to pray (according as the present Exigent requireth) with more special Importunity and Enlargement than at other Times; applying, by Faith, the Promises and Goodness of God, for Pardon, Help, and Deliverance from the Evils felt, feared, or deserved; and for obtaining the Blessings which we need and expect; together with a giving up of our selves wholly and for ever unto the Lord.”

In all these, the Ministers, who are the Mouths of the People unto God, ought so to speak from their Hearts, upon serious and thorough Premeditation of them, that both themselves and their People may be much affected, and even melted thereby; especially with Sorrow for their Sins, that it may be indeed a Day of deep Humiliation and Afflicting of the Soul.

Special Choice is to be made of such Scriptures to be read, and of such Texts for Preaching, as may best work the Hearts of the Hearers to the special Business of the Day, and most dispose them to Humiliation and Repentance; insisting most on those Particulars which each Minister’s Observation and Experience tells him are most conducing to the Edification and Reformation of that Congregation to which he preacheth.

Before the Close of the Publick Duties, the Minister is, in his own and the Peoples Names, to ingage his and their Hearts to be the Lord’s, with professed Purpose and Resolution to reform whatever is amiss among them, and more particularly such Sins as they have

have been more remarkably guilty of; and, to draw nearer unto God, and to walk more closely and faithfully with him in new Obedience, than ever before.

He is also to admonish the People with all Importunity, that the Work of that Day doth not end with the Publick Duties of it, but that they are so to improve the Remainder of the Day, and of their whole Life, in reinforcing upon themselves and their Families in private, all those godly Affections and Resolutions which they professed in Publick, as that they may be settled in their Hearts for ever, and themselves may more sensibly find that God hath smelt a sweet Savour in Christ from their Performances, and is pacified towards them, by Answers of Grace, in pardoning of Sin, in removing of Judgments, in averting or preventing of Plagues, and in conferring of Blessings, suitable to the Conditions and Prayers of his People, by Jesus Christ.

Beside solemn and general Fasts enjoined by Authority, we judge, that at other Times Congregations may keep Days of Fasting, as Divine Providence shall administer unto them special Occasions. And also, that Families may do the same, so it be not on Days wherein the Congregation to which they do belong is to meet for Fasting, or other Publick Duties of Worship.

Concerning the Observation of Days of Publick Thanksgiving.

WHEN any such Day is to be kept let Notice be given of it, and of the Occasion thereof, some convenient Time before, that the People may the better prepare themselves thereunto.

The Day being come, and the Congregation (after Private Preparations) being assembled, the Minister is to begin with a Word of Exhortation, to stir up the People to the Duty for which they are met, and with a short Prayer for God's Assistance and Blessing (as at other Conventions for Publick Worship) according to the particular Occasion of their Meeting.

Let him then make some pithy Narration of the Deliverance obtained, or Mercy received, or of whatever hath occasioned that Assembling of the Congregation, that all may better understand it, or be minded of it, and more affected with it.

And because Singing of Psalms is of all other the most proper Ordinance for expressing of Joy and Thanksgiving, let some pertinent Psalm or Psalms be sung for that Purpose, before or after the Reading of some Portion of the Word, suitable to the present Business.

Then let the Minister, who is to preach, proceed to further Exhortation and Prayer before his Sermon, with special Reference to the present Work: After which, let him preach upon some Text of Scripture pertinent to the Occasion.

The Sermon ended, let him not only pray, as at other Times after Preaching is directed, with remembrance of the Necessities of the Church, King, and State (if before the Sermon they were omitted)

but

but enlarge himself in due and solemn Thanksgiving for former Mercies and Deliverances, but more especially for that which at the present calls them together to give Thanks: With humble Petition for the Continuance and Renewing of God's wonted Mercies, as need shall be, and for sanctifying Grace to make a right Use thereof. And so, having sung another Psalm suitable to the Mercy, let him dismiss the Congregation with a Blessing, that they may have some convenient Time for their Repast and Refreshing.

But the Minister (before their Dismission) is solemnly to admonish them, to beware of all Excess and Riot, tending to Gluttony or Drunkenness, and much more of these Sins themselves, in their Eating and Refreshing; and to take Care that their Mirth and Rejoicing be not Carnal, but Spiritual, which may make God's Praise to be glorious, and themselves humble and sober; and that both their Feeding and Rejoicing may render them more cheerful and enlarged, further to celebrate his Praises in the Midst of the Congregation, when they return unto it, in the remaining Part of that Day.

When the Congregation shall be again assembled, the like Course in Praying, Reading, Preaching, Singing of Psalms, and Offering up of more Praise and Thanksgiving, that is before directed for the Morning, is to be renewed and continued so far as the Time will give leave.

At one, or both of the Publick Meetings that Day, a Collection is to be made for the Poor (and in the like Manner upon the Day of Publick Humiliation) that their Loins may bless us, and rejoice the more with us. And the People are to be exhorted, at the End of the latter Meeting, to spend the Residue of that Day in holy Duties, and Testifications of Christian Love and Charity one towards another, and of Rejoicing more and more in the Lord; as becometh those who make the Joy of the Lord their Strength.

Of Singing of Psalms.

IT is the Duty of Christians to praise God publicly, by singing of Psalms together in the Congregation, and also privately in the Family.

In Singing of Psalms, the Voice is to be tunably and gravely ordered; but the chief Care must be, to sing with Understanding, and with Grace in the Heart, making Melody unto the Lord.

That the whole Congregation may join herein, every one that can read is to have a Psalm-Book; and all others, not disabled by Age, or otherwise, are to be exhorted to learn to read. But for the present, where many in the Congregation cannot read, it is convenient that the Minister, or some other fit Person appointed by him, and the other Ruling Officers, do read the Psalm Line by Line, before the Singing thereof.

An APPENDIX, touching Days and Places for Publick Worship.

THERE is no Day commanded in Scripture to be kept holy under the Gospel, but the Lord's Day, which is the Christian Sabbath.

Festival Days, vulgarly called Holy Days, having no Warrant in the Word of God, are not to be continued.

Nevertheless, it is lawful and necessary, upon special emergent Occasions, to separate a Day or Days for publick Fasting or Thanksgiving, as the several eminent and extraordinary Dispensations of God's Providence shall administer Cause and Opportunity to his People.

As no Place is capable of any Holiness, under Pretence of whatsoever Dedication or Consecration; so neither is it subject to such Pollution by any Superstition formerly used, and now laid aside, as may render it unlawful or inconvenient for Christians to meet together therein for the Publick Worship of God. And therefore we hold it requisite, that the Places of Publick Assembling for Worship among us, should be continued, and imployed to that Use.



The CONTENTS of the *Directory* for the Publick Worship of God.

THE Preface.

Of the Assembling of the Congregation.

Of Publick Reading of the holy Scripture.

Of Publick Prayer before the Sermon.

Of Preaching of the Word.

Of Prayer after Sermon.

Of the Sacrament of Baptism.

Of the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper.

Of the Sanctification of the Lord's Day.

Of the Solemnization of Marriage.

Of the Visitation of the Sick.

Of Burial of the Dead.

Of Publick solemn Fasting.

Of the Observation of Days of Publick Thanksgiving.

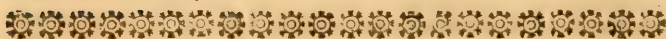
Of Singing of Psalms.

An APPENDIX, touching Days and Places of Publick Worship.



APPENDIX.

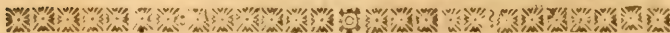
NUMB. III.



THE

FORM of Presbyterian Church Government,

Agreed upon by the Assembly of Divines at *Westminster*; examined and approved, *Anno* 1645. by the GENERAL ASSEMBLY of the CHURCH of SCOTLAND, &c.

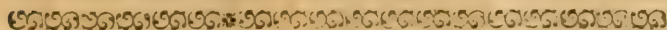


The PREFACE.

JESUS CHRIST, upon whose Shoulders the Government is, whose Name is called Wonderful, Counsellor, the Mighty God, the Everlasting Father, the Prince of Peace^a, of the Increase of whose Government and Peace there shall be no End, who sits upon the Throne of David, and upon his Kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with Judgment and Justice, from henceforth even for ever, having all Power given unto him in Heaven and in Earth by the Father, who raised him from the Dead, and set him at his own right Hand, far above all Principalities and Power, and Might and Dominion, and every Name that is named, not only in this World, but also in that which is to come, and put all Things under his Feet, and gave him to be the Head over all Things to the Church, which is his Body, the Fulness of Him that filleth all in all; he being ascended up far above all Heavens, that

^a Isa. 9. 6, 7.

he might fill all Things, received Gifts for his Church, and gave Offices necessary for the Edification of his Church, and Perfecting of his Saints.



Of the Church.

THERE is one general Church visible held forth in the New Testament, 1 Cor. xii. 12, 13, 28. together with the rest of the Chapter.

The Ministry, Oracles, and Ordinances of the New Testament, are given by Jesus Christ to the general Church visible, for the Gathering and Perfecting of it in this Life, until his second Coming, 1 Cor. xii. 28. Eph. iv. 4, 5. compared with Ver. 10, 11, 12, 13, 15, 16. of the same Chapter.

Particular visible Churches, Members of the general Church, are also held forth in the New Testament, Gal. i. 21, 22. Rev. i. 4, 20. and Rev. ii. 1. Particular Churches, in the primitive Times, were made up of visible Saints, viz. or such as, being of Age, professed Faith in Christ, and Obedience unto Christ, according to the Rules of Faith and Life, taught by Christ and his Apostles; and of their Children, Acts ii. 38, 41. Acts ii. verse last, compared with Acts v. 14. 1 Cor. i. 2. compared with 2 Cor. ix. 13. Acts ii. 39. 1 Cor. vii. 14. Rom. ix. 16. and so forward; Mark x. 14. compared with Mat. xix. 13, 14. Luke xviii. 15, 16.

Of the Officers of the Church.

THE Officers which Christ hath appointed for the Edification of his Church, and the Perfecting of the Saints, are,

Some extraordinary, as Apostles, Evangelists, and Prophets, which are ceased:

Others ordinary and perpetual, as Pastors, Teachers, and other Church Governors; and Deacons:

Pastors.

THE Pastor is an ordinary and perpetual Officer in the Church, Jer. iii. 15, 16, 17; prophesying of the Time of the Gospel. 1 Pet. v. 2, 3, 4. Eph. iv. 11, 12, 13.

First, It belongs to his Office,

To pray for and with his Flock, as the Mouth of the People unto God, Acts vi. 2, 3, 4. Acts xx. 36; where Preaching and Prayer are joined as several Parts of the same Office. James v. 14, 15. The Office of the Elder, that is the Pastor, is to pray for the Sick, even in private, to which a Blessing is especially promised; much more therefore ought he to perform this in the pub-

^b Mat. xxviii. 18, 19, 20. Eph. i. 20, 21, 22. compared with Eph. iv. 8, 11. and Psal. lxxviii. 18.

lick Execution of his Office, as a Part thereof, *1 Cor. xiv. ver. 15, 16.*

To read the Scripture publickly ; for the Proof of which,

1. That the Priests and Levites in the *Jewish* Church were trusted with the publick Reading of the Word, as is proved, *Deut. xxxi. 9, 10, 11. Neb. viii. 1, 2, and 13.*

2. That the Ministers of the Gospel have as ample a Charge and Commission to dispense the Word, as well as other Ordinances, as the Priests and Levites had under the Law, proved, *Isa. lxvi. 21. Mat. xxiii. 34.* where our Saviour intituleth the Officers of the New Testament, whom he will send forth, by the same Names of the Teachers of the Old.

Which Propositions prove, that therefore (the Duty being of a moral Nature) it followeth by just Consequence, that the publick Reading of the Scriptures belongeth to the Pastor's Office.

To feed the Flock, by Preaching of the Word, according to which he is to teach, convince, reprove, exhort, and comfort, *1 Tim. iii. 2. 2 Tim. iii. ver. 16, 17. Tit. i. 9.*

To Catechise, which is a plain laying down the first Principles of the Oracles of God, *Heb. v. 12.* or of the Doctrine of Christ, and is a Part of Preaching.

To dispense other Divine Mysteries, *1 Cor. iv. 1, 2.*

To administer the Sacraments, *Matth. xxviii. 19, 20. Mark xvi. 15, 16. 1 Cor. xi. 23, 24, 25.* compared with *1 Cor. x. 16.*

To bless the People from God, *Numb. vi. 23, 24, 25, 26.* compared with *Rev. xiv. 5.* (where the same Blessings, and Persons from whom they come, are expressly mentioned) *Isa. lxvi. 21.* where, under the Names of Priests and Levites, to be continued under the Gospel, are meant Evangelical Pastors, who therefore are by Office to bless the People, *Deut. x. 8. 2 Cor. xiii. 14. Eph. i. 2.*

To take Care of the Poor, *Acts xi. 30. Acts iv. 34, 35, 36, 37. Acts vi. 2, 3, 4. 1 Cor. xvi. 1, 2; 3, 4. Gal. ii. 9, 10.*

And he hath also a Ruling Power over the Flock as a Pastor, *1 Tim. v. 17. Acts xx. 17, and 28. 1 Theff. v. 12. Heb. xiii. 7, 17.*

Teacher or Doctor.

THE Scripture doth hold out the Name and Title of Teacher, as well as of the Pastor, *1 Cor. xii. 28. Eph. iv. 11.*

Who is also a Minister of the Word as well as the Pastor, and hath Power of Administration of the Sacraments.

The Lord having given different Gifts, and divers Exercises according to these Gifts, in the Ministry of the Word, *Rom. xii. 6, 7, 8. 1 Cor. xii. 1, 4, 5, 6, 7.* though these different Gifts may meet in, and accordingly be exercised by one and the same Minister, *1 Cor. xiv. 3. 2 Tim. iv. 2. Tit. i. 9.* yet, where be several Ministers in the same Congregation, they may be designed to several Employments, according to the different Gifts in which each of them doth

most

most excel, *Rom. xii. 6, 7, 8. 1 Pet. iv. 10, 11.* And he that doth more excel in Exposition of Scriptures, in teaching sound Doctrine, and in convincing Gainfayers, than he doth in Application, and is accordingly imployed therein, may be called a Teacher, or Doctor (the Places alledged by the Notation of the Word do prove the Proposition) Nevertheless, where is but one Minister in a particular Congregation, he is to perform so far as he is able the whole Work of the Ministry, as appeareth in *2 Tim. iv. 2. Tit. i. 9.* before alledged; *1 Tim. vi. 2.*

A Teacher or Doctor is of most excellent Use in Schools and Universities; as of old in the Schools of the Prophets, and at *Jerusalem*, where *Gamaliel* and others taught as Doctors.

Other Church Governors.

AS there were in the *Jewish Church* Elders of the People joined with the Priests and Levites in the Government of the Church (as appeareth in *2 Chron. xix. 8, 9, 10.*) So Christ, who hath instituted a Government, and Governors Ecclesiastical in the Church, hath furnished some in his Church, beside the Ministers of the Word, with Gifts for Government, and with Commission to execute the same when called thereunto, who are to join with the Minister in the Government of the Church, *Rom. xii. 7, 8. 1 Cor. xii. 28.* Which Officers Reformed Churches commonly call Elders.

Deacons.

THE Scripture doth hold out Deacons as distinct Officers in the Church, *Phil. i. 1. 1 Tim. iii. 8.*

Whose Office is perpetual, *1 Tim. iii. 8. to ver. 15. Acts vi. 1, 2, 3, 4.* To whose Office it belongs not to Preach the Word, or Administer the Sacraments, but to take special Care in distributing to the Necessities of the Poor, *Acts vi. 1, 2, 3, 4.* and the Verses following.

Of particular Congregations.

IT is lawful and expedient that there be fixed Congregations, that is, a certain Company of Christians to meet in one Assembly ordinarily for Publick Worship. When Believers multiply to such a Number, that they cannot conveniently meet in one Place, it is lawful and expedient that they shou'd be divided into distinct and fixed Congregations, for the better Administration of such Ordinances as belong unto them, and the Discharge of mutual Duties, *1 Cor. xiv. ver. 26. Let all Things be done unto Edifying; and Verses 33, and 40.*

The ordinary Way of dividing Christians into distinct Congregations, and most expedient for Edification, is by the respective Bounds of their Dwellings.

First, Because they who dwell together, being bound to all kind of moral Duties one to another, have the better Opportunity thereby to discharge them; which moral Tye is perpetual, for Christ came not to destroy the Law, but to fulfil it, *Deut. xv. 7, 11. Mat. xxii. 39. Mat. v. 17.*

Secondly, The Communion of Saints must be so ordered, as may stand with the most convenient Use of the Ordinances, and Discharge of moral Duties, without respect of Persons, *1 Cor. xiv. 26. Let all Things be done unto Edifying. Heb. x. 24, 25. James ii. 1, 2.*

Thirdly, The Pastor and People must so nearly cohabit together, as that they may mutually perform their Duties each to other with most Conveniency.

In this Company some must be set apart to bear Office.

Of the Officers of a particular Congregation.

FOR Officers in a single Congregation, there ought to be one at the least, both to labour in the Word and Doctrine, and to Rule, *Prov. xxix. 18. 1 Tim. v. 17. Heb. xiii. 7.*

It is also requisite that there should be others to join in Government, *1 Cor. xii. 28.*

And likewise it is requisite that there be others to take special Care for the Relief of the Poor, *Acts vi. 2, 3.*

The Number of each of which is to be proportioned according to the Condition of the Congregation.

These Officers are to meet together at convenient and set Times, for the well ordering of the Affairs of that Congregation, each according to his Office.

It is most expedient that in these Meetings, one whose Office is to labour in the Word and Doctrine, do moderate in their Proceedings, *1 Tim. v. 17.*

Of the Ordinances in a particular Congregation.

THE Ordinances in a single Congregation, are Prayer, Thanksgiving, and Singing of Psalms, *1 Tim. ii. 1. 1 Cor. xiv. 15, 16.* The Word read (although there follow no immediate Explication of what is read) the Word expounded and applied, Catechising, the Sacraments administer'd, Collection made for the Poor, dismissing the People with a Blessing.

Of Church Government, and the several Sorts of Assemblies for the same.

CHRIST hath instituted a Government, and Governors Ecclesiastical in the Church: To that Purpose, the Apostles did immediately receive the Keys from the Hand of Jesus Christ, and did use and exercise them in all the Churches of the World upon all Occasions.

And Christ hath since continually furnished some in his Church with Gifts of Government, and with Commission to execute the same, when called thereunto.

It is lawful and agreeable to the Word of God, that the Church be governed by several Sorts of Assemblies, which are Congregational, Classial, and Synodical.

Of the Power in common of all these Assemblies.

IT is lawful and agreeable to the Word of God, that the several Assemblies before mentioned have Power to convene, and call before them any Person within their several Bounds, whom the Ecclesiastical Business which is before them doth concern; proved by *Matth. Chap. xviii.*

They have Power to Hear and Determine such Causes and Differences, as do orderly come before them.

It is lawful and agreeable to the Word of God, that all the said Assemblies have some Power to dispense Church Censures.

Of Congregational Assemblies, that is, the Meeting of the Ruling Officers of a particular Congregation for the Government thereof.

THE Ruling Officers of a particular Congregation have Power, authoritatively, to call before them any Member of the Congregation, as they shall see just Occasion.

To enquire into the Knowledge and Spiritual Estate of the several Members of the Congregation.

To Admonish and Rebuke.

Which three Branches are proved by *Heb. xiii. 17. 1 Theff. v. 12, 13. Ezek. xxxiv. 4.*

Authoritative Suspension from the Lord's Table of a Person not yet cast out of the Church, is agreeable to the Scripture.

First, Because the Ordinance it self must not be profaned.

Secondly, Because we are charged to withdraw from those that walk disorderly.

Thirdly, Because of the great Sin and Danger, both to him that comes unworthily, and also to the whole Church, *Matth. vii. 6. 2 Theff. iii. 6, 14, 15. 1 Cor. xi. 27.* to the End of the Chapter, compared with *Jude, ver. 23. 1 Tim. v. 22.* And there was Power and Authority, under the Old Testament, to keep unclean Persons from holy Things, *Levit. xiii. 5. Numb. ix. 7. 2 Chron. xxiii. 19.*

The like Power and Authority, by way of Analogy, continues under the New Testament.

The Ruling Officers of a particular Congregation, have Power authoritatively to Suspend from the Lord's Table a Person not yet cast out of the Church.

First, Because those who have Authority to judge of, and admit such as are fit to receive the Sacrament, have Authority to keep back such as shall be found unworthy.

Secondly, Because it is an Ecclesiastical Business of ordinary Practice belonging to that Congregation.

When Congregations are divided and fixed they need all mutual Help one from another, both in regard of their intrinſical Weakneſſes and mutual Dependance; as alſo, in regard of Enemies from without.

Of Claſſical Aſſemblies.

THE Scripture doth hold out a Presbytery in a Church, both in the firſt Epistle to *Timothy*, Chap. iv. verſe 14. And in *Acts* xv. verſes 2, 4, 6.

A Presbytery conſiſteth of Miniſters of the Word, and ſuch other publick Officers as are agreeable to, and warranted by the Word of God, to be Church Governors, to join with the Miniſters in the Government of the Church; as appeareth, *Rom.* xii. 7, 8. *1 Cor.* xii. 28.

The Scripture doth hold forth, that many particular Congregations may be under one Presbyterial Government.

This Proposition is proved by Inſtances.

I. *Fiſt*, Of the Church of *Jerusalem*, which conſiſted of more Congregations than one, and all theſe Congregations were under one Presbyterial Government.

This appeareth thus:

1. *Fiſt*, The Church of *Jerusalem* conſiſted of more Congregations than one, as is manifeſt,

Fiſt, By the Multitude of Believers mentioned in divers Places. Both before the Diſperſion of the Believers there, by means of the Perſecution (mentioned in the *Acts* of the Apoſtles, Chap. viii. in the Beginning thereof) witneſs, Chap. i. verſe 11. Chap. ii. verſe 41, 46, and 47. Chap. iv. 4. Chap. v. 14. Chap. vi. of the ſame Book of the *Acts*, Verſes 1, 7. And alſo after the Diſperſion, *Acts* ix. 31. Chap. xii. 24. Chap. xxi. ver. 20. of the ſame Book.

Secondly, By the many Apoſtles and other Preachers in the Church of *Jerusalem*: And if there were but one Congregation there, then each Apoſtle preached but ſeldom; which will not conſiſt with Chap. vi. verſe 2. of the ſame Book of the *Acts* of the Apoſtles.

Thirdly, The Diversity of Languages amongſt the Believers, mentioned both in the Second and Sixth Chapters of the *Acts*, doth argue more Congregations than one in that Church.

2. *Secondly*, All theſe Congregations were under one Presbyterial Government; becauſe, *Fiſt*, They were one Church, *Acts* viii. 1. and Chap. ii. 47. compared with Chap. v. 11. Chap. xii. 5. and Chap. xv. 4. of the ſame Book.

Secondly, The Elders of the Church are mentioned, *Acts* xi. 30. Chap. xv. 4, 6, 22. and Chap. xxi. 17, 18. of the ſame Book.

Thirdly,

Thirdly, The Apostles did the ordinary Acts of Presbyters, as Presbyters in that Kirk; which proveth a Presbyterian Church before the Dispersion, *Acts* vi.

Fourthly, The several Congregations in *Jerusalem* being one Church, the Elders of that Church are mentioned as meeting together for Acts of Government, *Acts* xi. 30. *Acts* xv. 4, 6, 22. and *Chap.* xxi. 17, 18. and so forward: Which proves that those several Congregations were under one Presbyterian Government.

And whether these Congregations were fixed, or not fixed, in regard of Officers or Members, it is all one as to the Truth of the Proposition.

Nor doth there appear any material Difference betwixt the several Congregations in *Jerusalem*, and the many Congregations now in the ordinary Condition of the Church, as to the Point of Fixedness required of Officers or Members.

3. *Thirdly*, Therefore the Scripture doth hold forth, that many Congregations may be under one Presbyterian Government.

II. *Secondly*, By the Instance of the Church of *Ephesus*; for,

1. That they were more Congregations than one in the Church of *Ephesus*, appears by *Acts* xx. 31. where is mention of *Paul's* Continuance at *Ephesus* in Preaching for the Space of three Years; and *Acts* xix. 18, 19, 20. where the special Effect of the Word is mentioned; and *Verses* 10. and 17. of the same Chapter, where is a Distinction of *Jews* and *Greeks*; and *1 Cor.* xvi. 8, and 9. where is a Reason of *Paul's* Stay at *Ephesus* until *Pentecost*; and *Verses* 19. where is mention of a particular Church in the House of *Aquila* and *Priscilla* then at *Ephesus*; as appears, *Acts* xviii. 19, 24, 26. All which laid together doth prove, that the Multitude of Believers did make more Congregations than one in the Church of *Ephesus*.

2. That there were many Elders over these many Congregations, as one Flock, appeareth, *Acts* xx. 17, 25, 28, 30, 36, 37.

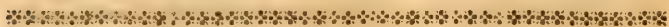
3. That these many Congregations were one Church, and that they were under one Presbyterian Government, appeareth, *Rev.* ii. the first six *Verses*, joined with *Acts* xx. *ver.* 17, 18.

Of Synodical Assemblies.

THE Scripture doth hold out another Sort of Assemblies, for the Government of the Church, beside Classical and Congregational, all which we call Synodical, *Acts* xv. Pastors and Teachers, and other Church Governors (as also other fit Persons, when it shall be deemed expedient) are Members of those Assemblies which we call Synodical, where they have a lawful Calling thereunto.

Synodical Assemblies may lawfully be of several Sorts, as Provincial, National, and Oecumenical.

It is lawful and agreeable to the Word of God, that there be a Subordination of Congregational, Classical, Provincial, and National Assemblies, for the Government of the Church.



Of ORDINATION of MINISTERS.

UNDER the Head of Ordination of Ministers is to be considered, either the Doctrine of Ordination, or the Power of it.

Touching the Doctrine of Ordination.

NO Man ought to take upon him the Office of a Minister of the Word, without a lawful Calling, *John* iii. 27. *Rom.* x. 14, 15. *Jer.* xiv. 14. *Heb.* v. 4.

Ordination is always to be continued in the Church, *Tit.* i. 5. *1 Tim.* v. 21, 22.

Ordination is the solemn setting Apart of a Person to some Publick Church-Office, *Numb.* viii. 10, 11, 14, 19, 22. *Acts* vi. 3, 5, 6.

Every Minister of the Word is to be ordained by Imposition of Hands, and Prayer with Fasting, by those Preaching Presbyters, to whom it doth belong, *1 Tim.* v. 22. *Acts* xiv. 23. and *Acts* xiii. 3.

It is agreeable to the Word of God, and very expedient, that such as are to be ordained Ministers, be designed to some particular Church, or other Ministerial Charge, *Acts* xiv. 23. *Tit.* i. 5. *Acts* xx 17, and 28.

He that is to be ordained Minister, must be duly qualified, both for Life and Ministerial Abilities, according to the Rules of the Apostle, *1 Tim.* iii. 2, 3, 4, 5, 6. and *Tit.* i. 5, 6, 7, 8, 9.

He is to be examined and approved by those by whom he is to be ordained, *1 Tim.* iii. ver. 7, and 10. and *Chap.* v. ver. 22.

No Man is to be ordained a Minister for a particular Congregation, if they of that Congregation can shew just Cause of Exception against him, *1 Tim.* iii. 2. *Tit.* i. 7.

Touching the Power of Ordination.

Ordination is the Act of a Presbytery, *1 Tim.* iv. 14.

The Power of ordering the whole Work of Ordination, is in the whole Presbytery, which when it is over more Congregations than one, whether those Congregations be fixed or not fixed, in regard of Officers or Members, it is indifferent, as to the Point of Ordination, *1 Tim.* iv. 14.

It is very requisite that no single Congregation, that can conveniently associate, do assume to it self all and sole Power in Ordination.

1. Because

1. Because there is no Example in Scripture, that any single Congregation, which might conveniently associate, did assume to it self all and sole Power in Ordination; neither is there any Rule which may warrant such a Practice.

2. Because there is in Scripture Example of an Ordination in a Presbytery over divers Congregations; as in the Church of *Jerusalem*, where were many Congregations, these many Congregations were under one Presbytery, and this Presbytery did Ordain.

The Preaching Presbyters orderly associated, either in Cities or neighbouring Villages, are those to whom the Imposition of Hands doth appertain, for those Congregations within their Bounds respectively.



Concerning the Doctrinal Part of ORDINATION of
MINISTERS.

1. **N**O Man ought to take upon him the Office of a Minister of the Word, without a lawful Calling, *John* iii. 27. *Rom.* x. 14, 15. *Jer.* xiv. 14. *Heb.* v. 4.

2. Ordination is always to be continued in the Church, *Tit.* i. 5.

1 *Tim.* v. 21, 22.

3. Ordination is the solemn setting Apart of a Person to some publick Church Office, *Numb.* viii. 10, 11, 14, 19, 22. *Acts* vi. 3, 5, 6.

4. Every Minister of the Word is to be ordained by Imposition of Hands and Prayer, with Fasting, by those Preaching Presbyters to whom it doth belong, 1 *Tim.* v. 22. *Acts* xiv. 23. *Acts* xiii. 3.

5. The Power of ordering the whole Work of Ordination is in the whole Presbytery, which, when it is over more Congregations than one, whether those Congregations be fixed, or not fixed, in regard of Officers or Members, it is indifferent as to the Point of Ordination, 1 *Tim.* iv. 14.

6. It is agreeable to the Word, and very expedient, that such as are to be ordained Ministers, be designed to some particular Church, or other Ministerial Charge, *Acts* xiv. 23. *Tit.* i. 5. *Acts* xx. 17, and 28.

7. He that is to be ordained Minister must be duly qualified, both for Life and Ministerial Abilities, according to the Rules of the Apostle, 1 *Tim.* iii. 2, 3, 4, 5, 6. *Tit.* i. 5, 6, 7, 8, 9.

8. He is to be examined, and approved of by those by whom he is to be ordained, 1 *Tim.* iii. 7, 10. 1 *Tim.* v. 22.

9. No Man is to be ordained a Minister for a particular Congregation, if they of that Congregation can shew just Cause of Exception against him, 1 *Tim.* iii. 2. *Tit.* i. 7.

10. Preaching Presbyters orderly associated, either in Cities, or neighbouring Villages, are those to whom the Imposition of Hands do appertain, for these Congregations within their Bounds respectively, 1 *Tim.* iv. 14.

11. In extraordinary Cases, something extraordinary may be done, until a settled Order may be had, yet keeping as near as possibly may be to the Rule, 2 *Chron.* xxix. 34, 35, 36. 2 *Chron.* xxx. 2, 3, 4, 5.

12. There is at this Time (as we humbly conceive) an extraordinary Occasion for a Way of Ordination for the present Supply of Ministers.

The Directory for the Ordination of Ministers.

IT being manifest by the Word of God, that no Man ought to take upon him the Office of a Minister of the Gospel, until he be lawfully called and ordained thereunto; and that the Work of Ordination is to be performed with all due Care, Wisdom, Gravity, and Solemnity; we humbly tender these Directions as requisite to be observed.

First, He that is to be ordained, being either nominated by the People, or otherwise commended to the Presbytery for any Place, must address himself to the Presbytery, and bring with him a Testimonial of his taking the Covenant of the Three Kingdoms; of his Diligence and Proficiency in his Studies; what Degrees he hath taken in the University, and what hath been the Time of his Abode there; and withal of his Age, which is to be Twenty four Years; but especially of his Life and Conversation.

2. Which being considered by the Presbytery, they are to proceed, to enquire touching the Grace of God in him, and whether he be of such Holiness of Life, as is requisite in a Minister of the Gospel; and to examine him touching his Learning and Sufficiency, and touching the Evidences of his Calling to the holy Ministry, and in particular, his fair and direct Calling to that Place.

The Rules for Examination are these,

1. *That the Party examined be dealt withal in a brotherly Way, with Mildness of Spirit, and with special Respect to the Gravity, Modesty, and Quality of every one.*

2. *He shall be examined touching his Skill in the Original Tongues, and his Trial to be made by reading the Hebrew and Greek Testaments, and rendering some Portion of some into Latin; and if he be defective in them, Enquiry shall be made more strictly after his other Learning, and whether he hath Skill in Logick and Philosophy.*

3. *What Authors in Divinity he hath read, and is best acquainted with. And Trial shall be made in his Knowledge of the Grounds of Religion, and of his Ability to defend the orthodox Doctrine contained in them, against all unsound and erroneous Opinions, especially those of the present Age: Of his Skill in the Sense and Meaning of such Places*
of

of Scripture, as shall be proposed unto him, in Cases of Conscience, and in the Chronology of the Scripture, and the Ecclesiastical History.

4. If he hath not before preached in Publick, with Approbation of such as are able to judge, he shall, at a competent Time assigned him, expound before the Presbytery such a Place of Scripture as shall be given him.

5. He shall also, within a competent Time, frame a Discourse in Latin, upon such a Common Place or Controversy in Divinity, as shall be assigned him, and exhibit to the Presbytery such Theies as express the Sum thereof, and maintain a Dispute upon them.

6. He shall Preach before the People, the Presbytery, or some of the Ministers of the Word appointed by them, being present.

7. The Proportion of his Gifts in relation to the Place unto which he is called shall be considered.

8. Beside the Trial of his Gifts in Preaching, he shall undergo an Examination in the Premises two several Days, and more, if the Presbytery shall judge it necessary.

9. And as for him that hath formerly been ordained a Minister, and is to be removed to another Charge, he shall bring a Testimonial of his Ordination, and of his Abilities and Conversation, whereupon his Fitness for that Place shall be tried by his Preaching there, (if it shall be judged necessary) by a further Examination of him.

3. In all which he being approved, he is to be sent to the Church where he is to serve, there to preach Three several Days, and to converse with the People, that they may have Trial of his Gifts for their Edification, and may have Time and Occasion to enquire into, and the better to know his Life and Conversation.

4. In the last of these Three Days appointed for the Trial of his Gifts in Preaching, there shall be sent from the Presbytery to the Congregation, a publick Intimation in Writing, which shall be publickly read before the People, and after affixed to the Church Door, to signify that such a Day, a competent Number of the Members of that Congregation, nominated by themselves, shall appear before the Presbytery, to give their Consent and Approbation to such a Man to be their Minister; or otherwise, to put in, with all Christian Discretion and Meekness, what Exceptions they have against him; and if, upon the Day appointed, there be no just Exception against him, but the People give their Consent, then the Presbytery shall proceed to Ordination.

5. Upon the Day appointed for Ordination, which is to be performed in that Church, where he that is to be ordained is to serve, a solemn Fast shall be kept by the Congregation, that they may the more earnestly join in Prayer, for a Blessing upon the Ordinance of Christ, and the Labours of his Servant for their Good. The Presbytery shall come to the Place, or at least Three or Four Ministers of the Word shall be sent thither from the Presbytery; of which

which one, appointed by the Presbytery, shall preach to the People, concerning the Office and Duty of Ministers of Christ, and how the People ought to receive them for their Work's sake.

6. After the Sermon, the Minister who hath preached, shall, in the Face of the Congregation, demand of him who is now to be ordained, concerning his Faith in Christ Jesus, and his Periwasion of the Truth of the Reformed Religion according to the Scripture; his sincere Intentions and Ends in desiring to enter into this Calling; his Diligence in Prayer, Reading, Meditation, Preaching, Ministering the Sacraments, Discipline, and doing all Ministerial Duties towards his Charge; his Zeal and Faithfulness in maintaining the Truth of the Gospel, and Unity of the Church, against Error and Schism; his Care that himself and his Family may be unblameable, and Examples to the Flock; his Willingness and Humility, in Meekness of Spirit, to submit unto the Admonitions of his Brethren and Discipline of the Church; and his Resolution to continue in his Duty against all Trouble and Persecution.

7. In all which having declared himself, professed his Willingness, and promised his Endeavours, by the Help of God; the Minister likewise shall demand of the People, concerning their Willingness to receive and acknowledge him, as the Minister of Christ; and to obey, and submit unto him, as having Rule over them in the Lord; and to maintain, encourage, and assist him in all the Parts of his Office.

8. Which being mutually promised by the People, the Presbytery, or the Ministers sent from them for Ordination, shall solemnly set him apart to the Office and Work of the Ministry, by laying their Hands on him, which is to be accompanied with a short Prayer or Blessing, to this Effect;

“Thankfully acknowledging the great Mercy of God, in sending Jesus Christ for the Redemption of his People; and for his Ascension to the right Hand of God the Father, and thence pouring out his Spirit, and giving Gifts to Men, Apostles, Evangelists, Prophets, Pastors, and Teachers, for the gathering and building up of his Church; and for fitting and inclining this Man to this great Work*; to entreat him to fit him with his holy Spirit, to give him (who in his Name we thus set apart to this holy Service) to fulfil the Work of his Ministry in all Things, that he may both save himself, and his People committed to his Charge.”

9. This, or the like Form of Prayer and Blessing being ended, let the Minister who preached briefly exhort him, to consider of the Greatness of his Office and Work, the Danger of Negligence both to himself and his People, the Blessing which will accompany his Faithfulness in this Life, and that to come; and withal exhort the People to carry themselves to him, as to their Minister in the

* Here let them impose Hands on his Head.

Lord, according to their solemn Promise made before ; and so by Prayer commending both him and his Flock to the Grace of God, after singing of a Psalm let the Assembly be dismissed with a Blessing.

10. If a Minister be designed to a Congregation, who hath been formerly ordained Presbyter according to the Form of Ordination which hath been in the Church of *England*, which we hold for Substance to be valid, and not to be disclaimed by any who have received it ; then there being a cautious Proceeding in Matters of Examination, let him be admitted without any new Ordination.

11. And in case any Person already ordained Minister in *Scotland*, or in any other Reformed Church, be designed to another Congregation in *England*, he is to bring from that Church to the Presbytery here, within which that Congregation is, a sufficient Testimonial of his Ordination, of his Life and Conversation while he lived with them, and of the Causes of his Removal ; and to undergo such a Trial of his Fitness and Sufficiency, and to have the same Course held with him in other Particulars, as is set down in the Rule immediately going before, touching Examination and Admission.

12. That Records be carefully kept in the several Presbyteries, of the Names of the Persons ordained, with their Testimonials, the Time and Place of their Ordination, of the Presbyters who did impose Hands upon them, and of the Charge to which they are appointed.

13. That no Money or Gift of what Kind soever shall be received from the Person to be ordained, or from any on his Behalf, for Ordination, or ought else belonging to it, by any of the Presbytery, or any appertaining to any of them, upon what Pretence soever.

Thus far of ordinary Rules and Course of Ordination in the ordinary Way ; that which concerns the extraordinary Way, requisite to be now practised, followeth.

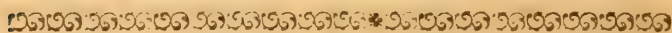
1. In these present Exigences, while we cannot have any Presbyteries formed up to their whole Power and Work, and that many Ministers are to be ordained for the Service of the Armies and Navy, and to many Congregations where there is no Minister at all ; and where (by Reason of the publick Troubles) the People cannot either themselves enquire, and find out one who may be a faithful Minister for them, or have any with Safety sent unto them, for such a solemn Trial as was before mentioned in the ordinary Rules, especially when there can be no Presbytery near unto them, to whom they may address themselves, or which may come or tend to them a fit Man to be ordained in that Congregation, and for that People : And yet notwithstanding, it is requisite that Ministers be ordained for them, by some, who, being set Apart themselves for the Work of the Ministry, have Power to join in the setting Apart others

others who are found fit and worthy. In those Cases, until, by God's Blessing, the aforesaid Difficulties may be in some good Measure removed, let some godly Ministers in or about the City of *London*, be designed by publick Authority; who being associated, may ordain Ministers for the City and the Vicinity; keeping as near to the ordinary Rules forementioned as possibly they may; and let this Association be for no other Intent or Purpose, but only for the Work of Ordination.

2. Let the like Association be made by the same Authority in great Towns, and the neighbouring Parishes in the several Counties, which are at the present quiet and undisturbed, to do the like for the Parts adjacent.

3. Let such as are chosen, or appointed for the Service of the Armies or Navy, be ordained as aforesaid, by the associated Ministers of *London*, or some others in the Country.

4. Let them do the like when any Man shall duly and lawfully be recommended to them for the Ministry of any Congregation, who cannot enjoy Liberty to have a Trial of his Parts and Abilities, and desire the Help of such Ministers so associated, for the better furnishing of them with such a Person, as by them shall be judged fit for the Service of that Church and People.



The CONTENTS of the Form of *Presbyterial Church Government*.

THE Preface.

Of the Church.

Of the Officers of the Church.

Pastors.

Teacher or Doctor.

Other Church Governors.

Deacons.

Of particular Congregations.

Of the Officers of a particular Congregation.

Of the Ordinances in a particular Congregation.

Of Church Government, and the several Sorts of Assemblies for the same.

Of the Power in Common of all these Assemblies.

Of Congregational Assemblies, that is, The Meeting of the Ruling Officers of a particular Congregation, for the Government thereof.

Of Classial Assemblies.

Of Synodical Assemblies.

Of Ordination of Ministers.

Touching the Doctrine of Ordination.

Touching the Power of Ordination.

Concerning the Doctrinal Part of the Ordination of Ministers.

The Directory for the Ordination of Ministers.

INDEX



I N D E X.



A.

- A**BJURATION Oath for discovering Papists, p. 38.
Accommodation, grand Committee of, between the Presbyterians and Independants, and their Proceedings, p. 302, &c.
Afternoon Sermons, of suppressing them, p. 223, 224.
Agitators in the Army, p. 397.
- Agreement of the People, p. 495, 530.
- Altars, of consecrating them, p. 198, 200, 202. Of their Antiquity, Situation, and Railing them in, p. 204, 206, 207. Of their Furniture, p. 205, 208. Antiquity of bowing towards them, p. 209, 210.
- Anabaptists, none in the Assembly of Divines, p. 148. Their Rise and Progress in England, p. 159. Their Confession of Faith, p. 161. Their Character, p. 162. Their Sufferings, p. 163. Remarks, p. 164.
- Annotations, that go under the Name of the Assembly of Divines, p. 491, 492.
- Answer to the Reasons of the London Clergy, containing a Censure on the Presbyterians, and defending universal Liberty of Conscience, p. 312.
- Antapologia against the Independants, p. 145.
- Antinomianism censur'd by the Assembly of Divines, p. 68.
- Anti-Toleration, a Pamphlet so call'd, p. 314.
- Apologetical Narration of the Independants, p. 141. Remarks, p. 144.
- Archbishops and Bishops, &c. Ordinances for abolishing them, and for the Sale of their Lands, p. 361, 362.
- Arminianism encourag'd by Laud, p. 215.
- Army, the King's, Character of it, and the Ravages they committed, p. 109.

Army,

- Army, the Parliament's, their Character and good Discipline,* p. 111. *New modell'd,* p. 268. *Rise of Enthusiasm in it,* p. 269, 371. *Their strict Discipline,* p. 270. *Their separate Views,* p. 395. *Controversy between the Parliament and them,* p. 397. *They seize the King at Holmby,* p. 398. *Their Declaration,* p. 400. *They impeach eleven Members of the House of Commons,* p. 401. *Several Members retire to them,* p. 403. *They march to London,* p. 405. *Reasons of their deserting the King,* p. 410. *Their Proposals,* p. 412. *They unite with the Parliament,* p. 420. *They are dissatisfy'd with the Treaty of Newport,* p. 526. *Their Proceedings,* p. 527. *Their Remonstrance,* p. 528. *They seize the King a second Time,* *ibid.* *They march to London and purge the Parliament,* p. 528, 529. *Resolve to impeach the King,* p. 530. *Remonstrance of the Presbyterian Ministers and others against them,* p. 531, 532, &c. *Part of them, with the Remainder of the Parliament, proceed against the King, and put him to Death,* p. 539.
- Army, Scots, enters England,* p. 107. *Again under Duke Hamilton,* p. 485. *See Scots.*
- Arrowsmith, Dr. some Account of him,* p. 123.
- Articles of the Church of England, Alterations made in them by the Assembly of Divines,* p. 67. *See Appendix, Numb. I.*
- Articles of Discipline in the Assembly's Confession, rejected by the Parliament,* p. 380.
- Assembly of Divines, Steps towards calling it,* p. 51. *Ordinance for calling it,* p. 52. *Names of the Lay-Assessors,* p. 54. *A List of the Divines,* p. 55. *The King forbids their Meeting,* p. 60. *Episcopal Clergy's Reasons against the Assembly, with the Answers to them,* *ibid.* *Their Character,* p. 61. *They meet,* p. 62. *Rules agreed on by them,* p. 63. *Their Vow or Protestation,* *ibid.* *Regulations sent them by the Parliament,* p. 64. *Their Petition to the Parliament for a Fast,* &c. p. 65. *Their Alterations in the Thirty nine Articles,* p. 67. *They censure Antinomianism,* p. 68. *Their Letter to the Scots,* p. 69. *Scots Commissioners appointed to join them,* p. 69, 70. *Mr. Marshall and Nye's Letter to them,* p. 70. *Their Debates on the Solemn League and Covenant,* p. 71. *Their Exhortation to the taking of it,* p. 78. *Their Letter to foreign Churches,* p. 88. *Episcopal Divines leave them,* p. 97. *The Examination and Approbation of Ministers refer'd to them,* p. 99. *An Account of the several Parties amongst them,* p. 139, &c. *Their farther Proceedings,* p. 148. *Order'd to confer about Discipline,* *ibid.* *Their Proceedings and Advice about Ordination,* p. 149, 151. *They compose a Directory for Publick Worship,* p. 153. *Debate about Ordination,* p. 276. *The Power to ordain given to them pro tempore,* p. 277. *They debate about the Divine Right of Presbytery,* p. 278. *About the Power of the Keys,* p. 285. *Their petition against the Ordinance for Presbyteries,* p. 298. *Are threaten'd with a Premunire,* p. 299. *Questions propounded to them*

them about the Divine Right of Presbytery, ibid. They are terrified, and appoint a Fast, p. 302. They recommend a new Version of the Psalms, p. 315. Their Sentiments of the Jus Divinum, p. 328. Their Proceedings upon their Confession of Faith, p. 378. Their larger and shorter Catechisms, p. 382. Scots Commissioners take leave of them, ibid. Conclusion of the Assembly, p. 491. Their Works, ibid. Of the Annotations which go under their Name, ibid. and p. 492. A farther Account of their Character, p. 493.
Associations of the Presbyterian Ministers in the Country, p. 497.

B.

Baxter, Mr. keeps his People from taking the Solemn League and Covenant, p. 82. His Account of the Sectaries in the Army, p. 370. His Sentiments about the Authors of the King's Death, p. 551.
 Bayly, Dr. some Account of him, p. 463.
 Beale, Dr. some Account of him, p. 119.
 Benefices, how the vacant ones were filled up, p. 40. Parliament nominate to them, p. 98.
 Best, Paul, Proceedings against him, p. 315.
 Birkenhead, Mr. some Account of him, p. 465.
 Bishops. See Archbishops. See Episcopacy.
 Blasphemy and Heresy, Ordinance against, p. 497.
 Book of Sports burnt by the common Hangman, p. 43. Promoted by Archbishop Laud, p. 213.
 Books prohibited and castrated by Laud, p. 218. Popish ones licensed, and the Importation of them conniv'd at by him, p. 219.
 Books publish'd for and against the King's Death, p. 545.
 Bowing towards the Altar, p. 209, 210. At the Name of Jesus, p. 210, 211.
 Bramhal, Bishop, his Account of Papists in the Parliament Army, p. 372, 552.
 Brent, Sir Nath. some Account of him, p. 460.
 Brentford taken by the King, p. 2.
 Brooke, Lord, his Death and Character, p. 19.
 Browne, Samuel, Esq; a Manager in Laud's Trial, p. 242.
 Brownrigge, Dr. some Account of him, p. 120.
 Burnet, Bishop, his Character of Archbishop Laud, p. 248. Of King Charles I. p. 542. His Sentiments about the Authors of the King's Death, p. 551.
 Burroughs, Rev. Mr. Jeremiah, his Declaration in the Name of the Independants, p. 309. His Death and Character, p. 376.
 Button, Mr. some Account of him, p. 472.

C.

- C**Alamy, Mr. *a Passage in his Sermon about Christmas*, p. 169.
- Cambridge University, *their Behaviour*, p. 113. *Visitation of it*, p. 114. *Proceedings therein*, p. 115. *Covenant not tender'd to all of them*, p. 116. *Numbers ejected*, *ibid.* *Reasonableness of it*, p. 117. *Characters of the ejected Professors*, p. 118. *And of their Successors*, p. 121. *Remarks*, p. 124. *Form of Induction of the new Masters*, p. 125. *And of the Fellows*, p. 126. *State of the University afterwards*, p. 127. *Their Revenues preserv'd*, p. 316.
- Catechisms, *Assembly's larger and shorter, approv'd and allow'd by the Parliament*, p. 382.
- Cathedrals, *Ordinance for seizing their Revenues*, p. 316.
- C**HARLES I. King, *pursues his March to London after the Battle of Edge-Hill*, p. 1. *Takes Reading and Brentford*, p. 2. *Retreats again*, p. 3. *Motives of his March*, *ibid.* *Remarks*, p. 4. *His Letter to Duke Hamilton*, p. 4, 5. *Encouraging Prospect of his Affairs*, p. 6. *His Truce with the Irish Rebels*, p. 7. *Parliament's Propositions to him at the Treaty of Oxford*, p. 9. *His own Proposals*, p. 14. *His Answer to the Parliament Commissioners*, p. 15. *Which breaks off the Treaty*, p. 17. *His Proclamations against the City of London, &c.* p. 21. *Success of his Affairs*, p. 22, 23. *Makes Reprisals on the Parliamentarians in relation to the Clergy*, p. 39. *Dissolves their Monthly Fast, and appoints another*, p. 44. *Prohibits the Assembly of Divines*, p. 60. *Forbids the taking of the Covenant*, p. 82. *Brings over Forces from Ireland*, p. 85. *Ill Consequences of it to his Affairs*, p. 86. *His Protestation*, p. 87. *His Reply to the Assembly's Letter to foreign Protestants*, p. 94. *Remarks upon it*, p. 96. *He holds a Parliament at Oxford, which comes to nothing*, p. 105, 106. *His Letter to the Queen*, p. 107. *Character of his Army*, p. 109. *Bad State of his Affairs*, p. 111, 112. *He forbids the Use of the Directory*, p. 158. *Some arbitrary Clauses in his Speeches and Proclamations*, p. 179. *His Conduct in the Treaty of Uxbridge*, p. 249, &c. *More Letters of his to the Queen*, p. 250, 252, 264, 265, 322. *His Instructions to his Commissioners on the Head of Religion*, p. 254. *His Concessions*, p. 259. *Remarks upon them*, p. 260, 262. *His Letter to the Duke of Ormond*, p. 265. *Queen's Ascendant over him*, *ibid.* *His Warrant to the Earl of Glamorgan about the Irish Papists*, p. 266. *Progress of his Forces, and his Defeat in the Battle of Naseby*, p. 271. *He sements the Divisions between the Presbyterians and Independants*, p. 314. *His melancholy Condition at Oxford*, p. 321. *He escapes to the Scots Army and surrenders himself to them*, p. 323. *Commissions the Marquis of Ormond to conclude a Peace with the Irish Papists*, p. 324. *The Scots Behaviour towards him*, p. 335. *Conference between*

between him and Mr. Henderson about Episcopacy, &c. p. 336. His first Paper upon it, p. 337. His second, p. 339. His third, p. 343. His last Papers, p. 346. Remarks upon his Principles, p. 347. Parliament's Propositions to him at Newcastle, p. 350. Great Intercession made with him to comply, and the Lord Chancellor of Scotland's Speech to him, p. 354. He refuses, p. 355. His Answer, p. 356. His Conference with the Scots Commissioners, *ibid.* Scots Kirk will not trust him, p. 357. Their solemn Warning and Declaration about him, p. 358. Proceedings of the Scots Parliament in relation to him, p. 359. They deliver him up to the English Parliament, *ibid.* Whose Commissioners receive him, and convey him to Holmby-House, p. 360. His pressing Letter for a personal Treaty, *ibid.* Remarks, p. 361. In what Manner he liv'd at Holmby, *ibid.* His separate Views, p. 394. His farther Answer to the Propositions of Newcastle, p. 398. He is seiz'd and carried to the Army, *ibid.* His Motions with them, p. 408. Cromwell and Ireton confer with him, p. 409. His mistaken Conduct, *ibid.* Which proves his Ruin, p. 410. Reasons of the Army's deserting him, *ibid.* He escapes from Hampton Court, p. 411. And is confin'd in the Isle of Wight, p. 412. Motive of his Escape, p. 415. His private Treaty with the Scots, p. 416. His Concessions from the Isle of Wight, p. 417. Remarks, p. 419. He disapproves of the Ordinance for abolishing Christmas, &c. p. 423. His Clergy petition to be restor'd to their Livings, p. 424. Treaty of Newport between him and the Parliament, p. 501. A Prayer drawn up by his Direction on that Occasion, p. 503. His Reply to the Parliament's Proposals, *ibid.* His Concessions on the Article of Religion, p. 504. Conference between him and the Parliament Divines about Episcopacy, p. 505. His first Paper, *ibid.* His second, p. 507. His last, p. 512. His final Concessions, p. 514. Arguments and Motives to gain his Consent, p. 516. States of Scotland press him to consent, p. 519. His Speech to the Commissioners, p. 520. His Letter to the Prince, p. 525. He is seiz'd by the Army a second Time, p. 528. His Trial resolv'd on, p. 530. The Voice of the Nation against it, p. 531, &c. His Trial and Execution, p. 539, 540. His Character, p. 541. His Works, and particularly of Eikoon Basilike, p. 543, 544. Books published for and against his Death, p. 545. Who were the Authors of his Death, p. 547, &c.

Cheyne, Dr. his Behaviour at Mr. Chillingworth's Interment, p. 102. Some farther Account of him, p. 470.

Chillingworth, Mr. his Death and Character, p. 100.

Christmas, Order for laying aside the Observation of it, p. 168.

Remarks, *ibid.* Ordinance for abolishing it, &c. p. 422.

Church, its Discipline and Hierarchy dissolv'd, p. 97, 112, 361.

- Church Government, *Questions about the Divine Right of it*, p. 299.
Sentiments of the Assembly of Divines upon it, p. 328. *And of the London Ministers*, p. 330.
- Church Musick, p. 210, 212.
- Church of Rome, *whether a true Church*, p. 227, 231. *Archbishop's Laud's Design of reconciling the Church of England to it*, p. 232.
- Churches, *of the Consecration of them*, p. 198, 199, 200.
- Civil Magistrate, *whether Religion may be reform'd without him*, p. 337, 339, 341, 343.
- Civil War *between the King and Parliament, the Miseries and Desolations of it*, p. 109, 110, 112. *Conclusion of the first*, p. 324. *Views of the different Parties concern'd in it*, p. 393. *The second Civil War*, p. 483, &c. *Remarks on the Confusion of those Times*, p. 489.
- Clarkson, Mr. *his Recantation*, p. 164.
- Clayton, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 461.
- Clergy, *Proceedings against them for Malignancy, &c.* p. 34. *Quality of those who were ejected*, p. 36. *Sequestration of their Estates*, *ibid.* *Their Hardships*, p. 39. *Quality of those who were put in their Room*, p. 40, 41. *Their Hardships from the Solemn League and Covenant*, p. 83. *Numbers ejected*, p. 133. *Compar'd with the ejected Ministers at the Restoration*, p. 135. *Hardships on both Sides*, p. 137. *Archbishop Laud charg'd with attempting to set up an independent Power in them*, p. 190. *Parliament's Care for a regular Clergy*, p. 273. *See Committee.*
- Clergymen, *Bill for punishing scandalous ones*, p. 12. *See Scandalous.*
- Club-Men, *their Rise*, p. 108.
- Colcheller Siege, p. 484.
- Collins, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 118.
- Colman, Mr. *his Death and Character*, p. 374.
- Comber, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 120.
- Commitments, *illegal, charg'd upon Archbishop Laud*, p. 186.
- Committee of Accommodation *between the Presbyterians and Independants*, p. 302, &c.
- Committee to examine Clergymen, p. 99. *Their Method of Examination*, *ibid.*
- Committee for scandalous Ministers, p. 26. *Their Proceedings*, p. 27, &c.
- Committee for plunder'd Ministers, p. 30. *Their Proceedings*, p. 31. *United with that for scandalous Ministers*, *ibid.* *Various Censures on their Proceedings*, *ibid.* and p. 33.
- Committee for scandalous Ministers, *another, and the Earl of Manchester's Warrant to them*, p. 128. *His Instructions to them*, p. 129. *His Letter to them*, p. 130. *Their Method of Proceeding*, p. 131. *Remarks*, p. 132.

- Committee of Sequestrations, p. 114.
 Committees, Country ones, p. 34. *Their Instructions*, *ibid.* *Their Proceedings*, p. 36, &c.
 Commutation of Penance, p. 188.
 Comprehension attempted between the Presbyterians and Independants to no Purpose, p. 302.
 Confession of Faith, *Assembly of Divines Proceedings upon it*, p. 378. *Presented to the Parliament, who debate upon it*, p. 379. *Articles of Discipline rejected, but the whole receiv'd by the Scots*, p. 380. *Censures upon it*, p. 381.
 Convention Parliament, *their Sentiments as to the Authors of the King's Death*, p. 553.
 Convocation, *of its sitting after the Parliament*, p. 192.
 Copes, *of the Use of them*, p. 210, 212.
 Coronation Oath, *Alterations in it objected to Archbishop Laud*, p. 189. *The King's Scruples about it with regard to the Church*, p. 339, 340, 344, 514.
 Collins, Dr. *some account of him*, p. 118.
 Covenant or Vow to stand by the Parliament, p. 20.
 Covenant. See Solemn League.
 Council of Officers and Agitators, p. 397.
 Country Committees. See Committees.
 Crisp, Dr. *his Death and Character*, p. 18.
 Cromwell, Oliver, *his Character*, p. 269. *His Bravery and Conduct in the Battle at Naseby*, p. 271, 272. *He and Ireton confer with the King about his Restoration*, p. 409. *Reasons of his deserting him*, p. 410, 411. *His Speech in Parliament*, p. 420. *He reduces the Welch*, p. 484. *Defeats the Scots Army under Duke Hamilton*, p. 487, 488. *Returns to London*, p. 529. *His Speech on the Motion for trying the King*, p. 531.
 Crosse, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 472.
 Crosses, *several pull'd down*, p. 45.
 Crucifixes. See Images.
 Cudworth, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 121.

D.

- D**elinquents, *Ordinance for seizing their Estates*, p. 37.
 Directory for Publick Worship established, p. 153. *Preface to it*, *ibid.* *Its Variations from the Book of Common Prayer*, p. 155. *Success of it*, p. 157. *Ordinance for enforcing the Use of it*, *ibid.* *Remarks*, p. 158. *King forbids the Use of it*, *ibid.* *University of Oxford's Objections to it*, p. 442, 443. *The King's Objection to it*, p. 518. See Appendix, Numb. II.
 Directory for Ordination of Ministers, p. 274. See Appendix, Numb. III.
 Discipline. See Articles.
 Dod, Mr. *his Death and Character*, p. 319.

- Downing, *Dr. his Death and Character*, p. 170.
 Du Moulin, *Dr. Lewis, some Account of him*, p. 472. *His Sentiments about the Authors of the King's Death*, p. 550.

E.

- E**dwards, *Mr. his Antapologia against the Independants*, p. 145.
His Gangraena, p. 367. *Remarks upon it*, p. 369.
 Edwards, *Dr. some Account of him*, p. 466.
 Eikoon Basilike, *a spurious Book*, p. 544.
 Elector Palatine takes the Covenant, and sits in the Assembly of Divines, p. 81, 164. *His Answer to the Committee of Lords and Commons*, p. 165.
 Enthusiasm, *Rise of it in the Army*, p. 269. *A farther Account of it*, p. 371, 372.
 Episcopacy debated in the Treaty of Uxbridge, p. 255. *Between the King and Mr. Henderson*, p. 336. *Abolish'd by the Parliament*, p. 361. *Debated in the Treaty of Newport*, p. 505. *Remarks*, p. 513. *Archbishop Usher's Sentiments about it*, p. 523.
 Episcopal Clergy, *their Sufferings*, p. 24, 25. *How far they contributed to the King's Death*, p. 548.
 Erastians, *their Opinion of Church Government*, p. 139. *Their chief Patrons in the Assembly of Divines, and in the Parliament*, p. 140. *Their Objections to the Divine Right of Presbytery*, p. 278. *Their Conduct*, p. 283. *Their Opinion about Suspension and Excommunication*, p. 285.
 Essex, *Earl of, arrives at London after the Battle of Edge-Hill*, p. 11. *He is defeated in Cornwall*, p. 108. *He is remov'd*, p. 268. *His Death and Character*, p. 373.
 Excommunication, *Opinions of the Presbyterians, Independants, and Erastians, about it*, p. 285. *Ordinance for it*, p. 288. *See Suspension*.
 Exhortation to the taking the Solemn League and Covenant, p. 78. *Answer'd*, p. 80.

F.

- F**airfax, *General, his Character*, p. 269. *King's Clergy's Petition to him*, p. 425. *Counter-Petition of the Presbyterian Clergy to him*, p. 426. *He suppresses the Cavaliers in Kent and Essex*, p. 484.
 Fast, *Monthly, of the Parliament*, p. 43. *The King appoints another in Opposition to it*, p. 44. *The Parliament's kept on Christmas Day*, p. 168.
 Fasts, *occasional ones*, p. 43.
 Feasts of Dedication, p. 199, 200. *Rise of them*, p. 203.
 Fealty, *Dr. expell'd the Assembly of Divines, and taken into Custody as a Spy*, p. 97. *His Death*, p. 317. *His Challenge in Defence*

- fence of the Church of England*, p. 318. *His Character and last Prayer*, p. 318, 319.
- Fell, Dr. *Vice-Chancellor of Oxford*, treats the Parliament's Visitors with Contempt, p. 446, 448. Is depriv'd of his Vice-Chancellorship, and taken into Custody, p. 449. Some farther Account of him, p. 463.
- Fellows, *Form of inducting the new ones at Cambridge*, p. 126.
- Fifths of their Estates allow'd to the Wives and Children of Delinquents, p. 38. And of ejected Clergymen, p. 136.
- Finch, Rev. Mr. *his Case*, p. 30.
- Five Points, of the Declaration forbidding to preach on them, p. 215, 217.
- Foreign Protestants, of Archbishop Laud's discouraging them, p. 226, 228, 233.
- French and Dutch Churches disturb'd by Laud, p. 233.

G.

- G Angraena, Mr. Edwards's, p. 367. *Remarks*, p. 369.
- Gauden, Dr. *his Protestation against trying the King*, p. 531. *The Author of Eikoon Basilike*, p. 544.
- General Assembly of Scotland, *their Reasons to induce the Convention of States to assist the English Parliament*, p. 69.
- General and particular Baptists, p. 160.
- Gillibrand's Almanack, p. 218, 221.
- Glamorgan, Earl of, *his Treaty with the Irish Papists*, p. 266.
- Gloria Patri, of standing up at it, p. 211.
- Goodwin, Mr. John, *some Account of him and his Writings*, p. 391. *His Reply to Mr. Jenkins*, p. 392. He writes in defence of the King's Death, p. 545, 546.
- Goring, Lord, *his Character*, 109.
- Great Seal, *a new one order'd to be made by the Parliament*, p. 105.
- Greaves, Mr. *some Account of him*, p. 466.
- Greenville, Sir Richard, *his Character and Behaviour in the War*, p. 109.
- Greenwood, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 468.

H.

- H Abernfield's Plot, Archbishop Laud's Conduct in relation to it, p. 235.
- Hakewell, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 459.
- Hamilton, Duke, *enters England with the Scots Army*, p. 485. Is defeated by Cromwell, p. 488.
- Hammond, Dr. *his Vindication*, p. 391. *Some farther Account of him*, p. 466. *His Protestation against trying the King, and putting him to Death*, p. 531.
- Hampden, Mr. *his Death and Character*, p. 102.
- Harmar, Mr. *some Account of him*, p. 473.

- Harris, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 469.
- Halls of Colleges in Oxford, that submitted to the Parliament, and kept their Places, p. 458. Their Characters, p. 459. List of those who were ejected, and of those who succeeded them, p. 462. Characters of the former, p. 463. Of the latter, p. 467. Their Behaviour, p. 473.
- Henderson, Mr. *his Speech against Bishops in the Treaty of Uxbridge*, p. 255. *His Conference with the King about Episcopacy, &c.* p. 336. *His first Reply*, p. 337. *His second*, p. 341. *His third*, p. 345. *His pretended Recantation*, p. 348. *The Falseness of it*, p. 349.
- Herefy. See Blasphemy.
- Hertford, Marquis of, *his Declaration concerning Church-Government*, p. 258.
- High Court of Justice for the Trial of the King, p. 539.
- Hill, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 123.
- Hill, Mr. *call'd Consul Bibulus by Archbishop Laud, and why*, p. 242.
- Holdsworth, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 120.
- Holmby-House, *the King carried thither*, p. 360. *How he liv'd there*, p. 361.
- Hood, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 459.
- Hoyle, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 468.

I.

- I** Images and Crucifixes countenanc'd by Archbishop Laud, p. 194.
- I** Of their Antiquity, p. 197.
- Impropriations, *of buying them up*, p. 223, 225.
- Independants, *in the Assembly of Divines*, p. 141. *Their Apologetical Narration*, *ibid.* *Vindication of them*, p. 145. *Debates with them about Ordination*, p. 276. *Their Objections to the Divine Right of Presbytery*, p. 280. *They complain of their Usage in the Assembly*, p. 283. *Their Opinion about Suspension and Excommunication*, p. 285. *Design of a Comprehension for them defeated by the Management of the Presbyterians*, p. 303. *Their Proposals for a Toleration*, p. 304. *Their Reply to the Presbyterians*, p. 306. *Their second Reply*, p. 308. *Their Declaration at the End of the Debate*, p. 309. *They were for a limited Toleration*, p. 311. *They are courted by the King*, p. 314. *They oppose the Presbyterians Remonstrance against Sectaries*, p. 328. *The King plays them against the Scots, to bring them over to his Interest*, p. 356. *Their separate Views*, p. 395. *Their Behaviour with regard to the King's Death*, p. 537. *How far they were concern'd in it*, p. 549.
- Innovations in Churches, *Bill against them*, p. 11. *Archbishop Laud charg'd with countenancing them*, p. 194, &c.

Ireton *confers with the King*, p. 409. *His Speech in Parliament*, p. 420. *Burnet's Opinion of the Hand he had in the King's Death*, p. 551.

Irish Forces brought over by the King, p. 85. *Ill Consequences of it*, p. 86. *The Affair debated in the Treaty of Uxbridge*, p. 253. *Earl of Glamorgan concludes a Treaty with the Irish Papists*, p. 266. *As does also the Marquis of Ormond*, p. 324. *Articles of it*, *ibid.* *Parliament's Commissioners protest against it*, p. 326.

Jus Divinum. See Church Government.

K.

K Ennet, *Bishop, his Remark on the Ordinance exhorting to Repentance*, p. 9. *On the breaking off of the Treaty of Oxford*, p. 17.

Kirk Discipline, Account of it, p. 384. Notes.

L.

L Ancaſhire, *Provincial Aſſembly of*, p. 495.

Laney, *Dr. ſome Account of him*, p. 118.

Langbain, *Dr. ſome Account of him*, p. 459.

Langley, *Dr. ſome Account of him*, p. 470.

Laud, *Archbiſhop, his ſuperſtitious Remarks on Lord Brooke's Death*, p. 19. *He is ſuſpended by the Parliament*, p. 97. *His Trial for High Treason*, p. 172. *The Articles of Impeachment*, *ibid.* *His Answer*, p. 174. *Order and Method of the Trial*, p. 175. *Summary of the Charge*, p. 176. *Impeachment open'd by Serjeant Wild*, p. 177. *The Archbiſhop's Speech*, *ibid.* *First Branch of the Charge, ſubverting the Rights of Parliament, with the Archbiſhop's Reply to the ſeveral Things alledg'd in ſupport of it*, p. 178 to 183. *Arbitrary Speeches made by him for the King*, p. 179. *Arbitrary Speeches of his own*, p. 181. *Second Charge, viz. attempting to ſet aſide the Laws, with the Archbiſhop's Reply to the ſeveral Articles*, p. 183 to 193. *Of Ship Money, Tonnage and Poundage, &c.* p. 183. *Of pulling down Houſes for the Repair of St. Paul's, &c.* p. 184. *Illegal Commitments and Prohibitions in the Spiritual Courts*, p. 186. *Bribery*, p. 187. *Commutation of Penance*, p. 188. *Alterations in the Coronation Oath*, p. 189. *Attempt to ſet up an independent Power in the Clergy*, p. 190. *Sitting of the Convocation after the Parliament*, p. 192. *Remarks*, p. 193. *Third general Charge, viz. attempting to alter Religion, and introduce Popiſh Innovations, with the Archbiſhop's Answers, and the Managers Replies*, p. 194 to 235. *Images and Crucifixes*, p. 194. *Conſecration of Churches and Altars, and Feaſts of Dedication*, p. 198. *His Letter to Sir Nathan. Brent*, p. 205. *Introducing divers Superſtitious into Divine Worſhip*, p. 209, &c. *Promoting the Book of Sports*, p. 213. *Remarks,*

- Remarks*, p. 214. *Encouraging Arminianism and Popery*, p. 215, &c. *Prosecuting Puritans*, &c. p. 222. *Reconciling the Church of England with Rome, assuming Papal Titles, discouraging foreign Protestants, corresponding with Popish Priests*, &c. p. 225, &c. *Managers Conclusion*, p. 235. *Archbishop's Speech at the Close of the Trial*, *ibid.* *Points of Law debated*, p. 237. *Censures of his Behaviour*, p. 239. *His Character of the Witnesses*, p. 240. *His Censure of the Managers*, p. 241. *Petitions for Justice against him*, p. 243. *Condemn'd by Bill of Attainder*, p. 244. *His last Speech*, *ibid.* *His Prayer*, p. 245. *His Execution*, p. 246. *His Character*, *ibid.*
- Lawrence, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 460.
- Lay-Assessors in the Assembly of Divines, p. 54.
- Lay-Elders, p. 283.
- Lay-Preachers, *Causes of their Increase*, p. 476.
- Lay-Predaching, *Rise of it in the Army*, p. 269. *Discourag'd by the Parliament*, p. 365.
- Letter of the Assembly of Divines to foreign Protestants, p. 88.
- The King's Reply to it*, p. 94.
- Liberty of Conscience. *See Toleration.*
- Licensers of Books, *Ordinance for appointing them*, p. 49.
- Lightfoot, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 124.
- List of the Assembly of Divines, p. 55.
- Liturgy, *Reasons for setting it aside*, p. 153.
- London, *Lines of Circumvallation drawn round it*, p. 3. *King's Proclamations against it*, p. 21. *Commotions there*, p. 402. *It submits to the Army upon their Approach*, p. 405. *Provincial Assemblies there*, p. 385, 387, 494.
- London Ministers assert the Divine Right of Presbytery, p. 330. *Their Paper of Considerations and Cautions*, *ibid.* *Their Testimony to Truth and against Error*, p. 388. *Their Aversion to a Toleration*, p. 390. *Their Vindication of themselves*, p. 406.
- Lord's Day. *See Sabbath.*
- Lords, *House of, laid aside*, p. 531, 539.
- Love, Mr. *his Sermon at Uxbridge*, p. 251.

M.

- Manchester, Earl of, *his Character*, p. 115. *Manner of his Proceeding in reforming the University of Cambridge*, *ibid.* *His Warrant to the Committee for scandalous Ministers*, p. 128. *His Instructions to them*, p. 129. *His Letter to them*, p. 130. *His Method of ejecting the scandalous or malignant Minister, and filling the vacant Benefice*, p. 131.
- Mansel, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 464.
- Marston Moor, *Battle of*, p. 107.
- Martin, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 119.

- Masters turn'd out of the University of Cambridge, *their Character*, p. 118. *Character of their Successors*, p. 121. *Form of Inducting them*, p. 125.
- Maynard, *Serjeant, one of the Managers in the Trial of Archbishop Laud, his handsome Return to the Prince of Orange's Compliment*, p. 241.
- Militia debated in the Treaty of Uxbridge, p. 252.
- Ministers, [*Quality of those who were ejected by the Parliament*, p. 36. *Quality of those who were put in their Room*, p. 40, 41. *Committee for examining them*, p. 99. See *Committee*. See *Plunder'd*. See *Scandalous*.
- Ministers sent to reform the University of Oxford, p. 429. *Their Conduct and Success*, p. 430.
- Minshull, *Dr. some Account of him*, p. 123.
- Monuments of Superstition, *Removal of them*, p. 45. *Ordinance for that purpose*, p. 46. *Manner of the Execution of it*, p. 47.
- Morgan, *a Priest, executed*, p. 373.

N.

- Naseby, *Battle of*, p. 271.
- Negative Oath, *University of Oxford's Objections to it*, p. 442.
- New Discipline. See *Presbytery*.
- Newbury, *Battle of*, p. 23. *The second*, p. 110.
- Newcastle, *Parliament's Propositions to the King there*, p. 350. *Which he refuses to consent to*, p. 355. *His Answer to them*, p. 398.
- Newlin, *Dr. some Account of him*, p. 463.
- Newport; *Treaty of*. See *Treaty*.
- Nicolas, *Rob. Esq; one of the Managers in Laud's Trial*, p. 242.
- Non-Addresses. See *Votes*.
- Non-Residence. See *Pluralities*.

O.

- Olive, *Dr. some Account of him*, p. 464.
- Ordinance of Parliament exhorting to Repentance, p. 7. *Bishop Kennet's Remark upon it*, p. 9.
- Ordinance for Sequestration of Benefices and Estates of the Clergy, &c. p. 35, 37. *A farther Explanation of it*, p. 38. *The Effects of it*, p. 39.
- Ordinance for removing Monuments of Superstition, p. 46. *Manner of putting it in Execution*, p. 47.
- Ordinance for licensing Books, p. 49. *For calling an Assembly of Divines*, p. 52. *For the Committee of Sequestrations*, p. 114. *For insuring the Use of the Directory*, p. 157. *For better Observation of the Lord's Day*, p. 166. *For the Ordination of Ministers*, p. 274.

Ordi-

- Ordinance for Suspension from the Sacrament, p. 288. *Proviso's in it*, p. 291.
- Ordinance for erecting Presbyteries, p. 293. Which does not satisfy, p. 295. The Scots Exceptions to it, p. 296. English Presbyterians petition against it, p. 298. Another Ordinance for that purpose, p. 500.
- Ordinance for abolishing Archbishops and Bishops, &c. p. 561. And for Sale of their Lands, p. 362.
- Ordinance for abolishing Christmas and other Holidays, p. 422. King dislikes it, p. 423. It occasions Tumults, *ibid.*
- Ordinance against Blasphemy and Heresy, a terrible one, p. 497. Remarks, p. 500.
- Ordination, Assembly of Divines consult about it, p. 149. Their Advice about it, p. 151. Ordinance of Parliament in pursuance thereof, *ibid.* Directory for it, p. 274. Debates about it, p. 276. Power of it given to the Assembly of Divines pro tempore, p. 277.
- Ormond, Marquis of, his Treaty with the Irish Papists, p. 324.
- Oxford Parliament, p. 105. Their Proceedings, p. 106.
- Oxford, Treaty of. See Treaty.
- Oxford University, Condition of it, p. 429. Ministers sent to reform it, *ibid.* Ordinance for visiting it, p. 432. Abstract of their Reasons against the Covenant, &c. p. 434. &c. Remarks, p. 444. The Visitation open'd, p. 445. They use the Visitors ill, and will not submit, p. 446. Visitation review'd, but the University will not yet submit, p. 448. They are heard by their Council, but cast, p. 450. Their Case, in a Letter to Mr. Selden, p. 451. Their stubborn Behaviour, p. 452. Earl of Pembroke being made Chancellor, visits them in Person, *ibid.* And reports their Behaviour to the Parliament, p. 454. Numbers ejected, p. 455. Insolence of the Scholars, p. 456. Garrison search the Colleges for Arms, p. 457. Scholars expell'd, *ibid.* Characters of Heads of Colleges, &c. who submitted, p. 459. Heads of Colleges, &c. ejected; List of them and their Successors, p. 462. Characters of those who were ejected, p. 463. Of their Successors, p. 467. Their Behaviour, p. 473. Remarks, p. 474. Vacancies in the University fill'd up, p. 476.

P.

- Palatine Family Favourites of the Puritans, p. 165.
- Palmer, Mr. Herbert, some Account of him, p. 122. His Death and Character, p. 480.
- Palmer, Dr. some Account of him, p. 471.
- Papal Titles assum'd by Archbishop Laud, p. 225, 227, 230.
- Papists, two Thirds of their Estates seized, p. 38. Oath for discovering them, *ibid.* Some in the Parliament Army, p. 372. Stories of their having a Hand in the King's Death, p. 551, 552.
- Parlia-

PARLIAMENT *sue for Peace*, p. 2. *The nice Point of their treating with the Scots*, p. 5. *Their Ordinance exhorting to Repentance*, p. 7. *Their Propositions at the Treaty of Oxford*, p. 9. *Their five Bills*, p. 11. *Plots against them*, p. 20, 21. *Low State of their Affairs*, p. 23. *Their Proceedings with regard to the Clergy*, p. 26 to 42. *With regard to the Sabbath*, p. 42. *Their Monthly and Occasional Fasts*, p. 43. *Their Ordinance for removing Monuments of Superstition*, p. 46. *Their Orders for restraining the Press*, p. 48. *They call an Assembly of Divines*, p. 51. *And send them Regulations*, p. 64. *They call in the Scots*, p. 68. *Agree to the Solemn League and Covenant*, p. 72. *And take it*, p. 77. *Order the taking it throughout the Nation*, p. 80. *Their Proceedings on the King's bringing over the Irish Forces*, p. 85, 87. *They order a new Great Seal to be made*, p. 105. *They nominate Men to Livings*, p. 98. *Character of their Army*, p. 111. *Division among their Generals*, p. 112. *They order the Assembly of Divines to confer about Church Government*, p. 148. *They establish and enforce the Use of the Directory*, p. 153, 157. *Enforce the Observation of the Lord's Day*, p. 166. *Abolish Christmas*, p. 168, 422. *Pass a Bill of Attainder against Archbishop Laud*, p. 243, 244. *Their Instructions to their Commissioners in the Treaty of Uxbridge upon the Head of Religion*, p. 254. *Their Reply to the King's Concessions*, p. 261. *Their Army new modell'd*, p. 268. *Character of their Generals*, p. 269. *Their Care for a regular Clergy*, p. 273. *They reject the Clause of the Divine Right of Presbytery*, p. 284. *Their Ordinance for Suspension from the Sacrament*, p. 288. *And for erecting Presbyteries*, p. 293. *Their Reply to the Scots Exceptions*, p. 297. *Their Questions propounded to the Assembly about the Jus Divinum in Matters of Church Government*, p. 299. *They attempt an Accommodation between the Presbyterians and Independants*, p. 302. *Obtain a compleat Conquest over the King*, p. 323, 324. *Their Management with the Presbyterians*, p. 327, 328. *Their Propositions to the King at Newcastle*, p. 350. *Their Commissioners receive the King from the Scots, and convey him to Holmby*, p. 360. *They abolish Archbishops and Bishops, &c. and dispose of their Lands*, p. 361, 362. *Their Proceedings to please the Presbyterians*, p. 365. *They debate on the Assembly's Confession of Faith, and reject the Articles of Discipline*, p. 379, 380. *Approve and authorize their Catechisms*, p. 382. *Controversy between them and the Army*, p. 397. *Their Surprize at the Army's seizing the King*, p. 399. *The Presbyterians amongst them resolve to oppose the Army*, p. 401. *Eleven of their Members impeach'd*, *ibid.* *Tumults in their House*, p. 403. *Upon which several of the Members retire to the Army*, *ibid.* *Proceedings of the Remainder*, p. 404. *Which were annull'd upon the Army's marching to London*, p. 405. *Remarks*, p. 407. *They agree to the Proposals*
of

- of the Army, p. 413. *Their Votes of Non-Addresses to the King*, p. 420. *Their Remonstrance*, p. 421. *They send Ministers to reform the University of Oxford*, p. 429. *They resolve on a Visitation of it, and pass an Ordinance for that purpose*, p. 431, 432. *They resolve to support their Visitors*, p. 447. *Presbyterians prevail amongst them in the Absence of the Army*, p. 488. *They make a terrible Ordinance against Blasphemy and Heresy*, p. 497. *Their Ordinance for the farther Establishment of Presbytery*, p. 500. *Their Proposals to the King in the Isle of Wight*, p. 503. *Reply of their Divines to the King's Papers about Episcopacy*, p. 506, 509. *Their Commissioners press his Consent*, p. 516. *Their Proceedings upon the Army's marching to London*, p. 529. *They are purg'd by the Army*, *ibid.* *Votes of the Remainder, who resolve to try the King*, p. 530. *And establish a High Court of Justice for that purpose*, p. 539.
- Paske, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 118.
- Paul's Cross pull'd down, and *some Account of it*, p. 45. *Of pulling down Houses for the Repair of the Church*, p. 184. *Commutation of Penance for the same purpose*, p. 188. *Proverb occasion'd by it*, p. 247.
- Pembroke, Earl of, *made Chancellor of Oxford, and visits in Person*, p. 452. *His Proceedings*, p. 453. *Reports the Behaviour of the University to the Parliament*, p. 454.
- Petition of the City Ministers for settling Discipline and Worship, p. 150.
- Petition for unordained Preachers, p. 477.
- Pitt, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 464.
- Plots against the Parliament, p. 20, 21.
- Plunder'd Ministers, Committee for, p. 30.
- Pluralities and Non-Residence, Bill against them, p. 13.
- Pocock, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 461.
- Pope's Nuncios in England, p. 229, 234.
- Popery conniv'd at, and encourag'd by Laud, p. 218, 219, &c. 225, &c.
- Popish Priests, of Archbishop Laud's corresponding with them, and countenancing them, p. 229, 233.
- Potter, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 464.
- Preachers, Petition for unordained ones, p. 477.
- Preaching Ministers, Committee for, p. 26.
- Presbyterian Government, Propositions for establishing it in the Treaty of Uxbridge, p. 255. *Divine Right of it debated*, p. 278. *Carried in the Assembly of Divines*, p. 283. *But dropt in Parliament*, p. 284. *Several Petitions to admit the Divine Right of it*, *ibid.* *It is established by way of Probation*, p. 295. *Remarks*, *ibid.* *Exceptions of the Scots, and their Amendments to it propos'd*, p. 296. *Parliament's Reply*, p. 297. *Questions sent to the Assembly of Divines about the Divine Right of it*, p. 299.

- Remarks*, p. 301. *Attempts for a further Establishment of it*, p. 326, &c. *London Ministers assert it to be Jure Divino*, p. 330. *How far the Establishment of it prevail'd*, p. 335, 501. *A Description of it as settled in Scotland*, p. 384. *Notes. University of Oxford's Objections to it*, p. 443. *It is establish'd without Limitation of Time*, p. 500.
- Presbyterians in the Assembly of Divines, and their chief Patrons in the Parliament*, p. 139.
- Presbyterians, their Severity in enforcing Uniformity in the Use of the Directory*, p. 158. *Their Reply to the Independants about the Divine Right of Presbytery*, p. 281. *Their Zeal to have the Divine Right of it established*, p. 284. *Are offended at the Proviso's in the Ordinance about Suspension from the Sacrament*, p. 292. *Petition against the Ordinance for Presbyteries, because it gave them not Power enough*, p. 298. *Defeat the Design of a Comprehension for the Independants*, p. 303. *Their Reply to the Proposals for a Toleration*, p. 305. *They argue against the Lawfulness of a Separation*, p. 307. *Their high Notions of Uniformity, and against Liberty of Conscience*, p. 308, 310, 311. *Censur'd in a Pamphlet*, p. 312. *They petition against Sectaries*, p. 326. *Are seconded by the Scots*, p. 327. *Petition again against Sectaries, &c.* p. 364. *Their Aversion to a Toleration*, p. 390. *Their separate Views*, p. 394. *Their Proposals*, p. 415. *Counter Petition of their Clergy, and an Ordinance in their Favour*, p. 426, 427. *Their Provincial Assemblies*, p. 385, 387, 494. *Their Country Associations*, p. 497. *A terrible Ordinance pass'd by their Influence against Blasphemy and Heresy*, p. 497. *Remonstrance of their Ministers against the Proceedings of the Army in relation to the King, &c.* p. 532. *Their farther Vindication*, p. 536. *Whether they are chargeable with the King's Death*, p. 548.
- Presbyteries, Ordinance for erecting them*, p. 293.
- Prefs, Orders for Restraining it*, p. 48. *Abuse of it by Laud*, p. 218.
- Prince of Wales, King's Letter to him*, p. 525. *Remarks*, p. 526.
- Professors in the University of Oxford who submitted to the Parliament*, p. 461. *Of those who were ejected*, p. 465. *Of those who succeeded them*, p. 471. *Their Behaviour*, p. 473. *See Cambridge. See Oxford.*
- Prohibitions in the Spiritual Courts*, p. 186, 187.
- Province of London, classical Division of it*, p. 331, &c.
- Provincial Assembly of London, the first*, p. 385. *General Rules for it*, p. 387. *The second, and their Petition to Parliament*, *ibid.* *The third*, p. 494. *The fourth, ibid.*
- Provincial Assembly of Lancashire*, p. 495.
- Prynne, Mr. his Memento against putting the King to death*, p. 531.
- Psalms, new Version of, appointed*, p. 315.

Puritan Clergy, *their Sufferings*, p. 24, 30. *Of those who were ejected at the Restoration*, p. 135. *Severely prosecuted by Archbishop Laud*, p. 222, 224.

Pym, Mr. *his Death and Character*, p. 103. *His Vindication of himself*, p. 104.

Q.

Quakers, *Rise of them*, p. 371.

Queen sends Arms and Ammunition to the King, p. 7. *And Men and Money*, p. 22. *Upon which the Commons impeach her of High Treason*, *ibid.* King's Letter to her, p. 107. Archbishop Laud forbids the Clergy to pray for her Conversion, p. 231. *More Letters of the King to her*, p. 250, 252, 322. *Her Letters to the King, and his Answers*, p. 264, 265. *She presses him to comply with the Presbyterians*, p. 355.

R.

Radcliffe, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 463.

Reading taken by the King, p. 2. *Retaken by the Earl of Essex*, p. 22.

Religion, *Affair of, debated in the Treaty of Uxbridge*, p. 253. *Propositions relating to it sent to the King at Newcastle*, p. 351. *State of it*, p. 479. See Episcopacy.

Reynolds, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 467.

Roberts, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 470.

Rogers, Mr. Christopher, *some Account of him*, p. 471.

Rupert, Prince, *his Character and Behaviour in the War*, p. 109. *His bad Conduct in the Battle of Naseby*, p. 271, 272. *The King displeas'd with him*, p. 273.

S.

Sabbath, *strict Observation of it*, p. 42. *Ordinance for that purpose*, p. 166.

Saints Days, &c. *abolished*, p. 422.

Sale of Bishops Lands, *Ordinance for it*, p. 362. *Whether Sacrilege*, p. 518.

Saltmarsh, Mr. *his Death, and the extraordinary Circumstance attending it*, p. 481, 482.

Sanderfon, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 465.

Saunders, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 459.

Scandalous Ministers, *Committee for them*, p. 26. *Mr. White's Century of them*, p. 31. *Other Testimonies of their Character*, p. 32. *Another Committee for them, and the Earl of Manchester's Warrant empowering it to act*, p. 128.

Scholars of the University of Oxford, *their Insolence*, p. 456. *They are expell'd*, p. 457.

- Scots call'd in by the English Parliament and Assembly of Divines, p. 68. *Their Reasons for assisting the Parliament*, p. 69. *They appoint a Solemn League and Covenant*, p. 70. *Their unbounded Zeal in imposing it*, p. 77. *Their Army enters England*, p. 107. *Their Exceptions to the Ordinance for erecting Presbyteries in England*, p. 296. *And the Parliament's Reply*, p. 297. *Their Declaration against Toleration*, p. 311. *The King surrenders himself to their Army*, p. 323. *Their Zeal against Sectaries*, p. 327. *Their Behaviour to the King*, p. 335. *Their Kirk will not trust him, and publish a solemn Warning and Declaration*, p. 357, 358. *Proceedings of their Parliament in relation to him*, p. 359. *They deliver him up, and publish their Reasons*, *ibid.* *They receive the whole Westminster Confession of Faith*, p. 380. *Their Commissioners take leave of the Assembly*, p. 382. *They appoint a Fast for the Distractions of England*, p. 383. *Account of the Discipline in their Kirk*, p. 384. *Notes. King's private Treaty with them*, p. 416. *Their Army enters England under Duke Hamilton*, p. 485. *And is defeated by Cromwell*, p. 487. *They press the King's Consent in the Treaty of Newport*, p. 519. *They protest against putting him to Death*, p. 538.
- Scripture, *whether to be interpreted by Antiquity and Tradition*, p. 345, 346.
- Seaman, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 121.
- Second Service, *of reading it*, p. 212.
- Sectaries, *Presbyterians Remonstrance against them*, p. 326, 327. *The Independants oppose it*, p. 328. *Presbyterians petition against them*, p. 364. *Farther Account of them*, p. 366. *Edwards's Gangraena wrote against them*, p. 367. *Mr. Baxter's Account of them*, p. 370. *Lord Clarendon's, and Bishop Bramhall's*, p. 372.
- Selden, Mr. *his Speech against Suspensions and Excommunications*, p. 285.
- Self-denying Ordinance, p. 269.
- Separation, *Debates about the Lawfulness of it*, p. 306, 307. See Toleration.
- Sequestration, *Ordinance for*. See Ordinance.
- Sequestrations, *Committee of*, p. 114.
- Servants, *Time allotted for their Recreation*, p. 422.
- Sheldon, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 463.
- Ship Money, Tonnage and Poundage, &c. *promoted by Archbishop Laud*, p. 183.
- Skippon, Major General, *encourages his Soldiers*, p. 2. *His Bravery in the Battle of Naseby*, p. 272.
- Solemn League and Covenant, *drawn up and pass'd by the Scots*, p. 70. *Debates upon it in England*, p. 71. *Where it is agreed to*, p. 72. *A Copy of it*, *ibid.* *Manner of taking it*, p. 76.

- An Exhortation to the taking of it*, p. 78. *Unreasonableness of imposing it*, p. 80, 84. *Instructions for taking it in the Country*, *ibid.* *The King forbids the taking of it*, p. 82. *The Influence it had on the Clergy*, p. 83. *'Tis order'd to be read and hung up in Churches*, p. 167. *Presbyterians petition to have it impos'd on the whole Nation*, p. 364. *Abstract of the University of Oxford's Reasons against it*, p. 434. *Exceptions against the Preface*, *ibid.* *Against the Covenant in general*, *ibid.* *Against the first Article*, p. 435. *Against the second*, p. 436. *Against the third*, p. 437. *Against the fourth, fifth and sixth*, p. 438. *Contradictions, and doubtful Expressions in the Covenant*, p. 439. *Absurdities in pursuing the Ends of it*, p. 440. *Of the Salvos for taking it*, *ibid.*
- Spurflow, *Dr. some Account of him*, p. 124.
- Squire, *Reverend Mr. his Case*, p. 29.
- Stage-Plays put down, p. 478.
- Statutes of Oxford, p. 210, 212.
- Staunton, *Dr. some Account of him*, p. 471.
- Stern, *Dr. some Account of him*, p. 119.
- Steward, *Dr. his Reply to Mr. Henderfon about Bishops*, p. 256.
- Stringer, *Dr. some Account of him*, p. 465.
- Suspension from the Sacrament, *Debates about it*, p. 285. *Ordinance for it*, p. 288. *Rules for it in case of Ignorance*, p. 289. *In case of Scandal*, *ibid.* *Proviso's in the Ordinance about it*, p. 291.
- Symmonds, *Reverend Mr. his Case*, p. 28.
- Synods, *Debates about their Subordination*, p. 282.

T.

- T** Axes, *grievous ones on the People*, p. 22.
- Toleration, *Proposals for it by the Independants*, p. 304. *The Presbyterians Answer to them*, p. 305. *Independants Reply*, p. 306. *Presbyterians second Reply*, p. 307. *Independants second Reply*, p. 308. *Conclusion of the Presbyterians*, *ibid.* *Conclusion of the Independants*, p. 309. *Remarks*, *ibid.* *Farther Debates about Toleration*, p. 310. *The Scots declare against it*, p. 311. *Independants for a limited one*, *ibid.* *Defence of a general one, in Answer to the Reasons of the London Clergy*, p. 312. *Presbyterians Remonstrance against Toleration*, p. 326. *Seconded by the Scots*, p. 327. *London Ministers declare against it*, p. 390.
- Tombes, *Mr. some Account of him*, p. 162.
- Tomkins's Plot, p. 20.
- Treaty of Newport in the Isle of Wight, p. 501. *Parliament's Proposals and the King's Reply*, p. 503. *Conference between the King and the Parliament Divines about Episcopacy*, p. 505. King's

- King's final Concessions*, p. 514, 515, 516. *Remarks*, p. 521.
Conclusion of the Treaty, p. 523.
Treaty of Oxford, p. 9, &c. *Broke off*, p. 17.
Treaty of Uxbridge, p. 249. *The Commissioners*, p. 251. *Treaty begins*, *ibid.* *Debates about the Militia*, p. 252. *About Ireland*, p. 253. *About Religion*, *ibid.* &c. *Treaty breaks off, and the Reasons of it*, p. 263. *Remarks*, p. 264.
Tuckney, Dr. some Account of him, p. 123.
Turner, Dr. some Account of him, p. 466.
Twisse, Dr. Prolocutor to the Assembly of Divines, p. 54. *His Death and Character*, p. 375.

V.

- V**Acancies in the University of Oxford filled up, p. 476.
 Vacant Benefices. See Benefices.
Vines, Dr. some Account of him, p. 121.
Visitation of the University of Cambridge, p. 114, &c. See Cambridge.
Visitation of the University of Oxford, p. 429, &c. See Oxford.
Uniformity, Debates about it, p. 308. See Toleration.
Voice of the Nation against the King's Trial and Death, p. 531, &c.
Votes of no more Addresses to the King, p. 420. *Revok'd*, p. 489. *Resum'd*, p. 530.
Usher, Archbishop, his Sentiments about Episcopacy, and Scheme for reducing it to the Form of Presbytery, p. 523.
Uxbridge, Treaty of. See Treaty.

W.

- W**alker, Dr. some Account of him, p. 464.
 Wallis, Dr. some Account of him, p. 472.
 War. See Civil War.
 Ward, Dr. Samuel, some Account of him, p. 120.
 Ward, Dr. Seth, some Account of him, p. 471.
 Waring, Mr. some Account of him, p. 465.
 Westfield, Bishop, his Death and Character, p. 170.
 White, Mr. his Century of scandalous, malignant Priests, p. 31. *His Death and Character*, p. 267.
 Whitlock, Bullstrode, Esq; his Speech in the Assembly of Divines, about the Divine Right of Presbytery, p. 278. *About Suspension and Excommunication*, p. 286.
 Wightwick, Mr. some Account of him, p. 464.
 Wild, Serjeant, opens the Impeachment against Archbishop Laud, p. 177. *The Archbishop's Character of him*, p. 241.
 Wilkins, Dr. some Account of him, p. 467.
 Willinson, Dr. John, some Account of him, p. 468.

Wilkinson, Dr. Henry, *some Account of him*, p. 469.

Wilkinson, Mr. Henry, *his Death*, p. 481.

Wilmot, *Lieutenant General, his Character*, p. 109.

Witchcott, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 122.

Y.

Y^{oung}, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 122.

Z.

Z^{ouch}, Dr. *some Account of him*, p. 460.

F I N I S.











